



Cornell University Library

The original of this book is in
the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in
the United States on the use of the text.

CORNELL UNIVERSITY LIBRARY



3 1924 098 139 805

In compliance with current
copyright law, Cornell University
Library produced this
replacement volume on paper
that meets the ANSI Standard
Z39.48-1992 to replace the
irreparably deteriorated original.

2003

CORNELL
UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY



CHRYSALE

Library of Early Novelists

Edited by E. A. BAKER, M.A.

Each with an Introduction by the Editor or some other specialist in early fiction.

Large Crown 8vo, buckram, gilt tops, 6s. net each.

- 1 **Life and Opinions of John Bunce, Esquire.**
By THOMAS AMORY.
- 2 **Adventures of Don Sylvio de Rosalva.** By
C. M. WIELAND.
- 3 **The Heptameron.** By MARGUERITE OF NAVARRE;
translated by A. MACHEN.
- 4 **The Decameron.** By BOCCACCIO; translated by J. M.
RIGG; with Essay by J. ADDINGTON SYMONDS.
- 5 **Novels and Novelettes.** By MRS APHRA BEHN.
- 6 **Gesta Romanorum.** Translated, with Introduction
and Notes, by REV. C. SWAN.
- 7 **The Fool of Quality.** By HENRY BROOKE. With
KINGSLEY's Introduction, and a new Life of the Author
by E. A. BAKER.
- 8 **Gulliver's Travels** (1st edition) and other writings of
JONATHAN SWIFT.
- 9 **The Monk.** By M. G. LEWIS.
- 10 **Moll Flanders and Roxana.** By DANIEL DEFOE.
- 11 **Early English Prose Romances.** Edited by W. J.
THOMS.
- 12 **Arcadia.** By SIR PHILIP SIDNEY.
- 13 **Chrysal; or, The Adventures of a Guinea.**

*The Novels, &c., of DEKKER, GREENE, and BRETON, edited
by OLIPHANT SMEATON, each in one volume, will shortly be
added to the series, as well as a number of other hitherto
unobtainable books.*

CHRYSA

OR THE

ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA

BY
CHARLES JOHNSTONE

EDITED, WITH AN INTRODUCTION,

BY

E. A. BAKER, M.A.



LONDON
GEORGE ROUTLEDGE & SONS, LTD.
NEW YORK: E. P. DUTTON & CO.

INTRODUCTION

THE lot of the satirist is not a happy one, not more felicitous, as a rule, than the fate which he invokes upon his victims. George Meredith says of one of his characters, an industrious manufacturer of acidulated epigrams, 'He is not happy in his business; Colney suffered as heavily as he struck'. The more he thrives in his trade of public executioner, the surer he is of his wages, hatred from his contemporaries and posthumous oblivion. Of Charles Johnstone, author of one of the most telling satires in the English language, *Chrysal, or the Adventures of a Guinea*, it is stated in one of the few scraps of biography that have come down to us (if so much can be said of a faded page in an old *Gentleman's Magazine*), 'Conviviality, and a turn for satirical observations in time left him few friends'. Though his book had extraordinary success at the time, and went rapidly into many editions, Johnstone, in middle life, found himself a failure both in literature and in law, his nominal profession; and less than twenty years before his death took the drastic step of starting afresh in another hemisphere and a different career. In 1782 he went to India, and became a journalist at Calcutta. India in those days could hardly have been the most desirable haven for old age. But at any rate, Johnstone, having written his last satire the year before he set sail, made money on his newspaper, and for a few years before his death, for the first time in his life, was in affluence.

It might reasonably be argued that the durability of satire must needs be in inverse ratio to its effectiveness, since this depends on two ephemeral elements, the force of its personal application and the virulence of its hatred. Comedy endures, satire is forgotten. The reason is in the nature of the two things. Of both alike the social function is to make man better by laughing at his aberrations from common sense. But comedy does this gently and lovingly. Comedy, in short, laughs with, satire laughs at, humanity. The Comic Spirit, according to Mr Meredith, looks into the hearts of men, and reveals the causes of their folly. That is to say, sympathy

and love of mankind are necessary to true comic insight. This, of course, must be the foundation of all art that is to be great and permanent. But the short-lived triumph of satire rests on the negation of sympathy, the contrary of love. Scorn, indignation, hatred—these are the passions that give it vitality; and happily for our race, they are the most transitory of human emotions.

All that we know about the life of Charles Johnstone is comprised in a few scraps of biography embedded in back numbers of *The Gentleman's Magazine*, and in one or two obscure dictionaries of Irish worthies. He was born about 1719 at Carrigogunnel, in County Limerick, being descended from the Johnstones of Annandale; in fact, one writer states that he was well known to be the next, though a distant, heir to the now dormant marquise of Annandale, but did not claim it owing to his own lack of means and the circumstance that no property went with the peerage. He was educated at Trinity College, Dublin, but does not appear to have taken a degree. Being called to the Bar, he was forced by his deafness to employ himself in the capacity of chamber counsel, which he found far from remunerative, and accordingly he tried to make a living by literature. His great hit was the work which follows, *Chrysal; or, the Adventures of a Guinea*, begun as a pastime whilst he was on a visit to the Earl of Mount-Edgcumbe in Devonshire. In its first form it consisted of two volumes, which were sold to Johnson the bookseller, and published in 1760, and went into a third edition by the year 1762. The publisher urged him to write more, and two further volumes appeared in 1765, completing the book as we have it.

A work professing to reveal political secrets and to give the seamy side of the life of the best abused men of the time was bound to be a popular success. The puff preliminary shows on what the author was calculating: 'A dispassionate, distinct account of the most remarkable transactions of the present time all over Europe, with curious and interesting anecdotes of the parties principally concerned in these scenes, especially in England; the whole interspersed with several most whimsical and entertaining instances of the whimsical connection between high and low life, and the power of little causes to produce great events'. This appeared in a newspaper in April 1760, and the first edition of the book a month later. A key to the characters is said to have been given to Lord Mount-Edgcumbe and to Captain Mears, in whose ship Johnstone afterwards sailed to the East. This key, or more probably a garbled version of it, for the inaccuracies are

patent, is printed in a very scarce book published in 1814, William Davis's *Olio of Bibliographical and Literary Anecdotes and Memoranda*, which is the sole authority for several of the more obscure identifications given in the following notes.

Johnstone wrote several other works that were, presumably, failures, and are now utterly forgotten: *The Reverie, or a Flight to the Paradise of Fools*, a satire, 1762; *The History of Arsaces, Prince of Betlis*, 1774; *The Pilgrim, or a Picture of Life*, 1775; *A History of John Juniper, Esq., alias Jack Juniper*, a political effusion in which is designated 'a certain republican character now living', 1781. It is told of him also that he wrote a tragedy, which a certain manager refused, but nevertheless kept a copy, clipped and altered it, and produced later with great success. 'His having been employed in the concerns of a petty German state', says the writer already quoted in *The Gentleman's Magazine* (this may account for his caustic observations on the subsidy system), 'preserved for him a certain countenance amongst public men in the great offices, in spite of the aversion aroused by his satirical habits'. He was induced to go to India by hopes of assistance from persons who had gained appointments partly through his influence in rosier times, and among others he relied on an old comrade in the Temple, Lord Macartney, now Governor of Madras.

The *Brilliant*, in which he sailed with Captain Mears, foundered off the island of Joanna, between the coast of Africa and Madagascar, and the survivors, among whom were the captain and Johnstone, suffered terrible privations before they at length reached their destination. This, however, was the end of Johnstone's bad luck. He secured employment as a journalist in Bengal, writing under the signature of *Oneiropolos*, and eventually became the proprietor of a newspaper. He amassed a considerable fortune by the profits of his journal and by building speculations, and died at Calcutta about the year 1800.

According to Fernand Drujon's *Livres à clef*, there have been twenty augmented editions of *Chrysal* since its first appearance in 1760; and the book was even translated into French, under the title *Chrysal, ou les aventures d'une guinée, histoire Anglaise, trans. Jos. P. Frénais*, Paris, 1768 or 1769. Drujon justly complains of the 'grossièreté de quelques unes des scènes qu'il reprouve', but adds, 'Comme le roman, écrit d'un style nerveux, riche de couleurs et d'images, offrait au lecteur la chronique secrète de tous les principaux personnages vivants et d'un grand nombre de libertins titrés, il s'empara sur le champ de l'attention publique'. Johnstone himself declared

that his intention was to draw 'general characters, therefore in the application of the key the reader must exercise his own judgment in distinguishing the real from the fictitious personages'. Such a disclaimer must be taken with a grain of salt.

It was a time when satire flourished unrestrained, save by the fear of physical retaliation; and personalities were its choicest weapon. No age in our history was so prolific in satire, though this portion of our literature is the least remembered. Smollett and Fielding, with a host of writers whose names are known to-day only by the student, waged a fierce war of scurrilous abuse with little humour in it, from day to day and week to week, in newspaper and magazine. Foote and Woodward travestied public characters upon the stage; scores of incompetent poets like Paul Whitehead earned money and notoriety by ephemeral lampoons; and poets of genius like Gray and Cowper were wrung to outbursts of fiery sarcasm by the follies and depravity of the great. Charles Churchill, as suddenly as Byron, woke one morning to find himself famous, and able after years of poverty to command almost any price he wished for his furious pasquinades; Hogarth was but the one true artist among a crowd of indifferent caricaturists, and Junius but the most pungent among an army of acrid critics in the press. Satire was the literary fashion, and clever personalities were a marketable commodity. The brilliant success of *Chrysal* (which ought to have made its author's fortune had he been fairly treated by his publisher), was due to the lifelikeness of the portraiture and the sprinkling in of well-known incidents. At any rate, the book ceased to be reprinted only when the last of the objects of its ridicule were in their graves.

The period of history that *Chrysal* ranges over is the last few years of George II and the opening of the succeeding reign. The book leaves off just after the first Wilkes agitation, when that 'patriot', finding England too hot to hold him, went into exile on the Continent. Although the story wanders in a random way, and pays small attention to chronological order, it covers roughly the period of the Seven Years' War, that is, the years 1757-63. Both at home and abroad this was a period of striking incidents and remarkable men. War was raging all over the globe. In Europe, Frederick the Great was fighting France, Austria, and Russia. The safety of Hanover being at stake, Britain was dragged into the contest, furnishing the King of Prussia and other German potentates with a regular subsidy, and supplying a contingent that fought gloriously at Minden and other battlefields.

In the East Indies, Clive and Coote were winning victories and establishing the British ascendancy ; in the West Indies our fleet was engaged in a ceaseless struggle with France and then with Spain. A series of expeditions against the French in Canada culminated in Wolfe's triumph at Quebec ; whilst in the Mediterranean and the narrow seas the navy and a host of privateers were destroying the enemy's fleets and making enormous captures of mercantile shipping.

At home, when the narrative opens, everything was unsettled, though there was no clear contest of political parties. In 1754 died Henry Pelham, the all-powerful leader of the Whigs, and left to his incompetent brother Newcastle the task of governing England. From that time onward for many years ministries were more short-lived than ever before, and each carried in its own bosom the elements of disintegration. These disruptive forces were the crude personal aims of the men forming them, many of whom are portrayed in all their selfishness and turpitude in the pages following. The contentious attitude of Henry Fox and Pitt upset the initial arrangements of the new premier, forcing him to admit the ambitious and thoroughly unscrupulous Fox into his Cabinet. Newcastle was an unpopular man, and well known to be unequal to the strain of conducting the affairs of the nation through the perils of a great war, now recognized as imminent. The country was not only unprepared for war, but in a state of irresolution. Braddock's defeat before Fort Duquesne, in July 1755, was a terrible shock to Newcastle, who was bewildered with nervousness. The whole country was in a state of panic ; and, as related by Chrystal, the suspected movements of the French at Brest and Dunkirk threw the ministry into humiliating terrors. As a compromise, it was decided not to declare war, but that French ships, whether merchantmen or vessels of war, should be seized, and convulsive efforts made to bring the army and navy up to strength. At this point, the government had wind of the threatened attack on Minorca. Still vacillating, they let the time go by for interrupting it, and then sent out Byng with a fleet hastily manned, and orders, so it was alleged, of an indecisive nature. The fall of Minorca, and the sacrifice of Byng to the popular outcry, are related here.

Meanwhile, the Newcastle ministry had fallen, after desperate attempts had been made by that famous old dispenser of patronage to gain the support of William Pitt, the strongest statesman of the day. The Duke of Devonshire and Pitt, after considerable negotiation, succeeded in forming a Cabinet ; but it could not last in opposition to Newcastle and the powerful

interests he controlled. In five months, Pitt was dismissed, and became the most popular man in England. For eleven weeks there was no government, although the war was now in full swing. Then the famous coalition ministry was formed by Newcastle and Pitt, the latter declaring that he had 'borrowed the majority of the Duke of Newcastle to carry on the government of the country'. Under this arrangement Fox, though excluded by his old rival Pitt from a seat in the Cabinet, obtained the office of Paymaster of the Forces and £25,000 a year, with unlimited opportunities for speculation. The coalition, in spite of these heterogeneous elements, had one of the most glorious careers in the annals of British governments. A series of splendid victories brought the country out of the depths of panic to the position of mistress of the seas, and laid the secure foundations of her empire in East and West.

In 1760, the accession of George III brought a new force to bear on the strength of this ministry and the continuance of its policy. The new king had very definite personal intentions—he meant to govern—and his first object was to break down the Whig ascendancy, and get the appointment of ministers into his own hands. Opposed to the war policy of Pitt, he dissembled his actual purposes for a while, playing off Pitt against Newcastle, and Newcastle against Pitt, by means of his favourite, the Earl of Bute, whom he proposed to make prime minister as soon as events allowed. Early in 1762, Bute entered the Cabinet. By the end of the year Pitt had resigned, a little too soon for the satisfaction of Bute and the 'king's friends', who found themselves with a war on their hands that they had not the ability to carry on. Very soon, moreover, as Pitt had anticipated, war broke out with Spain, involving them in further embarrassments. The predominant partner got rid of, it was easy to oust Newcastle; and Bute became prime minister in May 1762, with a Cabinet comprising George Grenville, Sir Francis Dashwood, Halifax and Bedford, with Henry Fox in his favourite post as Paymaster.

Still the war proceeded gloriously, Pitt's measures continuing to bear fruit; but the government had determined to bring it to a speedy conclusion. The Peace of Paris was forced through the Houses by means of wholesale bribery, Fox undertaking to manage the Commons in return for the promise of a peerage. The peace was most unpopular; in spite of the sterling benefits to England, it did not give her all she had a right to demand. Dashwood's financial blunders, an improvident loan, and a ludicrous

tax on cider, aggravated the popular clamour against the government.

All this while Bute, the target for the mob and innumerable pamphleteers, was being assailed with unparalleled virulence by Wilkes in *The North Briton*, a periodical called forth as a counterblast to *The Briton*, Smollett's hireling journal on the government side. On the 19th April 1763, the King's Speech in proroguing Parliament described the peace as honourable to his crown; on the 23rd appeared the famous No. XLV of *The North Briton*, denouncing the speech, and pouring obloquy on the ministers. The incidents that ensued are related by Chrysal with very little disguise or distortion. The king took the article as a personal attack upon his integrity, and moved heaven and earth to inflict vengeance on the writer. A general warrant was issued by the secretaries of state, Halifax and Egremont; forty-nine persons implicated in the printing and circulation of *The North Briton* were arrested; and Wilkes being declared the author was imprisoned under the same illegal authority. On May 6th, Lord Chief Justice Pratt decided that he was entitled to privilege of Parliament, and set him at liberty, the decision being followed by a series of actions for damage against the secretaries of state and their officials. It is stated that this unfortunate transaction cost the government more than a hundred thousand pounds. Wilkes, of course, became a popular idol; but in the next Parliament he was attacked with a bitterer animosity by the creatures of the government, the infamous *Essay on Woman* (which Wilkes did not write), being the instrument selected for his chastisement in the Lords, whilst the other House voted No. XLV a false and seditious libel, and ordered it to be burned by the hangman. Next day Wilkes was entrapped into his duel with the cowardly villain Martin, and as soon as his wound permitted he withdrew to Paris. Expulsion from the House of Commons and outlawry followed. To pursue his later history, the election for Middlesex and the agitation that evoked the *Letters of Junius*, would carry us beyond the period dealt with in *Chrysal*.

Picturing the brawls and factions of the time, we can realise the spirit in which the book was put together. Many of the incidents of the Wilkes imbroglio and other hotly-contested affairs must have been set down by Johnstone almost at the moment when they occurred, to be read by excited partisans a few weeks later. Large parts of the book, indeed, have all the sting and force of the keenest and most uncompromising journalism, and more deliberate and thoughtful force withal

than that exhibited by Junius in the hurry of a controversy in the press. The public and the private life of Fox and Sandwich, Lord Bute, Bubb Dodington, Wilkes and Churchill, and scores of others known or unknown to history, were related with hostile candour, and their portraits painted so clearly that, in spite of the absence of names, no one could mistake their identity.

One of the latest of the numerous reprints of *Chrysal* was edited by Sir Walter Scott, who compared the work with the *Asmodeus* of Lesage. *Chrysal*, or the Spirit of Gold, is embodied in a guinea, which passes through the hands of a number of eminent or obscure people, and gives an account of its experiences to an adept in the science of alchemy, whose unwearied constancy and perseverance have earned at length the right to receive the 'grand secret', the revelation of the mysteries of nature. *Chrysal* is a spirit like *Asmodeus*, with the same supernatural powers of insight; but there the resemblance ends, for the gold spirit has none of the tricky sprightliness and malicious wit that make the Spanish imp so entertaining a character. Johnstone was destitute of the good-humour and tolerance of Lesage; he had a bitter and sarcastic nature, and wrote his satire with a gloomy seriousness that was indeed the usual tone of the satiric muse in his day. Comparing the two satires, which resemble each other so exactly in their machinery, Scott rightly distinguishes between the Horatian spirit of *Asmodeus*, which is that of comedy, and the *sæva indignatio* of *Chrysal*, which is the temper of Juvenal. As in Lesage's story, the initial device makes any further connection between the episodes unnecessary and undesirable. *Chrysal* passes from hand to hand, is now at court and now in a pawnbroker's drawer, one day consorts with admirals and ministers, and the next with alehouse-keepers and thieves. Its peregrinations and strange vicissitudes of fortune are themselves a source of considerable entertainment, as were those of the halfpenny and the shilling in Richard Bathurst and Addison's stories in *The Adventurer* and *The Tatler*, from which Johnstone, no doubt, got some useful ideas. After resting a little while in the purse of General Wolfe, on the eve of his departure for Quebec, and witnessing his tender parting with Miss Lowther, afterwards Duchess of Bolton, the guinea suffers a series of quick changes, which may be related in its own words:—

My next master was one of the pillars of military glory, who had contributed a leg, an arm, and the scalp of his head to raise the trophies of the French in America. Though he was destitute of almost every comfort which nature really stands in need of, his

first care, on the acquisition of such a treasure as I was to him, was to gratify the artificial wants of luxury. He went directly to a gin-shop, where he chucked me for a quartern of that liquid fire; the taste of which was too pleasing to his palate, and the warmth too comfortable to his heart for him to be satisfied with so little. Quartern followed quartern till every sense was intoxicated, and he fell dead drunk on the floor, when his good-natured host had him kindly laid, to sleep off his debauch, on the next dunghill, first taking care to prevent his fellow inhabitants of the streets from robbing him of the rest of his treasure, by picking his pocket of it himself. The scenes I saw in this service were all of the same kind, but I was soon relieved from the pain of them, my master giving me as a present to an officer of the custom that very night. By this faithful steward of the public I was next morning given to the factor of a gang of smugglers, to be laid out for him in lace in Flanders, whither he was just going on the affairs of his profession. With this industrious trader I went as far as Harwich, where, while they waited for the tide, he lost me at a game of cribbage to a person who was going over with him.

This person was Aminadab, the rascally agent of the king's mistress, the Countess of Yarmouth, and in his company the coin becomes immersed in the political broils and warlike ferment of Europe at the outbreak of the Seven Years' War. Chrysal is an eye-witness of the execution of Byng; is able to give a full, true, and particular account of why Minorca was captured from the French; which officers behaved with cowardice, and who did their duty, what ministers were responsible for our unpreparedness; and, in a word, to apportion praise and blame with the fearlessness and decision of a modern halfpenny paper.

The guinea plays the part of special correspondent, visiting the battlefields of Frederick the Great and Ferdinand of Brunswick, victor of Minden; being opportunely present at most of the important sea-fights, and witnessing the military movements against the French in Canada. The incompetence, treachery, and cowardice of king's officers are everywhere the theme; the charges are corroborated by narratives supposed to be by an eye-witness; and the guilty are portrayed with personal touches that the man in the street recognized without a moment's hesitation. Chrysal sees everything as Johnstone wants it to be seen. He was a fervent admirer of Pitt and the war policy; and so, when the guinea gets into the purse of Frederick of Prussia, it finds him to be, not only a heaven-born general, fighting the battles of the Lord and of Protestantism, but a high-souled ascetic, who sets his people a shining example of piety, humility, and virtue. The guinea is also an anti-Semite, at a time when

hatred of the Jews was inveterate all Europe over ; and it has the good fortune to be present at a celebration of the Feast of the Passover, when the Jews are represented as offering up a Christian child as Paschal lamb.

This sort of thing is merely ridiculous ; but there is one offence of Johnstone's that cannot be forgiven, his ribald attack upon Whitefield. In this, as in many other cases, he was voicing a large section of public opinion, as can easily be verified by a glance at such contemporary works as Graves's *Spiritual Quixote* and Smollett's *Humphry Clinker*, not to mention Foote's scurrilous, but very amusing farce, *The Minor*. Johnstone surpasses even the last-named in the impudence and the grossness of his slander, and more still in the directness of its personality. Not content with adopting all the stupid innuendoes which the vulgar sinner loves to hurl at the unselfish zealot, he invents, or adopts without any attempt to sift, a lying but circumstantial account of Whitefield's birth and upbringing, and of his complicity with thieves and worse, that must have convinced ignorant readers that the saint was a hypocritical rogue. It is hard to suppose that an intelligent man like Johnstone swallowed all these monstrous fictions himself. His extravagance proves him a jaundiced and untrustworthy witness, a man who when he chose played unscrupulously to the mob. His book is a historical document only in the sense that it is a picture of public opinion at the time : still, public opinion is an important factor in the making of history. A man with the journalistic art of relating as fact the things he wants believed, with very little conscience, and an intimate and minute acquaintance with the backstairs chronicles of the period, Johnstone produced, in spite of his excesses, or by reason of them, one of the most damaging indictments of the public men he hated that was ever used in political warfare. While he remains the best or the only authority on such matters as the antics of the Medmenham buffoons, and a few other dark doings, most of his statements require the same discount as the future historian may be expected to apply to the views of personal conduct and private motive vouchsafed by the more prurient and sensational newspapers of the present day.

Half at least of the satire is directed against systematic corruption in high places. Sandwich and Fox, the first Lord Holland, are pilloried as examples of peculation on a truly colossal scale ; and George the Second's mistress, the Countess of Yarmouth, is exhibited as a glaring illustration of how vast sums were made by the sale of offices and titles. Ireland, she boasts, has been her privy purse for many years, appointments

in that blissful country requiring from candidates no qualifications whatever beyond the ability to pay her fee. 'An Irish title is the constant refuge of those sons of fortune who, not being born in the rank of gentlemen, or having forfeited it by their villainies, are desirous of changing their names for sonorous titles, to hide their disgrace, as it were, under a heap of honours'. City employments, however, even though of an inferior kind, were the most productive of blackmail. 'Her Grace' keeps a list of all the posts in the various services she controls, with their salaries and perquisites. Here is a bit of the dialogue respecting an application for the high office of Tapster to the Lord Mayor.

'Pray, what does he offer for it' ? asks the Countess.

'A thousand guineas, please your grace', replied the woman, 'which I really think enough for it considering everything'.

'Do you, indeed ; but I do not. Why, it is rated to me here as worth five hundred pounds a year ; and is that worth no more than a thousand guineas ? Does the fellow value his own life only at two years' purchase' ?

'Five hundred pounds a year ! How can that be ? The salary is no more than sixty ; there must be some mistake in your return'.

'The salary ! The salary signifies nothing, it is the perquisites ! The perquisites are the thing ! Do you think any place is valued by the salary ? The perquisites of this place are very considerable ! Let me see. Why, he buys in all the beer and gin himself, for which he can charge what price he pleases ; and then his own account is taken for the quantity that is drunk. Ay, indeed ; there must be a mistake in my return, to be sure, but not of the kind you mean. The place is rated too low ; for, with such opportunities, it must be worth twice the sum ; and I shall inquire into that matter before I dispose of the place. A thousand guineas for such a place ! I wonder at the fellow's conscience to make such an offer' !

Yet the rapacity of a king's mistress was outdone by the greediness of king's officers in both services. Chrysal gives a lurid, but not, in all probability, an exaggerated picture, of the proceedings after the capture of the wealthy Spanish emporium of Havana in 1762, when the admiral and the general of the British forces, Sir George Pocock and the Earl of Albemarle, not content with receiving the lion's share legally due to them of the enormous booty (actually £122,697, 10s. 6d. apiece, while the common sailors and marines obtained the sum of £3, 14s. 9½d. each), insisted on taxing the gains of the petty officers and men by keeping the sutler's stores at famine prices. Pocock, a lymphatic person, finds the climate fit for nothing but sleeping ; the clink of gold is the only thing that will

wake him. His clerk brings in the accounts, apologizing for the firm that had refitted the ship, who had been made to pay so exorbitantly for their contracts 'that it was impossible for them to sink the qualities of the stores so low, as to be able to give you anything worthy of your acceptance'.

'Not able to give me anything!' said the admiral, who had been aroused from his lethargic indifference by the first mention of his own affairs. 'They lie, the scoundrels; and I'll make them know it. The sick-lists show that they have sunk them with a vengeance, and beyond every degree of reason; and if they think I'll connive at their murdering the men, without having any share in the profit, they shall find themselves damnably out in their reckoning; and therefore do you go directly to every purser in the fleet, and order them to have a survey privately made of their worst stores, to produce when I call for it. I'll make them come down, and handsomely too, or they shall repent it'.

This more than Muscovite system of spoliation, and the still more galling methods of selling promotion for cash or other equivalent, poor men without influence getting never a chance of rising, and growing gray-headed as midshipmen, were the common grievance of our nautical romancers from Smollett to Marryat and Captain Chamier.

But there were other abuses in the navy. Several officers are gibbeted for accepting bribes to let the Spaniards alone, or for want of alacrity in bringing them to action, or again for an excess of that discretion which is said to be the better part of valour. There was Captain Lord Harry Powlett, for instance, afterward sixth Duke of Bolton, who being sent in chase of a sail, got his carpenter to report the stern-post loose, and the ship unfit for action. The nickname, 'Captain Sternpost' clung to this patrician warrior for life. The case of Lord George Sackville, who failed to charge at the battle of Minden, and so saved the enemy from total destruction, is more famous. Chrysal gives the harshest interpretation of his conduct; yet, after all, is not more severe on this misguided nobleman than was the minister of war, William Pitt, who protested strongly against Sackville's return to court under the Bute administration. Other defaulters, some of whom it is but just to say were acquitted on their court-martial, have their cases, so to speak, re-tried by Johnstone at the bar of public opinion, and come off pretty badly. Most of them are now of little interest except to special students, but it would be rash to suppose that their chastisement by our satirist afforded his readers less satisfaction than that of the more celebrated.

The prevailing gloom is lightened by two or three idealizations of goodness, such as the model commander of a king's ship, who represents rather what Johnstone thinks such an officer ought to be than any one of whom there is historical record; and by several really human portraits. One of the most attractive is that of the author's friend and fellow satirist, Charles Churchill; and another very engaging one is of a typical English tar. The latter is employed by an unfortunate Oriental to rescue him and his daughter from the clutches of the Inquisition. Having become a Christian, after the manner of some miraculously converted paynim in old romance, this man had sought asylum in a Christian country, but on landing had been instantly arrested by the Holy Office for 'errors of opinion'. Being rich, he entrusted the sailor with a large sum, to charter a vessel and carry him to England. Instead of pocketing the money, as many of his superiors, to judge by their habitual conduct, would forthwith have done with it, leaving the owner to his fate, the bluff mariner carries out his important commission with an honesty that is of a piece with his general character. He kicks against the need for strict obedience once only, when he is ordered not to attack a French man-of-war, twice his size.

The day after this affair, when they had all recovered their good humour, my master (the sailor) addressed his owner thus: 'Now, owner, while the sky is clear, and we have nothing else to do, I had better give you an account of your money. Here is the log-book, which you may overhaul at your leisure, though the sooner the better. This is the time, there is no taking a good observation in a storm, as may happen by and by; you will find all as fair as a new cable; but I must give you one point to direct your reckoning by, and that is this, you bade me buy a ship and freight her, and so forth, and she and the cargo should be my own, after I had done your job this trip. Now, owner, it is very true that a less vessel than this might have made the run, but then you seemed so desirous to be safe, that I thought it best to take a bargain in this stout ship, which I knew to be as good a sea-boat as ever turned to windward, and able to go, hank for hank, with anything that swims the sea, as we showed when we ran the Frenchman out of sight yesterday, though it went against my heart to do it. But no matter for that now; the ship is yours, and you have a right to be obeyed. However, there is the account, and here is the rest of your money, of which I did not lay out a shilling that I could avoid, but one guinea which I gave Will Cresstree, to repair his rigging, and one I gave Black Moll of Wapping; and I could not well avoid those neither, for Will was an old messmate, and I owed Moll for many a good turn in her way. But all this signifies nothing to you; they can be stopped in the account. And now, owner, as you may think this ship cost too much, and that the cargo is too good, I will not

keep you to your bargain ; she is your own, and all that is in her, only pay the men. As for me, I am satisfied with having got out of that damned Inquisition, and leave the rest to yourself. If you think that I have deserved anything, well and good ; if not, I do not fear bread while the sea flows round Old England. All that grieves me is, that you would not let us set fire to the Inquisition and cut the Inquisitor's throat'.

Chrysal gives the fullest extant account of the Hell-fire Club, or the Monks of Medmenham, the society of fashionable reprobates, who in the reign of George II, anticipated many of the rites and immoralities of the Parisian diabolists of recent times. In the ruins of a Cistercian abbey, at a secluded spot on the banks of the Thames, between Henley and Great Marlow, these men enacted an ignoble parody of Rabelais' Abbey of Thélème. The principal harlequin was Sir Francis Dashwood, the buffoon whom Lord Bute made Chancellor of the Exchequer, though he was reputed to be unable to do a sum of simple addition—after him the members of the order called themselves Franciscans. In the old chapter-house, this crew of debauched wits performed a burlesque ritual, founded partly on monastic ceremonies, and partly on classical rites and nondescript superstitions—the wildest orgies that could be found in books or invented by their own silly ingenuity. Besides Dashwood, the following were among the members : Wilkes and Churchill ; George Bubb Dodington, immortalized by Browning as the most abject sycophant of his time ; Robert Lloyd, a miserable 'poet,' who died in the Fleet ; Thomas Potter, whose father, the Archbishop of Canterbury, disinherited him for his dissolute life ; Paul Whitehead, the 'Tailor-poet' ; Sir William Stanhope, Henry Lovibond Collins, Sir John Dashwood King ; Lord March, afterwards the notorious Marquis of Queensbury ; Sir Benjamin Bates, the owner of Medmenham ; the Earl of Sandwich, and Sir Francis Duffield.

To be enrolled among this set of fashionable sinners was a distinction much sought after by a certain class of parasite ; but there was an order within the order, consisting of twelve more abandoned profligates, and to be elected to a seat in this sacred number was an honour courted by all. Chrysal describes a sitting of the blasphemous conclave, at which Wilkes and Dashwood are rival candidates for election. Wilkes being rejected contrives to revenge himself on his competitor by introducing a baboon, painted and dressed to represent the devil, at the moment when Dashwood is engaged in offering a sacrifice to his infernal majesty. There is uproar and confusion, in the midst of which the animal, scared to death,

jumps on the back of the startled neophyte, who thinks the demon he has been invoking has really answered his summons.

Spare me, gracious devil ' ! said he, ' spare a wretch who never was sincerely your servant ! I sinned only from vanity of being in the fashion ! Thou knowest I never have been half so wicked as I pretended ; never have been able to commit the thousandth part of the vices which I have boasted of. . . . I am but half a sinner. My conscience always flew in my face when I committed any crime ! My heart gave the lie to my tongue, when I gloried in my vices ; and I trembled at the damnation I affected to brave ! Oh, spare me, therefore, at least for this time, till I have served thee better. I am as yet but half a sinner ' .

It is not necessary to suppose, with some biographers, that this is a verbatim report of the proceedings ; but it is extremely likely that Wilkes played some practical joke on his aristocratic associates, which rankled in their minds when the profligate Sandwich took him hypocritically to task in the House of Lords for the alleged publication of that obscene parody, *The Essay on Woman*, really the work of Potter. But what must have been the effect of such a caricature of Sandwich and his coadjutors at a time when the country was in a riot from end to end against a Cabinet largely recruited from this gang. It will, perhaps, be a help to the reader to give some brief account of the more important actors in the story, especially of the members of the Hell-fire Club, who not only cut a conspicuous figure in the following pages, but were prominent in the life of the time.

The founder of the blasphemous order, Sir Francis Dashwood, was a young debauchee who, like the Earl of Sandwich and other libertines, loved to pose as a patron of the arts. He had been in Italy, and was a member of the Society of Dilletanti. A good story is told of an exploit in the Sistine Chapel one Good Friday, when a service of atonement was being held. Extinguishing the lights, a priest gives the signal for the penitents to bare their shoulders and chastise themselves with a small scourge carried by each. Dashwood was not satisfied with the quality of the self-inflicted punishment, and came armed with a horse-whip concealed beneath his coat. Swinging this right and left, he marched up and down the line of penitents, who shrieked that the devil was among them. Dashwood got away, but had to flee for his life from the papal territory. When he entered Bute's Cabinet, his speeches on finance were received with roars of laughter ; and his first budget, with the ingenious tax on cider, raised a storm in the West of England. He plumed himself on the title of the worst Chancellor of the Exchequer that ever lived,

and retiring on his laurels, was sent to the upper House as Lord le Despenser.

One much abler, but not less depraved of these votaries of diabolism was John Montagu, fourth Earl of Sandwich, celebrated for his ugly visage and charming manner. Born in 1718, and educated at Eton and Cambridge, he performed the grand tour, an account of which, purporting to be written by him, but more probably from the hand of his tutor, appeared posthumously, and on the strength of this experience he posed as a virtuoso. Returning to England on his coming of age, he at once plunged into politics. He became a commissioner of the Admiralty, and succeeded Bedford as First Lord, at the same time holding a commission in the army, where he rose by regular promotion to the highest rank in spite of the fact that his service was purely nominal. He appears to have taken a keen interest in naval affairs, and to have had the reputation of conducting his work efficiently. He was British plenipotentiary at Breda, and at the conclusion of the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle. Sandwich was no doubt a man of genuine capacity; but some of the redeeming features of his career, such as his responsibility for the reforms in the dockyards attributed to him, were probably merely the result of his taking credit for the work of subordinates. Owing to the jealousy between the Dukes of Newcastle and Bedford, Sandwich was dismissed from the Admiralty in 1751. Until 1763 he held only minor appointments, and then came back to this department.

The later career of Sandwich was more scandalous than that part of his history pertaining to the present work. As First Lord of the Admiralty, he used the vast powers at his disposal simply as a machine for political jobbery. He was alleged to have sold appointments, to have embezzled funds and sold government stores for his own benefit. The dockyards, at all events, fell into a shocking state under his administration, and the fleet grew rotten with neglect, so that many a ship was lost with all hands through the criminal mismanagement of those in office. The grosser charges have not been proved; but for the general maladministration Sandwich was undoubtedly responsible. Keppel's failure in 1778 was rightly attributed to Sandwich, whose residence was attacked by the mob. A scandalous revelation that ensued as to his private conduct, led to his final exit from public life in 1782. He died ten years later.

Churchill attacked him fiercely in *The Candidate*, written when the Earls of Hardwicke and Sandwich were contending for the High Stewardship of the University of Cambridge:

From his youth upward to the present day,
When vices, more than years, have mark'd him gray ;
When riotous excess, with wasteful hand,
Shakes life's frail glass, and hastes each ebbing sand,
Unmindful from what stock he drew his birth,
Untainted with one deed of real worth,
Lothario, holding honour at no price,
Folly to folly added, vice to vice ;
Wrought sin with greediness, and sought for shame
With greater zeal than good men seek for fame.

Lines 307-316.

The *Essay on Woman* is said by contemporary writers to have been addressed to this unvenerable Mæcenas. At any rate, the assumed indignation of his indictment of Wilkes in the Lords for publishing this poem, which Sandwich read with unextinguishable gusto to the peers in spite of continuous protest, was characteristic of his shameless cynicism. Lord Chesterfield is said to have penned the following character-sketch of Sandwich :

The art of robbing vice of its disgust, and throwing around it the mantle of convivial pleasure, belongs in a very peculiar manner to this nobleman. I understand, that from his youth to the present time, he has proceeded in one uniform, unblushing course of debauchery and dissipation. His conversation is chiefly tinged with unchaste expressions and indecent allusions ; and some have assured me that if these were to be omitted by him, much of his wit, or, at least, what is called his wit, would be lost.

The most talented, and if Chrysal is to be taken on trust, one of the vilest of the Medmenham friars, was Henry Fox, the founder of the Holland family. Born in 1705, son of Sir Stephen Fox, an old Cavalier, and younger brother of a respected gentleman, Stephen Fox, first Lord Ilchester, he squandered his fortune in gambling and extravagance soon after attaining his majority, and then took refuge on the Continent, where, as Chrysal relates, he re-established his finances by becoming the favourite of a rich old woman. He returned to England in 1735 and entered Parliament, distinguishing himself at once by his brilliant powers of debate. He became a faithful adherent of Sir Robert Walpole, who rewarded him with a lucrative appointment, and under Pelham he was made a Cabinet minister. He came into conflict with Pitt in repelling the latter's attack on the Duke of Cumberland, for he remained a staunch servant of both Cumberland and his former patron, Walpole. Though he entered the Newcastle administration in 1754, Fox was annoyed at having no hand in the distribution of the secret

service money, and, reconciled for the time being with Pitt, joined him in sarcastic criticism of Sir Thomas Robinson, Newcastle's leader of the House of Commons. He was, however, induced to desert Pitt by the offer of a seat in the Cabinet, a proceeding that damaged his character irrevocably. He resigned just before Newcastle in 1756. Under the Coalition Ministry, he managed to secure the immensely profitable office of Paymaster of the Forces, in which he devoted himself to the congenial task of piling up a huge fortune. He retained the same post under Bute, together with a lucrative sinecure, and was the main instrument in the scheme of wholesale corruption that secured parliamentary approval of the peace in 1763. Towards many of his old colleagues at this time Fox was savagely hostile. Newcastle, he recommended, should be stripped of his lieutenancies; and he invoked the wrath of the king on his dependents, demanding that all should be dismissed from their offices. Hated by all, Fox obtained the reward he had laboured for in a peerage, and a continuance of his appointment as Paymaster, which however, he had to surrender in 1765 to Charles Townsend. In 1769, several years after the incidents related in *Chrysal*, Fox was denounced in a petition from the City of London as the 'public defaulter of unaccounted millions'. He had followed the traditional course of his predecessors in leaving enormous balances outstanding for long periods, and pocketing the interest. Proceedings were taken after his death against his executor, who had to pay nearly a quarter of a million from the estate to the Treasury; but it was not finally proved that there was any intention to defraud the government of this large sum. Fox simply made the fullest use attaching to office in those days to enrich his family; and it is on record that he paid off the debts of his two sons for huge amounts, and left every member of his household amply provided for, although his means had been so slender on his entry into public life.

In spite of his public vices, Fox had many private virtues. His marriage with Lady Caroline Lennox was a love match, and their family life so singularly happy, that it inspired the eulogy of so sarcastic a poet as Sir Charles Hanbury Williams. How he devoted himself to his precocious son, Charles James Fox, is well known. Hated abroad, Fox was the pet of his household. The story of his treatment of Ayliffe is difficult to authenticate or disprove. *Chrysal*'s version, that accepted by Churchill, is the legend current against a detested minister at a time when anything would be believed in his dispraise.

John Wilkes, although a popular hero at the date when

the fourth volume of *Chrysal* was published, is treated therein to a severely critical inquisition into his real character. While the author makes Churchill out to be something like a saint disguised as a satirist, he does not adopt Churchill's view of his friend and ally. In the *Duellist* and other pieces, inspired by the first Wilkes agitation, Churchill painted him as a martyred patriot of stainless morals and purest self-abnegation.

When Wilkes, our countryman, our common friend,
Arose, his king, his country to defend ;
When tools of power he bared to public view,
And from their holes the sneaking cowards drew ;
When Rancour found it far beyond her reach
To soil his honour and his truth impeach ;

When that Great Charter, which our fathers bought
With their best blood, was into question brought ;
When, big with ruin, o'er each English head
Vile Slavery hung suspended by a thread ;
When Liberty, all trembling and aghast,
Fear'd for the future, knowing what was past ;
When every breast was chilled with deep despair,
Till Reason pointed out that Pratt was there.

Epistle to William Hogarth, 383-408.

Johnstone had no patience with these heroics. He knew that Wilkes was one of the worst of men in private life, and accordingly refused to believe that his righteous indignation against the government was really disinterested.

The character and history of Wilkes are too familiar to every one to require any detailed account here, and the same may be said of the poet Churchill. Two passages may be quoted from Churchill to illustrate how completely he was in sympathy in his poetical satire with the sentiments expressed by Johnstone in prose. The first is a general tirade, after the manner of Juvenal, on the suitability of the times for satire :

Whilst nobles act, without one touch of shame,
What men of humble rank would blush to name ;
Whilst Honour's placed in highest point of view,
Worshipp'd by those who justice never knew ;
Whilst bubbles of distinction waste in play
The hours of rest, and blunder through the day ;
With dice and cards opprobrious vigils keep,
Then turn to ruin empires in their sleep ;

Whilst Martin flatters only to betray,
And Webb gives up his dirty soul for pay ;

Whilst titles serve to hush a villain's fears ;
 Whilst peers are agents made, and agents peers ;
 Whilst base betrayers are themselves betray'd,
 And makers ruined by the thing they made ;
 Whilst C——, false to God and man, for gold,
 Like the old traitor who a Saviour sold,
 To shame his master, friend, and father, gives ;
 Whilst Bute remains in power, whilst Holland lives,
 Can Satire want a subject, where Disdain,
 By Virtue fired, may point her sharpest strain ?
 Where, clothed with thunder, Truth may roll along,
 And Candour justify the rage of song ?
Epistle to William Hogarth, 187-212.

The next passage is from the *Duellist*, an attack upon Samuel Martin, secretary to the Treasury, who considered himself insulted by the free observations of *The North Briton*, where he was described as 'the most treacherous, base, selfish, mean, abject, low-lived and dirty fellow that ever wriggled himself into a secretaryship'. This man challenged Wilkes while the proceedings in Parliament were going on, and having practised daily with the pistol for some time beforehand, succeeded in wounding his opponent dangerously. Wilkes thought he was done for, and begged his enemy to make his escape, although it was generally alleged that Martin had so arranged matters that, had he been killed, Wilkes would hardly have escaped a verdict of murder. The incident is alluded to on page 484. As soon as he was convalescent, Wilkes went to Paris for rest and change. During his absence, his case came up again in Parliament, and in spite of his sending a medical certificate of his inability to appear and defend himself, he was expelled from the House of Commons. The later events of his career—his return to England in 1768, and triumphant election for Middlesex, with the riots that ensued ; his re-entry into Parliament, election as Lord Mayor, and highly respectable after-life—do not at present concern us. Churchill came down heavily on the secretary Martin :

But should some villain, in support
 And zeal of a despairing court,
 Placing in craft his confidence,
 And making honour a pretence,
 To do a deed of deepest shame,
 Whilst filthy lucre is his aim ;
 Should such a wretch, with sword or knife
 Contrive to practise 'gainst the life
 Of one who, honoured through the land,
 For Freedom makes a glorious stand,

Whose chief, perhaps his only crime
 Is (if plain Truth in such a time
 May dare her sentiments to tell)
 That he his country loves too well ;
 May he—but words are all too weak
 The feelings of my heart to speak—
 May he—oh, for a noble curse
 Which might his very marrow pierce—
 The general contempt engage,
 And be the Martin of his age.

The Duellist, bk. i, 229-248.

Thomas Potter, the vicious son of the Doctor Potter who became primate of England, is stated to have been Wilkes's tutor in fashionable dissipation, and to have been the principal cause of his ruin ; though a man of Wilkes's strength of mind must have wanted only occasion to be as great a sinner as any of his contemporaries. Potter, Sandwich, and Dashwood were friends of Wilkes at the time when he was living with his wife, a wealthy woman ten years his senior, whose money he ran through, and whom he drove to protect herself by a deed of separation. Dashwood enrolled him among the Medmenham fraternity, where his high spirits, as already related, led him at least on one occasion to make his brethren look exceedingly foolish. In the storm aroused by *The North Briton*, No. XLV, the Medmenham scandal came to the light of day, Dashwood and Sandwich turned on their plebeian comrade, and in addition to the proceedings against him for sedition, tried to involve him in the charge of printing and publishing the unspeakable *Essay on Woman*, which had been fathered on Warburton. Wilkes had previously offended Dashwood by lampooning his cider tax. There is not much reason to doubt that the real author of the *Essay* was Potter. The question was very fully dealt with by C. W. Dilke in *Notes and Queries*, second series, vol. 4, 1-2 and 41-3. Potter figures in Hogarth's election print as the handsome candidate. He was reputed to be on too intimate terms with the wife of Warburton, and to be the father of her son ; and perhaps Warburton's name was attached to the burlesque notes to the *Essay* because of a quarrel he had had with that prelate.

One of the Medmenham circle who is not expressly designated by Chrysal, was Paul Whitehead, the 'Tailor-poet', whose literary career opened in the Fleet prison, and was continued in the capacity of paid satirist and pamphleteer to the friends of Frederick, Prince of Wales, when he was in opposition to the government. He was a close friend of Dashwood, to whom he owed the dignity on which he

prided himself as secretary and steward of the Hell-fire Club. Churchill says of him :

A nation's reckoning, like an alehouse score,
Whilst Paul, the aged, chalks behind the door,
Compell'd to hire a foe to cast it up,
Dashwood shall pour, from a communion cup,
Libations to the goddess without eyes,
And hob or nob in cyder and exoise.

The Candidate, 697-702.

Dashwood, in his brief career as Bute's Chancellor of the Exchequer, gave Whitehead a post worth £800 a year. In gratitude he left his heart to Dashwood, now Lord le Despenser, who had the precious relic inurned and buried with pompous ceremonial in the mausoleum at High Wycombe, and crowned with the following epitaph :

From earth to heaven Whitehead's soul is fled ;
Refulgent glories beam about his head ;
His Muse, concurring with resounding strings
Gives angels words to praise the King of Kings.

It is true that the poet before his death had burned all his erotic and atheistic verses ; but Churchill's lines would have made a more fitting epitaph :

May I (can worse disgrace on manhood fall ?)
Be born a Whitehead, and baptized a Paul.

One of the other friars was Robert Lloyd, an old school-fellow of Churchill's at Westminster, and subsequently usher for several years at the same school, an employment he detested. Churchill is said to have led him into a course of dissipation, which eventually landed him in a debtor's prison. Lloyd had already thrown up school-teaching to write poetry. His *Actor* is supposed to have given Churchill the idea of the *Rosciad*. For eighteen months he edited *The St James's Magazine*, and whilst in the Fleet he maintained himself in a miserable way as a bookseller's hack. He was only thirty-one when he died in gaol, nursed by his sweetheart, Churchill's sister.

The quack, mentioned on page 371, is the notorious Dr John Hill, whose articles, pamphlets, and pseudo-scientific treatises made the same profit out of the popular ignorance and credulity of his day, as is made now by innumerable journalists from the half-educated majority of those who read.

He failed successively as apothecary, author, actor, and scientist; and was therefore, according to the best authority, suitably qualified to set up as a critic of successful practitioners in those vocations. He won himself a reputation with the publishers by a *Natural History* in three folio volumes, and a supplement to Chambers's *Dictionary*, which he followed up with an absurd hoax on the Royal Society, which had rejected him, entitled *Lucina sine Concubitu*. From 1746 to 1750, he edited a monthly, *The British Magazine*. Unscrupulous narratives of private scandals; diurnal effusions in *The Daily Advertiser* under the title of *The Inspector*, dealing with natural history subjects in an elephantine style, cunningly adapted to the ignorance of the average reader; weekly sermons for the Sabbath, and egregious laudations of his own virtues and attainments, poured forth from the year 1751 in a ceaseless torrent. He made £1500 a year by means of this exuberant clap-trap, and was decorated with a Swedish order, on the strength of which he called himself Sir John. Garrick was persuaded to put a farce of Hill's on the stage in 1758, but it was damned at once, eliciting Garrick's epigram:

For physic and farces, his equal there scarce is;
His farces are physic, his physic a farce is.

In the *Rosciad*, Churchill sketches him as follows:

With sleek appearance and with ambling pace,
And type of vacant head with vacant face
The Proteus Hill puts in his modest plea—
'Let Favour speak for others, Worth for me,'—
For who, like him, his various powers could call
Into so many shapes, and shine in all?
Who could so nobly grace the motley list
Actor, inspector, doctor, botanist?
Knows any one so well—sure no one knows—
At once to play, prescribe, compound, compose?
Who can—but Woodward came,—Hill slipped away,
Melting like ghosts before the rising day.

This alludes to his quarrel with Woodward the comedian, who, having been insolently attacked, put him on the boards in a way he had not courted, in *The Mock Doctor*, a farce that was repeated a good many times at Drury Lane. Another victim pulled his nose in public. Hill retaliated by pretending to be seriously injured, and charging his enemy with attempt to murder, and actually got the man incarcerated. The encounter made considerable noise at the time, and was

celebrated in some amusing caricatures, in one of which the assailant is represented as addressing Hill in these words: 'Draw your sword, swaggerer! if you have the spirit of a mouse'! to which Hill replies, 'What! an illiterate fellow who can't spell! I prefer a drubbing'. Fielding castigated the impostor repeatedly in *The Covent Garden Journal*, but failed to extinguish him. When a new periodical he had started under the name of *The Impertinent* came to an untimely end, Hill had actually the effrontery to glory over its failure in his *Inspector*, a piece of cowardly impudence that eventually came to light, and inspired one of the objects of his abuse, Christopher Smart, to write a caustic satire, *The Hilliad*. The poem opens with this invocation:

O thou whatever name delight thine ear,
Pimp! Poet! Puffer! 'Pothecary! Player!
Whose baseless fame by vanity is buoy'd
Like the huge earth self-centr'd in the void.

About the date when *Chrysal* was written, the palmy days of Hill's journalism were over. Encouraged by his patron, Lord Bute, he began a vast botanical work, *The Vegetable System*, in twenty-six folio volumes, with an enormous number of plates. It was not a success, and involved him in pecuniary losses, which he made good, however, by the manufacture of quack medicines on a huge scale. At the accession of George III he got the appointment of gardener at Kensington, with a salary of £2000 a year. He died in 1775.

An excellent specimen of Johnstone's incisive gifts of portraiture is the following rough sketch of the chameleon actor Foote, whose amazing powers of mimicry were celebrated by Churchill in *The Rosciad*:

The person my master was sent to meet had something so uncommon in his appearance as instantly struck my attention. Every passion of the human heart was printed in his face so strongly that he could at pleasure display it in all its force, while his very look and gesture turned some vice or folly into ridicule.

'You inquire for Number One, sir!' said my master, bowing with the profoundest respect.

'I do, sir', answered the other, returning his bow, assuming his look, and imitating his voice, in a manner that would have extorted laughter from despair, 'inquire for Number One'.

Though my master was no stranger to his talents, which he had often seen him display at the expense of others, this personal application of them to himself threw him into such confusion that, in spite of his long-practised assurance, a blush broke feebly through his unimpassioned, lifeless face, and he had scarce power to show

him into the room. The ballad-singer (Foote) seeing that he had him at command, would not pursue his advantage any farther at that time, for fear of frightening him away; but putting on the exact countenance, and mimicking the voice and manner of the doctor (Whitefield), 'I am come, my friend and brother in the Lord', said he, 'to inquire into thy spiritual state, to give thee ghostly advice, and commune with thee, for a short space, for our mutual edification'.

The surprise and manner of this address had such an effect upon my master that he could not refrain bursting into laughter; and immediately recovered from the confusion into which the ridicule of himself had thrown him.

A good deal is said in *Chrysal* about Foote's cruel attack upon Whitefield in *The Minor*, and some of the references need a little elucidation. The most uproarious comedy in this scurrilous piece is concentrated on the stage version of Mother Douglas, a notorious character who lived magnificently in Covent Garden, and was reputed to be one of Whitefield's proselytes. Foote himself took the part, and made it a popular success in London, though a Dublin audience had proved too squeamish, and voted Woodward's rendering offensive to decency and also to their own opinion of the Revivalists. The horribly droll manner in which this caricature of a woman mixes up spiritual and carnal things, is comedy of a broad but very entertaining kind, and the satire must have been overwhelming with an audience bitterly prejudiced against the Methodists. Foote as Momus, and Mrs Cole (*alias* Mother Douglas) as Mrs Brimstone, act a grotesque scene in *Chrysal*, along with their supposed friend and accomplice Squintum, or Whitefield, who is represented in the most odious manner as a sanctimonious rascal, who has taken up preaching as a money-making speculation, and employs people of the stamp of Mrs Brimstone to bring grist to the mill by corrupting those who are afterwards to be led into the true fold. Cowper speaks out nobly upon the unjust retraction of Whitefield's good name, general at this time:

Leuconomus (beneath well sounding Greek
I slur a name a poet must not speak),
Stood pilloried on infamy's high stage,
And bore the pelting storm of half an age;
The very butt of Slander and the blot
For every dart that Malice ever shot.
The man that mentioned him, at once dismissed
All mercy from his lips, and sneered, and hissed,
His crimes were such as Sodom never knew,
And Perjury stood up to swear it true;

His aim was mischief, and his zeal pretence,
 His speech rebellion against common sense ;
 A knave when tried on honesty's plain rule,
 And when by that of reason a plain fool ;
 The world's best comfort was, his doom was passed,
 Die when he might he must be damned at last.

Now, Truth, perform thine office ; waft aside
 The curtain drawn by Prejudice and Pride,
 Reveal (the man is dead) to wondering eyes
 This more than monster in his proper guise.
 He loved the world that hated him ; the tear
 That dropped upon his Bible was sincere ;
 Assailed by scandal and the tongue of strife,
 His only answer was a blameless life,
 And he that forged, and he that threw, the dart,
 Had each a brother's interest in his heart.
 Paul's love of Christ, and steadiness unbribed,
 Were copied close in him, and well transcribed ;
 He followed Paul, his zeal a kindled flame,
 His apostolic charity the same ;
 Like him, crossed cheerfully tempestuous seas,
 Forsaking country, kindred, friends, and ease ;
 Like him he laboured, and like him content
 To bear it, suffered shame where'er he went.

Blush, Calumny ! and write upon his tomb,
 If honest eulogy can spare thee room,
 Thy deep repentance of thy thousand lies,
 Which, aimed at him, have pierced the offended skies ;
 And say, ' Blot out my sin, confessed, deplored,
 Against thine image, in thy saint, O Lord ' !

Johnstone, it must be confessed, is not a humourist. His satire is principally of the brutal order ; yet he has many attractions for the intellectual reader. He abounds in shrewd observations on the common fallacies of conduct. Of attorneys, he says for instance, the very name of whose profession had become a reproach, ' such is the perverseness of man, that if a child betrays an early propensity to chicane and fraud, by setting his playfellows together by the ears, and cozening them of their toys, he is immediately marked for this profession, and instead of being corrected for such a disposition, and having it nipped in the bud, is encouraged in it, by having it made the omen and ground of his future success in life, till it is confirmed beyond the sense of shame and remorse, and becomes the ruling principle of his life '. Like a contemporary work, *The Fool of Quality*, published in this series, *Chrysal* contains numerous anticipations of future reforms, many of them yet in the remote distance, showing the author to have been a far-sighted thinker. He pleads for

a fairer education for women, who, he says, are prevented from 'rising to that excellence, the want of which is objected to them', mainly by the disadvantages due to a wrong system of training and instruction. In politics he pleads for 'One man one vote', absolute freedom of election, and parliaments lasting for only one session, so as to keep perfectly in touch with their constituents. He has wise words on duelling, and countless other abuses of his own and later times. That he was no self-deceiver as to the effective worth of his satire, and in spite of his atrabilious disposition, was well aware of his own foibles, is witnessed by the observation he puts in the mouth of one of his characters. It is

'A task that will give you the pleasing opportunity of indulging that misanthropy which inspires the muse of a satirist, and is mistaken for virtue, because it rails against vice; for, blazon it out as pompously as you will, nothing but ill-nature can make a man take delight in exposing the defects of others; and the more forcibly he does it, the more powerful must that principle be with him'.

With which caveat he may be left to the reader.

E. A. B.

PREFACE

To acquit myself of the suspicion of presuming to aim at particular characters in the following work, should any fancied likeness be thought to direct an application, as well as to do justice to the real author of it, I think it my duty to make known the manner by which it happened to come into my hands.

As I was walking one morning, last summer, along White-chapel, I was obliged to take shelter from a shower of rain in a cottage near the turnpike. The family were at breakfast, at their tea, and, as the rain continued, I had leisure to reflect on the advantages of commerce, which thus, in a manner, joins the opposite extremities of the earth, by bringing their products together; at the same time, that the variety in the equipage of the tea-table, or indeed stool, on which 'there was nothing of a piece', suggested a just ridicule on the vanity of luxury.

This last reflection was extended to all the pursuits of man, on the sight of a piece of written paper, that served instead of a plate to hold their butter. 'Who knows', thought I, "but the writer of this bestowed time and care upon it, and promised himself both profit and fame, in reward of his labour"?

This thought raised a curiosity to look at the paper, which, by this time, was scraped quite clean. I, therefore, after a few words of conversation, to introduce my request, desired leave to see it, which was readily granted, when I was surprised to find my conjecture, as I imagined, confirmed, by its appearing to be part of some regular work.

Curiosity had now a stronger motive than idle gratification! I asked where they had got that paper; and on their telling me at the chandler's shop next door, though this discouraged me a good deal, I resolved to pursue my inquiry, and went to the shop, as if for some snuff, which, as I expected, was given me on a piece of the same paper.

The rain still giving me a pretence for delaying there, I entered into discourse with the woman, and among other idle

questions, asked her where she usually got paper to wrap her wares in, to which she answered :

‘ Sometimes from the public offices, and sometimes from the booksellers and printers ; and when she was disappointed at those places, she was forced to buy brown paper, which was much dearer ; though at present, she made use of some old stuff that had lain a great while lumbering her garret, having belonged to a lodger of her mother’s, who died many years ago ’.

I then changed the discourse, for fear she should perceive my design ; but presently seeing her going to tear more, for somebody else that came in, I could not forbear any longer, but offered her brown paper for all the written paper she had, as that was most proper for some work I designed, which she readily agreed to, and sold me her whole stock for eighteen-pence.

This adventure put an end to my walk, so I took the first coach that went by and hurried home to examine my purchase, which I found to consist of a number of fragments, upon various subjects, whether originally left unfinished, or torn thus in the chandler’s shop, it was impossible to say ; and, among the rest, the following work, which seemed to have undergone a different, though not much better fate, being blotted in many places, often paragraphs, and sometimes whole pages, being erased ; and, what was worst, this havoc was made in the most curious and entertaining part of the whole, the philosophy of the nature and agency of spirits.

The oddity of this collection made me resolve to try if I could learn anything of the author from the woman of the shop, where I had made my purchase ; accordingly I called upon her one evening, as if merely by accident, and sending for a pint of wine, to set her tongue a-going, I no sooner hinted my desire, than she directly gave me the following account, which I shall repeat as nearly as possible, in her own words, shortening it only of expletive exclamations and repetitions.

‘ My father ’, said she, ‘ dying young, and leaving his family but poorly, my mother took this shop to help her to bring up three children, of whom I, the eldest, was but five years old. The times being hard, she was obliged to make every honest shift, and therefore took in lodgers, and, among the rest, an elderly man, who rented the garret to sleep in, and a little turret in the garden, which he fitted up for himself for a workshop ; but what business he followed she never knew, as he let nobody see him at work ; nor did she trouble herself to inquire, as he always paid her punctually ; but she imagined

he was a smith of some sort, from the quantities of charcoal he burned, and the constant blowing of his bellows.

‘ In this place he spent all his time, often not quitting it for whole days and nights together, till hunger has forced him to crawl like a starved rat out of his hole, to get a bit of victuals.

‘ At first my mother was uneasy at this, and imagining he must be out of his mind, or troubled in conscience, she spoke about him to a worthy gentleman, a clergyman, that lived in the neighbourhood ; but he coming to see him at a time when he had a clean shirt on, and had eat his victuals, and slept regularly for some time before, his discourse was so sensible and pleasant, that the doctor could not help telling him the cause of his visit as a joke at my mother, to whom he said, when he was going away, that, so far from being mad, he believed her lodger was the best scholar in the whole parish.

‘ My mother’s good-nature had like to have lost her her lodger, for, as soon as the doctor was gone, he gave her warning, but upon her promising never to be guilty of the like indiscretion again, nor to trouble herself any further about him, than just to give him what he should call for, he consented to stay.

‘ From that time he lived among us as unnoticed as he could desire, following his business without disturbance from any one, nor appearing to give himself the least trouble about that of any other person living, except it was me, whom he taught to read, and said he would make his heir. An unhappy heirship, I am sure, for me ; for it hindered my marrying Jack Twist, the rope-maker, who was the toppingest man in all Radcliff Highway, and then offered to take me in my shift.

‘ But there’s no help for that now ! Luck is all ; to be sure we thought he must be some extraordinary man, for he never wanted money, and then we used to hear him talk to himself sometimes, as if all the world was his own, of building colleges, and churches, and houses, and altering St Paul’s, and I do not know what great things ; and one day in particular, I remember he said before us all, that before seven years, he would hire an army that should drive the pope and the Devil (Lord bless us !) out of Rome ; for to be sure, he would talk before us, as if we could not hear him, as we would also do anything before him as freely as if he was a cat or a dog ! Well, as I was saying, it was no wonder, to be sure, that such ignorant poor folks as we should think much of him, especially after what the doctor said, and accordingly built great hopes upon his promises.

‘ He went on thus for near twenty years, no soul ever coming

near him, nor he going out above once or twice in a year, and then not staying above an hour or two at a time.

‘At length his health began to break very much, which made my mother often speak to him, not to work so hard, for he had been with us so long, and was so quiet, and paid so honestly, that we all loved him as if he was our father. But her advice was all to no purpose; he still went on, bidding her not trouble herself, nor be afraid about him. But this did not satisfy her; and one day, when he had been locked up from the morning before, without having any victuals or going to bed, she resolved to break through his orders and call him to dinner.

‘When she came to the turret, which he called his laboratory, she tapped gently at the door; but receiving no answer, nor hearing any noise within, she was so frightened, that she called me to fetch the kitchen poker, with which we made a shift to force it open, when we found the poor man stretched at his length upon the floor, to all appearance dead.

‘This shocked us greatly; but we did not alarm the neighbours, as we imagined there were things of value there, that might be misplaced, or taken away in the confusion; we therefore raised him up ourselves, and, after a little while, perceiving signs of life, carried him in, and laid him in our own bed, and, pouring some drops into his mouth and nose, at length brought him to himself, when his first care was to inquire for the key of the turret, whether any one else had been there, or anything in it stirred. Our answers satisfying him he seemed quite easy, and in a little time recovered, to all appearance as well as ever.

‘From this time, he changed his way of life a good deal; and though he was much in the turret, which we observed he ever after called his study, and not his laboratory, he never sat up whole nights in it, as before, nor bought any more charcoal, nor even oil for his lamp, but went to bed orderly when we did.

‘But this change came too late; for about six months after, we found him one morning dead in his bed, though he had been as cheery in the evening before as he had for a long time.

‘This was a great surprise and concern to us! But what avails grief? We must all die, and he was a very old man. As soon as we were certain that he was dead, the first thing my mother and I did, was to go to the turret, impatient enough to take possession of our heirship, where, Lord help our poor heads! did we find only a few great old books, and those papers you got; the very bellows and tools, and pots that we

saw there before, being all gone, and no more sign of a workshop to be seen than if it was not the same place we had been in six months before. What he could have done with his things we could not imagine, for we never observed him to carry them out, so that we concluded he must have burned them.

‘This was a sore disappointment to me, not to mention the loss to my mother, to whom he owed a quarter’s rent, besides an account of near twenty shillings in the shop ; and seven shillings and twopence halfpenny was all the money in his pocket, nor did we ever find one penny more after him, though we searched close enough !

‘Well ! patience is a remedy for all things but death ; we were forced to submit ; though I cannot help grieving when I think of it, to this day, especially when I see Peg Sprout, the green-woman’s daughter from Wapping, that Jack Twist married out of despair, when I refused him, ride by in her chaise, like a lady ; and it is now thirty years ago ! No ! let me see, it will be exactly twenty-nine years come next Michaelmas ; I am sure I have reason to remember it well, for my poor mother took it so to heart that she never held up her head after, till it finished her, in about nine years ; though I cannot say but something else might have helped, for she took cruelly to drinking drams, though as she began it to comfort her for this misfortune, it was all owing to that ; that poor sister Bet, too——’

I was obliged to interrupt her here, by asking her what kind of a person he was, or she would have gone on to give me the history of her whole family.

My curiosity being thus satisfied as to the author, there was but one thing more that I desired to know, and that was, how those papers came to have so many blots made in them, which by the difference of ink, I could see was done long since the first writing ? To which she answered, that, some time after the old man’s death, her mother let his apartment to one that called himself a clergyman, and was a great scholar, and used to make almanacks and other books ; that he had looked over those papers, and, she believed, taken out such as he liked, and done what he pleased with the rest, for they set no regard on them ; and particularly she remembered to have heard him say, that he would make something of one of them ; but she believed he found it would not do, for he soon after left their house, and, joining with those Methodists that were just then come up, went away with them, preaching about the country.

I thought it but reasonable to reward the good woman’s expense of breath with half-a-crown, and so took my leave,

though with a secret resolution to give her half the profit, if there arises any, from the sale of the books ; not thinking that such a purchase as I had made from an ignorant woman could give me a just title to the whole heirship, as she called it, that had cost her so dear as the loss of her old sweetheart, Jack Twist.

This good woman's account explained to me, in some measure, the nature of this work, for the circumstances of the author, who, I could see, had been a schemer who had wasted his whole fortune in the search after the philosopher's stone, and having his eyes at length opened to his folly, though too late to remedy it, yet was able to divert the grief of his disappointment, by writing these papers, in ridicule of such notions, and from the sale of which he might also expect some relief to his wants.

But, whatever the motive was, the loss is now irreparable, and has reduced the work to the appearance of a novel or romance, almost the whole philosophical part having been erased ; for, as to the personal application of anything in it to the present times, the least attention to this account of the author will show the absurdity and injustice of such an attempt ; as it was written so long ago, and by a person so little acquainted with the world, that all the stories in it must necessarily be the mere creatures of imagination.

For the manner in which they are published I shall only say, that it is strictly agreeable to the faith of the text ; not one of the many alterations and interpolations, which were in another hand, being given ; but wherever I could not clearly make out the very words of the author, I honestly omitted the whole, not thinking it allowable or just to palm my own words or sentiments upon the world, or the credit of another.

How scrupulous I have been in this point will appear to any one who shall take the pains of consulting the original manuscript, which shall be deposited in the public library of one of the universities, as soon as the work is printed. The only liberty I have taken being in a few notes in the margin, and supplying a connection, where it was broken by any of the above-mentioned accidents.

CHRYMAL.

CONTENTS

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	v
PREFACE	xxxiii
BOOK I	1
BOOK II	165
BOOK III	337
INDEX	519

CHRYSAI—VOL. I

CHAPTER I

THE APPARITION OF CHRYSAI TO AN ADEPT, IN THE VERY MOMENT
OF PROJECTION—HIS ACCOUNT OF HIMSELF, AND THE CAUSE OF
HIS APPEARING TO THE AUTHOR

ON a day, when long and strict abstinence had purified my body from every terrene encumbrance, and intense contemplation wound up my mind to an enthusiasm fit for empyreal conversation, as I stood with my eyes riveted on the obstetric flame, in strong expectation of the birth of the mystic child, the first-born of the morning, ready to seize the happy moment when the earth, sufficiently impregnated with the water, ascendeth white and splendid, that I might compound the pure elements, before they fly from the fire, and so perfect the great work, my eyes began to dazzle, and the power of imagination overwhelmed my soul. I saw a blue effulgence break from the liquid gold and play about the genial vase. I was astonished! I thought it the substantial form of the son of the sun! I thought the happy moment was come, when the rose of the East should bloom in the desert, and mine the favourite hand to cultivate its growth! I indulged the pleasing thought; I melted in the virtuous joy; and, in obedience to the divine impulse, I kneeled to receive the reward of all my labours, the radiant crown of wisdom and glory, from the hand of Nature, with every sense and faculty suspended, for fear of interrupting the mysterious process.

As my soul hung in this ecstasy, the flame which wrapped the sacred birth in the bed of purification arose with the glory too strong for mortal sense and filled the room. My senses sank under the pressure, and I was dissolved into a trance, when a voice, celestially harmonious, encouraged me to raise my eyes, and I beheld the body of the effulgence condense into an incorporeal substance in the form of a spirit, while a placid shade softened the fierceness of the radiance, and made it tolerable to human sense.

An holy horror curdled all my blood; but the melody of the same voice, which had before emboldened me to look up, reassured my fainting heart with these words:—

‘Son of pains and votary of science! thy unwearied perseverance

has prevailed, and I am sent to crown thee with a virgin rose ! I am Chrysal¹, the spirit of that incorruptible mass now glowing in that vase before thee, who, in reward of thy noble constancy in offering this thy last mite on the shrine of knowledge, am come to reveal to thee the mysteries of Nature, and satisfy that raging thirst for wisdom which has so long excruciated thy soul, and thus emaciated thy body. And that thou mayest the better comprehend the greatness of this honour vouchsafed unto thee, I shall trace the operations of Nature through her most secret recesses, and illustrate the truth of what I say by a detail of the various incidents of my being in my present state, to prepare thee for the reception and proper use of the grand secret, which I shall afterwards communicate.

‘I can see your thoughts ; and will answer every doubt which may arise in your mind at the wonders of my relation without the interruption of your inquiries, as awful silence is the essence of my converse, the least breach of which puts an end to it for ever ! Listen, then, in mute attention, nor let a breath disturb the mystic tale ’ !

The works of Nature are infinitely various, and her methods of operation inscrutable to the curiosity of that vain intruder, Reason, which has of late presumed to pry into her ways, and to doubt, if not deny, the reality of all effects which her short-sighted eye cannot trace to their causes ; a presumption that has justly shortened the line of human knowledge, and condensed the mist of ignorance which overspreads the world. Some noble efforts, though, I see the nature of man preparing to make, to recover that eminence of conjecture and credulity which alone can merit such a communication of extraordinary knowledge as is now indulged to you. Some of the most hidden truths which I shall here unfold has unassisted genius discovered already ; and more shall curious penetration make learned guesses at, even in this sceptic age².

Know, then, that in the economy of Nature, to ease the trouble and keep up the state of its great author, ‘a subordination of ministerial spirits execute the system of his government in all its degrees ; one of whom, for the greater order and expedition, is made to actuate every divided particle of matter in this immense universe’³. In this distribution, that portion of gold was assigned to my charge, upon its first feeling the influence of the ‘ethereal fire of the sun, the general minister of the divine commands’⁴. This happened in Peru, where that body, of which I then became the spirit, was

¹ This name is evidently derived from *Χρυσός*, gold, and may probably signify golden, from her animating a piece of gold ; for, by the universal authority of the occult philosophy, spirits are always denominated from their office.

² See all the modern hypothetical philosophy.

³ *Essay on Spirit.*

⁴ *Siris.* Would not these, and many other passages of the same nature which support the systems of those celebrated works almost tempt us to think that the writers of them must have had a communication with this or some such spirit, to come at knowledge so supernatural ?

torn from its peaceful bed, two hundred fathoms deep in the bowels of the earth.

I shall not describe my surprise at my first plunging into those realms of darkness; nor shall I satisfy the curiosity I see rising in you, whether that period was the beginning of my existence, or whether I was, either as a punishment or reward for a past, or a preparation for a future life, thrown into this. These are mysteries not yet discovered, though often most learnedly guessed at. All I shall unfold to you are points already known, or such as I see ready to be found out by human industry, as it would put an end to learning to make a revelation of the objects of its inquiries. Such matters, I say, I shall explain to you, and further relate some occurrences, the knowledge of which will be equally useful and entertaining, which happened to the several persons with whom I have had intercourse in the various stages of my present state.

And, as you may be at a loss to know how I could arrive at the knowledge of such facts, many of which happened long before my converse with those persons, I shall inform you that, besides that intuitive knowledge common to all spirits, we of superior orders, who animate this universal monarch, Gold, have also a power of entering into the hearts of the immediate possessors of our bodies, and there reading all the secrets of their lives. And this will explain to you the cause of that love of gold which is so remarkable in all who possess any quantity of that metal. 'For the operation of every material is in proportion to the strength of the spirit actuating that cause; as the strength of the spirit is reciprocally in proportion to the quantity of his material body¹': and consequently, when the mighty spirit of a large mass of gold takes possession of the human heart, it influences all its actions, and overpowers, or banishes the weaker impulse of those immaterial, unessential notions called virtues. And this intuition and power of transmigration I have thus explained to remove every shadow of doubt of what I shall relate.

CHAPTER II

CHRYSAI GIVES AN ACCOUNT OF THE PERSON WHO DUG UP HIS BODY IN THE MINE—THE PARTICULAR MANNER OF HIS ACQUIRING THE KNOWLEDGE OF HIS LIFE, WITH AN EXPLANATION OF THE NATURE OF MEMORY AND CONSCIOUSNESS

THE first object that struck me, when I darted on the power of a sunbeam into those infernal regions where my body was just dug up, was the person in whose hands it was when I took possession of it.

Dark as the gloom of such a place must be, a melancholy that doubled all the horrors of it sat upon his brow. He gazed a moment

¹ *Essay on Spirit*

on me¹, in silent grief, and then groaned out these words with a vehemence that seemed to burst his heart :—

‘ Damned, damned, pernicious, damning gold ! how dearly do I purchase this momentary possession of thee ! But let me acknowledge the justice of my fate. I wished only for gold, and now this equivocal grant of that wish is the just punishment of the folly and the wickedness of it ’.

Grief here choked his utterance. He could say no more, but sobbed aloud, while all the dreary caverns echoed to his anguish.

Curiosity prompted me to learn the cause of his distress : I therefore immediately entered into his heart to read the events of his life, which I doubted not but I should find deeply imprinted there : but I was surprised to find that room in it which, I could plainly see, had been possessed by the love of gold, so filled with sense of pain, with grief and remorse, that I could scarce gain admission.

Upon this I mounted into the sensorium of his brain, to learn from the spirit of consciousness, which you call Self, the cause of so uncommon a change, as it is contrary to the fundamental rules of our order ever to give up a heart of which we once get possession.

I found the spirit very busy, though I thought somewhat oddly employed. She was running over a number of niches, or impressions, on the fibres of the brain, some of which I observed she renewed with such force that she almost effaced others, which she passed over untouched, though interspersed among them. The sight of me seemed to suspend her works a moment ; but, as if that pause was only to recover strength, she instantly renewed her labour with great assiduity. I looked at her my desire to know the meaning of what she was doing, and to signify the cause of my visit, to which she returned me this answer, in a glance that interrupted not her work.

(I see you wonder that I speak of this spirit, though the *self* of a man, as if it was a female ; but in this there is a mystery. Every spirit is of both sexes, but as the female is the worthier with us, we take our denomination from that.)

You are surprised, looked she, to find me so earnestly engaged in work which you do not understand ; but in this work consists my very essence. This place where we are is the seat of memory, and these traces which you see me running over thus are the impressions made on the brain by a communication of the impressions made on the senses by external objects. These first impressions are called *ideas*, which are lodged in this repository of the memory in these marks, by running which over I can raise the same ideas when I please, which differ from their first appearance only in this, that, on their return, they come with the familiarity of a former acquaintance².

How this communication is made, I cannot, however, so well

¹ Chrysal must here mean the gold which now became her body, as she does not say that she appeared in the spirit to any one before the author.

² See all the modern philosophy.

inform you; whether it is by the oscillation of the nervous fibres, or by the operation of a certain invisible fluid, called animal spirits, on the nerves; no more than I can explain to you how my touching these marks on this material substance, the brain, can raise ideas in the immaterial mind, and with the addition of acquaintance besides; for these are matters not yet settled among the learned.

All I know is, that the thing is agreed to be so by some, or other, or all of these means, and that my whole employment and end of being is to touch them over, and acknowledge their acquaintance thus: without my doing which a man would no longer continue the same person, for in this acquaintance, which is called consciousness, does all personal identity consist¹.

As for the work I am just now particularly engaged in, you must know that this man, whom, as I am his self, I shall henceforth for conciseness and perspicuity, call my self, was once possessed of, or in power of possessing, every real happiness of life, till an insatiable desire of riches hurried him into measures which overturned all that happiness, and in the end plunged him into this gulf of misery.

The traces of that happiness are those which you see me pass over without renewing; by which means he forgets that he was ever happy, except sometimes when the trace of any particular unhappiness comes so near that of any instance of happiness as unavoidably to touch it; which touch, by the renewal of the idea of such happiness, only aggravates the sense of the present want of it. And thus I make memory either a blessing or a curse, according to the nature of the trace which I renew.

I see you are astonished, how a person who was ever happy could possibly fall into such misery as I am now in; but I shall remove that astonishment by the history of my life, in which I shall accommodate my account of places and things to the circumstances of my present state, without regard to the universality of our spiritual nature; and call them by their names among men, without the delay or trouble of description.

CHAPTER III

THE HISTORY OF TRAFFIC—HIS FATHER'S ADVICE TO HIM, CONTAINING
SOME GENERAL OBSERVATIONS ON THE NATURE AND END OF TRADE,
WITH RULES TO ENSURE A SUCCESS IN IT

My name is Traffic; I was the only son of a wealthy merchant in London, who bred me to his own business. There was nothing remarkable in my youth except that the characteristic passion of my heart showed itself, in the very dawn of reason, in my eagerness to engross and hoard up the baubles of my playmates, and the far-fetched schemes I laid to overreach them in all our little bargains.

¹ Locke

My father was at first delighted with this cunning, which his fondness took for the first essay of a great genius ; but when he saw me persist in it after I grew up, and attempt to practise the same arts in the course of my business, it gave him serious alarms for my future conduct ; for he had ever been averse to these artifices, which are called the mysteries of commerce, and owed his success solely to close application in the plain way of a fair trader.

But this caution I looked upon with contempt, as timidity and want of genius, and, undiscouraged by his constant repulses to all my bold strokes and deep schemes which I was continually suggesting to him, I resolved, when I should be at liberty, to indulge my own inclinations, to strike out new ways that should afford me opportunities of exerting my abilities in their full strength, and showing them in their proper lustre.

The vanity which prompted avarice to form these designs would so often break out in boasting, that my father was fully acquainted with them ; and a sensible decline in his health quickening his apprehensions for me, his tenderness would omit nothing which might show me my error in its proper light, and prevent my falling into so destructive ways.

Calling me therefore into his closet one morning, he addressed me in these words—words which dear experience has now printed deeply on my heart, though then they had no weight with me :—

‘My son’, said he, ‘the day approaches fast when you will be in possession of the fruits of my honest industry. I leave you a good fortune ; and have the happiness to be able to tell you, in this trying moment, that no wilful private wrong or public fraud makes me wish it were by one penny less. As, therefore, it was acquired in the fear of God, if not abused, it will wear with His blessing. Habit had so wedded me to my business that I could not leave it off myself ; and I bred you to it, to indulge, as I thought, the bent of your genius, and to prevent idleness from tempting youth to folly. But now that dangerous season is past with you ; and the labour of my life has taken away all necessity of labour from yours. Be wise, then, my son, and enjoy that happiness which Heaven offers you without tempting a reverse. You will have riches, more than enough for every natural want, for every rational wish ; and it will sweeten your enjoyment of them, and draw down the blessings of Heaven on your head, to employ the superplus in acts of private benevolence and public spirit ; in which best of employments the abilities with which you are so liberally blessed will find ample room for their exertion, and your pious endeavours be rewarded with a success that will be a happiness to your life and an honour to your name.

‘As for the profession of a merchant, to which you have been bred, Heaven points it out to the inhabitants of this country by our situation, nor can any other be more advantageous to it ; but still, even that advantage may be pursued too far, and the extreme of industry may sink into avarice, and so disappoint its own end.

‘For I must tell you, my son, that, though trade adds to the wealth, yet too eager a pursuit of it, even with the greatest success diminishes the strength of a nation. I am sensible that this is

against received opinion ; but truth, when properly displayed, will force conviction.

‘The real strength of a nation consists in the prevalence of disinterested spirit which, regardless of self, throws its weight into the public fund, as may be proved by many examples of small poor states conquering large wealthy ones. Whereas the spirit of commerce centres all in self, discouraging and despising as folly every thought which does not tend that way ; and so breaking that unanimity which is the very essence of power, and only can give it success ; a reflection this, my son, which observation confirms too strongly at present, and which seems to overcast the prospect of this happy nation.

‘My advice to you, therefore, is, to retire from business, though not to idleness. You will have a fortune that will make you of consequence in the state, and give you sufficient employment in the conduct of it, without embarrassing your mind with anxiety for more. And, to enable you to follow this advice with the greatest ease, I have settled all my affairs, and shall leave you free from every entanglement of life. This is the advice, the request, of a fond father, who desires compliance from his dear son, and would not force unwilling obedience by an act of authority or command. But should the love of business have taken such a hold of your heart, as habit gave it of mine, and not permit you to comply with this request, take, my son, the advice of experience, and hold fast the clue it offers to guide you through the labyrinths of trade, in which the vivacity of your genius may otherwise lose its way. Nor are the rules I shall hint to you many to be remembered, or difficult to be observed.

‘Be just, my son, in all your dealings ; wrong not individuals ; nor defraud the public.

‘These are all the rules I recommend ; but in them is comprised more than, perhaps, appears at first view. Do not therefore think them too obvious to have been necessary to be repeated, nor let the mention of them give offence by any seeming implication of personal doubt.

‘In the business of a merchant these rules comprehend a great extent of meaning, though I shall mention but a few instances of it at present.

‘As for the first, every misrepresentation to mislead ignorance or abuse credulity, every taking advantage by superior knowledge, is a wrong to the party so deceived ; as every artifice to evade the intention of the legislature is a fraud against the public, nay, against yourself, and every individual who claims the benefits provided by the ordinances, so defeated of their support.

‘This indeed is so obvious that it were an affront to reason to insist on any proof of it. The most eager pursuer of illicit trade will not vindicate a general indulgence of it ; and if it is not lawful for all, how can it be for him ? or with what colour can he claim a profit which he is conscious arises only from deceit, and from the benefit of those very laws which he thus defeats.

‘The temptations to this breach of honesty, I own, are many and great, and some of them perhaps plausible, particularly in those

branches of trade which seem to bear a more than equal share of the weight imposed for general advantage. But, in opposition to this, it must be considered that it is impossible to provide so exactly for a thing of so fluctuating a nature as trade, that the balance shall not incline, in some one instance; and that it must, by the same motion which oppresses one be favourable to some other, and so preserve the equipoise in the whole; and this obviates the only shadow of an argument that can be brought in defence of this too common practice.

‘As for the former, of avoiding private wrong, that is more difficult and less defensible, if possible, than even this. For where all the powers of the mind are turned to make advantage, it is very hard to refrain from taking it, where we ought not, and bringing the great business of life into common practice in its minutest concerns.

‘The man whose soul is on the stretch to take advantage in a bargain for thousands on the Exchange, will be apt, perhaps insensibly, to overlook an error that is not to his disadvantage in a tradesman’s bill, or to take no notice of a guinea given instead of a shilling in change at a tavern, though either is as great dishonesty as if he took them in a manner punishable with death by the laws, not to mention the innumerable little instances of temptation to this kind of wrong which occur in every moment’s dealing. That we may avoid temptation is one of the petitions of the Divine prayer, and never more necessary to be offered up than in this profession whose constant practice opens innumerable instances of it upon us.

‘In a word, my son, there are so many and strong arguments of this nature to be given against all trade, that the general advantage of the commonwealth alone can in any way support it against them. This, therefore, should be written in the deepest characters on the heart of every merchant, that he should never let private interest tempt him to engage in any trade or scheme that can interfere with the public interest, or is forbidden by the laws of his country. I shall say no more, nor burden your mind with further advice. Observe this, and be happy’.

I was obliged to hear him: but his words at that time made no more impression on my mind than the whistling of the winds, nor in the least altered my intentions; though I felt no scruple in promising obedience, the breach of which could never be upbraided to me, as I could not think of practising it before his death should remove the only person who had such an authority.

CHAPTER IV

THE HISTORY OF TRAFFIC CONTINUED—HIS FATHER'S DEATH—HE CONTINUES IN TRADE, AND TURNS SCHEMER—HIS VARIOUS SCHEMES END IN HIS RUIN—THE RISE AND PROGRESS OF HIS PASSION FOR AMELIA—THE BASE ABUSE OF HER CONFIDENCE, BY WHICH HE CHEATED HER OF THE GREATEST PART OF HER FORTUNE, AND AFTERWARDS FORMED DISHONOURABLE DESIGNS AGAINST HERSELF

THE opportunity which I had long panted for arrived too soon, my father dying just after I was of age, and leaving me possessed of wealth sufficient for me to exercise my talents on, as I was not blessed with prudence to take his advice, and put it to its proper use in rational enjoyment.

I was immediately a man of consequence, and that not only in my own eyes. I made a figure upon 'Change; I signed among the foremost in the public subscriptions. But all this did not satisfy me. I sickened at the thought of having an equal, not only in wealth, the darling object of my soul, but also in the reputation of acquiring it by methods of my own striking out, as I looked upon the known course of business as too slow for my advances, and too limited for my genius.

I therefore immediately became a schemer, and entered into every project which my own brain could invent, or artful imposition suggest to me; blindly, wilfully, giving up the serenity of an open mind for the vain appearance of mysterious consequence and design, and making my fortune a prey to every sharking projector, who flattered my vanity with promises of success, in the very attempts which had been his own ruin.

The perplexity in which this infatuation soon involved my affairs, far from opening my eyes, only set me upon deeper schemes. Sporting upon private adventures, taking in unwary confidence, flinging the fair trader, by eluding the restrictions of law, were now too small a game for me: I was entangled, and must cut the Gordian knot by some bold stroke.

I therefore threw off restraint, and entered into measures the most injurious to my country, which was then engaged in a just and extensive war. I insured the effects of its enemies, and of consequence gave them information how to avoid its forces; I carried on their trade with other countries; I supplied them with provisions from ours; and at length went so far as to lend and procure them money to support the war against ourselves.

But all my schemes met their just fate. Though I could give their ships information how to avoid our squadrons, yet they fell into the hands of unstationed privateers. My subterfuges for carrying on their trade were seen through, and a stop put to them before I could receive the stipulated profit. The stores I bought for them were intercepted by our fleets; and, to conclude all, the enemy, by one stretch of arbitrary power, refused to pay any debts and appropriated the funds provided for that purpose to the present support of the war.

This finished my ruin : I had not only lent them all my own fortune, but had also borrowed much more to supply them (on confidence in their promises), than I was now able to pay.

In this situation, the advice of my father returned full upon me and aggravated my distress. But I had no time for reflection ; the horrors of a jail stared me full in the face, which I had no way to avoid but by flight, the equivocalness of my character having made every honest man who was able to assist me afraid of being concerned with me. I therefore immediately raised all the money I possibly could, and embarked secretly in a ship of my own for Jamaica ; Heaven, to make its justice the more signal, using my blackest guilt as a chain to draw me to the vengeance I deserved.

I must stop here and look back, to give you an account of an affair which the precipitancy of my ruin prevented my mentioning in its proper order.

Much as such a complicated scene as I have described must have taken up my time and engrossed my thoughts, I had still found leisure for guilt of another nature, though ultimately springing from the same cause.

I had told you that my father had acquired his own fortune by industry ; but as the greatest industry requires a foundation to work upon, his had been assisted by the person to whom he served his apprenticeship, who, knowing his abilities, and confiding in his honesty, upon the decline of his own health established him in partnership with his only son, whom he thought too young to conduct so extensive a business.

My father faithfully executed this great trust, and continued the partnership, till his observation of my unfortunate disposition determined him to make me quit trade ; when it was dissolved, without the least breach in that real friendship which had so long subsisted between them. Though I did not obey my father's desire, yet my vanity would not admit a thought of recommencing the partnership, as it would have been but a curb on my favourite schemes, and have implied a want of assistance which, in my own opinion, I was far above. On the contrary, I rather declined too close a connection with him in business, as I feared he might have taken upon him to interpose his advice against anything which his narrow, fearful temper might disapprove in my great designs ; but as I kept up every other appearance of regard, and even respect for him, this shyness was not observed, nor any coolness occasioned by it in the intercourse of intimacy between us.

But for this conduct I had another motive, besides regard for him. He had an only daughter, enriched with every beauty and virtue that could mark the favourite work of Heaven : she was about four years younger than I, which difference of age had given me an opportunity of treating her with such a fondness from her very infancy as raised a real love in her grateful heart, as her beauties did the strongest one it was capable of feeling in mine. Our fathers had seen this growing attachment with the greatest pleasure from the beginning, and encouraged it between us (our mothers both died in our infancy), joining in the general opinion that the union

which had always been between their families would be completed by the intermarriage of their children : an opinion that was then my pride, and seemed a pleasure to the young Amelia's honest heart, that was above disguise.

But my father's death, before she was of an age to undertake the cares of such an awful state, and a long illness of her father's after, during which her filial piety and love would not admit a thought of anything that should interfere with her tender regard for him, prevented my happiness from being accomplished while there was any obstacle that could hinder my evil genius from defeating it.

At length, after languishing five years, her father died, without a moment's more immediate warning, having been on the Exchange that day as usual.

In the tumult of this loss I was sent for ; and no will being found, for he, unhappily, had not imagined his end so near, nor made any settlement of his affairs, in the confidence of our attachment Amelia gave everything into my hands, and requested me to make up all her father's accounts and conclude her dealings with the world.

This happened just as my scheming had begun to embarrass my affairs. My heart, therefore, never proof to much temptation, yielded to such an opportunity of recovering the losses of my folly at her expense, by sinking the greatest part of her fortune to my own use ; never considering that I might have the whole in a just and honourable way, enhanced with the greatest blessing of herself.

To accomplish this design, and prepare her for what was to follow, I pretended to Amelia that I found many difficulties in her father's affairs ; and, having secreted as much as I thought proper, and could with safety, and destroyed every memorial that might detect me, for all which her unbounded confidence gave ample opportunity, I at length gave her an account, with the strongest expressions of concern, ' to find that what I had long apprehended was too true, and that her father's affairs were in a very bad situation ; that I had, however, with great difficulty, got together somewhat above ten thousand pounds ; and was convinced that this preplexity in his affairs was the occasion of his long illness, and had not left him spirit enough to inquire into them, and make a will '.

This representation had the effect I designed. Amelia's confidence in me would not admit a thought of my deceiving her ; as pride, too powerful in the purest human heart, prevented her revealing her circumstances to anyone else, who might have attempted to disprove what I said ; though, indeed, it was scarce natural to suspect me of a deceit that, according to the opinion which then prevailed concerning Amelia and me, could only affect myself.

She therefore, with an appearance of surprise rather than doubt, or even concern, acquiesced, and signed a receipt in full, desiring me to destroy all her father's books and papers, as they could be of no further use to her.

This completed my design beyond a possibility of detection,

and even raised a new one against the poor pittance I had left her, though it was not quite a fourth part of what was really her right, for I had now thrown off all thoughts of marriage with one so far beneath me in fortune, looking upon it as a reproach of my wisdom and knowledge of the world to make any bargain in which I should not have the advantage: for what I had so basely defrauded her of I considered merely as an acquisition of my superior skill in business, and absolutely my own, without any manner of obligation to the person from whom I had obtained it. Not that I had lost my desire for the person (the only degree of love my heart was capable of feeling), but the advantage I had it now in my hopes of obtaining over her made me look upon her as a sure prey to my pleasure.

CHAPTER V

CONTINUED—HE CHEATS AMELIA OF THE RESIDUE OF HER FORTUNE,
AND MARRIES ANOTHER WOMAN—AMELIA SUES HIM AT LAW, IS
CAST, AND GOES FOR JAMAICA—HE IS RUINED, AND FOLLOWS HER

THOUGH my whole life was one continued scene of villainy, yet in all there was a gradation, a regular descent from bad to worse; each successful crime opening new opportunities and suggesting schemes which never entered into my thoughts before.

This was exactly my case with regard to Amelia. While she was in possession of her whole fortune, the highest wish of my heart was to marry her; but no sooner had an unhappy accident given me an opportunity of defrauding her of far the greatest part of it than that respectful love immediately sank into loose desire, and my success in my former schemes against her set my thoughts at work to accomplish the gratification of this passion on my own base terms.

To bring this design to perfection, it was necessary that I should get her fortune entirely into my power; which I accordingly formed schemes to accomplish without delay; for the success of my former attempt, so far from satisfying my avarice, or raising any sense of compassion in my breast for her wrongs, had made me look upon herself and all that belonged to her as my property, which I was as impatient to possess as if it was detained from me by injustice.

I therefore took occasion one day, when we were alone together, to drop some words of concern at my not having immediately by me a sum of money to lay out on most advantageous terms, which had been that very morning proposed to me.

She directly took the hint, and said her little fortune was still in her hands, in the same bank-notes I had given her; and if the use of it, for any time, could be of advantage to me, she should feel a greater pleasure in my taking it than any profit she could make of it any other way.

This was just what I wished; and though I could scarce refrain from laughing at the easiness with which she took the bait, I would

not accept of her offer but with this restriction—that I would consider whether the terms proposed to me might not suit her, and be more advantageous than the interest I could afford her if I should make use of it myself. I said this with an equivocal smile, which she understood as I would have her, and immediately, with an assenting blush, put the notes into my hand, without requiring a receipt or any kind of acknowledgment for them.

Having thus gained that which I reckoned the better part of Amelia, and sure, as I imagined, of herself when necessity should humble her to my designs, as I had her whole means even of subsistence in my power, I directly resolved to close with an offer some time before made me by a wealthy merchant of a large fortune with his daughter; whom I accordingly married a few days after I had got possession of Amelia's money.

I shall spare myself the pains of any further description of my wife than that she was the very reverse of Amelia in soul and body; and my marriage consequently as unhappy as I justly deserved.

But I comforted myself with hopes of happiness in the enjoyment of Amelia, whom I looked upon as my own, and only deferred making my base proposals to, till her resentment at my marriage should cool and I could devise some plan of privacy to elude the vigilance of my wife. Not but I dreaded the first emotion of her anger, which I expected to break out in loud complaints. But I was mistaken in measuring her soul thus by my own. She scorned to complain; nor did I hear a word from her to interrupt the riot of my wedding; a greatness of soul so far above my comprehension that I attributed it to fear of giving offence to one in whose power she must be sensible she was.

But at the end of the month I was awoke from those dreams by a message from her, delivered by a relation of hers, to desire I should pay in her money to him, for which he would give me a receipt. As I was not prepared for this, I believe it threw me into a confusion too visible; but I soon recovered presence of mind enough to answer that 'I could not but be surprised at such a demand, as Amelia must be sensible that I had paid her all the money of hers that was in my hands, for which I had her discharge in full'.

The gentleman replied in astonishment: 'Her discharge, sir? That was when you settled her affairs! but she says that she since then gave her whole fortune into your hands to lay out for her. And, sir, my cousin is known to be neither a fool nor a liar, though I believe she has suffered severely for her ill-placed confidence'.

'Perhaps she says so, sir,' said I, 'but I know nothing of the matter, and am not accountable for what she says or you think, sir; and I suppose if your cousin is not a fool she has not given her money without something to show for it. But you must excuse my talking any longer on so idle a subject; and so, sir, your servant'.

The mine was now sprung, and I waited with impatience for the event. As to her demand, I knew she could never support it, as there was no person present when she gave me the notes; and I had negotiated them in a manner beyond all possibility of their being traced.

While I was hugging myself in this security, the friends of Amelia persuaded her to bring a bill in Chancery against me, in which the whole affair was set forth without any exaggeration. But this I made light of, as I had my lawyer ready, under whose directions I swore such an answer that set her charge entirely aside. Elate with this success, I thought this the time to pursue my victory, and wrote her a letter, in which I attributed everything of my conduct of late that might have surprised her to love, and despair of obtaining her by any other method: and offered her a settlement above the demand she had made on me if she would consent to my desires. This I wrote in such general terms that my letter could not be brought in evidence against me, and the largeness of the offer was only to decoy her into a treaty, there being nothing further from my thoughts than ever to make her independent of my pleasure.

This insult only added new fuel to her resentment, and all the answer I received was by another bill; but this met the same fate, by the same methods, as the former.

After this I heard no more of Amelia for some time; but what was my astonishment when I was informed that she had sold off her jewels and other little effects, and was gone to a relation of her's who lived in Jamaica! This broke all my designs; and despair of ever obtaining her awoke my love, and aggravated my remorse for my ill-usage of her almost to madness.

From this time the hand of Heaven seemed to be upon me; everything I had any concern in miscarried; and, to hasten my ruin, my house was a perfect sink of riot and debauchery: my wife, as she had no charms to excite desire, in a manner publicly purchasing the gratification of her lusts at the most extravagant expense, and living in a profusion that must destroy even a royal fortune.

Mine, great as it had been, sank under so many dissipations of all kinds; and I had no resource left, as I said before, but in precipitate flight, which Heaven made my passion for Amelia direct for Jamaica to mark the justice of its vengeance the more plainly.

CHAPTER VI

CONCLUSION OF THE HISTORY OF TRAFFIC—HE ARRIVES AT JAMAICA WHERE HE LEARNS THAT AMELIA HAD BEEN TAKEN BY THE SPANIARDS—HE TURNS BUCCANEER, AND RAVAGES THE SPANISH COASTS, WHERE HE FINDS AMELIA—JUST AS HE IS GOING TO SEIZE HER HE IS TAKEN PRISONER BY HER HUSBAND—HE IS CONDEMNED TO DIE—HE SUES TO AMELIA FOR MERCY; SHE REJECTS HIM WITH ABHORRENCE—HIS PUNISHMENT IS CHANGED FROM DEATH TO THE MINES

I HAD hitherto varnished over my villainies with hypocrisy, and strove to preserve some appearance, at least, of virtue; but this as a restraint no longer possible, nor indeed profitable to me now

when my flight took off the veil, and alarmed all mankind against me ; so that mine was really a state of war with all the world.

On my arrival in Jamaica, I had the addition to my grief to find that Amelia had been taken in her passage thither by a Spanish privateer.

This drove me to despair. I was wearied of life ; but resolved not to die unrevenged on those who had thus, as I thought, robbed me of my hopes ; never reflecting on the improbability of her hearkening to my suit.

Burning with this project, I fitted out my ship, and manned her with a crew as desperate as myself ; resolving, though the war was at an end, to pursue my revenge upon the Spaniards on the defenceless coast of their American dominions, in which my other passions were urged to haste by fear of my creditors, the news of my failing having come to Jamaica almost as soon as myself.

We therefore set out upon our cruise, or rather, piracy, without delay, of which I shall not raise your horror with any further particulars than that we went directly to the Spanish Main, where we not only rifled all the ships we met, but also made descents on the coasts and ravaged with a barbarity that was a reproach to human nature.

The tumult and hurry of this life kept my spirits in an agitation that gave a kind of respite to my grief ; and the spoil we made of our first enterprises was so great as to awake hopes of restoring my affairs so as to enable me to return to England with all the credit wealth could give ; and could I have known when to stop I was soon rich even beyond my most sanguine hopes. But urged by avarice and encouraged by success, I still went on headlong to my fate, which I met in an attempt upon a town some way up the country, the convenience and pleasantness of whose situation had made it the residence of the richest families in the whole province, as its distance from the coast made them live in a state of perfect security without any fortification or guard.

To this place we directed our march one evening, and arrived at it a little after midnight, with an intention to surprise the inhabitants and return to our ship with the spoil before the country could rise to intercept us.

The first part of our design succeeded, and we got possession of the town without any resistance, where we committed all the outrages and roamed about with the licentious carelessness of freebooters under no command.

While every one thus prowled about for prey, Fate goaded me to an arbour in a garden whither I followed the cries of women. I was just rushing in among them, inflamed with brutal desire, when what was my astonishment to see Amelia in the most magnificent undress throwing heaps of gold and jewels into a vault that opened by a trap-door into the arbour ! I stood motionless at the sight for some moments in distrust of my senses. But two such objects as she and her riches soon awoke me from my trance, and I advanced to take possession of both, resolving not to discover myself till a more proper time ; the strangeness of my dress, that was designed to strike horror, and the blood which, from scenes of cruelty and

murder just committed, still reeked upon my hands and face, making it impossible that she should know me.

At the sight of me the women all shrieked, and Amelia, as I advanced to lay hold on her, fell into a swoon. This embarrassed me greatly, as I had no time to lose, for our sentinels just then sounded a retreat. However, I determined to wait a little to see if she recovered; and, stooping to raise her, to give her air, I received such a blow from behind as deprived me of all sense for several hours; when, on my recovering, I found myself chained on the ground in a dungeon.

I was some time before I could believe my senses, or conceive where I was; till the jailor, coming to see if I was alive, gave me to understand that my companions had gone off without me, and left me in the hands of a nobleman, who had himself knocked me down, as I was going to commit a rape upon his lady while she lay in a swoon; and that I had been thrown into this dungeon that if I recovered, I might suffer the punishment due to the outrages we had committed both here and in several other places of their dominions.

I was none the less determined to show me the horrors of my situation. I saw them all, and aggravated an hundredfold by the accusation of my own conscience that could now trace the hand of Heaven in the justice of my punishment, which had thus overtaken me in the presence and on the account of Amelia, I wished for death, as my only relief, and determined to seek it. But, alas! my resolution failed me, and I feared to die. In this misery I was dragged before a magistrate, who, enumerating the crimes we had been guilty of, condemned me to immediate death.

This sentence, so much milder than my fears, awoke a hope of further mercy, to obtain which, my evil genius suggested it to me to apply to Amelia, absurdly flattering myself that some sparks of her love for me might yet remain alive, or, at least, her goodness take delight in showing itself superior to my ill-treatment. Base hope, that met its just reward!

I therefore waived attempting a defence of other crimes, as I was conscious that I could not make any, but asserted my innocence as to the particular charge of a base design upon Amelia at the time I was taken, adding that 'I had the honour of being nearly related to that lady, and that, if I was indulged with a few words with her in the presence of all there, I hoped I might be found to merit a mitigation of my sentence'.

On my mentioning the name of Amelia, I observed one of the principal persons in the court, whom I soon understood to be her husband, kindle into rage. He did not, however, interrupt me, but as soon as I had concluded, he started up and exclaimed with the most furious indignation: 'Amelia thy relation! No more than angels are related to devils, by springing from the same Creator! Her virtues are dishonoured by the claim! But she shall appear and disprove the odious calumny'.

Saying which words, he instantly went for her, while a hollow murmur of surprise and detestation made the silence of the court the more dreadful, and heightened the horrors of my suspense.

But I waited not long. Amelia soon appeared, led in by her husband, and being seated by the judge: 'Where', said she, looking round with the serenity of conscious virtue, 'where is the person who says he is related to me'?

The sight of her threw me into such a conflict of passions, that without reflecting where I was, or how necessary it might be for me to raise her compassion by some moving address that might soften the severity of her resentment for my former treatment of her, as well as assure her of my innocence of any base designs against her person, in the condition she was in when I was taken, I could not forbear crying out in English—for I had spoken before in Spanish in which I expressed myself but badly: 'Oh, Amelia! hast thou then forgot me'?

At the sound of my voice she started, and looking earnestly at me for a moment, fell upon her knees, and lifting her hands and eyes to heaven, she said aloud in Spanish: 'O God, how signal is this justice! Let me, let all the world acknowledge and adore it!' And then, rising and turning to her husband, who stood in amazement: 'This, my lord', said she, 'this is the man of whom I have informed you. This is that Traffic whose base dishonesty obliged me to leave my native country; and so, by that Providence which is able to turn the greatest misfortune into a blessing, was made the cause of my present happiness with you. I abjure all kindred with him. I desire he may be examined as to my story, and if he can vary in the least from what I have told you, let me be condemned to the severest punishment but that of staying longer in his sight, or ever seeing his face more'.

On this she withdrew, without deigning a look at me. But her words had a proper effect upon my heart, and I resolved to do her justice. I therefore prevented her husband's command, and in as few words as possible related the black affair with the strictest truth. When I had concluded, her lord declared that I had not only confirmed everything she had told him, but also added many circumstances of my own guilt which she had omitted, or perhaps not known.

So complicated guilt seemed to require consideration to find out proper punishment, so I was remanded to my dungeon, but without the least encouragement to hope. The next day I was again brought into the court, where my former sentence was changed into that of being broken alive upon the wheel; and this severity was said to be in justice to Amelia.

When I had stood some moments stupefied with fear, the judge addressed me again in these words: 'Thou hast heard, O wretched man, the sentence due to thy crimes; but great as they have been, mercy extends her hand to thee. The virtues of the illustrious Donna Amelia overbalance thy guilt, and have prevailed for a mitigation of thy punishment, in gratitude to that Divine Providence which made thee the cause of her coming among us. Thou shalt not die, because we would not kill thy soul before thou hast had time to repent of thy crimes; nor shalt thou suffer torture, that thy strength may not be impaired for the labour to which thy life is doomed: for this is the last day thou shalt ever behold the

light of heaven. Thou shalt immediately descend into the mines there to work out the residue of thine unhappy days in raising that gold for the use of others, the insatiable desire of which was the cause of all thy guilt'.

I would have spoken in the agony of my soul, to desire death, but I was stopped by the judge, who sternly said that to hear a word from me would be an insult upon justice. On his saying which I was hurried away to the mountains over us, and precipitated into this gulf, where I have now been near——

Just as he said this, I was obliged to fly away to my body, which the unhappy Traffic had thrown from his hand into the vessel in which it was to be raised from the mine.

The length of this story will make you wonder when I tell you that the spirit of Traffic showed it to me in a moment, for no longer did the gold remain in his possession, and I am always obliged to attend my body whenever it changes its master. But to understand this you must be informed that we spirits do not distinguish our existence by time or a succession of parts as men do; with us there is nothing past or to come, but everything is present in one view so far as the natural course of causes and effects is preserved free from interruption by superior power.

CHAPTER VII

CHRYSAI PURSUES THE HISTORY OF HIS ADVENTURES—HE EXPLAINS SOME DIFFICULTIES IN HIS OWN NATURE—HE IS OFFERED AT A CONFESSION TO A PRIEST—THE CONFESSION AND CREED OF A NATIVE PERUVIAN—THE PENANCE ENJOINED HIM BY A JESUIT

THERE is no crime, however black in its own nature, that does not receive an aggravation from hypocrisy; but the highest exertion of this vice is when it makes a pretext of the best institutions to promote the practice of the worst actions. Of this I have seen innumerable instances in the adventures of my present state, though none so flagrant as what I shall now relate.

You may imagine I felt pleasure at emerging from that infernal abyss into light. There was nothing remarkable in the three or four first stages I went through, my temporary owners being only the refiners and other tradesmen, who purified me from mixtures of mineral dross.

I see you are desirous to know how I could preserve my identity when melted down with large quantities of the same metal. But you must know that 'spirits have a power of expanding or contracting themselves into what dimensions they please; and that their life is not confined to any particular parts, as the heart or head, as in man, but is diffused through their whole bodies, so that any part being separated from the rest does not die'¹; but that portion of spirit which was in it at the time of such separation

¹ Milton.

serves as a life for it, and becomes a distinct spirit, to inform that distinct body, and so on, *ad infinitum*¹. For as it is agreed upon that bodies can be infinitely divided, upon the same principles spirit must also; for it would be most absurd and impious to deny of the superior any perfection which we attribute to the inferior. The enlarging of my body, therefore, by the addition of more matter, or the lessening of it by ever so many divisions, makes no alteration in my sameness so long as my consciousness remains²; the former only increasing by energy, by the accession of so much spirit as informed the additional matter³; for we spirits embody ourselves entirely in commixion, and resolve into one⁴; as the latter separates us again into distinct beings, to animate our separate bodies.

The first absolute owner to whom I belonged was a native Peruvian, who had found means to purloin a considerable quantity of gold, part of which I was, and who presented me as a peace-offering to an ecclesiastic at confession.

I see you have a curiosity to know my sentiments on religious matters; but I have told you before that I am not allowed to make revelations. Sufficient on this head have been already made to man, did not his perverseness distort them from their original perspicuity and perfection.

As there was something in the transactions which passed when I was offered to this ecclesiastic that may be new to you I shall repeat some particulars of them.

You must have heard of the authority of the clergy in all the countries which profess the religion of the Roman pontiff, and particularly those under the Spanish monarchy. Of all the several Orders which compose this political hierarchy, those who call themselves *the companions of their God*⁵, have acquired the greatest power.

Though this title may appear profanely great to you, yet they seem to support it by the share which they assume in some of His most sacred prerogatives.

To a reverend father of this Order was I presented on the festival called Easter. He was seated in a retired chamber of his temple in the exercise of one of the functions of the Deity, hearing, and punishing, or forgiving sins, according to his sovereign pleasure. It is not possible to give you here an idea of the solemnity of this ceremony in a country where all religion is evaporated into show. Be it sufficient to say, that the pageantry was such a mockery of the Deity, as no other of His creatures but man would dare to commit. The man who brought me into this mysterious fane advanced with fear and trembling to the apparent deity of the place, and kneeling before him, confessed himself guilty of several heinous crimes, in the admission of involuntary thoughts and indulgence of the appetites of nature, contrary to the rules laid down for him by his spiritual guide. But this will be best explained by instances. The first crime which the penitent revealed was having tasted a

¹ *Essay on Spirit.*

³ *Essay on Spirit.*

⁵ The Jesuits call themselves *Socii Jesu*, the Companions of Jesus.

² Locke.

⁴ Milton.

morsel of flesh on a day when it was prohibited. The father with a severe frown told him 'that was a great sin, which he must atone for by working two days for the Church, without hire, and abstaining from flesh at the same time, though it was generally allowed'.

He next confessed that he had beaten a dog belonging to a priest which had broke into his hut and eaten the pottage prepared for him, by which means he had been obliged to go to sleep without his supper. At this the priest, knitting his brow into tenfold austerity, exclaimed: 'This is rebellion—rebellion against your God! Do you not know that the dog of an ecclesiastic is above the greatest, even white, layman, much more a wicked native. You must make amends! you must—or'——

The tone and gesture with which he spoke these words so terrified the trembling wretch that he instantly put his hand into his bosom and pulling me out, presented me to make his peace. As soon as I appeared, the priest's features softened, the tone of his voice fell, and receiving me with a gracious smile: 'You have not said', says he, 'that the master of the dog was a Jesuit; the crime, therefore, though great, may be forgiven. But beware for the future, and remember that the world and all in it belongs to us, and that to be guilty of the least disobedience, even in thought, is treason, and deserves the severest punishment. Proceed, unburden your conscience! I know your thoughts, but would have you speak them that I may prove your sincerity. Proceed, I am in haste'!

The penitent then went on: 'O father, be merciful and I will confess all! Returning from my labour one evening late, I found my door fastened, and no one answering when I called, I burst it in; when behold, I saw Father Ignatius in the very act of carnality with my beloved wife Mootaw! I was amazed; and though fear prevented my striking him, I could not forbear thinking in my heart that he who does those things can be no god—he must be only man; and I cursed him in the bitterness of my soul; but he was drunk with wine and did not hear me'.

'Wretch! devil! heretic'! exclaimed the father in a rage; 'thou intrude upon the privacy of a Jesuit! thou say he was but a *Jan*! thou think he could not know thy very thoughts because he had drunk wine! Audacious slave! Art not thou and thy wife his? Had he not a right to use his own? Was it not an honour to thee, ungrateful wretch? and darest thou to think a Jesuit is but a man? But it is enough, the Inquisition shall teach thee faith and obedience; the Inquisition'——

At that tremendous word, the wretch, half-dead with fear, fell at his feet, crying out: 'O father! O God! O king! forgive, forgive'! and pulling out of his bosom the rest of his gold: 'Take this, O lord, from your poor slave, and forgive. Take this, which I got at the peril of my life, and saved to buy the liberty of my dear child, whom my master took from me: take it and forgive; let her still be a slave: let me never see her more! But oh! the Inquisition! Oh, forgive! forgive'!

The priest, mollified at the sight of the gold, replied: 'Thou knowest my compassion, but thou abusest it, and thy crimes are almost too great for mercy. In hope thou wilt amend, and

transgress so no more, I will forgive thee now : but thou must be punished. Hast thou no more gold ?

‘ O, father, no more, no more ! and this I saved to redeem my dear child—oh, let me get my child ’ !

‘ What ! insolent ! dost thou presume to capitulate ? Thou shall be punished. Instead of getting back thy daughter, thou shall bring me thy son, whom I saw yesterday when I bade thee come to confession—the boy I blessed, and kissed upon thy knee ’.

‘ O, father, father, take all the gold, and let my daughter remain, but spare my son ; he is too young, oh, father, too young for thee ’ !

‘ The Inquisition ’ !

‘ Oh, take him, father, take him, take all, but spare me ; I fly, to bring my child to thee ! Oh, spare me from the Inquisition ’ !

‘ ’Tis well, be comforted ; thy sins shall be forgiven ; perhaps if thou behavest well, thy son may also be restored. I fear thou hast forgotten thy Christian faith ; let me hear thee repeat thy creed ’.

The man, somewhat reassured to hear that he should escape the Inquisition, and comforted with the hope of having his son restored, began thus :—

‘ I believe that God made the world, and all things in it, for my lords the Jesuits ; and that I must worship Him by obeying them, and saying the prayers they direct me to the saints, and the Blessed Virgin, the Mother of God ; and above all, to the great saint Ignatius Loyola. But if I disobey their commands in anything, or repine at their service, or think that I must obey the viceroy before them, I shall be burned to death in the Inquisition here, and the great devil will burn me for ever after I am dead ’.

‘ Well, son, remember, and practise thy creed, and thy sins shall be forgiven thee. Go, and bring the boy when it is dark ’.

CHAPTER VIII

THE HOLY FATHER’S TENDERNESS TO ANOTHER PENITENT, WHO HAD RAVISHED, MURDERED, AND ROBBED HIS OWN BROTHER’S WIFE—HE ACCEPTS THE SPOIL AS A RECOMPENSE TO THE CHURCH—HE HINTS A METHOD OF PREVENTING THE DANGER OF HIS BROTHER’S RESENTMENT, AND DISMISSES HIM WITH GHOSTLY ADVICE

THE severity with which the Jesuit required satisfaction for the imaginary faults of the poor Peruvian may, perhaps, lead you to think that his zeal would be inexorable to real crimes ; but the following account will show you that it was no such thing, and that he looked upon nothing as a crime which was not detrimental to the power or temporal interest of his Society.

The next penitent who approached the mercy-seat was a commander in the army. He advanced with a military intrepidity, and kneeling down in form : ‘ Father ’, said he, ‘ I have a long reckoning to make, and some of the articles are rather heavy ’.

‘ My son ’, replied the priest, ‘ you have had experience of the indulgence of the Church, and that no crimes are too black for her

mercy, on proper penitence. Proceed, then, and open your ailments to your physician, nor fear the efficacy of his medicines'.

'You know then, father', said the penitent, 'that I have long burned with a passion for the wife of my brother, the judge. It was the subject of my last confession'.

'I remember it right well', replied the father, 'and you may remember also what ghostly, yet comfortable, advice I gave you, to strive against and suppress it if you could'.

'True, father; but I told you then that I knew it would be in vain for me to strive, as I was resolved to enjoy her, though at the hazard of life'.

'But, son, did I not comfort you by saying that if you found it in vain to strive, and could not live without her, as life was the greatest good in this world, it was just that you should preserve yours by obtaining what you were so violently set upon; but always be careful that you conduct matters so as not to give offence by your success'.

'Ah, but, father, that was not in my power: she was deaf to all my entreaties; and that threw me into such despair that, not able to wait any longer, I have this very morning had recourse to force'.

'That was really bad, if it could have been avoided; but as you would not have forced her if she would have complied willingly, that alters the case very much in your favour; and perhaps she put you to that trouble only to save the appearance of her own virtue; and if so, you have both acted right, and there is no harm done, provided the affair is not disclosed'.

'Oh, father, that is the thing. I was afraid of that; and as her husband had always been a father to me, and all my future hopes depended on him, I so greatly dreaded her telling him that, to prevent it, as soon as I had enjoyed her, I cut her throat'.

'Murder!—oh, fie! It is a heinous crime: blood calls for blood. Your case is terrible'!

'I feared so, father; but I depended on your tenderness. And I did not think it reasonable that I should have all the pleasure of the crime, and you only the trouble of forgiving; I stripped her of these jewels, which give me leave to offer you'.

'You are a prudent man, my son; I thought you would act with discretion. I accept the jewels, as a peace-offering to the Holy Church for your sins; and as the value of them—indeed, they are costly gems—proves the sincerity of your repentance, I shall not hesitate to pronounce your sins forgiven.'

'For, though adultery is a great sin¹, and in this case aggravated by rape and incest, yet, as you say, it was not because she was the wife of another man, and especially your brother, that you desired to enjoy her, but merely as she was a beautiful woman, therefore the adultery and incest comes in but by *accident*. And then, as you ravished her only because she would not comply, the sin of the rape is certainly hers, as I said before; for if I force a man to commit a crime, I am guilty of that crime, and not he. And again, though murder is a most heinous sin, yet as you killed her not merely to indulge a murderous intent, but to prevent her

¹ See the casuistical divinity of the Jesuits, throughout.

discovering your having forced her, and so ruining you, the intention quite alters the nature of the fact, and makes it but self-preservation, which is the first law of nature. And lastly, as you took the jewels, not with a design to rob her, but to offer them to the Church, and accordingly have brought them, that conclusion sanctifies the whole action, and makes your peace with Heaven.

‘For know, my son, that crimes which respect man only, as in your case, rape, adultery, incest, murder, and robbery, though bad in themselves, ’tis true, yet are a pleasure to the Church to forgive to a faithful and penitent son, who believes all her doctrines and pays due obedience to her clergy, the vicegerents of God on earth, the receivers of her revenues, and dispensers of her favours and vengeance; to whom all earthly power is subservient, who are the kings of kings, and lords of the world. This, my son, is the doctrine of our Holy Church, as delivered by the most learned fathers of our Order, in the belief of which you will be safe from all the powers of hell. Do what you will, while you pay faith and obedience to the Church, she will pardon all your sins’.

When he had concluded his instructions with this pious exhortation, and sealed his absolution with a blessing, the purified saint arose and said: ‘Holy father, thou hast set my soul at ease with regard to hereafter, but still I fear for this world. It unfortunately happened that I was seen in the fact by a servant who escaped me, or I should have charmed her silence too; and now I apprehend she will inform my brother’.

‘This is unlucky, most unlucky’, replied the priest; ‘I know not what to advise: I am utterly at a loss. If you should prevent her malice, and accuse her of the fact’.

‘Oh, but father, the rape? There may be appearances of that which would disprove my charge against a woman’.

‘Mistake me not, my son; I do not advise any such thing. Heaven forbid that I should advise to bear false witness against an innocent life! I am utterly at a loss’.

‘Suppose, father, I should still strive to prevent my fears by taking off my brother, as I cannot find her: this is the only way to make me easy. Ha, father, is not that an happy thought? I wish it had occurred sooner, and then I should have given you but the one trouble’.

‘Why, truly, son, the dead neither make nor receive discoveries, and self-preservation will certainly justify anything, as I have said before. But I must not advise you: your own genius is ready, and can improve a hint; I must know nothing till the affair is done: all I can say is that work unfinished had better never been begun. Adieu, my son, my blessing waits on all your undertakings. But be sure to hold the indulgent mercy of the Church in grateful remembrance’.

The officer went away, happy in having lightened the burden that was upon his conscience, and big with the pious project of making the murder of his brother the first-fruits of his regeneration. He was the last penitent of that morning, and as soon as he was gone, his ghostly director retired to mortify his appetite in the refectory of the convent.

CHAPTER IX

THE FATHER'S RAGE ON HEARING THAT HIS PENITENT HAD SECRETED SOME OF THE JEWELS—THE OFFICER IS PURSUED BY HIS BROTHER TO THE CONVENT, WHITHER HE FLIES FOR SANCTUARY—HIS RECEPTION FROM THE FATHER, AND THE TERMS OF THEIR RECONCILIATION—THE FATHER SENDS AWAY THE JUDGE IN A FRIGHT—THE OFFICER IS RECEIVED INTO THE SOCIETY

THE great value of the jewels which the officer had presented to my master took up so much of his thoughts, that as soon as he had finished his collation he retired to his cell to meditate on the further advantages he might make of this affair.

While he was in this pleasing employment another ecclesiastic entered to acquaint him with the murder and robbery of the judge's wife; and among other particulars of the story said that her crucifix, thought to be the richest in lay possession in all Peru, had been taken from her.

'That crucifix'! exclaimed my master, starting; for he knew it well, having long paid his devotions to it, and now to be cheated thus of it, when he thought it so justly his due, provoked him almost to madness; 'that crucifix taken too! damned, murderous, deceitful villain!—villain on all sides! But I will be revenged'!

The other priest understood not what he meant, and was just going to inquire, when in rushed the captain, all aghast. 'Oh, father, father!' said he, as soon as he could speak, 'sanctuary! sanctuary! my brother is at the gate, with all the officers of justice'!

At this the father grinned an insulting smile, and beckoning to the other priest to withdraw: 'Wretch'! said he, 'thou sacrilegious wretch! how couldst thou dare to enter these holy walls, violated by thy guilt? Didst thou not fear the fate of Ananias and Sapphira? As thou didst deceive me with thy feigned penitence, and hast lied to the Lord, in concealing what thou hadst most justly devoted to Him, I revoke the absolution I gave thee, and will deliver thee to justice, to receive the punishment due to thy crimes; these holy walls afford no sanctuary to sacrilege'!

The poor criminal stood confounded at reproaches which he dared not interrupt, though he could not comprehend the cause or meaning of them. At length, when the priest had exclaimed himself out of breath, the trembling wretch replied: 'Oh, father, what can have kindled thy wrath against me? I have committed no crime since thy absolution purged my soul. I was only going towards my brother's house, when I met him, and the servant with him, with all the officers of justice in search of me, on which I fled directly to you for sanctuary'.

'I grant no sanctuary to sacrilege'.

'What sacrilege, oh, father'?

'The crucifix, deceitful wretch!—where is thy sister's crucifix? Hast thou not defrauded the Church of her due? Didst thou not

say that thou tookest thy sister's jewels only to make a peace offering for thy sins?—and then to secrete thus the most valuable part of them. This is defrauding the labourer of his hire! This is defrauding the Church of her right, without making the proper compensations! And what can be greater sacrilege?'

Just at these words, a knocking at the gate awoke the penitent from his amaze, and made him apprehend that he had not a minute to lose; he therefore, with the readiest presence of mind, replied: 'The crucifix, father! you astonish me! Did I not give it you?' And then putting his hand into his bosom and pulling it out, with a look of surprise he reached it to him. 'Forgive, oh, father', said he, 'the crime of inadvertency. I meant not to have kept it from you, but only overlooked it in my confusion. Accept it—accept all I am master of, and save my life!'

'Son', replied the father, softening his voice and taking the crucifix, 'I am glad thou wast not intentionally guilty of so unpardonable an offence. I believe and accept thy excuse. Be comforted, therefore, my son, thy sins are forgiven.'

'Oh, but, father, the officers of justice!'

'What officers, what justice, dares attempt to show her face within these walls? Thou art my penitent; I have absolved thee and I will defend thee. Sit down and compose thy spirits, while I repel this bold intrusion on the peace and privilege of these holy walls.'

Saying thus, the father went to the gate of the convent, where stood the judge, displaying the guilt of the fugitive to the holy fathers, to engage them to refuse him sanctuary and give him up to justice. But my master soon stopped him. 'Cease', said he with a low voice, and downcast, meditative look, 'disturb not the peace of these holy walls. The man you seek is my penitent. He has made satisfaction to the Church, and reconciled himself to Heaven. I come this moment from giving him the seal of absolution. Disturb not the raptures of his soul, that is now joining with the angelic choirs in the hymns of joy raised in heaven for his repentance. Depart in peace.'

'How, father', exclaimed the judge, 'can a wretch guilty of such crimes so soon have made his peace? He has deceived you, father; he has not told you half his guilt—rape, incest, adultery and murder! Can they be thus forgiven? So easy pardons but encourage vice.'

'And who art thou, presumptuous man', replied the father, raising his voice, and putting on an air of authority, 'and who art thou, that darest thus to call the power of God's Holy Church in question? What faith, or rather, what heresy has taught thee this presumption? Dost thou measure the Divine authority of our unerring tribunal by the weak rules of thy blind law? Are not the keys of heaven ours? and have we not the power to loose as well as bind? But I shall not argue more with thee here. There is a tribunal proper for such opinions as thine; there try if thy knowledge of the laws will justify thy heresies; there thou art not judge.'

The first mention of heresy had struck such a terror into the heart

of the poor judge that he was for some moments unable to reply. At last, recollecting himself a little : ' I submit, oh, father ', said he. ' I am no heretic ; I have no opinions but what I learn from the Holy Church, whose power I acknowledge in all its divine plenitude '.

' 'Tis well ', replied the priest, ' 'tis well ; depart in peace, and to-morrow I will visit thee, and examine the state of thy conscience '.

The judge then, making a profound reverence, withdrew without a murmur, and the triumphant father returned to his penitent. ' My son ', said he, ' thine enemies are defeated. Thy rest is secure here. But such is their power, and so strong the general abhorrence that pursues thy late guilt, that it will not be safe for thee ever to leave this sanctuary '.

' Oh, father, must I be confined for ever here ' ?

' I said not so, my son : there is a way for thee to go in triumph out, above the power of thy present persecutors '.

' Oh, name it, father ' !

' Take our vows. Heaven has blessed thee with a fertile genius, and steeled thy soul with fortitude. These talents must not be buried ; an account will be required of them. And where can they be put to proper use, except in the service of the Donor, in His Church ? There they will raise thee to that rank and power which thou seest us enjoy. I see thou yieldest. Resist not the motions of the Holy Spirit. I receive thee into the fold. I salute thee, brother. From this moment of thine election mayest thou date thy entrance into the highest honours of this world. The day approaches when thy military knowledge and valour may also be called into action. Great events are ripening in the womb of time ' !

' I yield, oh, father ', replied the penitent ; ' I receive thine offer, with due submission and respect ; and from this moment dedicate my valour, skill, and every power of my soul and body to the implicit service of thine holy order '.

' It is the hand of Heaven that leads thee, no longer son, but brother. I will go and acquaint our brethren with thy miraculous conversion and election. Thou hast no more to do but to make thy will, and bequeath all thy wealth to our order '.

' Bequeath, my father, must I die ' ?

' But to the world, brother, to live with us '.

' But I have nothing to bequeath '.

' Leave that to us. Do you only give all your fortune, in the hands of your brother, to our society, in consequence of your admission, and let us find that fortune. I go ! The bell rings for vespers. I shall send our notary to you ; and when that is done, we will restore our exhausted spirits with a slight repast in the refectory, where I will introduce thee to our brethren '.

In a word, all things were executed, and the new brother admitted in proper time into the order, of which he has since risen to be one of the brightest ornaments. And the judge, to avoid the imputation of heresy which his implied doubt of the Church's sanctuary had given my master the hint of, was glad to pay half his wealth to the society as the fortune of his pious brother.

Soon as this affair was thus happily completed, my master, that

he might openly show his adoration of me to the world, had me made into a crucifix, in which shape I was fastened to his rosary, and there publicly received that adoration from the knee, which before was paid me only in the heart. A repetition of all the occurrences I saw in the service of this master would be unnecessary, as the two I have related give a general idea of them.

CHAPTER X

CHRYSALE CHANGES HIS SERVICE, AND EMBARKS FOR EUROPE IN AN ENGLISH MAN-OF-WAR—THE CAUSE AND MANNER OF HIS COMING THAT WAY—THE OCCURRENCES OF HIS PASSAGE—ON HIS ARRIVAL IN ENGLAND HE IS SENT BY HIS MASTER TO SETTLE SOME MISTAKES IN THE VOYAGE

I WAS heartily sick of such a scene, when the time came for sending me into these parts of the world, where scarcity enhances my value, and makes my power more extensive. There being a war between Spain and England at that time, about the liberty of cutting sticks upon a desert shore, it was necessary to secure a safe passage for the treasure by establishing a right understanding with the commander¹ of an English man-of-war, which was cruising in those seas. It fell to my lot to go on this errand in the shape of a doubloon into which I was cast to save the profanation which a crucifix must suffer in the hands of heretics.

There was some little address requisite to conduct this affair with the captain in such a manner as to keep it secret from his officers, to gain all of whom would have been too expensive; besides that he would never trust his sacred honour to the fidelity of so many. But this was readily adjusted. The refinements of modern politeness having softened the natural ferocity of a state of war, and admitting an intercourse of courtesy between parties who profess to seek each other's destruction, the Spanish governor sent

¹ According to Davis's *Olio*, the commander here referred to was Captain Harry Powlett or Paulet, afterwards sixth Duke of Bolton, who is alluded to later on in a similar episode, where his conduct earns him the nickname of 'Captain Sternpost'. This officer brought charges of misconduct against Admiral Griffin for failing to engage the enemy, and obtained a verdict against him, Griffin being suspended from his rank and employment. Griffin retaliated two years later by similar charges against Powlett, but was unable to bring substantiating evidence. Chrysal, however, compares the two cases in a way that precludes the idea that the culprit was one and the same person in both. Davis has probably mixed up two men of the same name; and, if so, this would be another Captain Powlett of the *Tilbury*, who was reprimanded by a court martial for his dilatoriness in coming into action on an attempt to intercept the Spanish plate fleet, 1748, off Havana. Most of the enemy got away, through the mishandling of the British ships, and the Admiral, Sir Charles Knowles, did not escape censure.

out a boat with his compliments to the English captain with a large supply of fresh provisions, fruits, wine, etc.

This necessarily produced a return of civility from the well-bred captain; and in this intercourse were the terms of his connivance settled, as the seal of which I was delivered to him among a very large number of my fellows; who, honourably punctual to his promise, at the appointed time sailed away from that station in quest of some ships of the enemy's which he expected to meet elsewhere, and did not return till the Spanish treasure was beyond his reach.

As this was a compliment of great consequence to the Spaniards, the captain had been so handsomely considered for it that his desires were satisfied, and he only wished to be safe at home to enjoy the wealth he had so happily acquired. Often would he take me out (for the beauty of my new impression had struck his eye and gained me the honour of being kept in his purse), often, I say, would he take me out of his purse and, gazing on me till his eyes watered: 'O thou end of all my toils and dangers'! would he say, 'thou crown of all my hopes! now I have obtained thee I am content! Let others seek that phantom, Glory; I have in thee the more solid reward, for which I always sought, nor shall anything tempt me to hazard being separated from thee': a resolution which he had an opportunity of showing in all its strength a few days after, when a ship appeared which he thought to be a Spanish man-of-war.

As ours was a ship of force, and all the officers except the captain were very poor; and as the Spanish ships are always richly laden with treasure in those seas, the crew was in the highest spirits at this sight, and made everything ready to attack her with the most eager alacrity. But the case was quite different with the captain. He was now as rich as he desired, and dreaded the loss of that wealth which he had so long laboured for. He therefore retired into his cabin while the lieutenants were clearing ship, and, taking me out of his purse with a look of tenderness that brought the tears into his eyes: 'And shall I hazard the loss of thee?' he cried; 'the object, the reward, of a life of toil and danger? Shall I sacrifice the only good of life to that chimera, honour?—to that bubble, lighter than air and more variable than the wind, the interest of my country? What is honour without wealth? What is the country to him who has nothing in it? Let the poor fight for money—I have enough! Let the ambitious fight for glory—I despise the empty name! Let those who have a property in their country fight for it—I have none, nor can have, nor any of its blessings, without thee; and therefore will not venture thy loss for any such vain considerations'.

As soon as he had formed this prudent resolution, he clasped me to his heart, kissed me, and returned me into his purse, just as the lieutenant came in to tell him they could now make the ship, which must be vastly rich, she was so deep in the water. My master made no reply; but, taking a telescope in his hand, he went upon the quarter-deck, and viewing her for some time with great apparent earnestness: 'You are all mistaken', said he, 'in that ship: rich, indeed! and so she may remain for us. That ship is a first-rate

man-of-war by her size ; and as for her depth in the water, she is only brought down by her guns, which are fifty-two pounders at least. Put about the ship, and make all sail possible from her. I am answerable for His Majesty's ship committed to my care, and will not sacrifice her against such odds. Her weight of metal would blow us out of the water. Besides, I have a packet on board and must not go out of my way : about ship, and away directly, I say'.

The officers stood aghast at this speech, that disappointed all their golden hopes. They urged, they beseeched, they remonstrated, that it was impossible she could be what he said. They insisted that the colour of her sails, and the heaviness of her going proved her to be a ship of trade that had been long at sea ; and as for her bulk, it only encouraged them to hope she would prove the better prize, as all the ships that carry the treasure are very large ; that they had observed they *wronged* her so much, they could go round her if they pleased ; and begged only that they might be permitted to take a nearer view of her, which they were confident would prove her to be what they said. They alleged the opportunity of making all their fortunes ; the honour, the interest of their country. They begged, swore, stormed, and wept ; but all in vain. The captain had taken his resolution, and would vouchsafe no other answer than a repetition of what he said before, ' That he was accountable for His Majesty's ship, and would not hazard her to gratify them : besides, the packet he had on board might be of worse consequence than the taking of such a ship (should she even be what they said, though he was certain to the contrary) would make amends for. And that, as to going nearer to her, the length of her guns would enable them to drive every shot through and through his ship, at a distance that his could never reach her from ; though if they should be mad enough to engage her, his small shot could never pierce such mountains of timber as her sides were barricaded with'. And so, as his power was absolute, they were obliged to submit, and off he sheered.

It is impossible to describe the distraction which this affair threw our ship into. The officers acted all the inconsistent outrages of madness. The men chewed the quid, damned their eyes and limbs for their bad luck, and went to work as usual ; while several poor sick wretches, whose spirits had been so raised by the hopes of such a prize, that they had forgot their complaints, and exerted all their strength to assist in the engagement, now sunk under the weight of the disappointment, and crawled back, many of them to die in their hammocks.

But the captain had carried his point, and regarded nothing else ; though, indeed, he was somewhat disconcerted a few days after, when he learned from another ship that she really was a register ship of immense value, and so weakened by hard weather and sickness, that she could not have attempted any resistance, but had prepared to strike the moment she saw us. This information added such fuel to the rage that inflamed the officers before, that all intercourse between them and their captain was entirely broken off, so that I became his sole companion.

This lasted all the while we were at a distance from England; but as we drew near home, the captain's stiffness began to bend, and he made several advances to a reconciliation and general amnesty, as he could not but feel some apprehensions for his conduct from his superiors. But all was in vain. The thought of returning in poverty, instead of that wealth which he had disappointed them of, kept up their resentments, and they determined to complain, if only for the satisfaction of revenge.

This convinced my master that methods must be taken to obviate their attempts, or he might run a greater hazard at home than he had intended to avoid abroad. He, therefore, prudently concluded, that the same argument which had been so powerful with himself would be the most effectual to vindicate what he had done with others, and that it would be better to share the spoil than risk the loss of all.

For this intent, as soon as he arrived in England, he took me from his purse once more, and looking earnestly at me for some moments: 'We must part', said he, with a sigh; 'we must part! but I hope to good purpose. Thou only was the cause of that conduct which now gives me fear; exert therefore thy influence equally, where I now send thee, and thou wilt excuse my fault, if it is one'. Tears at the thought of losing me here choked his utterance; he gave me a last kiss, and sent me directly away, in company with a considerable number more, to mediate his peace.

CHAPTER XI

THE GOOD CONSEQUENCES OF A RIGHT UNDERSTANDING BETWEEN CERTAIN PERSONS—CHRYSLAL'S REFLECTIONS ON HIS FIRST SEEING THE PUBLIC OFFICES IN LONDON—HIS MASTER VISITS A GENTLEMAN, WHO IN THE VEHEMENCE OF HIS RAGE AGAINST CERTAIN ABUSES, HITS HIMSELF A VIOLENT SLAP ON THE FACE—THE NECESSITY OF DECENCY, AND THE METHODS OF SUPPORTING IT, INSTANCED IN THE HISTORY OF A PRETTY FELLOW

As the delicate nature of this transaction required some address, he entrusted the management of it to his purser, who had convinced him by many instances of his sagacity in the methods of obtaining an influence over the great.

As soon as my new master arrived in London, his first care was to execute the commission for which we had been given to him; but the person to whom this application was to be made, happening to be out of town for a few days, that he might not lose any time, he proceeded to settle some affairs of his own; in the course of which I had an opportunity of seeing into some part of the secrets of his mysterious business.

The professed motive for his coming to town, was to settle his own, and pass his captain's, accounts, between which there was a connection not necessary to be known to any other: for, though

my late master did not think it consistent with his dignity to be too familiar with his officers, and generally slighted their opinion, if only to show his own superiority and keep them at a proper distance; with him and his purser the case is quite otherwise, the best understanding always subsisting between them, and every affair being concerted with the greatest harmony to their mutual advantage: an agreement, which, beside the comfort and convenience of it to themselves, had this happy influence over the rest of the ship's company, that it kept them, if not easy, at least quiet, from all murmurings and complaints of bad provisions, short weights, and such-like imaginary grievances, which the restless temper of seamen is too apt to make the cause of much trouble to the purser, and disturbance to the captain, when these happen not to agree between themselves. But, as the contrary was the case here, their common interest animated the assiduity of my master, and made him go directly to the several officers and contractors with whom his business lay, to prepare everything in proper order for public inspection.

On my first going to these public offices, everything gave me pleasure. There was such an appearance of regularity in all the proceedings, of ease and affluence in the officers, that I could not help saying to myself, 'Happy state, whose meanest servants are gentlemen; whose business is reduced to a system, above danger of confusion or abuse'. But a nearer view showed things in another light. The first person my master went to was the gentleman who supplied him with those kinds of clothing for the seamen, which are by these merry poor fellows emphatically called slops. As he was just going to dinner, my master accepted of his invitation, and sat down with him. A round or two of loyal toasts to the success of the navy, and continuance of the war, having washed down their fare, and refreshed their spirits after the fatigue of a full meal, they proceeded to business.

'I come, sir', said my master, 'to settle the account of the last cruise. Here it is. You see most of the articles have gone off pretty well; but I must tell you, that you are more obliged to some of your friends for that than you are aware of perhaps; for if I had not prevailed on the captain to let the alehouse-keepers and gin-women come on board, and keep the slop-sellers off, when the men received their pay, on going out, you would have had but a blank list of it. But by this management the fellows spent all their money in drink, and then necessity drove them to me for clothes'.

'Here is to the captain's good health', answered the other, 'and that I may soon see him at the head of the navy. I am very much obliged to you and him, and shall consider your friendship properly. But is there no way of preventing those pedlars from intruding thus upon us? I am resolved I will try. I believe I can make an interest, you understand me, that will procure me an order to exclude them; at least, if I cannot do that, I will insist on raising my terms; for every branch of business is now so loaded with presents and perquisites, that there is scarce anything to be got. A man who goes to a public office to receive money

runs the gauntlet through so many of them, that, if he does not make up his accounts in a very masterly manner indeed, he will have but little to show for his pains, in the end'.

'Very true', replied my master, 'I have had experience of what you say this very morning. You know it is some years since I have been in town before; I was therefore quite surprised at the gay appearance of every clerk in the offices. Our midshipmen on the paying off of a ship are nothing to them; so, thought I to myself, this is very well! Such fine gentlemen as these will never stoop to take the little perquisites which their shabby predecessors were so eager for; they cannot want them. Accordingly, as soon as I had done my business, I was preparing to make a handsome speech, and a leg, and so walk off; but I was soon undeceived, and found, to my no small astonishment, that, if the case was altered, it was no way for the better for me; the present fine gentlemen being to the full as rapacious as the former shabby fellows; and with this addition to the evil, that their expectations were raised in proportion to their appearance, so that they must have a crown, where the others were satisfied with a shilling'.

'And how can it be otherwise', returned the other, 'while the principals set them such an example of extravagance, and enforce obedience to it in the manner they do; for though their own exorbitant salaries enable them to live with the luxury of aldermen at home, and make the appearance of courtiers abroad, how can they think that their hackney underlings shall be able to change their dress with the court, and appear with all the precise foppery of pretty fellows, if they have not clandestine ways of getting money: and that this is the case, I can give you an instance not to be contradicted.

'Perhaps you may remember a little boy that ran about the house here, when you were in town last. His mother was servant to my first wife; you cannot forget black-eyed Nan; who was the father is nothing to my story, but I took care of the boy. When he grew up I thought the best thing I could do for him was to get him into one of the public offices, for he was too soft for my own business, and this I imagined would sharpen him, and fifty pounds a year keep him from being an expense to me. Accordingly, I got him admitted as an additional clerk, in this busy time; and, that his appearance should not shame my recommendation, I added a London-made suit to his country wardrobe, which I thought good enough for him to wear every day.

'Well, thus equipped, to the office he went, as good-looking a lad as ever came from a Yorkshire academy, which had been the height of his education. But I soon found that I had been out of my reckoning; for, going with him to introduce him to the head clerk, whom I had before spoken properly to in his behalf, I found the whole office in deep mourning, which, as it had been ordered only for the court, and was to hold but for a fortnight longer, I had never thought of dressing him in; but I soon found that I had not a proper opinion of the consequence of the place. For the head clerk gave me a friendly hint, "that it was expected that all the clerks in His Majesty's offices should show the decent

respect of conforming to the dress of the court on these solemn occasions”.

‘I could not help exclaiming, I believe a little too shortly, “What, sir, upon a salary of fifty pounds a year”?’

“Sir”, replied he, “nobody is forced to take that salary; and they who do not like the rules of the office are at liberty to leave it”; and then turned off upon his heel.

“I beg your pardon, sir”, said I, seeing my error, “it was an oversight of mine; but it shall be amended”.

“The sooner the better, sir”, answered he, “for his lordship will be in the office to-morrow, and he must not see anything so irregular; and pray, sir”, turning to the lad, “get that fleece on your head shorn a little”—his hair flowed down in modest ringlets on his shoulders—“and strive to appear something like a *gentleman*”.

‘I saw it was in vain to say anything, and so took the boy away with me; and had him equipped next day, in all the fashionable trappings of woe, with his hair shorn indeed, and tied up in a bag, by a French barber, for I would not stand for a trifle when my hand was in, and then went with him myself; being desirous to see how he would be received in his new appearance; but alas! I had forgot that indispensable article of a gentleman’s dress, a sword, which I was therefore obliged to send out for directly. In a fortnight’s time, the order for the court’s going into second mourning put me to the same expense over again; for the rules of decency were not to be dispensed with; and then, in a month after, it was as necessary to trim his light grey frock with a silver edging of coxcomb, that he might not appear worse than his fellows; all which, with many other as necessary *et ceteras*, by the end of the first quarter, consumed his year’s salary.

‘This enraged me to that degree, that I was going to take him away directly; but the boy had by this time got some insight into the ways of the place, and prevented me, by saying, that if I would try, but for another quarter, he was satisfied that his perquisites would more than defray all such expenses; and so I find they do, for though he is now as smart, well-dressed a young fellow as any about town, he has never since troubled me for a shilling; nay, more than all this, assures me, there are some of his fellow clerks who keep footmen and horses, and have routs and concerts at their houses, as regularly as the people of the first rank; and all by the perquisites of a place of fifty pounds a year.

‘Now, as all those perquisites are drawbacks upon us, as I said before, we cannot carry on the business on the usual terms, if we do not bring up our loss in the quality of the goods, for it would be absurd to expect that we should lower our living to let such fellows run away with the profit of our industry. In short, my wife’s chariot shall not be put down, nor will I deny myself a bottle of claret, to give you or any other friend, to save all the seamen in Britain from perishing with cold: charity begins at home; I will insist upon having those pedlars prevented from interloping upon our trade; and so, sir, my service to you’.

CHAPTER XII

CHRYSAI'S MASTER GIVES HIS FRIEND SOME HINTS THAT MAKE HIM LOWER HIS NOTE — AN UNCOMMON PIECE OF GENEROSITY RETURNED MORE POLITELY THAN COULD BE EXPECTED FROM THE PARTIES—AN ODD STORY OF AN UNFASHIONABLE STEWARD—THE SUCCESS OF CHRYSAI'S MEDITATION IN FAVOUR OF HIS LATE MASTER

My master had heard him out, though not with the greatest patience, and now, taking the opportunity of his stopping to drink:—

'All this may be true', said he, 'and what you propose might possibly have been done, and with the effect you desire, some time ago: but matters are altered a good deal at present, both among the gentlemen of the navy, and here too, as I am told; and indeed, in respect to this affair, those things are made so infamously bad, and rated so high, that nobody can speak in defence of them; nay, it even goes almost against my own conscience to utter them; for, only think with yourself, what a barefaced imposition it is, to make a poor wretch pay seven shillings for a coarse rotten jacket, when even a Jew shall sell him a sound one, and of finer stuff, for four and sixpence; and everything else at the same rate. In short, this point is so overstrained, that it will probably overturn the whole trade in the end; for several of the captains are so provoked at it, that they take every method they can to prevent the men from taking up anything from us; particularly that which I hinted before, of keeping off the alehouse-keepers, and such people, and encouraging slop-sellers to come on board, when the men are paying, by which means they buy good comfortable clothes, at half the price of our rotten trash: indeed, one of them went so far as to buy in a parcel of good shoes, at his own expense, and make a present of a pair apiece to all his top-men, when they were going out on a cruise, as they had spent their money, and could not buy for themselves, and our shoes were so bad, that the first time they went aloft with them, after they were wet, the ratlings tore them all to pieces, so that it was a common thing to see a man come down barefooted, who had gone up with a new pair of shoes on. Though it is but just to comfort you, with an account of the return which he met with for his kindness, which was no less than a round robin¹ to the Lords of the Admiralty, for his refusing to let them go ashore, and spend their money, in the same manner, next time they came in'.

'And such a return may their officiousness always meet with', replied the other, 'for meddling with matters which do not concern them: cannot they be content with their own large gains,

¹ The name that seamen call their complaints against their captain; it is taken from the manner of their signing them, which is in a circle, so that there is no knowing who signs first.

without interfering to hinder others? But I see how it is; the spirit of patriotism has got into them too, forsooth, and they must be showing their regard to the public! What an evil effect will the bad example of one man have! There was a time when they would not have dared to do this. To say the truth, my friend, this is not the first alarm we have received on this head: though what to do about it we cannot tell: indeed, I believe we must e'en mend our hands; which, as half a loaf is better than no bread, hard as it is upon us, is preferable to losing the trade quite; in the meantime, I am obliged to you and your captain for your friendship, and hope you will accept of this return'.

They then proceeded to settle their accounts, as soon as which were finished, my master took his leave, and went on with his business, which was exactly of the same nature, and concluded in the same way, with every person whom they dealt with.

As soon as these transactions were ended, his next care was to pass his captain's accounts, which he also succeeded in, without any difficulty, though for this he was more indebted to the chance of a lucky minute than he had apprehended. For they were no sooner closed, than an affair happened that gave a turn, entirely new, to the whole course of business, in that channel.

When the accounts of the next captain came to be examined, the clerk, glancing his eye cursorily over them, in the usual manner, on looking at the amount, 'There must be some mistake here', said he.

'How so, sir'? said the captain, who was present, 'let me look at the account, if you please. No, sir, there is no mistake, I believe. Pray, where do you mean'?

'In the casting it up, sir', answered the clerk, 'you see, the amount is made to be but eight hundred pounds'.

'Nor should it be more', replied the captain, 'I summed up the account, myself, and these figures are of my own writing'.

'How can that possibly be, sir'? returned the clerk in a surprise, 'but eight hundred pounds for all the repairs, wear and tear, of a man-of-war, on such a station, for four years! I suppose then, sir, the ship had a thorough repair going out, and wants the like now! To be sure it can be done better and cheaper here, than abroad, and therefore you were in the right to bring her home to get it'.

'Not at all, sir', added the captain, 'that was not the case: she had no thorough repair going out, and is come home in better order than she went, as this return of the officers of the yard shows'.

'Good God! sir, how did you manage'?

'To the best of my judgment, sir, I laid out nothing but what I thought necessary, and I charged nothing but what I laid out: I mean not to arraign the conduct of others: I only speak for myself. In these cases I look upon a man as a steward to the public! and I should think it as great dishonesty to betray, or break that trust, as to wrong a private person'.

This speech was heard with astonishment, and returned with a

cold compliment, as it came too home to many to meet general approbation; however, the affair necessarily had an effect not very agreeable to some present; for, the next captain's accounts arising to near four times the sum of the last, such an immediate precedent made the difference so glaring, that it was impossible to avoid putting a stop to them, and so he was mulcted his whole four years' pay : though ours, which had been still higher, had gone off smoothly, and without the least remark.

My master having concluded this affair so happily, proceeded next on the great cause of his coming to town, in which, with our assistance, he laboured so successfully that the captain's mistake met only a gentle reprimand.

I here came into the possession of a new master, and immediately after changed my Spanish appearance for the fashion of the country, and in the shape of a guinea, entered into the most extensive state of sublunary influence, becoming the price of every name that is respected under heaven.

CHAPTER XIII

CHRYSLAL EXPLAINS SOME FURTHER PROPERTIES OF HIS NATURE—
HE CHANGES HIS APPEARANCE FOR THE MODE OF THE COUNTRY,
AND ENTERS INTO THE SERVICE OF A NOBLE LORD—THE SAGACITY
OF MR POUNDAGE, AND HIS ADDRESS IN BUSINESS

I AM now entering upon a stage where the scenes are so various, and so quickly changed, that it will require your strictest attention to keep pace with my relation. But to make this the easier to you, and to disencumber your surprise from doubts, at my repeating the past lives of persons in whose possession I have been but a few moments, I must premise to you, that our knowledge is very different from that of men. I have told you that we know all things intuitively, without the trouble, delay, and errors of discourse or reasoning. I must now further inform you, that this intuition extends not only to the present face of things, but also has a retrospect to the whole series of their existence, from its first beginning: the concatenation between cause and effect being so plain to our eyes, that let us but see any one event of the life of a man, and we immediately know every particular that preceded it.

As to futurity, indeed, it is not yet determined how far forward we can look into that; some allowing us to have the same power of foresight as we have of retrospect; which was the opinion that supported the credit of oracles in former days. But that notion is now exploded, and men argue that our foresight extends only to natural causes and effects; but in the actions of man, his free-will so often breaks that order, that it is impossible for us to know this moment how he will act the next, from any observation

of the past; and they think they prove their argument by this, that if spirits could foreknow all a man's actions, it would spare them the trouble of tempting him to any particular one. But this by the by! for as I shall confine my narrative to matters already past, without ever foretelling anything, it is not necessary for me to determine a question that opens such a field for the guesses of the learned. But to return to my story.

From the mint, where I put on the shape of a guinea, I was sent to the bank, where the pleasure I had felt at the beauty and convenience of my new figure was considerably cooled at my being thrown into so large a heap as took away all my particular consequence, and seemed to threaten a long state of inactivity before it might come to my turn to be brought into action. But I soon found myself agreeably mistaken, and that the circulation there was too quick to admit of such delay; for I was that very day paid out to a noble lord, in his pension from the ministry.

It was about two in the afternoon, when I was brought to his lordship's levee, where the grandeur of his looks, and the magnificence of everything about him, made me so pleased with my situation, that I thought I could be satisfied to fix my abode with him for some time.

He was just arisen, and seated at the fire, leaning on a writing-table covered with green velvet, on which lay some books open, and several letters which he had just broke the seals of, and was beginning to read, while a female servant, beautiful as Hebe, poured out his tea at a sideboard, and a page like Ganymede handed it to him.

In this easy indifference he sat, casting an eye upon a book, or reading a paragraph in a letter, between every sip of his breakfast, when I was laid upon his table by his steward, with these words, 'Two hundred, my lord'.

'Two hundred', replied his lordship, 'the order was for five hundred'!

'But, my lord, the butcher, the baker'!

'What are these wretches to me? Is not my whole estate sufficient for them'?

'My lord, there is not a shilling to be got from your tenants, the times are so bad, and the taxes so high! And an ounce of provisions could not be had'.

'Then you might have all fasted! I must have money for this evening; I am engaged in a party, and cannot be off'.

'My lord, your lordship's tailor desired me to speak to you; he is to appear before his commissioners to-morrow, and begs'—

'What can I do? I would relieve him if I could, but I have no money for myself; I cannot, will not do without five hundred more this evening, get it where or how you will'.

'My lord, I was thinking to apply to Mr Discount, the scrivener, but he said, the last time, that he would lend no more on that estate, without the immediate power of cutting the timber'.

'Well, damn him, let him have it, though it will not be fit to cut these ten years; and, do you hear, get me a thousand to-day'.

‘A thousand, my lord! you said five hundred. I am afraid he will think a thousand too much’!

‘Then he shall never have it; let me do as I will; do not I know that the timber is worth twice as much this moment, if I could wait to set it to sale? I will not be imposed on by the rascal; I’ll go myself to my neighbour Worthland directly; he is a man of honour, and will be above taking advantage, though I did oppose his election’.

‘As your lordship pleases for that. But then, perhaps, Mr Discount will call in all his money, if he saw you put yourself into other hands; beside, I am not certain that he will refuse, and therefore I should think it better to try him first; you may do this after. Though I must take the liberty to say, I should be sorry to see your lordship stoop to Sir John Worthland, after all the expense you have been at to give him trouble. For to be sure he would boast of it in the country, if it were only to make you look little, and prevent your opposing him again’.

‘Why, there may be something in that, and therefore see what is to be done with Discount; but I must have a thousand at any rate, five hundred of which to give to poor Buckram, and bring me the other as soon as possible, for I am in haste out’.

‘Then your lordship had better sign this deed first, to save the time of coming back again, if he should do it’.

‘Ay, let me see it; there: and make haste’. And then turning to his page, ‘Reach me that paper, this pen is so good it tempts me to write a letter, while I wait for Poundage’s return’. And so, humming a new tune, he went on with his breakfast without the least concern.

You are so great a stranger to the ways of that part of the world which deals in money-matters, that you will be surprised when I tell you that, while this Mr Poundage brought me from the bank, he had called upon Mr Discount, and brought him to his lord’s to do his business.

But you must not imagine this was to lend his lordship money. Nothing less. It was only to appear as the nominal lender of his lordship’s own money, which Poundage had that very morning received from some of his tenants in the country, and which if he could not bring it in better, he meant to replace with part of the price of the timber, which he was to buy in Discount’s name, who was a creature of his own.

So remarkable a transaction gave me a curiosity to take a view of Poundage’s life, the main lines of which I will just touch over, while you may think him gone for the money, and his lordship dressing for his engagement.

CHAPTER XIV

THE HISTORY OF MR THOMAS POUNDAGE—HIS LORDSHIP GOES TO HIS APPOINTMENT—AN EVENING'S ENTERTAINMENT IN HIGH LIFE—CHRYSAI CHANGES HIS SERVICE; HIS REFLECTIONS ON THE RULING PASSION OF THE TIMES

MR THOMAS POUNDAGE was the offspring of a gipsy, who had left him on the straw he was born on, in an old barn near his lordship's father's, his weakness and deformity making her not think him worth the trouble of carrying away.

The old lord himself happening to be the first who heard his cries, as he was riding by, took compassion on the little helpless wretch, and ordered him to be taken care of at his own expense, and not sent to the parish.

Such an uncommon instance of charity was immediately attributed to a tenderer motive—a suspicion however injurious to his lordship, so advantageous to the foundling, that it doubled the care and attendance on him, and made him appear of such consequence that Mr Thomas Poundage himself, his lordship's steward, condescended to stand god-father for him, and gave him his own name. As Master Tommy grew up, he showed all the sharpness and cunning of his race, which old Poundage representing to his lord as a capacity for learning, he was put to the best schools; and being of the same age with his lordship's eldest son, his present master, was settled as a humble companion and attendant upon him; in which station, the pliancy of his temper soon gained him his master's favour, as his secrecy and discretion did his confidence; no service appearing too difficult or mean for his undertaking, to please his master, especially in the mysteries of intrigue; nor a look ever betraying his success.

These services naturally produced an intimacy that opened to him all his master's secrets, and gave him such consequence with him, that upon the death of his father, old Poundage was superannuated upon a pension, and the place given to him, in which he had behaved himself so judiciously, that, in about ten years, he had amassed so large a fortune, as to be able to supply his master's wants (with the assistance of his own money sometimes), without the scandal of exposing them to any other: a service that amply recompensed, to his lordship's honour, whatever prejudice it may be supposed to do his affairs.

'Tis true, his supplanting his god-father and benefactor, old Poundage, had not met with the approbation of such as were not well acquainted with the world, and particularly as the old gentleman in his age had accounted for all his kindness to him, by owning a relation, which he had before strove to fix upon his lord, by many plain insinuations, though he now said he had long before revealed to his ungrateful son the secret of his birth.

However, if he had communicated his secret, our son of fortune had kept it so well, that he could now deny it with

safety; nor had he profited so little by his father's example, as to be moved with a suggestion that evidently appeared, however true it might be in itself, to spring at that time from resentment. And as he could not expect to reap any great advantage from being acknowledged for the spurious son of one who had many legitimate children to inherit his fortune, he thought it better to confirm the former opinion, by his slights of the claim of Poundage, and since he must be the bastard of one of them, choose the lord before his servant.

But to return to my master. He was dressed by that time Poundage came back with the money, when taking the five hundred for his own use, he went to his appointment.

As to the other five hundred, which he had ordered to be paid to his tailor, for fear of the wretch's applying to the lord himself in his despair, Poundage did send for him, and, in compassion to his distresses, advanced him four hundred pounds, of his own money, for he had not a shilling of his lordship's in his hands; for which piece of service he desired no other consideration, than a receipt for five hundred pounds, though it might be so long before he could get it back, that he expected to be a loser by his friendship, which Mr Buckram need not, as he could bring it up in his next bill. Of this I came to the knowledge some time after, in the course of my circulation.

It was five o'clock, and dinner just serving up, when my lord joined his company. At dinner, and during the reign of the bottle for a couple of hours after, the conversation turned upon all the polite topics of the times, wherein there could be no long disputes, as every difference in opinion was immediately determined by a bet, the supreme decision of peace, war, religion and law. But this dissipated piddling soon gave way to the serious business of the evening, to which they all adjourned, with an intention and anxiety worthy of the consequence at stake.

It is impossible to give you any idea of this scene, in which every moment produced such sudden transitions from despair to exultation, from shouts of joy to the most blasphemous execration of their very being, on the vicissitudes in the momentary fortunes of the actors, that the very recollection of it is a pain even to me.

However, it made no such impression upon them: but they continued at it till about six in the morning, when they retired for the night.

In the course of the evening, I often went the circuit of the whole company round, and at length was carried home by a new master. But, before I say anything of him, I must give you a few slight sketches of the characters of some others of the company, and particularly of my late lord, in whose whole appearance and behaviour there was something so extraordinary.

There is scarce a stronger instance of the tyranny of avarice over the heart of man, than the passion for play, which now is so general and prevalent, as to seem in a manner to have drowned every other. The tenderest, the strongest, connections of friendship and nature, yield to the force of this irresistible infatuation.

The persons who esteem each other most in the world this moment, no sooner sitting down to this decision of fate, than they labour for each other's ruin, with all the assiduity and eagerness of the most inveterate hatred and revenge.

Nor is this practice confined to those alone whom necessity may seem to stimulate to so desperate a resource; the richest are often the most infatuated with this passion, who, possessing already more than they can enjoy, hazard that, and give themselves up a prey to anxiety, and often to despair, to indulge a fruitless desire for more.

Of this last class were most of the company, among whom my late lord had spent this evening: some few indeed there were whom this folly had reduced to the former, and necessitated to live by their experience in the art which had been their ruin.

CHAPTER XV

THE COMPANY REPRESENTED IN PERSPECTIVE—SET A BEGGAR ON HORSEBACK, AND HE'LL RIDE TO THE DEVIL—A NEW WAY OF PARRYING A DUN, AND PAYING DEBTS OF HONOUR—A COMMISSION-BROKER FLUNG—A CONNOISSEUR DECEIVED BY HIS OWN JUDGMENT AND EMINENT TASTE FOR VIRTU — HISTORY OF A NOBLE BREECHES-MAKER

I SEE your curiosity rise at the mention of so strange a scene as this must be. It is natural, and therefore shall be indulged. But, as all description must fall short of it, I shall represent it to you in perspective. Do you therefore resolve sense into imagination, a practice not uncommon with the philosophic mind, and to pure abstracted attention shall my words become things, and appear as visible to your eyes, as if they were purged with euphrasy and rue.

Observe now, at the head of the table, that heavy-looking figure, whose saturnine complexion gives a solemnity to his appearance, even beyond his declining years. This man wore out the prime of his life in indigence and hardships, till chance by one successful stroke in his business, gave him such a fortune, as was deemed sufficient merit to deserve nobility, and entitle him to one of the first employments in the state.

Sudden elevation makes a weak head giddy; the plain, good-natured, cheerful man, is lost in the solemn proud peer; who is harder of access than his sovereign, and seems to value himself on having all the hours he has spent in cringing to the great, repaid tenfold in attendance upon him. As to the business of his office, the whole system of human politics is in general such a jumble of blundering and villany, that I can seldom bring myself to bestow a moment's notice on it, so can say no more of his, than that the little attention and less capacity he has for it, may most probably

give just occasion for all the murmurings that are against him. But this was not the motive of my pointing him out to you. It was his infatuation to the love of play, which makes him hazard that wealth which he so long felt the want of, in hopes of acquiring more, though he has already more than he can enjoy.

This has been an unsuccessful night with him. Observe how stupefied he looks at his loss! Extend the view but a few moments further, and see how he sits down in the common hall of the tavern, among servants and chairmen, insensible of the impropriety of such a place, and unable to order his servants to carry him home: nor is it improbable that the scene he has just quitted may remain so strongly on his imagination to-morrow, that he may write down the rules of the game he has been playing at, instead of the orders of his office, as he has done once before.

Next to him, you see a short, ruddy, cheerful-looking man. That is one of the deplorable instances of the evil of this preposterous passion. With every advantage of rank, abilities, and fortune, did that person set out in life. But, alas! soon was the prospect of his future happiness and grandeur overcast! Soon did gaming reduce him not only to a necessity of prostituting his abilities to the prejudice of his country, but also of descending to every iniquitous mystery of the art to support his practice of it; for so bewitched is he to it, that he cannot resist, though he now can scarce get any person to play with him, his want of money and his skill in the whole art are so well known.

This has been a successful evening with him, as you may see by his extraordinary flow of spirits; not that his natural vivacity ever forsakes him in the worst reverse of fortune. He has won a considerable part of the great losings of the person we have just been taking notice of; and though he has many demands upon him for every shilling of it, yet, far from thinking of paying one of them, he is this moment planning new scenes of pleasure to consume it all, choosing to let his creditors all be bankrupts, or even to compound with them as a bankrupt himself, rather than deny his appetites their full gratification.

It is impossible to convey a just notion of such a complicated character, by any description; I shall therefore just mention one or two of his actions, from which you may, in some measure, form a judgment of the whole.

Having a pressing occasion, some time ago, for an hundred guineas, he applied to one of those necessary attendants of the great, who, at the moderate interest of five hundred per cent., are always ready to supply them with money to discharge their debts of honour. This friendly gentleman, being well acquainted with the character of the borrower, made many scruples to comply with his request, till at length he suffered himself to be prevailed upon conditionally, that, if the principal and premium were not paid in a week, he should receive a guinea as a further gratuity then, and every time after that he should demand his money, till it was paid. Accordingly, at the end of the week, he made his demand, and, as he expected, received his guinea; from which time he took care to call upon him every second or third day, till

he had received his money more than twice told thus, in single guineas, for forbearance; always timing his applications, when he saw his debtor in company with persons before whom he would not even enter into an expostulation, for fear of having the affair known, so that as soon as he saw him approach, without waiting to be asked, he used to pull out his purse, and calling him to him, gave him a guinea, to go and buy something for him; an errand the other sufficiently understood.

The constant repetition of this could not always escape observation, nor was the cause of it unsuspected by most of his acquaintance; some of whom happening to hint it to him one evening, when wine had taken away all reserve, he, who was above being ashamed of anything, honestly owned the whole transaction, and joined in the general laugh at his own folly: however, as the secret was now out, he resolved to submit to the imposition no longer; and the next time his friend waited upon him, instead of hurrying him away as before, he publicly entered into a discussion of his demand, and as he could not deny his having received more than double what he had lent, the debt was adjudged by the company to be sufficiently discharged, and he was literally sent off without his errand.

This story shows only the levity and inconsiderateness of his temper, and the distresses in which they entangled him: but the following is of a blacker hue and will prove that he is capable of doing anything to extricate himself from those distresses, and provide for the gratification of his passions.

Not very long ago, a young gentleman, who had a military turn, collected the whole of his small fortune, to purchase himself a commission in the army. Having lodged his money in the hands of his agent, who, for the convenience of making use of it, and to enhance the price of his own trouble, was in no haste to dispatch the affair, he made an excursion to the country town, in which this gentleman's seat was, and where he happened to be at that time.

As the hospitality of his temper made his house open to every stranger, who had the appearance of a gentleman, the young soldier soon became acquainted with him, and in return for the friendship for which he mistook the general affability of his conversation, and to display his own importance, told him his present situation, and the method he had taken to procure success to his hopes of a truncheon. His friend expressed the strongest approbation of his spirit, and encouraged his hopes, but told him that he had chosen the worst way of entering into the army, as the sum of money, which he had given the agent to purchase him only a pair of colours, applied properly to some of the persons in office, and backed by good interest, would not only procure him a cornetcy of horse, at present, which was of three times that value, but would also establish such an interest for him, as should greatly accelerate his rise to still higher promotions.

Struck with such a promising prospect as this speech opened to him, the young gentleman answered, that he was sensible of the truth of what the other said, but that it was his unhappiness to

have had no friend to direct him how to apply his money properly, much less to back him afterward.

'That's very hard', replied his friend, 'I wish I had known you sooner'.

This hint was enough; the young gentleman, fired with such flattering hopes, flew directly to town, and, finding that his agent had not yet concluded the purchase for him, took his money out of his hands, and returning to the country, in the confidence of his heart, went and presented it to his friend, throwing himself entirely upon his patronage and protection.

It is probable that, when this gentleman began the discourse which gave occasion to this action, he meant no more by it than to display his own judgment and interest, without any further design; but the sight of five hundred pounds was a temptation he could not resist.

He, therefore, with seeming surprise and reluctance, received the money, and took the young gentleman into his care.

For some time he fed him with hopes of immediate success; but, his impatience beginning to grow troublesome, upon his return to town for the winter, he gave him to understand 'that he was offended at his importunity: that, since he had undertaken to serve him, he would do it as soon as he could; but that he need not give himself the trouble of calling upon him any more, as he would receive sufficient notice of his success in the public papers'. Saying which words, he left him.

Thunderstruck at this speech, the young gentleman withdrew, and, meeting one of his acquaintance, informed him of what had happened. This person, who was perfectly acquainted with the gentleman's character, saw immediately into the whole affair, and explained the imposition to him. This made him mad; he returned directly to demand his money, but was denied admittance, nor would his letters even be received by the porter. His case was now desperate; while he had paid attendance upon his patron, he had exhausted his means of subsistence to the last mite, so that he now was in want of a morsel of bread. In this situation, a moment was not to be lost; and luckily, his despair suggested to him the only means that could possibly have procured him redress. He drew up a state of his case in a very few words, and, putting on the best suit of clothes he had left, went the very next day to court, where, in sight of his patron, he bent his knee to his sovereign, and presented it to him. Something particular in his air and manner struck the monarch's notice; he read the petition; and then reached it to this gentleman, in whose altered countenance he soon read the truth of the contents; turning, therefore, from him, with a look of ineffable reproof and contempt, he ordered the secretary at war to make out a commission for the young gentleman that very day, and from that hour has never held the other in the least degree of esteem or favour; but he is insensible to such disgrace, and while he can gratify his passions, in the manner you see at present, cares not what the world thinks or says of him.

Opposite to him, on the other side of the table, observe an

uncommonly large-boned bulky man ; this is one of the instances of the insufficiency and weakness of human laws, which, striving to remedy one evil, often make way for a greater. That man is now advanced to the foremost rank of the militia list, merely by seniority ! A grievous abuse of that institution, which, to prevent favour from advancing its minions over friendless merit, ordains, that no senior officer shall serve under his junior ; but now, by the natural force of human perversion, this well-designed regulation is made a pretext for giving command to such as have no other claim to it, than (what should indeed incapacitate them), old age, and so keeping back the advance, and damping the ardour of youth.

As there is no man without some particular ambition, his has taken a turn, which perhaps you may think the most remote from his profession of a soldier. Pictures, painting, is the sole object of his admiration, the only knowledge he values himself upon. Tell him of a siege, or a battle, an attack or a retreat, conducted with the greatest skill, and he hears you unmoved, nor will interrupt your account with a single question : but name Rembrandt or Titian, and he immediately gives you a dissertation on their excellencies, and the difference of their schools ! Tell him but of a sale of pictures, on the day of a review, and, if he is forced to feign sickness to excuse his attendance in the field, he will be at it.

Such absurd passions are always the objects of artifice and imposition. An ingenious painter of this country, not very long since, whose works would have been a credit to the best of foreign schools, but were despised at home, bethought himself of a way to turn this person's foible to some advantage. He made some designs, landscapes, and other drawings, in the manner of some of the greatest of the ancient Italian masters, whose names he marked upon the backs of them, in the characters of their times, and giving them the cast of age, made them up in an Italian chest, and by the assistance of a captain of a ship, had them entered at the custom-house, as directly from Italy, and consigned to a stranger, as from a friend there, to be disposed of in London.

The report soon reached this lover of virtue, who was so ravished with the thought of gaining such a treasure, that he flew to the place, and, being convinced by his judgment of the authenticity of them, bought them all together, for a very large sum, but far short of their real value, had they been to be disposed of by a person acquainted with it.

Though this success was very pleasing and useful to the painter, he did not stop here. This person had some way taken a dislike to him, which he indulged by running down his work. This, therefore, was an opportunity for revenge not to be missed. He let him boast of his acquisition in all companies, and display his judgment in proving them to be the genuine productions of those great masters, by criticisms which none but a connoisseur could make : but then, as soon as the whole affair was so public, that there was no denying it, what does the incensed artist but produce the counter-parts of them all, which he had kept for the occasion, so like as

not possibly to be known asunder, and unravelled the whole affair, taking care only to keep himself clear of the law, by saying that he had sold those things as of no value, at a very small price, to a *Jew*!

This was a severe stroke! It overturned the only reputation which he had even an ambition of, and robbed him of a large sum of money besides, to recover which loss, and divert the chagrin of the whole deceit, he has recourse to play, which he follows with the eagerness you see. But his is not the only absurd passion that strikes the notice of an accurate observer of mankind. The person on his right hand was born in the first rank of the state, but by some unlucky mistake, the qualifications which fell to his share belonged to one of the lowest classes of mechanics. While others of his rank are marshalling armies, and planning conquest, correcting the abuses, or studying to rise upon the ruins of the state, his utmost ambition is, to cut out a buckskin to advantage, and be reckoned the best breeches-maker of his time. Harmless as such an humble turn may seem, it involves the noble artist in many whimsical distresses.

His passion for breeches-making is so strong that he never sits near any person but his hand is immediately and unpremeditatedly applied to his thigh, which he has no sooner stroked down two or three times, than he thinks he conceives the size and shape of it so exactly, that he can completely fit it, without the trouble of taking any other measure; and accordingly never fails to introduce a dissertation on the art, which he concludes with the demonstrative proof of his skill, of offering to make a present of a pair of his own making. The advantage of such an offer, and the pleasure of encouraging so illustrious a mechanic, make his present always accepted, so that he has generally the most business of any one in the trade, though some accidents have happened, that have almost made him afraid to pursue such an indiscriminate method of soliciting custom.

Happening, some time ago, in a very large company, to sit near a young gentleman, whose delicate complexion had brought him, though most unjustly, under a suspicion of indulging unnatural passions, he applied his hand to the gentleman's thigh, and began to feel it all over, to take measure of it, according to his custom. The gentleman, who was not ignorant of the imputation he lay under, and therefore was more quickly sensible of everything that might possibly seem to allude to it, thought this application to his thigh was meant either to tempt or insult him, for he had been informed that those wretches often make their infamous addresses in this manner, and was enraged at it to such a degree, that, forgetting all respect to the company present, and to the rank of his supposed lover, he felled the poor breeches-maker to the ground, and starting from his chair drew his sword and would have run him through the body had not his arm been happily seized by the gentleman who sat next him.

It is not easy to describe the astonishment of the company at such an outrage, which they could attribute to nothing but frenzy, but the gentleman soon undeceived them.

'Infamous, unnatural wretch'! exclaimed he, as soon as rage

permitted him utterance ; ' I'll make you know that I am not an object of your brutal passions. I have exposed you here, but your infamy shall not be confined to this company, I'll publish it to all the world. Unhand me, gentlemen, and let me wash off the disgrace of such an attempt with the monster's blood ! I'll gladly pay my own life as a forfeit to the defect of the law that has provided no punishment for such odious crimes '.

To the greater part of the company this speech was quite unintelligible, and only confirmed the suspicion of his madness ; but one of them, who had observed the gentleman change countenance upon the noble mechanic's applying his hand to his thigh, soon cleared up the mystery.

' I believe, sir', said he, ' you have been too hasty, and mistaken an intention, not only harmless in itself, but generous also, for one of a very different nature ! Have you any other reason for accusing his lordship of unnatural designs upon you, beside his laying his hand upon your thigh, and feeling it ' ?

' No, sir ; but that I think enough ; too much for him to offer or for me to bear ; nor will I bear it '.

' I do not pretend, sir, to tell you what you must bear, but this I can tell you, that you have entirely, and most injuriously, mistaken his lordship, who meant no more by that action which gave you such offence than just to take your measure for a pair of breeches, which, if you had not been so hasty in your resentment, he would have made you a present of '.

' Death, sir, do you make a jest of me ' ?

His lordship, who had heard their discourse, and was by this time so far recovered of his fright as to be able to speak, interposed here, or the affair might probably have taken another turn.

' No, indeed, sir', said he, ' he does not jest ! I meant nothing more ; and all the company present knows that I never had any passion in my life but for breeches-making ; and, if you apprehended anything else, you were very much mistaken '.

This speech and the manner in which it was delivered, were not to be resisted. They disarmed the gentleman's rage instantly, and his only concern was how to make up the matter so as to avoid the ridicule of such a mistake. He, therefore, told his lordship that he was very sorry for his error, and hoped that he would attribute the consequences of it to that delicate sensibility which every man of honour must have under such an apprehension. This was sufficient ; his lordship, instead of harbouring resentment, was glad to get so easily rid of the affair ; and to convince the gentleman, both of the sincerity of his reconciliation, and that he had no other design than what he said in the action that gave him the offence, he undertook to make him a pair of buckskin breeches, only from the measure he had taken, that should fit him better than any he had worn in his life.

CHAPTER XVI

THE CHARACTER OF A VIRTUOSO—THE HISTORY OF A HORNED COCK ;
WITH SOME CURIOUS PHILOSOPHICAL REMARKS ON CORNUATED
ANIMALS

OPPOSITE to him sits one of those philosophers who build their pretences to scientific fame on making collections of the anomalous frolics of nature, without ever attempting to investigate the wisdom and power displayed in the regular process of her works. In the course of this study, a whimsical adventure lately happened to the noble virtuoso before us. A man that bought poultry round the country, to supply the markets of this great city, having got intelligence of his lordship's taste, resolved to turn it to his own advantage. He, accordingly, procured a most beautiful gamecock, and sawing off the spurs of another cock that had very long ones, contrived to fix them firmly with wax on the head of this bird, on each side of the comb, with the points turned backwards, and inclining from each other, like the horns of a goat, in such a manner that they appeared to have grown naturally there.

As soon as he found that he could bring his scheme to a probability of success, he waited on the virtuoso, and giving notice that he had something curious to communicate, was immediately admitted to an audience in his museum, where he informed him that he had received intelligence from a particular friend of his, a Scotch pedlar, that in the farthest part of the Highlands there was a most remarkable cock, with two surprising horns growing out of the back of his head, in the possession of an old woman, who was famous for the second sight ; that upon his admiring the creature, the woman had offered to sell it to him for a pound of tobacco and a bottle of brandy, but he was afraid to meddle with it, as the country said it was her familiar, though he had seen it himself scrape the dunghill, and tread the hens like any other cock ; and that upon hearing the news, he was come to inform his lordship of it, and to offer his service to go all the way himself for the bird, and bring him up, if he would promise to reimburse him the expenses of his journey, and give him some little consideration for his trouble ; and to convince his lordship that he had no design to impose upon him, he would go at his own hazard and desire nothing if he did not succeed.

The first mention of such a curiosity threw the virtuoso into the highest rapture ; he embraced the fellow, conjured him not to lose a minute, nor drop the least syllable of the affair to any person living till he had brought him the cock : and to secure his fidelity pulled out his purse, and gave him ten guineas, with the promise of fifty more, the moment he should receive him. The man promised him everything he required and went away, hugging himself in the success of his scheme. Accordingly he left that part of the country directly, and, taking care to keep beyond the reach of his lordship's inquiry, followed his business as usual, for the time that he might be thought to have spent in his expedition. In the

meanwhile, the virtuoso could not conceal the pride of his heart on the prospect of so great an acquisition; but in all his letters to his philosophical correspondents gave mysterious hints of something immensely fine, rare, and unnatural, and assumed the importance due to the possession of such a treasure.

At length the moment arrived that he was to complete his happiness. About ten o'clock at night the man alighted at his lordship's gate, and sending in his name, was immediately shown into the museum, where his lordship flew to meet him, in the utmost impatience.

As soon as the man entered, all over spattered with dirt, and putting on every appearance of fatigue, 'Well, my good friend', said the virtuoso, with the greatest eagerness, 'what success? Where is the dear creature? Shall I be so happy as to see him in my possession?'

'My lord', answered the man, 'I must beg your pardon for a moment; I am not able to speak; I am quite worn out', and then dropping upon a chair, as if he was just ready to faint. His lordship immediately rung for some cordial for him, which he took from the servant himself at the door (for he would not admit any one living) and gave him with his own hand. When he was a little recovered, 'I beg your lordship's pardon', continued he, 'but I could not hold out a moment longer; what with travelling all day and watching all night, I am quite worn out'.

'But where is the bird?'

'And then such offers as I have refused! Well, to be sure, I trusted to your lordship's generosity, for I shall never have such another opportunity of making my fortune; for behold the thing had taken wind, and there was my lord's duke and Sir Thomas's men, and twenty more, riding for life, to try who should get him, but I had got the start of them, and was coming back with the pretty creature in my bosom; but I let them all go on their fools' errand, and did not say anything to them, for how did I know but they might kill me to get him away from me?' Having finished his speech, which the other did not choose to interrupt, though he listened to it with the utmost impatience, the fellow opened his horseman's coat and with the greatest caution, produced the wonderful creature, the head and neck of which had been carefully thrust into a box made on purpose for fear the coat should rub off the horns.

His lordship's rapture at the sight is not to be described. He instantly pulled out his purse, and paying down the promised price, took possession of him, and bid the man go and refresh himself for that night with the best in the house, and in the morning he would consider how he might make him a return more equal to his service by procuring him some handsome place at court. But the fellow had other designs in his head than ever to see his face more. However, he kept that to himself, and retiring with many professions of gratitude, left his house directly and took his leave of that country for ever.

In the meantime, his lordship had notice that supper was served up; but though he had company the first of rank in his house,

he was so wrapt up in the contemplation of his new acquisition that he sent word he was taken suddenly ill and could not possibly attend them; he then dispatched several servants express to his learned friends to desire their attendance next day to see the most astonishing and beautiful composition nature had ever made in the animal world, and devoted the rest of the night to the drawing up of a proper description of this surprising horned cock, with a physical inquiry into the substance of his horns and a philosophical attempt to account for such an extraordinary production. When this work of uncommon learning was finished he indulged himself with taking another view of his darling bird, and then put him in a beautiful cage from which he dislodged two Chinese pheasants, and placed him in his museum next to his favourite horned owl.

It was six in the morning before he retired to rest; when his head was so full of his new acquisition that he lay dreaming of cows with wings and cocks with horns, and such-like wonderful works of nature, till the arrival of his learned friends at noon. As soon as their arrival was announced, he rose directly, and without waiting to visit his cock, to whom he had given a sufficiency of provisions before he left him, went to meet them. After several impatient inquiries into the cause of so sudden and peremptory a summons, the virtuoso, in all the mysterious importance which so inestimable an acquisition gave him, produced his own learned labours of that morning, and when they had sufficiently studied and examined them, introduced them to a sight of the unparalleled subject.

'There, gentlemen', said he, in conscious exultation, 'there my friends, behold the most uncommon, unnatural, and inestimable curiosity that ever enriched the collection of a philosopher. There behold an indisputable proof of their error, who assert that nature has placed an immovable boundary between the quadruped and winged creations. There, behold a sufficient encouragement to urge your indefatigable search for monsters, and to mix the whole animal creation in coition, for the production of mermaids, griffins, centaurs, harpies, and horned cocks, and all that beautiful confusion which yield such inexpressible delight to an inquisitive, philosophic mind'.

While he was making this harangue, the company approached the gilded cage that contained this inestimable prodigy, and stooping down to contemplate him, were surprised to find one of his horns fallen off, and the other moved considerably from the situation in which it had been described to them; for doleful to relate, the cock, which was of the right game breed, had, unfortunately, taken offence at the visage of the owl his neighbour, and in his struggles to come at him through the bars of the cage, had rubbed off one and displaced the other of his horns. When this deplorable misfortune was mentioned to the owner, it is impossible to describe his astonishment and confusion. He stooped hastily to be satisfied of the truth of it, and beholding the irreparable ruin of his pride, gave one dismal groan, and fell at his length on the floor in a swoon.

While his servants, who were summoned upon the occasion, were

fetching him to himself, one of the philosophers opened the cage, and, taking out the bird, they all entered into a discussion of so strange a phenomenon. After many learned and ingenious solutions, one of them declared that it had always been his opinion, in which the present case abundantly confirmed him, that all cornuted animals cast their horns every year like the stag, and that the present case was no more than that; of which he was perfectly convinced as he could plainly feel with his finger the growing horn, which had thus thrust off the old one; 'So that, my lord', said he, addressing himself to the owner, who by this time was recovered, and attending to their remarks, 'instead of being vexed at such an event, you have reason to rejoice, as it explains a very difficult point, and you will now have an opportunity of tracing the growth of this beautiful prodigy'.

The sage solution administered some consolation to the virtuoso, who immediately took the bird in his own hands, and feeling the lump of wax, which had fastened on the fictitious horn, was convinced of the truth of his friend's accurate observation, which he himself further confirmed by taking notice that as no blood followed the avulsion, it was evident the horn was of itself ready to fall off without the assistance of the cock's struggling (for they had caught him at that work) as the dislocation of the other horn showed that that was not in the same state of ripeness, and, therefore, it had resisted that force. Consciousness of the sagacity of this remark, in some degree, restored his spirits, and he was going to proceed when one of the company, who had taken up and examined the fallen horn, and had not given any opinion on the matter, interrupted him dryly, and said that the hypothesis was certainly very ingenious, but he believed the affair might be solved a readier way; for upon examination of the supposed horn, he found it was only a cock's spur, which had been fastened upon the creature's head with wax, as appeared evidently by the remains of the wax upon the end of the spur in his hand; and, if they would let him pull off the other, he would undertake that the imposture would be too plain to admit of any doubt.

The mention of this threw them all into confusion, as they had all given their opinions, positively, of the honour of which it deprived them, and cut short many more which they were ready to offer; they, therefore stood looking at each other till he stretched out his hand to pull off the other horn, when they all interposed, particularly the owner, and insisted that they must be better satisfied of what he had advanced before they could permit so rash an experiment. But the bird himself cut short the dispute, for some of the company happening to have snuff in their fingers, it got into the cock's eyes, and made him shake his head with such violence that off flew the horn in the owner's face. The person who had made the discovery immediately took it up and showed such plain proof of the trick that it could no longer be denied.

It is impossible to describe the shame and vexation in every philosophic face present, at this lamentable event. The abused purchaser, in particular, was almost mad; however, after mature deliberation, it was agreed upon, for the credit of philosophy, to

bear the deceit in silence rather than expose themselves to the ridicule of the unlearned, by seeking satisfaction from the cheat. As for the cock, he was immediately sacrificed to *Æsculapius*, to avert the consequences which such a disappointment might have upon the health and understanding of the company, and to remove such an evidence of their disgrace. But all their caution was in vain; the person who first detected the deceit could not deny his vanity the pleasure of making his sagacity known; and the fellow finding his trick passed over thus with impunity, could not avoid boasting of it, and to this day diverts his customers with the history of the horned cock.

CHAPTER XVII

MORE MORTIFICATION TO HUMAN VANITY—A REASON FOR SUBMITTING TO BE PILLAGED BY SHARPER—WHAT'S GOT OVER THE DEVIL'S BACK IS SPENT UNDER HIS BELLY—FILIAL PIETY REMARKABLY REWARDED

I SEE you are shocked at the inconsistency, vices, and folly of mankind; but this is owing to your recluse life, and want of acquaintance with the world. To an accurate observer, things appear in their proper colours, and, if the picture should be displeasing, the fault is in the subject, not in the painter, who honestly represents nature as he finds her. As to those of whom I have given you these short sketches, they are wealthy, and wealth is an excuse for all things, the nobility of their birth not yielding a greater sanction to their persons than their money does to their vices and follies. And where these tend to the dissipation of that wealth, they only enhance their welcome in every place of polite resort; indeed, the society in which you seem at present assembled, subsists entirely by these, as by the institution of it; no person can be admitted who has not wealth to dissipate, as no person will desire to be admitted who has not a vicious avarice for the wealth of others, and folly enough to hazard his own for the acquisition of it.

But, though folly is, in the strictness of truth, thus essential to this association, there are many of the members, who, in the general meaning of the word, are entirely above the imputation of it; yet so prevalent is the infatuation of gaming, that they will bear the grossest impertinences, and mix with the outcasts of humanity for its gratification, as if the dice, like death, levelled all distinctions.

Observe that person¹, who seems to be absorbed in thought in the midst of the hurricane around him. Reason takes the advantage of his being for a moment disengaged, and forces him to behold, in a proper light, a scene so contrary to the economy of human life as that in which he was involved; but wait till the dice-box comes round to him, and you will see all his philosophy vanish, and his

¹ Lord Chesterfield was notorious for his reckless gambling.

passion for gaming hurry him as destructive lengths as the most thoughtless of them all.

Every ability, every virtue that could adorn and exalt the human mind, conspired to throw the brightest lustre around his youth, and mark him as a blessing to society. Nor did he disappoint the general hope, but filled with dignity and honour the high employments to which his merits raised him, till this pernicious passion insensibly unbent his mind, and turned his thoughts from every nobler pursuit. The falling off was most unhappy; his time, every moment of which is precious to the public, is wasted in idle dissipation, or devoted to pleasures destructive to his fortune, which thus falls a prey to sharpers, while the industrious, honest tradesman calls in vain for payment at his door.

Yet, even in this improvidence, the natural virtue of his heart sometimes appears, in a manner that softens the severity of censure. Some years ago, when he filled one of the most important places of the state¹, in a neighbouring nation, he had notice given him that a set of sharpers, disguised with the most delicate and specious art, had entered into a combination against him, but instead of profiting by the friendly caution, and avoiding them, he seemed to throw himself on purpose into the snares laid for him till they pillaged him of sums of money sufficient to distress the greatest fortune.

As it was known that he had been forewarned of their schemes, his conduct was astonishing to all; but he vindicated it by saying that the wretches had put themselves to a considerable expense, and travelled a great way to accomplish their design; if he had disappointed which, they must either have starved or robbed, perhaps from those who might not be able to bear the loss, and then have been hanged; so that he looked upon it as a charity, in a double sense, to submit to be cheated by them, and in the same manner does he still vindicate his gaming with persons so notorious for their villanies that it is almost infamous to speak to them.

At his left hand you see a person with a heap of gold before him, which he dissipates with such eagerness that he seems desirous to be poor. His father heaped up that wealth with an avidity that was a disgrace to human nature. The groans of the distressed, the tears of the orphan and the widow, which he hoarded with his riches, now eat them like a canker; and the gold that he wrung from the hard hands of the poor melts in the possession of his spendthrift heir, like snow before the sun. Nor was the sordidness of his heart, in abstaining from the most necessary use of his riches, inferior to his iniquity in acquiring them. He denied himself the very necessities of life, and literally lived in the most abject poverty, for fear of being poor. To this perverse disposition does the person you see, in a great measure, owe his inheriting his wealth; for he had an elder brother whom the miser had always designed to be his heir, till an ill-timed act of filial piety lost him his favour.

The old man had an ailment in his leg, which, for want of proper

¹ Chesterfield was made Lord Lieutenant of Ireland in 1744 by the Coalition Ministry of Whigs and Tories, known as the 'Broad-bottom Administration'.

and timely care, had grown to such a degree of malignancy that it at length became absolutely necessary to cut it off in order to save his life. Terrible as the apprehension of such an operation must be, the expense of it gave him still greater concern. To have it done, therefore, in the cheapest manner, he made his eldest son disguise himself in a mean dress and take a lodging for him in a garret in one of the obscurest corners of the town, whither he removed himself by night, and under the character of a poor tradesman, sent for a surgeon who lived in that neighbourhood, and advertised his skill at the lowest price. His son, whose near prospect of such an immense inheritance did not efface his filial duty and affection, was shocked at such an instance of avarice, and, though he dared not contradict, was resolved to counteract it. Accordingly, when he was sent for the surgeon (for his father had not revealed his retreat to any of his servants, for obvious reasons), instead of going to the quack, as he was directed, he went to one of the most eminent surgeons of the age, and revealing the whole affair to him, prevailed on him, for a large gratification, to disguise himself and undertake to perform the operation for whatever trifle should be offered him, and then told his father with an appearance of joy that as he was going for the advertising surgeon, he had luckily met, in an alehouse, where he was directed to inquire for him, a person who had been for many years a surgeon's mate on board a man-of-war, who he was sure would cut off his leg, not only much better, but cheaper also, as his appearance showed that he was starving, and must be glad to take whatever he could get.

Such a lucky hit raised the old man's spirits, so that he submitted to the operation without further concern, which was performed in so masterly a manner that, in a fit of unwonted generosity, he gave the surgeon half a guinea, though he had bargained with him for a crown; but then he comforted himself, when he began afterwards to reflect upon his extravagance, that he could stop it out of the fees for his attendance. In the same manner as he had imposed a good surgeon upon him, did his unfashionable son supply him with all things necessary for his condition, by making a woman in whom he could confide bring them every day, as if from a lady of fortune, a patient of the surgeon's, to whom he had represented him as an object of charity; for if he had had no other support but what he allowed himself, he must have perished for want of proper nourishment. When his cure was completed by this management, and he came to discharge the surgeon, after lamenting his inability to make a more suitable return, he offered him a couple of guineas; but the surgeon not thinking it necessary to carry on the deceit any longer, now the end was answered, told him that he need make no apology, for his son had already given him two hundred.

'My son, sir! I do not understand you', answered the wretch, in the most violent agitations of surprise, confusion, and rage.

'Yes, sir', replied the surgeon, addressing him by his name, and telling his own; 'your son, to whom you are indebted for your life more ways than one, for it was he that supplied you with the things which you imagined to have been sent you out of charity'.

Shocking as this discovery was, the old miser recovered presence

of mind to carry it off in an admirable manner. 'Sir', said he, 'I have a proper sense of my son's duty, and of your skill in your profession, though you have prevented me from making an acknowledgment of them in the manner I intended; for you must not think that I have been deceived; I knew you all along; and I removed to this place, and took this method of concealing myself, both to avoid the trouble and impertinence of visitors and complimentary messages and to make trial of my son's duty, of which I have now had a sufficient proof'.

Saying this, he took the surgeon by the hand and accepted his offer of continuing to attend him till his wound should be quite healed with the greater readiness, as he was paid already. But to his son he behaved in a different manner; for he directly made a new will, by which he bequeathed his immense fortune to the next brother, the person before us, leaving the other to pine out his days in poverty on a poor annuity, in reward for his obedience and duty (in the very words of his will), an injustice that was further aggravated by his having made him relinquish the most promising hopes of rising in the army, and resign his commission some time before merely to attend upon him. Such a shock was almost too great for human fortitude; the injured gentleman sank under it, happy in escaping from a world where the highest virtues are despised if destitute of wealth.

As for the heir, it was his good fortune to be bred at such a distance from his father, that he had no opportunity of making any observations on him, and therefore, as the miser could not carry his wealth with him out of the world, he even left it to him; though, could he have foreseen the scene before us, he would sooner have bequeathed it to charitable uses, to enrich overseers, and starve the poor, than give it to such a spendthrift.

I see your senses fail under such an extraordinary exertion. I shall therefore close this scene with observing that the whole company may be characterized under the few I have pointed out to you. In this view of them, I chose to take the silent moment, when their business was near over; for, in the height of it, the agitation of such complicated passions would have been too horrible for representation.

CHAPTER XVIII

CHREYSAL GIVES A FURTHER ACCOUNT OF HIS LATE LORD—THE METHODS BY WHICH HE HAD BEEN INITIATED IN THE MYSTERIES OF POLITE LIFE—SOME SKETCHES OF THE CHARACTER OF HIS NEXT MASTER, WHO GIVES HIM TO AN EXTRAORDINARY PERSON

I PROMISED to give you some account of my late lord. He was the son of one of the most distinguished persons of his age, who had acquired a fortune in the service of his country, sufficient to support, with proper dignity, the nobility with which his faithful zeal was rewarded by his grateful sovereign.

The youth of his son opened with such promising hopes, that it

was expected he would advance, in the steps of his father, to the highest rank of a subject. To facilitate these hopes, at his return from his travels, in which he had not only gone to see, but had also taken time to consider, the principal countries of Europe, with those of Africa and Asia, whose interests might any way affect those of his own, or whose history, illustrated thus by observation, might teach him to improve the advantages of his own country, and avoid the evils which had been the ruin of others, he was placed in the lower house of the senate, with every advantage of fortune, interest, and opinion, to support the exertion of his abilities.

He had scarce made himself known here, in his proper light, when the death of his father raised him into the upper house, where he soon established a weight that made him of real consequence to the nation, and alarmed the fears of the ministry, who, as they could not confute, resolved to corrupt him, if possible; for which end, the deepest schemes were put in practice, to relax his morals, and embarrass his fortune, as the present situation of both raised him above their attempts.

It would require uncommon virtue to resist the temptations to vice, in an age whose refinements have taken off every grossness, and almost every horror off its appearance. His regard was won by a most delicate application to that vanity which is too often the shadow of merit, especially in youth; the very persons who designed to change his principles, seeming to give up theirs to the superior force of his reason.

Such artifice soon won the confidence of his unguarded heart, and inclined it to receive their opinions and advice, without further examination; as the heat of youth and a vivid imagination assisted their designs against his fortune, the success of which was in itself a sufficient reward.

He had always expressed a dislike to play, nor ever gave in to it, but in complaisance to company. To conquer this aversion was therefore their last labour, in which they found easier success than they could have even hoped for. The affluence of his fortune made him above apprehension of loss, and a disdain to be excelled, even in an art he disapproved, engaged him with a keenness that soon made his advances in the art a pleasure to him.

The work was now done; and a few years of his own industry, with the assistance of his friends, and the management of his faithful steward, made him willing to enter into the pay of a ministry, which he might, in less time, have overturned.

This was his situation at that time; but some secret struggles, which I saw reason and virtue making in his heart, make me think he meditates a revolt from his infatuation, which the least liberty to his natural good sense could not fail to accomplish; an event, which the rapacity of Poundage must hasten, to his own ruin.

The person in whose possession I left the scene you have just beheld, was one of those who had been so successful in initiating my late master into all the mysteries of pleasure. Indeed, he seemed designed by nature to extend its empire over all mankind, making it the sole object of abilities equal to the most exalted pursuits, to invent new, to improve the old methods of gratifying

sense, and enforcing his precepts, by an example so keen, and a conversation so captivating, as not to be resisted. Appetites so extensive required a large support; to provide which, for fortune had so far frowned upon his birth that he was but a younger brother, he was compelled to steal some moments from his darling pleasures, and sacrifice them to business. The interest of his family and his own abilities had raised him to the first employments in the state; but as the sole motive of his submitting to the restraint of any application was to acquire a fund for the gratification of his pleasures, his haste to arrive at that end precipitated him into the most destructive measures, and made him ready and eager to embrace every opportunity of sacrificing, or rather selling, the interest of his country for present private gain.

The proper application of the gifts of heaven makes them a blessing. This cast of his disposition made those abilities, which, under a right direction, would have been of the highest service to himself and his country, a real prejudice to both, making him the ready and dangerous instrument of the most enormous crimes, that could promise present gratification to his passions.

In such a life, there must necessarily be many disagreeable occurrences, but they made no impression on him; for his whole soul is so devoted to pleasure, that upon the least miscarriage in business, he finds immediate relief in the return to that, which he can fly to, without any difficulty, the natural vivacity of his temper, that makes his conversation so bewitching to others, never yielding to a second moment's vexation at any one event.

As the viper bears in herself the antidote of her poison, this dissipation of temper prevents his abilities from doing all the mischief he otherwise might, by pulling off the mask, and showing his designs too soon for their accomplishment. The very persons, who would gladly avail themselves of the venality, not daring to trust to the inconstancy of his disposition; so that he soon lost his greatest power of doing evil, otherwise than by opposing, and impeding the measures of those, whose successful honesty disappointed his designs, and showed the danger of them in its proper light.

You will not imagine that my stay could be long in his possession. He that very day gave me to an author, for throwing dirt on the characters of those who had detected and defeated his schemes of leading his country into ruin.

CHAPTER XIX

THE HISTORY AND CHARACTER OF CHRYSAL'S NEW MASTER—HIS
ADVENTURES AT A COFFEE-HOUSE—THE FUN OF A MODERN GENIUS
RETORTED UPON HIMSELF, BY THE GRAVE REBUKE OF A TESTY
VETERAN

My new master was a votary of Apollo, in the double capacity of physic and letters: for, the former not affording scope enough for his genius, he usually dedicated his leisure hours to the

gentler entertainments of the latter, through the extensive circle of which he had occasionally ran; there not being a branch in the wide world of science which had not felt his pruning: the lowest rudiments of the most vulgar arts being, in his opinion, no more beneath the philosophic pen, than the most abstruse heights of speculation.

It must be owned that, in such a latitude of study, he often was obliged to prostitute his labours; but for this he had the solid consolation, that his gain generally rose in proportion as his subject sunk, the caprice of the world paying best, that is, buying most eagerly, what it affected to decry most. Nor is this to be wondered at, a loose tale, or a receipt for cooking a new dish, being better adapted to general taste, than a moral essay, or metaphysical speculation.

From his patron's levee, my master went directly home, and undressing into his cap and slippers, ascended into his study, and took a meditative turn or two, revolving in his mind the many grievances that called upon him for redress from the success of that morning.

At length bursting into a rapture, he cried, 'I'll think no more! Be the wants of yesterday forgot! those of to-morrow will come too soon without the anticipation of thought! I cannot pay all I owe! I cannot provide all I want! Hence, then, vain care! I'll depend on fortune and myself for a greater supply another day, and indulge my genius with the present. Big with this heroic resolution, he gave orders for dinner, and then, sending for his best suit home, he dressed himself in all his pride, and went to a coffee-house to look at the papers.

The pleasure of my company had given such a flow to his spirits, naturally high, that he soon drew the attention of the coffee-room, the greater part of the company gathering in a circle round him to hear his remarks on the publications of the day, which he threw out with the confidence of one who thought his opinion the established standard of all writing; and at the same time with a sprightliness that made his very impudence and absurdity entertaining.

While he was thus running on in the torrent of harangue, a veteran whose only employment, for many years, was talking over the actions of his youth, and comparing them to the mistakes and losses of the present times, no longer able to contain his rage at having his audience drawn from him in the midst of his daily tale, rose up with an execration that shook the room, and called for his cloak and cane.

'This is not to be borne', exclaimed he. 'Here, waiter, take for my coffee! I shall stay in such a place no longer; this is the land of freedom, forsooth! that a man must be disturbed in his discourse, and not have liberty to speak where he spends his money! Had I but the command here, I'd settle other orders; every prating puppy should not presume to interrupt his betters; things are like to go well with us when matters of the highest consequence can be broken in upon by noise and nonsense. This is freedom with a vengeance'.

The look and accent with which these words were pronounced were too terrible for my master to encounter, both nature and

experience having given him so lively an apprehension of danger that his readiest presence of mind was not always able to conceal it. He was, therefore, cut short at once, and could scarce muster spirits to throw a wink at some of those about him, as the man of war looked another way.

But the triumph was not so absolute over all the company, one of whom, resolving to have some fun, cries out, 'Pray, doctor, proceed; you are just in the most interesting part of your story; the colonel could not mean to interrupt you, he is too fond of telling his own story to give another such pain; go on, you should not be frightened at a flash in the pan'.

'Frightened, indeed', replied the doctor, gathering courage when he saw himself supported; 'at what, I wonder! at the sight of what old age can sink to. No, no, I am not so easily frightened! I leave that to your antiquated heroes, the exploits of whose youth have exhausted their courage. I mean no offence; but to go on, as I was saying, the discovery of the sleep of plants accounts in the clearest manner'—

'Hold, doctor', cries the other, 'that was not as you were saying; you were telling us of the nobleman who caught his coachman in bed with his lady, one morning, when he came home sooner than usual from the tavern; pray how did she bring herself off'?

'Oh! was that it', replied the doctor; 'faith, I had forgot; the fury of Mars had like to have made a gap in the annals of Venus, ha! ha! ha! Why, she made nothing of it, but, laughing in his face, most heroically, "Tit for tat, my dear, is but fair play"', said she; "while I say nothing at your staying out night after night with Kitty, you cannot in conscience blame my comforting myself a little with John".'

The colonel stood all this while convulsed with rage too big for utterance; but the universal laugh that followed the doctor's last words, rousing him, he advanced to him. 'Whom do you dare to laugh at, poltroon'? says he, taking him by the nose; 'whose courage is exhausted? But you are beneath my notice or resentment, further than this'. Then spitting full in his face, he turned to the gentleman who had set the doctor on, and who began now not to like the joke any further. 'But for you, sir, you, perhaps, may be a gentleman worth calling to a further account! Will you please to walk upstairs with me, and let me know what you mean by a flash in the pan'?

The ceremonies of attending him on such an expedition would not have been much more agreeable to this gentleman than to my master, but he had more command of his fear, and was well used to bring himself off with a joke. 'Sir', says he, 'you need not give yourself the trouble of going upstairs, for what I can as well do here. By bidding the doctor not be frightened, I meant at the circumstance of his own story, for just as you interrupted him, he had said, the lord snapped a pistol at his lady, which had flashed in the pan! That was all, sir! I could never mean it to offend you, or show a doubt of your courage, which I have heard you relate so many surprising instances of, so often, and always so invariably alike that they must be true'.

'Sir, sir, have a care,' replied the colonel, 'I do not desire to be troubled with such a gentleman as I perceive you are. But let me tell you, sir, that I have seen a man's face broke before now for wearing such a sneer. As to the stories I tell, I am satisfied they will be of no service to you, nor raise the least emulation in a man who can stay lounging about town when his country has occasion for him. I was younger than you when I went a volunteer with Lord Cutts, under the Duke of Marlborough; nor was I urged by want; I had a good estate, sir, sufficient to supply me with what you call the pleasures of life, if I could have thought anything a pleasure that was not attended with honour. Sir, I lost this hand at Blenheim, and this leg at Malplaquet! But why do I tell you! You will preserve your hands to take snuff; and your legs to walk the park, the proper scene of your campaigns'. With which words the doughty hero marched away to his chariot.

Though this lecture was rather too grave for the taste of the person to whom it was addressed, it gave great pleasure to the unconcerned part of the company, and to none more than my master, who had wiped his face, and began to come to himself as soon as he saw the danger directed another way.

Before the gentleman could speak, the doctor came up to him, and said, 'I am sorry, sir, that you should have drawn this storm upon yourself, upon my account. But I bore the worst of it. You heard but the whistling of the winds; the shower fell on me. 'Tis well, though, that what such dotards do is not esteemed an affront'.

'An affront, sir', replied the other; 'I do not understand you! I hope you do not insinuate that there was any affront offered to me, or that I was in the least concerned at what was said, only to you'!

'Not at all, sir', returned the doctor, 'not at all, sir, the colonel's discourse was all directed to me, to be sure; and I hope to profit by it thus far, that I will never interrupt him again'! And with these words he left his former friend the field, not caring to enter into any further altercation with him, for fear he might take it into his head to vindicate his character on him, as he knew his man.

Such slight rebuffs made not a moment's impression on the temper of my master; he was used to and made nothing of them. A good dinner and a bottle of wine sent him in the evening, in a critical enthusiasm, to the theatre, where all action fell short of the sublimity of his conception, all expression of the warmth of his feeling, as he fully explained to every company in the coffee-house while he sat at public supper when the play was done.

CHAPTER XX

SOME FURTHER ACCOUNT OF CHRYSAL'S MASTER—HIS CONVERSATION AND ENGAGEMENTS WITH TWO BOOKSELLERS—SOME OF THE SECRETS OF THE TRADE—CHRYSAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE

EXTENSIVE as these scenes were, they showed not my master in his proper light. His peculiar sphere was his study, where the inconsistency of his work showed the chaos in the brain from whence

they sprung. Chaos, did I say? Chaos is order to the confusion there. For surely the discordant seeds of such ill-matched things were never jumbled together before. An auctioneer's library is a regular system, in comparison to his head. Such a heap has neither beginning nor end, no fixed point to commence a description from. I shall therefore waive such an attempt, and only strive to convey some idea of it from its effects.

At five the next morning he arose to his labours, the first of which was to consider what he should begin the day with; such was the multitude he had in hand. But what reason could not determine chance must, and he took them as they happened to lie: panegyric, libel, physic, divinity, cookery, criticism, politics, ballads, botany, etc., etc., etc. In all of which he indefatigably worked the task of the day, changing his subject with as little concern as he did his paper; and though such rambling prevented his ever getting deeper than the surface of any subject, yet he showed the extent and volubility of his capacity, and that it wanted only regular application to any science to be eminent in it.

As soon as he had finished, and the devils had carried away his labours, he was just descending to go out when a bookseller came to pay him a visit. After much ceremony on one side, and little civility on the other, Mr Vellum thus accosted my master—

'Well, sir, I see there is no dependence on the word of an author! I thought I was to have the answer to yesterday's pamphlet last night; somebody else will do it, and then I shall be finely off'.

'Upon my honour, sir', replied my master, 'I assure you I should have done it, but some business'—

'What business can you have that should interfere a moment with your engagements with me'?

'Dear Mr Vellum, do but hear me! There is a noble lord going to be divorced for impotence. I just got a hint of the matter the night before last, and so waited upon his lordship's gentleman yesterday morning, with whom I had a particular intimacy, having served him in my profession more than once, and from him I have learned the whole story; and now leave me to set it out. I'll engage to make a noble eighteenpennyworth of it, at least by to-morrow morning'.

'Why, there may be something in that, but in the meantime you should not let other matters cool'.

'Never fear; pray, how did yesterday's pamphlet do'?

'Why, tolerably well; but the scandal was so gross, that I was almost afraid'.

'Ay, ay, never fear me for a home cut; never fear me'!

'But I hear nothing of the exertitions'!

'No; I sent away the sheet above an hour ago'.

'Then there's that book you promised to re-write; someone else will do it, and prevent you'.

'Never fear, I have just laid down a scale for the style; besides, I have altered the title already, and that you know is the principal thing'.

'That is right! Now you speak of titles, I want half a dozen directly, this very day, if possible'!

'It is rather too late now, but where are the books'?

'In the lumber garret, where they have lain these seven years'.

'That's well; they are forgot by this'.

'Forgot! why, they were never known! The author was a man of fortune, who printed them at his own expense, but I prevented the sale, and so had them for the publishing, ha! ha! ha! besides a good consideration for buying up at a double price what I had *not* sold of them; so that it was not a bad job; and now he is dead they may safely come out under new titles. It will be too great a delay to wait to see them, but here are the old titles, which I suppose may do'.

'Why, ay, they may do; but I cannot possibly write them this evening. You know I must answer that pamphlet I wrote last week, before it is forgotten. I have an answer ready that will make a noise; I expect it will raise a curiosity that will sell another edition of the pamphlet. I left openings for such retorts upon the characters I praised in that, and have such pieces of secret history to hit them off with that I'll engage for the success'.

'Ay, secret history and stories of familiar misfortunes, and such like, may do something. But I had like to have forgot the main business of my coming. There is an account of the death of an eminent divine this morning; could we not vamp up a volume or two of sermons for him, think you? He was suspected of heresy and atheism, and you know that would make anything in his name go off'.

'Egad, a good thought! and particularly lucky at this time; for, as I have been engaged in divinity lately, I know the weak sides of the question, and a little infidelity will be a refreshment to me. It shall be done! the sermons shall be ready without delay! Have you not got some by you that did not go off? Let me have one of each, and I'll interline them to save time; but will you publish them yourself? I thought you had given up sermons'?

'Myself! no! no! I'll send them in to Mr Vamp. I'll reserve the confutation of them to myself'!

'Egad, another good thought; the confutation will do better! and I'll take care to make it a smart one, and play the devil with the author, ha! ha! ha! But, Mr Vellum, your coming here this morning prevented my waiting on you; it is a great while since you promised to settle with me. You should consider, sir'.

'What, pray, good sir, should I consider? that I have supported you'!

'Supported me, Mr Vellum! Sir, I have a profession'.

'I know you have, Mr Doctor; a profession indeed, in which His Majesty's subjects may bless God that nine in ten of you would starve if they had no other way of getting bread beside that'.

'Mr Vellum, you know this way of talking signifies nothing. It is a long time since we have settled any account, and there are a great many articles. Let me see; ay, here they are, and a long list it is! Nineteen pamphlets, with answers to fourteen of them: nine rapes, six murders, five fast and four funeral sermons, thirty-six essays, twenty-two titles, four quarto volumes re-writ, seventeen wills, twenty-four'—

'Go on, sir, go on! but when you have done, look at this, and talk to me of an account; your bond for fifteen pounds, which is

due these two years ; and it is very likely, to be sure, that you should leave it outstanding so long, if you had any account to set off against it ! But I am glad I know you, and since you talk of accounts, observe that I demand my money due on this bond, which I will have, and, when you have paid that, it will be time enough for me to settle accounts with you ; so, sir, your servant'.

'Mr Vellum, good Mr Vellum, do not be so hasty ! I did not mean to give you offence'.

'Accounts, indeed, have I not supplied you with paper above the weekly allowance we agreed for, and yet you will talk to me' !

'Mr Vellum, I may be in the wrong ; let matters stand as they are. But you have not told me what size you would have this affair of the divorce that I mentioned to you just now'.

'There it is now ; that is your way always. You know my easy temper, and that you can bring me down when you please. Why, if the story will bear much printing, and the circumstances are very strong and plain, I believe you may draw it out to two shillings ; and to encourage you, and show you that I mean generously by you, when you have finished that, and the answer and the sermons, and the confutations, and the titles, and the exertations, I will give you up your bond, and then we will begin an account on plain even terms. But I am in haste. I have three or four other gentlemen to call upon. I shall depend upon your promise, and so good morning'.

'Good morning to you, good Mr Vellum. Damned imposing, grinding scoundrel ! but I'll be quit with you for all your tricks', said the doctor, as soon as Mr Vellum was out of the room ; 'and teach such stupid rascals to tempt outwitting men of genius'.

When I considered the nature and importance of my master's demand, I could not but wonder at the ease with which he took a denial, and the joy he expressed at Mr Vellum's departure ; but the mystery was soon cleared up by the arrival of Mr Pamphlet, another of the trade, almost the very moment Vellum went downstairs, and whom I saw by his reception my master expected.

If I was before shocked at the cruelty with which I thought Vellum treated my master, I was not less so at the part he acted with Pamphlet, with whom he bargained over again for the very same ware which he before promised to Vellum, and flattered him with an assurance of having his business done, that is, the answers and re-writing, before Vellum possibly could, for they were mortal enemies.

The discourse between these was much the same as the former, only it was concluded in a different manner ; Pamphlet giving my master a couple of pieces to keep him in mind of his engagement.

I was utterly at a loss to think how he meant to act between these two, when he put an end to my doubts by this soliloquy : 'So, now I have dispatched you two, the day is my own ; keep my engagements ! I will, with both alike. Let me see, there is nothing in it but a little trouble of writing ; I can divide the hits between both answers, according to the opens I have left on purpose, and so send them to both at the same time ; only to divide the alterations in my scale of style, and make a second title, and so it is done. This method that I have found, of using a feigned name, makes it all easy. Well, let those who were born to fortunes spend

them in sloth and ignorance ; I have an estate in myself that can never be exhausted. I am obliged to Nature only for my abilities, and carry the fountain of honour and fortune in the fluency of my genius'.

He then descended from his aerial citadel, and going out to visit his patients, changed me at a coffee-house, where I was immediately borrowed at the bar by an officer, who was going to dine with the general, and wanted money to give his servants.

CHAPTER XXI

CHRYSLAL ENTERS INTO THE SERVICE OF THE GENTLEMAN OF A GENERAL—GRATITUDE IN HIGH AND LOW LIFE—THE MODERN WAY OF RISING IN THE WORLD AND THE HAPPINESS OF DEPENDENCE—INFLUENCE OF CHRYSLAL'S MASTER, WITH HIS CURIOUS MANNER OF SUPPORTING IT

You may judge that my stay with this owner was but short ; he gave me directly to the general's gentleman, with a letter to be presented to his excellency next morning, as he could not find courage to speak to him in person.

The case of this person, though not uncommon among men, I own affected me. He was the son of an officer of distinguished merit, the services of whose life had, in the eightieth year of it, been rewarded with the command of a regiment, and the hopes of his son crowned with a pair of colours ; which, on the death of his father, in six months after his elevation, he found to be his whole inheritance, the fees of office, and the equipage for his new rank having exhausted all the savings of the old man's subaltern frugality. The most exemplary duty, in five warm campaigns, had advanced the son to the rank of a lieutenant, when the exaltation of the person to whom he now applied, raised his hopes to a company, which was vacant in the regiment, and his right by seniority ; for such was his ignorance of mankind, that he built sanguine expectations on the very reasons that should have deprived him of any, the obligations of the persons to whom he applied, to his father, who had taken him up, the poor, friendless orphan of an ensign, educated him at his own expense, procured him his first commission, and afterwards lent him the money with which he had purchased his company ; a debt which the son was weak enough to expect a friendship from, though it, and much more, had long since been cleared at play.

But, though the character of the son, and the general's known intimacy with the father, in a manner obliged him to promise him his friendship, yet nothing was further from his thoughts than ever to do him any real service ; as he imagined that would be acknowledging the obligations which his very attendance seemed to upbraid him with, a dinner now and then being the only favour he ever had, or ever meant, to give him. You may, perhaps, have experienced the misery of a dependant's dining at the table of his patron, where the tortures of Tantalus are aggravated by anxiety

of giving offence. I shall therefore hasten over this and the other scenes of that evening, which were but the common occurrences of military greatness, and ended in a deep debauch, as soon as all but the chosen few had retired, to come to the conclusion of my late master's story, in which my present bore a considerable part.

As soon as the general¹ had slept off the fumes of his wine, and awoke next morning, my master's hour of influence arrived, which he never failed to improve. After a prelude of coughing and spitting, the scene opened thus:—

'Who's there? William!'

'Sir?'

'William, was not I very drunk last night? my head aches most confoundedly.'

'Your excellency was a little cut, but you broke up much the strongest of the company.'

'Ay, I wonder at that, I spend myself with talking, when I begin to go, and that helps a man on damnably; that story of the battle, where I was taken prisoner, is a bottle in my way always.'

'That foreign gentleman, who never speaks a word, has a great advantage, then?'

'Ay, so he has; but he is a damned honest fellow, and a very good companion; he always fills a bumper, and never speaks a word.—But my head.'

'Perhaps your excellency had better take something.'

'No, I have taken too much already, though that's right; give me a glass of the old Geneva; I am to go to council to-day, and must settle my head. Ay, that will do, I am much better now; there is nothing like a hair of the old dog.'

This conversation continued till he was seated to breakfast, when my master turned to a new topic. 'I was very sorry', said he, 'that your excellency happened to sit in last night, as Mrs Motherly was to call'.

'Why, that's true, William; I did not think of one engagement when I made the other; and when she called me out I was not in cue; I was too far gone. We old fellows are not sparrows! the spirit is often willing when the flesh is weak, ha, ha, ha!'

'Your excellency is pleased to be merry, but, to my thinking, the youngest fellow of the age has not more vigour.'

'Ay, William, do you think so, indeed? But why do you think so, William?'

'Because your excellency always chooses such green things; now I should think a ripe woman would be better; I am sure she would give less trouble.'

'Ha, ha, ha! why that's your taste; but youth is mine, and

¹ Jean Louis Ligonier, first Earl Ligonier [1680–1770] Master-General of the Ordnance [1750–62]—an aged man with a glorious career behind him, which had now been totally forgotten by the public; who regarded him as obsolete 'and as a cover for jobbery among his subordinates'.

while I have powers—and I do not think mine quite gone yet—I will please my taste. But what had Mrs Motherly last night?’

‘A very fine girl as your excellency could wish to see’.

‘How old’?

‘About sixteen’.

‘Pshaw, mellow pears! I loath such trash’.

‘But Mrs Motherly said she could swear she was untouched. She came from the country but yesterday, a relation of her own; she, poor thing, knew nothing of the matter, and thought she came to be hired for a laundry-maid’.

‘Why, that is something, but I wish she were younger’.

‘If your excellency pleases but to wait a little, I have one in my eye that will suit your taste exactly; a sweeter child is not in all England.’

‘Ay, good William’, spitting once or twice, and wriggling in his chair; ‘ay, that is something, but how old’?

‘Just ten, and finely grown’.

‘Right, the right age. That’s true! I’ll speak this very day for that place for your brother. Tell him to come to-morrow; I will not be refused’.

‘We are both obliged to your excellency for your favours’.

‘But when shall I see this girl? Give Motherly some excuse with her ripe fruit. Sixteen! sixty! pshaw’!

‘Sir, I shall go about it this very evening. A letter from Captain Standard; will your excellency please to read it’?

‘Damn him and his letter; throw it into the fire! What would the unreasonable scoundrel have? Did I not give him his dinner yesterday? Has he not been introduced to good company at my table? If he had any industry or spirit, with these advantages he would have learned to play, and made his fortune, as others do. Since he grows troublesome on encouragement, I’ll starve him into better manners. Bid the porter strike him off the dinner list’.

‘I beg your excellency’s pardon for mentioning him; but the manner I have heard you talk to him made me imagine you really did design to provide for him; and he says there is a vacancy in the regiment just now’.

‘Damn his impudence! a vacancy indeed! I shall never think there is a good one till he makes it at Tyburn’.

‘I beg your excellency’s pardon; I shall never mention him more. Would you have me go about the child this evening? It is a little angel, to be sure’.

‘This moment, if you think you can succeed’.

‘I shall try at any rate, but there is one obstacle’.

‘What is that? You know I never grudge money on these occasions. How much will do’?

‘That is not the difficulty here; money will not do, and I hardly know what will’.

‘Money not do! why, what the devil can it be that money will not do’?

‘I scarce know how to mention it to your excellency, but the

little cherub is niece to Captain Standard—his sister's daughter—and while he is in the way there will be no possibility of getting at her'.

'Is that all? Then he shall join the regiment to-morrow'.

'But then he will leave such an impression of your unkindness upon his sister, if there is nothing done for him, after waiting so long, that it will be impossible for any person belonging to you to gain access'.

'What would you have me do? I never will bear to have the fellow get a company in my regiment; that would be acknowledging the obligations he has the impudence to say I received from his father; I never will bear it'.

'I beg your excellency's pardon; I did not presume to point out any such thing; and indeed the possession of such a baby (though my eyes never beheld her fellow), is not worth giving yourself so much trouble about; she is quite too young, though so well grown'.

'You say she is but just ten! and such a beauty'?

'I wish your excellency could but see her, for I am unable to describe her'.

1840 'But cannot some way be found out, beside fixing this fellow under my nose'?

'That was just what I was going to take the liberty of hinting to your excellency. There are several gentlemen of fortune in the troops just ordered to America, who have no liking to the voyage. Now, I think, with submission, that you would oblige some of them with an exchange into your regiment, and let Captain Standard go in his place. And this will oblige him too; for I have often heard him wish to go there in hopes of rising when they come into action'.

'A good thought, and so I will. Let the fellow go to America and get scalped; his hot head wants to be cooled; such poor wretches as he are just fit to be transported there. Tell him to prepare directly! I long to be rid of him. But when shall I see the dear little creature'?

'In twenty-four hours after he is gone, I'll undertake to have her eating sugar-plums, and sobbing in your bosom. It cannot possibly be sooner, for you know the captain's spirit, and that he would cut the throat of a prince who should dishonour his family, as he calls it'.

'Ay, damn his spirit, that is true; that is what has kept me civil to the fellow so long. I know he has all the romantic madness about honour and such stuff that made his fool of a father live and die a beggar'.

By this time his excellency was dressed to go to council, for which another dram settled his head.

I see your surprise at the brutal behaviour of the master, and the infamous designs of the man. The former is beyond aggravation; but the latter were only an honest artifice in favour of his friend, who had no such niece in the world.

CHAPTER XXII

THE HISTORY OF MR WILLIAM—SOME ODD CIRCUMSTANCES IN HIS CONDUCT ACCOUNTED FOR—BY A PROGRESSION EQUALLY POLITE AND FRUGAL—CHRYSLAL COMES FROM HIS POSSESSION INTO THAT OF A CELEBRATED FEMALE

WILLIAM was a son of the regiment, born of one of the general wives that followed it. He was about the same age with Standard, who had taken such a liking to him when they were boys that he shared his allowance with him, gave him his old clothes, and taught him what he had learned at school. A natural acuteness of genius improved these advantages so well that William could read and write enough for a gentleman, dance, fence, and scrape on the violin, before his friend's power of serving him was put an end to, by the death of his father, and his spirit and appetites were too great to accept of his offer of the best support an ensign could spare him, to maintain him as a cadet, till his merit should get him a commission. But, though he would not accept, he did not forget the offer, nor make his obligations a cause of hatred, now that it was in his power to make some return; a way of thinking that proved the meanness of his birth; for, quitting the barren paths of military honour, he had turned his genius to the more thriving profession of a footman, through the various ascents of which he had risen to his present rank of his excellency's gentleman, in which he had the unfashionable gratitude to return the favours of his former benefactor in the above manner, which his experience and knowledge of his master's temper convinced him to be the only one he could hope to succeed in. As to his promise about the child, he was in no pain about that, there being no person who could contradict whatever excuse he should please to give.

There is one circumstance which I see puzzles you in the character of this man, and that is his taking me from his friend, when he must be sensible how badly he could spare such a sum. But you must consider the power of Nature when strengthened by habit.

From his mother, William had inherited venality, which the bribery of vails, in his present profession, had confirmed beyond all possibility of correction; so that it was no more in his power to refuse a guinea when offered to him, than to change his stature or complexion. An attention to this observation would take off the wonder, and ease the world from the trouble of the exclamations that are daily made against the rapacity of persons in office; for as such are generally taken from the class of William, it cannot be expected but they must act from the same natural principle with him.

I see the depravity of human nature, when stripped of disguise and ornament, affects your unexperienced heart too strongly. But consider that we see things as they really are, and to represent them otherwise to you would invert the design of my mission, and confirm rather than remove the prejudices that lead astray the mind of man.

However, this consolation I can give you, that the vices I have already drawn, and may hereafter draw, to your view, are not particular to this age or country; they are the weeds which in every age and clime, have always, and always will overrun the human heart.

Nor is it just to call them vices (though, in compliance with the language of men, I do call them so) which perhaps are but ¹ necessary parts of this universal system; and though in a particular instance, and viewed by themselves, they may appear deformed, yet when thrown into the general representation of things, they may have their beauty and use, if only to diversify the scene; and, with respect to men in particular, be as ² advantageous to the community as they are prejudicial to individuals.

But to return to my master William. Besides the advantages of education, he had such from nature, that he was not only the most accomplished gentleman, but also the handsomest fellow of his time; a happiness of which he availed himself so well in the polite world, that he was the favourite of all the compliant fair, who shared with him the pleasures they only suffered from his superiors for hire.

Of this I saw sufficient proof that very evening, when he went to an assignation with the most celebrated courtesan of the age, who, sacrificing avarice to pleasure, gave orders to be denied to everybody, and shut herself up with him, to give a loose to joy for the evening.

This was a scene too sensual for a spirit to describe; I shall therefore only say that their fatigue and waste of spirits were recruited with the highest delicacies and richest wines, and the pauses of joy enlivened with the recital of the adventures of their professions, heightened with the most poignant ridicule of those whose folly was *their* fortune.

Before satiety could pall their pleasures, time summoned them to business—the fair to prepare for the reception of her friend, and my master to wait on his; when to conclude the evening with proper gallantry, he presented me to the maid at the door.

I was a good deal surprised at being received with less emotion by the portress of Venus than I had ever found before, the sight of me having always raised joy. But this was soon explained, when, on returning to her mistress, she threw me on the table, and received a shilling in exchange—an instance of that methodical economy, which by many savings makes up for one large expense and exacts profit even from pleasure.

The joy of the mistress seemed to make amends to my vanity for the indifference of her maid, and promised me the full possession of her heart; but I soon found myself mistaken, and that her love for me was only while I was the property of another; for no sooner did I become her own, than she threw me carelessly into her purse, and turned her thoughts immediately to the acquisition of more.

¹ From hence it should seem, the hint of the late treatise on the origin of evil was borrowed, or else dictated by the same spirit.

² Fable of the bees.

But, though I lost the greatest part of my power over her, by coming into her possession, I still found ample room in her heart for my abode.

The apartments were scarce got in order, and my mistress new dressed, when her friend appeared, to whom she flew with all the appearance of rapture. But, however he might be deceived, the difference was plain to me, between the joyless caresses she sold to him, and the ecstasy she shared with my late master, the glow of whose kisses yet reeked upon her lips. Nor was this strange; the ardour of her lover met her half-way, and communicated as much fire as it received. But with her keeper the case was quite otherwise; all the advances were to come from her; all her caresses were a duty; nor were the tenderest she could bestow able to warm him to the least return.

You wonder that a person in such circumstances should be at the trouble and expense of keeping a mistress, whose extravagance was to be equalled only by her insolence. But this is only a small instance of the tyranny of fashion; and how will your astonishment be increased when I tell you that this very man, in the prime of life, was remarkable for the coolness of his constitution, and now, in its decline, was married to a beautiful young lady, whose resentment at his conjugal neglect rose so high as to charge it to inability.

Whether this was really the case, and that he kept my mistress to hide it as a failing tradesman sets up a coach, or whether the passion remained, but so feebly supported, as to require the lascivious blandishments of a prostitute, I cannot determine, as I never was in his possession to take a view of his heart.

CHAPTER XXIII

THE MANNER IN WHICH CHRYSAL'S NEW MISTRESS RECEIVED AND TOOK CARE OF HER FRIEND—HOW SHE EMPLOYED HERSELF WHILE HE WAS ASLEEP—HER MANAGEMENT OF HIM NEXT MORNING

It was about two in the morning when my mistress received him, drunk and stupefied with play, at which he had lost deeply that night. On his coming into her room, he threw himself into a chair without saying a word, or showing the least sensibility of her caresses; where after some time he fell fast asleep, which my mistress no sooner perceived, than calling her maid, to undress and roll him into bed—

'Here, Jane', said she, 'take my place by this heap of mortality. I'll step to — Street; perhaps the company may not be all gone. Never fear, I'll ensure you from a rape! He wants nothing in a bed-fellow but to keep him warm, and you may do that, while I pass my night better than in nursing his infirmities; I'll be home before he stirs'.

Jane obeyed her mistress, who slipped into a chair, and went away directly to a house where she used to piddle away her leisure hours with any chance customers, rather than be idle.

About five ended this scene, in the rites of which my mistress bore a distinguished part. I shall not attempt to describe these mysteries; they were too gross for my relation, as well as your conception, in your present mortified habit. She then returned home, and laying her pure body in her maid's place, beside her friend, who had not stirred yet, her fatigues soon threw her into a sleep as sound as his.

It was noon before these fond lovers awoke; the first was my mistress, who, enraged that anything which bore the name of a man should show so little sensibility of her charms, resolved to tease him with endearments which, as he was seldom in a humour to return in kind, he never failed to pay for in a more substantial manner.

When she had awoke him with her toying, the syren thus began her song: 'How can my dearest sleep so long when his little girl lies languishing by his side? Oh, turn, and let me lay my head on that dear bosom!'

'Ha! what is it o'clock?' replied the lover, yawning, and rubbing his eyes.

'Alas, I know not! I have told so many tedious hours that I have forgotten them. But what is time to us, who only live to love?'

'Past twelve! I must be gone! Some business.'

'Business! Leave that for duller souls who have no taste for pleasure; can you leave love and me for business?'

'I am sorry I happened to oversleep myself, my dear. I believe I was bewitched to drink so much; but we'll make it up another time'.

'So you say always, but that other time will never come. But I will not be served so; I am flesh and blood, whatever other people may be; and you yourself know it is not for want of friends I keep myself up thus like a nun, for you; and all I do not know for what!'

'Is the girl mad! Do not I give you everything you want, everything you desire?'

'No, nor anything I desire! I desire now. So you will get up and leave me. I will not be used thus; you have got some other woman, but I here give you a fair warning that I will be even with you! Sir George was here yesterday, and so was the young lord, but I would not see either of them; and I am well requited now. But I know where to send to them; I will not be made a fool of every way for nothing; and so you may sleep where you please, I care not'.

'Come, my dear, let us not fall out for nothing; you have not shown me the diamond earrings you got last week'.

'No, my dear, they are not come home'.

'I thought you told me they were finished when I gave you the money to pay for them'.

'They were so; but when he brought them home I did not like them. The jeweller told me they were not so fine as those he made for your lady, some time ago; so I sent them back, and ordered him to make me a pair that should be as good as her's at least'.

'Not good enough, child! Were they not to cost one hundred and fifty pounds?'

'And what is a hundred and fifty pounds? Sir Richard gave his girl a pair that cost five hundred pounds. But if you think

these are too dear, you are not obliged to pay for them ; there is another who will be glad to do it'.

'And pray, what are these fine ones to cost' ?

'Why—only—but kiss me first—only two hundred pounds ; but then I have bespoke a necklace with them'.

'Zounds, a diamond necklace' !

'And what mighty matter is a diamond necklace ? Pray, has not your wife one ? But I see how it is ; you think anything good enough for me, and nothing good enough for her. But everyone does not think so ; I am not at a loss' !

'Well, you saucy little minx ; and what do they come to' ?

'Another kiss, and I'll tell you ; why, don't frown, or I won't tell you at all—only five hundred pounds'.

'Five hundred devils ; that's more than my wife's cost by one hundred pounds'.

'And do not you love me a hundred times better than your wife ? I have given up thousands for you. But, as I said before, you need not pay for them if you do not choose it ; there are others who will. I see I am slighted ; and I deserve it for slighting so many good offers. But I will not always be a fool' !

'Well, my dear, for this one time I will humour you. Give me the pen and ink ; but you must not expect that I shall ever gratify your extravagance so far again'.

'I thank you, my lord ; I shall not trouble you again this great while. But what is this ? Three hundred and fifty pounds ! You have made a mistake, my lord ; I told you five hundred pounds'.

'Well, child, did not I give you a hundred and fifty to pay for the other pair' ?

'Yes, my lord ; but that was not to pay for this pair though ; you know, these are dearer'.

'But that and this will'.

'I am afraid not'.

'How so, child ; do not one hundred and fifty, and three hundred and fifty, make five hundred' ?

'Indeed, I am a poor accountant ; but I know it will not do'.

'No ? why so ? I do not understand you'.

'I'll kiss you first and then I'll tell you'.

'Pshaw ! cease fooling ; I am in haste ; I must go to court, and have scarce time to dress. Where is the hundred and fifty pounds' ?

'There' ! (kissing him).

'Where' ?

'Gone, as that kiss is all gone, and only the relish left behind to give an appetite for more'.

'Infernal jade' ! (Aside).

'What do you say, my lord' ?

'That I cannot, will not bear such extravagance'.

'I am glad I know your mind, my lord ; then if you do not, somebody else will, who will not make such a stir about trifles'.

'Well, give me that bill'.

'No, thank you, my dear'.

'Why so' ?

'For fear you should be a bold boy, and not return it. If you

please to give me the other hundred and fifty pounds, I'll get the necklace and earrings; if not, this will serve for some other use'.

'Damnation! And then I must give it to her all over again'.

(Aside.)

'Well, my lord, you said you were in haste, and so am I——'.

'Give me the pen and ink; there it is, you little termagant. But once more let me caution you against such extravagance for the future'.

'And once more, let me tell you, my lord, not to give yourself such airs; extravagance! They who want delicacies must pay for them; and if you think the price too dear, there are more customers in the market. And so, my lord, like it or like it not, I will be supported; and more than that, what I want in pleasure shall be made up in profit; let wives save, who may be the better for the savings, our business is to make hay while the sun shines'.

'Come, my dear, let us have no disputes; you have the money now; next time we will clear off the other score. Give me a kiss. I'll call in the evening, and take a dish of tea with you; farewell'.

'Good-morrow'! (After he is gone) 'For an old, impotent, poor-spirited lecher that must be treated like a dog to make you know your duty! What fool would ever be at the trouble of behaving well to any fellow when she can so much better mould him to her pleasure, by ill-usage'!

CHAPTER XXIV

THE HISTORY AND CHARACTER OF CHRYSAL'S MISTRESS—SHE GIVES HIM TO A NOTED MATRON—SOME ACCOUNT OF HIS NEW MISTRESS, AND HER MANNER OF MANAGING HER FAMILY

THIS principle she acted up to, for two days that I was in her possession, without any other variation in her conduct, than just what was necessary to work on the various tempers of her lovers, making no real difference between them, except it was, that she always used those worst, who used her best.

I have often told you that sensuality is disagreeable to a spiritual being. I, therefore, longed to quit this mistress, the succession of whose amours was so constant and quick, that I was astonished how nature could afford a fund of love for them all in so young a creature; for she was not twenty years old. I see you have a curiosity to know the history of this young votary of Venus, in which you think there must be something extraordinary; but you are deceived; it contains nothing but common occurrences.

She was the daughter of tradespeople, in moderate circumstances, whose foolish fondness, because she was a pretty, smart child, gave her an education above her rank, in hopes of her making her fortune by marriage.

This raised the vanity natural to the female heart so high, that she despised her own station, and not being so fortunate as immediately to climb to the one she desired, by the way proposed, she

fell an easy victim to the first seducer who promised it in any other.

Thus the accomplishments, by which the injudicious tenderness of her parents meant to raise her into a rank higher than their own became the cause of her falling into that of the lowest of all human beings ; a fall, though deplorable in itself, yet unaffecting to her, as the time in which her mind should have been formed to virtue was given up to the nourishing that vanity which proved her ruin ; so that she is absolutely insensible of the wretchedness of her condition, and never has the pursuit of her most infamous profession disturbed her by a moment's remorse.

I told you of her spending the hours that were unemployed at home, at an house in — Street, where she was always sure of business. Though this venerable mansion was dedicated to the mysterious rites of unrestrained love, yet, as the priests of all temples expect to live by the offerings made at them, her conscience would not permit the priestess of this to break through an ordinance so long established, and she exacted fees from the votaries of her's ; not indeed a tithe indiscriminately from all, whether they received benefit from their devotion or not, but always in proportion to the fruits they reaped.

At this shrine was I offered the third night of my being in the possession of this young devotee, when the plenteousness of her gain from a multitude of lovers seemed to her piety to merit so rich a return.

I now entered into a much more extensive scene than my last, the prostitution of which made but a small part of the business of the profession. But what I have related in the history of my late mistress shall suffice for that branch, nor shall I give more than some outlines of the horrors of the rest.

My new mistress had originally been of the sisterhood of my last, who, having fallen a prey to lust, almost in her infancy, and having no beauty, nor anything but extreme youth to recommend her, as soon as that was worn out, neglect obliged her to apply to other business for bread, and her natural turn determining her to this, as well as the outrageous virtue of the undiscovered part of her own sex excluding her from every other, she changed her occupation from yielding to providing pleasure, in which her success was so great that she soon became the most eminent of her profession.

It was near five in the morning when I changed my service ; and business being ended, my late mistress having reigned sole mistress of the night, and seen out all the company, there remained nothing to do, after she went home, but to see the inmates to their truckle-beds in the cock-lofts ; where stripping off every part, not only of the finery, but even of the comforts of dress, they were crowded three or four together, to keep each other warm, under a ragged coverlet, upon a bare mattress, where their shudderings and groans made a just contrast to the spirited wickedness of their conversation some hours before.

This was always the fate of those who were not so successful in the evening as to earn the price of a better bed, above the fees of the house and the hire of clothes.

These happy few were treated with fondness, while they squandered their poor *peculium* in a drop of cordial to settle their heads, and were lodged in apartments suited to their purses; though the night before, perhaps, they had experienced the same fate with their sisters above stairs, and knew they must expect it again the next, if they proved unsuccessful in their business.

When matters were thus settled, this happy family disposed themselves to take the best repose which disease in mind and body would permit.

An active spirit disdains rest. Though debauchery had anticipated old age in the constitution of my mistress, yet her application to business made her refuse nature even necessary indulgence. She was ready to go out before ten that morning, when the modest decency of her dress and appearance were such as drew the general good opinion, and would almost deceive the devil himself, on whose most favourite service she was going.

CHAPTER XXV

CHRYSALE'S MISTRESS PAYS A VISIT TO THE LAST PLACE SHE COULD HAVE BEEN SUSPECTED OF GOING TO—SHE MEETS A YOUNG LADY, WITH WHOM, BY AN ARTIFICE, SHE GOES HOME—HER SCHEMES TO ENSNARE THE LADY

If a judgment were to be formed for the whole day, from the manner of beginning it, my mistress should have spent hers most happily; her first visit being to church, where the piety of her behaviour was an edification to the devout matrons, who, having nothing to do at home, meet there regularly to compare their aches and dreams of the night before, and enjoy the innocent amusement of a little gossiping over the affairs of their neighbours.

But her devotion wasted not itself so fruitlessly; her industry had formed expectations of drawing considerable advantage from it, and so, anticipating futurity, and making sure of the reward here, which others waited for in another world. The immediate motive of her devotion this morning was to see a young lady with whom she had commenced an acquaintance at this church, and who constantly attended divine service there. You are surprised how she could think of going to such a place, on such an errand; but the wolf roams about for prey everywhere, and is often most successful where his attempts are least suspected, though I must rob her industry of the merit of design in the first introduction to this affair.

Going through St Martin's Lane one morning about a month before, she was so struck with the appearance of a lovely young creature, in widow's weeds, who was going into the church, that she followed her, where the fervency with which she poured out her soul in devotion gave such a lustre to her beauty, and made it shine so lovely through her grief, that my mistress immediately marked her for her list, not doubting but she should be able to turn her distress to such advantage as should bring her into her measures, and make her beauty yield her a rich return for her pains, from

some of her customers. If you consider the nature of womankind, you will not wonder at this instance of the profligacy of my mistress. They are ever in extremes; either the best or worst of human creatures. From church she dogged her to her lodging in a little court, where she lived with a poor but honest family, in such privacy that no one in the neighbourhood could give any account of her.

Real virtue shines with a lustre that dazzles the most confirmed vice, and keeps it at an awful distance. My mistress, hardened as she was in all the ways of sin and impudence, dared not go directly to her, without some business or introduction; but as she had not either, her ready genius prompted her to win her good opinion under an appearance of religion, and then an acquaintance would come easily.

She was not deceived in her expectations; a few mornings constant attendance at church, and the exemplary warmth of her devotions struck the eye and opened the heart of unexperienced innocence to the acquaintance she wished for, which she did not fail to improve by the same arts to some degree of intimacy.

In this situation they were when she went, but without any appearance of design, to meet her this morning at church as usual. As they came out together, my mistress, turning with her fair friend, said she had some business in Long Acre, and asked her if she went that way, to which the young lady innocently answered that she did, and that she should be glad to walk with her.

As they walked together, my mistress turned her conversation on the wicked ways of the town, and particularly the many base designs that were laid to ensnare unwary innocence, adding, that all the pleasure which sensuality could give the most luxurious heart, must fall infinitely short of what she felt at that very moment, in the design she was then going upon, of relieving the distresses of a worthy family.

She had timed her discourse so as to say these words just as she came to the entrance of the court, in which she knew the widow lived, when, feigning to slip, she fell all along, crying out, as in the utmost agony, that she had wrenched her ankle.

The lady raising her with the greatest tenderness, expressed her concern for the unhappy accident, and desired she would submit to be helped into her lodgings, which, fortunately, were at the next door, where, though she could be but poorly accommodated, she might be more at her ease than in a more sumptuous place, and should have all the care in her power. This was just what my mistress had schemed for, who, courteously accepting the offer, made a shift to limp in, without any other assistance than her's.

It raised my indignation to see the tenderness with which the beautiful young creature pulled off her shoe and stocking, and chafed her ankle, thrown away upon so unworthy an object, as it did my abhorrence to hear the counterfeit shrieks and groans of my mistress, and the assurance with which she attributed the swellings caused by debauchery to this immediate accident.

This affrighted the young lady so, that she, in a manner, forced her to send for a surgeon, which with much entreaty she yielded

to do ; but it must be for a friend of her own, a gentleman who lived a considerable way off, at the polite end of the town, for she could not think of letting any common low-lived fellow come near her.

Upon this a porter was directly dispatched for her own surgeon, and in the meantime, as she began to grow easier, she recovered her spirits, and renewed the conversation that had been broken off by this accident.

‘I was telling you, my dear friend’, said she, ‘for so I shall ever call you from this moment (your kindness having completed the conquest which your beauty had before made of my heart), I was telling you that I was going to visit a family this morning, where I promised myself the highest joy that a human heart is capable of feeling, in lightening the distress of the virtuous, by sharing with them some of that wealth which Heaven has abundantly blessed me with, and which can justly be applied to no other use than making this grateful return to that goodness which bestowed it.

‘But my heart was too elate with the thought, and I received this accident as a caution from Heaven not to flatter myself with anything so strongly for the future. But, though I could not have this pleasure myself, the benefit shall not be delayed to them. I will make you my almoner, an office that I know will suit the goodness of your heart. You shall give this packet, which will put an end to all their distresses.’

‘Oh, madam ! your good opinion is the greatest honour to me’, replied the lady, ‘and I hope I shall never forfeit it, especially in this commission, which I shall undertake with the most sincere joy ; but, pray, dear madam, who are the persons to whom I must dispense your goodness’ ?

‘That’s true, my dear’, returned my mistress, ‘I should give you some account of them, that you may be the better enabled to judge of the joy I feel in serving them. It is the widow of an officer who has been killed in this war, and left her with three poor babes, destitute of every support but the allowance of the government, which, wretched as it is, and only aggravating misery by barely prolonging life under it, is often gasped for by the hungry mouth in vain, where interest is wanting to procure the immediate relief of it, as was her unhappy case, so that they must have actually perished for want of food, had not Providence brought them into my knowledge, seemingly by the greatest accident, about six months ago, since when, I have myself afforded them the necessary comforts of life, and have also made such interest for them, with some of my friends, that I have here got them a grant of a pension on the Irish Establishment, sufficient to bring up the children, and make the remainder of the mother’s days happy ; for, my dear, I never do anything by halves—Good God ! child, what is the matter with you ? What do you weep so for’ ?

‘Nothing, dear madam’, replied the lady ; ‘nothing ; I only sympathize in the distress of the poor widow’.

‘But, my dear, that distress is now at an end’.

‘Oh, madam, let me carry her the blessing ! let me not delay her happiness a moment ! Who knows but that her heart is this

minute bursting with the dreadful apprehensions of want for herself, and her dearer infants'!

'With all my heart, madam; but you will please to order a chair to be called to carry me home, when you go; for I cannot stay here alone'.

'Dear madam, forgive my rudeness. I beg your pardon, pray forgive me; the distress of the widow put everything out of my head; indeed it did; pray excuse me'.

'Excuse you, my dear, I honour the heart that feels another's woe. You shall go directly; you shall be the messenger of glad tidings to them. But, my dearest young lady, give me leave to tell you, that I fear you have not answered me sincerely; I fear your tears flow from some other cause than mere sympathy. Speak, my child! does anything affect your own heart? Can I any way be serviceable to you? Command me freely, and make me happy in serving one for whom my heart has conceived so tender an esteem! Speak as you would to your own mother, and wrong not my friendship with a doubt'.

'Oh, madam, madam'! replied the mourner, as soon as sobbing permitted utterance, 'I have no mother to make my complaint to. I am the wretched widow you have described! A widow without support, without friends, or any other hope than just in Heaven'.

'And Heaven will raise you friends, my dearest child! Heaven has raised you a friend in me! You shall be *my* child. I look upon you as my own, as a gift from Heaven, from this moment! You shall leave this place this very day! It is not fit for my child! I will take a lodging for you near myself till my nephew, who is lately come to town to see me, goes home; and then you shall live with me for ever'.

Saying these words she threw her arms round her destined victim and wiped away the tears that flowed down her cheeks, while a variety of passions filled her tender heart almost to bursting.

CHAPTER XXVI

THE HISTORY OF THE YOUNG LADY—SHE IS CRITICALLY INTERRUPTED BY THE ARRIVAL OF AN UNEXPECTED PERSON—SHE IS RECONCILED TO HER FATHER, WHO REWARDS THE WOMAN OF THE HOUSE, AND RESOLVES TO PUNISH THE BAWD

WHEN she had recovered herself a little, my mistress thus resumed her lore. 'Weep not, my dearest child, all will be well. And have you any dear little infants too'?

'Oh no! my wretchedness, thank Heaven, is all my own'!

'But may I, my dear, ask your name, and the circumstances of your story! I would know all that nothing may be unredressed'.

'You are all goodness, madam! My story, alas! has few circumstances, and they are all distresses! I lost my mother while I was yet a child; my father left me in the country to the care of a governess, the wife of his chaplain, who educated me in the

sentiments of piety and virtue. When I was scarce fourteen I returned the love of her son, the most deserving and most lovely of his sex, who was two years older than me; but, young as we were, we concealed our passion, till my father obtained him a commission in the army; when, on the regiment being ordered to America, I yielded to his fear of losing me, and consented to a private marriage, which was soon discovered by a letter falling into my father's hands, who, in his rage, turned my husband's father and mother and me out of doors, nor would ever see us more. A small vicarage afforded us a present support. My mother-in-law soon died; the suspicion of her having betrayed the confidence of my father, and been instrumental in my marriage, breaking her heart; as did the account of my husband's death, his father's. I then was left quite destitute, and have since supported a wretched being by my work, which the honest woman of this house takes in for me, without the least hope of relief in this world, till your goodness has this day taken compassion on me'.

'And what is your father's name, my dear'?

'That I have never yet revealed, as I would willingly hide the disgrace my distress may be thought to do him; but with you I need not use that caution; his name is——'

Just at this word, the surgeon, who had been sent for to my mistress, entered, and presented a new scene.

At the first sight of this person, the young lady gave a great shriek, and swooned away. The gentleman stood a moment stupefied with astonishment when, turning hastily to my mistress, 'Is this the lady?' said he.

'Ay, and a lovely one she is', answered she; 'but help me to raise her up, when you will see her better; she has been just telling me her story, and the grief of it has overcome her; it is a moving one; and she must be our own'.

'Oh, my child! my child!' exclaimed he in a transport, and, spurning my mistress from her with his feet, raised her himself, and leaned her head upon his bosom, kissing her, and almost smothering her with his tears. 'Oh, my poor child! what have you escaped!—what have you endured'!

It is impossible to describe the situation of my mistress at this scene. She saw the error she had been guilty of in introducing a woman to whom she was a stranger; and was aware of the danger with which the horror of such an interview on such an occasion threatened her. While, therefore, the father seemed wrapped in an ecstasy that made him as insensible as his daughter, she thought it the best way to retire from the first burst of his anger, and, forgetting her sprained ankle, was going directly away, but he perceived her intent, and calling her with a voice that nailed her to the ground: 'Stir not, upon your life', said he; 'I will have this whole mystery cleared up'.

His daughter, just then opening her eyes, and finding herself laid upon her father's bosom, love, duty, respect, fear, and joy filled her heart with such a variety of passions, that she sunk under their weight and swooned away.

This embarrassed the father almost to distraction, till the woman of

the house coming in, with her assistance she was at length recovered, for my mistress was so terrified, that she did not dare to approach her.

As soon as the lady had lightened her heart by a flood of tears, she threw herself at her father's feet, unable either to look up or to speak to him. Moved with the mute eloquence of her grief, and melting in the warmth of nature, he raised her from the ground, and spoke to her in these words :—

‘Be comforted, my child ! I am ! I will be your father ! But tell me what has passed between you and this vile woman’ !

‘Oh, sir, is she not my best, my only friend ? Has she not restored me to your love’ ?

‘Have a care, child ! She your friend ? then you are lost beyond recovery indeed ! she is a reproach to her sex ! to human nature’ !

‘Oh, sir ! how can that be ? Did she not bring you here to me ? Does not that show her virtue and compassion to my distress’ ?

‘Compose yourself a little, child ; it is true she brought me here ; but tell me, I charge you, on what terms she told you I was to come ; and how she came to interest herself in your affairs ! Fear not, but speak the truth’.

On this she told him the whole of her acquaintance with my mistress, and by what accident, and in what character she imagined he had been sent for ; but that as soon as she saw him enter the room, she thought my mistress must have been acquainted with her story, and had taken this method of introducing her to him, in hopes the surprise and sight of her distress might operate on his compassion.

Truth forces conviction. He was satisfied with the account she gave him ; and taking her again in his arms, ‘I have found you again, my child’, said he, ‘and I will never lose you more. Be the errors of your youth, be my severity forgotten. From henceforth you are my child, and I will be your father. As to that vile wretch, know that her whole acquaintance with you was sought with a premeditated design of betraying you to ruin. She told me the whole nearly as you have done ; and encouraged by your distress, of which she had got some general hints, but ignorant who you were, she laid the scheme of this pretended accident to get admission into your house ; for she well knew where you lived, and then sent for me to a place I had appointed, that I might come and see you, under the appearance of a surgeon ; that if I liked you, I might have the preference of her interest in you : for so deep had she laid her scheme, that you could not have escaped her ; the trial would have been too great for human fortitude. And this most execrable mystery of iniquity did she undertake for the paltry reward of fifty pounds, which, I must take the shame upon myself to own, I had promised her, little imagining that I was bargaining for the seduction of my own innocent child. But I see, I acknowledge the hand of Heaven in the whole affair, that has thus opened my eyes to the danger of such a licentious course of life, and made the recovery of my child the means, and the reward of my conversion.

‘Weep not, my dear ; justly may you turn your eyes with detestation from such a fiend. But I shall take care that she meets

a just reward; while you prepare to go home with me, for I will not leave you a moment in this scene of horror'.

'Oh, mercy, mercy, my lord'! cried my mistress; 'have mercy on me! nor overwhelm with your anger a wretched creature, whose remorse is a load too great to bear'.

'Away, vile wretch', replied he, in a rage; 'nor dare to speak another word! And here, fellow', calling to the porter, who had directed him to the house; 'bring me the parish constable'.

While the porter went for him, my mistress, wretched now indeed, her guilty fears magnifying her danger, stood trembling, but afraid to assay his pity with another word.

After he had walked a turn or two about the room, his daughter entered, and with her the woman of the house, with her little effects, which were soon packed up. At the sight of them his countenance softened.

'Well, my dear', said he to his daughter; 'I see you are ready to come with me; but I must wait a moment to do justice to the wretch who brought me hither. Plead not for her! I would not have you ever sue to me in vain again; and to anything in her favour I cannot yield. But my justice shall not only be severe, nor confined to her alone. You have said that this honest woman has been a friend to you; she shall be rewarded. Here, good woman, is the sum of money I was to have given this vile creature for my daughter in another sense. Take it as the reward of your honesty and kindness to her; and call on her every year of your life for the same sum'.

The poor woman took it with reverence, but was unable to speak her gratitude, her heart was so full, while his daughter dropped suddenly upon her knees, and raising her hands and eyes to heaven, exclaimed in rapture: 'Oh, pour thy blessings, Heaven, on his head, who thus dispenses happiness on all who merit it'! As she said these words, the constable came, into whose charge his lordship gave my mistress to be taken to a justice of the peace, whither he appointed to follow her; and then handed his daughter into a coach, in which he took her directly home.

CHAPTER XXVII

THE ADDRESS OF CHRYSAL'S MISTRESS, AND CIVILITY OF A CONSTABLE—SHE ARRIVES AT THE JUSTICE'S, AND IS SOFTENED BY HIS CLERK, AND TERRIFIED BY HIS WORSHIP—CHRYSAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE

As soon as this happy couple were gone, my mistress recovered her spirits and smiled with contempt at a danger she had often gone through before without harm. 'And so', says she, 'master constable, I am given in charge to you! and for what, pray? But I am no such novice as to yield myself a prisoner, till I see proper authority to hold me; therefore, sir, I shall wish you a good morning. If you please you may go tell his lordship that I was

not at leisure to wait for him at the justice's; and, because you may be dry after your walk, here is a crown to drink my health'.

'I thank you, mistress', replied the constable, taking the money; 'but in the meantime you must come. I am sorry I cannot let you go'.

'Cannot let me go? Pray, sir, where is your authority to keep me'?

'Here, mistress'! producing his staff.

'But your warrant'?

'Oh! as for that, I'll make bold to do without one this time, and take you to the justice on my own authority, and his lordship's request; and so, mistress, you had better come along, for I am in haste. You may have a coach, if you please'.

'Ay, so I will, to carry me home; and here's something for you to pay the coachman', putting a guinea in his hand.

'Tis very well, mistress, I will see you safe home, to be sure, if you desire it, and the justice gives you leave; for to him we must go directly'.

'Then give me my money; and be assured you shall answer for this false imprisonment'.

'Your money, mistress! why, ay? so I will, if I do not earn it'.

'Then let me go home this moment'.

'No, no, mistress! that I cannot do till you have been to visit his worship; and then I will see you safe home, if he gives me leave, and drink your health into the bargain; and that was what you gave me the money for. Come, come, mistress, one of your trade should know better things than to ask for money back again! Have I not showed you all the civility in my power? Do you think I would stand preaching with you here this hour for nothing? Come along, the coach is at the door'.

I saw you were surprised at the address and turn of expression in my mistress's conversation with this young lady, before the arrival of her father, as above her sphere; but nature had given her a capacity equal to anything, and her intercourse with the polite world had gained her an ease of behaviour, and elegance of expression, that made every condition of life seem natural to her. As to the story of the family whom she was going to relieve, she had actually prepared one of her confederates to have acted that part, so that the lord might justly say, her design was laid so well that it was next to impossible for her to miss of success. For, by this deceit, she would have gained the young lady's confidence to receive favours from her, and, when she had her in her debt, she thought she could make her own terms.

As soon as my mistress and her conductor were come into the ante-chamber of justice, the clerk, recognizing her, addressed her thus: 'Good-morrow, mistress; pray what has got us the favour of your company? You have been so great a stranger of late, that I was beginning to think we had lost you'.

'Pray, sir', said she; 'let me speak a word with you in the next room'. On which he ordered her to be shown in, and only waited to ask the constable, by whom, and for what, she was sent there,

who was able to give him no other answer than that the lord had ordered him to bring her, and said he would follow himself directly.

Having got this full information, the clerk came into the room to my mistress and told her, with a look of importance and concern, that he was sorry to see her on so bad an account.

'So bad an account, sir'! said she; 'why? pray, what do you think I am brought here for? Nothing in this world! they can charge me with nothing but intention; and I hope that is not punishable by the law'.

'I hope it will appear so', replied he; 'but', shrugging up his shoulders, 'my lord has sent a message here that has another appearance'.

'And pray, sir, what does my lord charge me with'?

'You'll excuse my revealing the secrets of a Privy Councillor. He will be here too soon, I am afraid, to tell you himself'.

Versed as my mistress was in all the wiles of man, the look and manner of his saying these words alarmed her conscious fears. 'Pray, sir', said she, 'what has his lordship said? or, if you do not think proper to tell me that, at least you can direct me how to make the best defence against his designs. I shall not be ungrateful; you know I never was'.

'Why, that's true, madam', replied he; 'and, indeed, I should take great pleasure in serving you, and getting you out of this hole; but my lord, you know, is a great man, and can, in a manner, do what he pleases with poor people'.

'Pray, sir, can I speak a word to the justice'?

'I fear he is engaged just now; besides it is so long since he has seen or heard from you, that I believe you must expect but little favour from him'.

'Why, that is the very thing I would speak to him about; and believe me, it was my business out so early this morning, till I was delayed by this unlucky accident'.

'As for that matter, you know you may say anything to me, as well as to him, and I can tell him'.

'That is true; why, all I have to say to him at present is to beg his acceptance of these five guineas for his past favours, and his advice how to get out of this scrape; and pray do you take these three for your trouble. I am sorry I have no more to offer, but really the times are very bad, and little or no money stirring among the gentlemen; beside, all my ladies have been very unlucky of late, and the doctor, you know, must be always paid in hand'.

'I am sorry things go so badly with you; I will speak to the justice, and let you know what he says, and you may depend on my friendship and interest at all times; though I am afraid this is a very bad affair. I will go to him directly, and return to you as soon as possible'.

I here left my mistress to her meditations, having been one of the pieces she had given to the clerk. You may imagine I was glad to leave such a service, though I could not promise myself much pleasure, beside variety, in the exchange, from what I had already seen of that which I was entering into.

The justice was in his office, busied in examining the informations of some of his people who had made some lucky hits the evening before. On a wink from his clerk, they were all ordered to withdraw, when reaching me and four more of my brethren to his worship: 'Here, sir', said he, 'is five guineas from Mrs——'.

'So then', replied he, 'she has thought proper to come at last'.

'To come? no, no, sir! she has been brought, or else, I believe, you would have hardly seen her'.

'The ungrateful jade! but what is the matter now?'

'I really cannot well tell; nor does the constable know any more than that my lord——ordered him to bring her, and said that he should follow himself'.

'My lord! then I must be ready to receive him properly: he is a great man: quick! reach me my green velvet cap, red slippers and new gown; open half a score of those books—the largest of them—and lay them on that great table, as if I had been referring. There! now I look like a justice! and bid those gentry I was speaking to, go backwards till my lord is gone; he must not see such faces; they might prejudice him against us; and he is a great man. So now I'll open the new justice, and his lordship may come as soon as he pleases'.

Just as all things were thus prepared for his lordship's reception, in proper formality, a servant brought a note from him, to let his worship know he could not come himself that morning, but desired he would take proper care of the woman he had ordered to be taken before him, who kept a house of bad fame in such a street, where, upon the least inquiry, he would not fail to find sufficient matter against her, from her neighbours.

Though his lordship's not coming was a disappointment to his worship, after the preparations made to receive him; and balked him of an important advertisement for the next morning, yet the general wording of this note gave him some consolation, as it might seem to authorize any measures he might please to take to squeeze the criminal before him.

'This may do', said he to the clerk; 'this may do something; but we must proceed with caution, for Mrs——is an old hand; let her be called in; I'll soften her a little first, and then you may work upon her after as you please'.

As soon as she came in, his worship accosted her thus: 'So, mistress, this is a fine affair; I knew what your doings would come to at last; I have often warned you, but you would take no advice; and now you see the consequence! Do, make her *mittimus*! I must wait upon his lordship; and I cannot go till she is committed?'

'Committed! dear, your worship, for what must I be committed? I have done nothing'.

'No! to be sure, you have done nothing! his lordship would prosecute you so severely for nothing! Look at this letter! Do you know this handwriting? His lordship has here given me an account of the whole affair, and desired that I would proceed against you with the utmost rigour of the law. I have already sent to search your house'.

This word completed the terrors into which the sight of his

lordship's well known hand had thrown her, and deprived her of all resolution and presence of mind. She burst into tears, and throwing herself on her knees: 'Oh, good your worship! dear Mr Clerk', said she, 'advise me; assist me to get over this misfortune! Here is my watch; it cost fifty pounds at a pawnbroker's but a month ago; it is a repeater; take it, Mr Justice! Mr Clerk, here are my rings; they are the only valuable things I have; take them, and help me out at this dead lift; send, and stop the people from going into my poor house. I shall be blown up; the gentlemen will all desert me. I shall be ruined, just when I have brought things to a little bearing; help me but this once, and I never will give you cause to complain of me again. I will always be punctual to my promise'.

CHAPTER XXVIII

SHE IS DISCHARGED UPON PROPER BAIL—THE LABOURS OF CHRYSAL'S NEW MASTER, IN THE SERVICE OF THE PUBLIC, WITH SOME OF THE VARIOUS MYSTERIES OF HIS OFFICE

THE work was now done, and a wink having settled the cue between the justice and his clerk, the latter began thus: 'If I may presume to advise your worship, though this is a very bad affair, to be sure, yet as it is not quite felony by the statute, I am humbly of opinion that if bail could be got'—

'Dear Mr Clerk, I am obliged to you. But then consider, my lord is a great man'.

'That is true, please your worship; but the law is greater than any man, and the law is very tender of the liberty of the subject, and says expressly in the statute, *in favore libertatis*, that no person shall be confined that can get bail; and beside, who knows, but if she was at liberty, she might find means to be reconciled to his lordship, and so all would be well'.

'Dear Mr Clerk, that is true; I would easily be reconciled to him; I know how to gain his favour when his anger is a little cooled'.

'Why, mistress, if you are quite sure of that, I believe we may venture to bail you; but where are your friends'?

'Dear, your worship, I have no friends; I have nothing to make friends with; I throw myself upon you, gentlemen'!

'Why, really, this is a nice case, but if you'll step into the next room, we'll consider what can be done for you'.

'Oh! but send and stop the men that went to my house'!

'Never fear, they were not to go without further orders'.

When she was gone out: 'Well', said the justice, 'this has been a good hit, it makes up for the bad week; but cannot you guess what this matter is'?

'Not a word of it', replied the clerk; 'she has not dropped a syllable herself that could let me the least into it, and I would not discover my ignorance by asking her any questions. But, I suppose, it is only some trick she has played my lord about a girl, for you

know she has often told us that he was one of her best customers, and boasted of his protection; and if it is no more than that, as I imagine, he will think no more of it, and, so the best way is to let her go; for indeed we cannot keep her, if we would; though to keep up the form, for fear she should smell us out, she must have some bail; and therefore I'll go and fill a bond, and make a couple of our people put on their bailing clothes, and come and sign with her, though I do not think she has money left to pay for the bond, or make the fellows drink; but she has done pretty well already, that is the truth'.

Saying this, he went out, and in a little time returned with my late mistress, and two of the fellows, the shabbiness of whose appearance had made his worship order them out of the lord's sight just before, now dressed out like reputable housekeepers, who gravely signed with my mistress, without ever asking what; and upon her returning a negative shrug, to a wink from the clerk, went out without a word.

The business was now over, and my late mistress dismissed to follow her occupation, and make up, by double diligence, for the misfortunes of that morning, only with an assurance to the clerk that she would remember his kindness, and be punctual for the future.

I was now entered into a service where I had an opportunity of seeing into the whole mystery of justice; but you must not expect that I should reveal all the secrets of so venerable a trade, though I may give a few general hints for your information in so abstruse and intricate a science.

The affair of my late mistress was the last of that morning; my worshipful master putting me into his purse, and going directly to dinner, which had waited for him some time. But though his fare was good, his care for the public would not permit him to make long meals, or debauch away his time. After a short refreshment of only two hours, he returned to his office, where he reassumed his labours in all the various branches of his extensive employment. The first thing he looked into was the informations, which the affair of my mistress had interrupted in the morning, as I told you before: when, calling his people, one after another, before him, he went through them regularly in this manner: 'John Gibbet, you here inform me that you have found out the person who took the gentleman's hat in the quarrel in Chelsea fields, last Sunday evening, which you think to make a robbery of. Let me hear the circumstances of that affair, for you are so keen a bloodhound, when you get upon any scent, that you are for making everything robbery, be the case what it will'.

'Please your worship', replied Gibbet, turning the quid in his cheek, and squirting out the juice; 'I do all things for the best; and that you know; and that I have brought many things to bear which nobody else would undertake, as witness that affair on Shuter's Hill, that got you so much credit, and money too'.

'Why, that's true, John; but then you should also remember the cursed scrape you brought me into about the young fellow who wrote the threatening letters to the farmer, about burning his barns: you undertook to prove that too; but you know how you left me

in the lurch, after I had gone such lengths as had like to have ruined me. Plain swearing will not always do, though never so home, you should remember that; you should attend to circumstances also. But as to this affair, let me hear what you can make of it'.

'Your worship must know that I, and two or three more of our people, having nothing to do, shammed a quarrel, in which a gentleman, who was coming by, lost his hat. It was a large hat, with a very broad gold lace, such as your foreigners wear. It was I that shoved off the hat, and seeing a shabby, idle-looking young fellow standing by without one, I took it up, and, asking him if it was his, reached it to him, and saw him make off with it directly. Now, if this is not a plain robbery, I do not know what is. A fellow runs away with a gentleman's hat, who advertises it, with a reward for taking the thief, whom he will prosecute. Now I have found out the fellow's haunts, for indeed, I dogged him, and will have himself whenever you please, and can clench the prosecution, by swearing that I saw him carry off the hat; and you know I need say no more, nor take any notice who gave it him'.

'Why, John, there may be something in this affair. I like it very well, John; and so, clerk, you may enter him on the list for next sessions. This affair has a good look; nor is there anything unjust in it; for, though you gave him the hat, as he knew it was not his own, and yet carried it off, he is guilty of the theft, and that is the same as robbery, in justice, though it may not in law; and justice is the thing to go by with a safe conscience. And so you may go, John; I will let you know when it is proper to have him taken up, only have an eye to him, for fear anyone else should snap him out of our hands. Who comes next? Richard Sly, you say you have found out the knot of young fellows that have begun to infest the streets for some nights past'.

'Ay, please your worship', says Sly, shrugging up his shoulders and grinning; 'I have found them out to be sure; and well I might, for it was I first set them on the lay'.

'How, Richard! take care of what you say'.

'Oh! your worship, never fear Dick Sly for a slippery trick! I know what I say very well; I have known for some time that these youths have been playing a small game, cribbing from the till, and building sconces, and such-like tricks, that there was no taking hold off; I, therefore, thought it would be right to bring them to justice, at any rate, and so laid the plan of this gang, and entered them into the business myself, and now, whenever you have a mind to nab them, you need only take me up, and I can peach them all, which will be no bad affair, there are so many of them'.

'Why, that is true, Richard; but they have done nothing yet that deserves so severe a remedy as the gallows; therefore let them alone; perhaps they may mend, or, if they do not, it will be time enough to take them up when they deserve it more than now. To be sure your peaching them, who first drew them in, is not so very just; but then the law will support you in it, and, while a man has the law on his side, he may laugh at the gallows. And so, Richard, have a good look-out till these youths are ripe for Tyburn, and then your harvest will come'.

It would be endless to go through this whole business particularly. Be it sufficient to say, that there was no breach of the laws, which some of his people did not give him an information of, and almost all, as accomplices ; while his whole care was to consider which could turn most to his advantage in the conviction, and to settle the evidence against them, so as it might be sure not to miscarry.

CHAPTER XXIX

A HIGHWAYMAN, IMPROPERLY TAKEN, SAVES HIS LIFE BY LOSING HIS REASON—JUDICIAL SAGACITY, AND ELOQUENCE TRIUMPHANT OVER COMMON SENSE AND MATTER OF FACT—THIS MYSTERY EXPLAINED

WHILE he was in the midst of this business he was surprised with the news of a highwayman, that moment brought in by a gentleman who had taken him, in the very attempt of robbing him on Turnham Green. This threw the whole house into an uproar.

‘A highwayman taken, and by the very party’! exclaimed the justice, in an agony of rage and vexation. ‘This is most unfortunate; there is forty pounds dead loss, besides the shame of it; how shall I support my consequence if other people can serve the public without my assistance’?

‘I wonder who it can be’, said the clerk; ‘I suppose the man on the white mare, or the mask, from Putney Common! but, whoever it is, something must be done! *He* must be saved this time, to save our credit, and we may have him the next ourselves! Here they come; do you keep the gentleman in discourse, while I speak to the prisoner, and see how he can come down. I shall readily give you your cue’.

Just then entered the gentleman with his prisoner, whom they directly knew to be an old offender, who had long baffled their pursuit; a circumstance that heightened the vexation of his being taken by another, and was not a little favourable to him at this time.

His worship received the gentleman most politely, and desired him to sit down a moment till he should finish a letter he was writing to the Secretary of State, and then he would attend to his business, ordering the prisoner to be removed into another room for the meantime.

He then sat himself down to write with great deliberation, and had just finished, when his clerk came to deliver him a letter from the Lord Mayor, which he read over attentively, and saying it was very well, he then turned to the gentleman, and asking his pardon for making him wait so long, ordered the prisoner to be brought in.

The highwayman appeared now a quite different person from what he did when he was in the room a few minutes before; his looks, which were then clouded with the gloom of listless dejection and despair, being inflamed into the fiercest agitations of frenzy.

The gentleman showed his surprise at this change, as did his worship his uneasiness for his own safety, from the fury of so

outrageous a madman. As soon as he was secured, the justice, addressing himself, with the height of judicial solemnity, to the prosecutor: 'Pray, sir', said he; 'will you please to inform me what you have to allege against this unhappy person'?

'Sir', replied the gentleman, 'all I have to say is, that he stopped me this afternoon upon Turnham Green, and presenting a pistol at me, bade me deliver my money; but being well armed, and having more about me than I chose to lose, instead of my purse, I drew a pistol too, and, his missing fire, I grappled with, and took him on the spot, and from thence brought him directly here. That is all I have to say, sir'.

'And pray, sir, what did he say when you had taken him'?

'Not a word, sir, nor has he spoken a syllable since, nor answered any one question he has been asked'.

'Ay, it is so, poor gentleman, it is so! And pray, sir, did he make much resistance when you took him'?

'The utmost he was able; but being better mounted, and much stronger than he, I soon overpowered him, though not without great danger; for, after I had him down, he drew his knife and very narrowly missed plunging it into my body. You see what a cut it made in my coat and waistcoat'!

'Ay, poor man, madness is always desperate. I fear, sir, you have been too hasty in this affair'.

'How, sir, too hasty, to take a man in the very action of highway robbery? I do not understand you, sir'!

'Sir, I mean that this person is no robber, but an unhappy gentleman of family and fortune, who has been for some time out of his mind. I have been applied to by his relations more than once, to try to have him apprehended, that he might be confined; and, now he is secured, they will take proper care of him that he shall not frighten anybody for the future; for I am satisfied, sir, that was all he meant; and that he would not have taken your money had you offered it to him. I suppose you searched him when you had overpowered him, poor man, as you justly termed it. Pray, sir, did you find anything upon him to make you think he was a highwayman? Any watches, jewels, or different purses of money? or more money than you might think it probable a person of his appearance might commonly carry about him'.

'No, really, sir, I did not find anything like what you mention. This purse which seems to have about thirty or forty guineas in it (for I have not reckoned them), was the only thing in all his pockets, except the knife which he drew on me; his pistols were openly in his saddle, as gentlemen commonly wear them'.

'Very well; and does not his present behaviour, and whole conduct in this affair, convince you that the unhappy man could have no felonious intent in his mad attack upon you? for men, mad as he is, have no intention at all; and, without a felonious intent, there can be no robbery; but I presume, you may understand something of the law yourself, sir'?

'No, indeed, sir; I cannot say I know any more law than just not to wrong any person, nor let them wrong me, if I can help it, as far as common sense will direct me. I thank God, I have spent

my days quietly in the country, and never had a dispute with any man in my life'.

'Common sense, dear sir! common sense is a blind guide in matters of law. Law and common sense are quite different things; but as I was saying, sir, where there is no felonious intent, there can be no felony; now robbery is punished only because it is felony, for so the indictment must be laid; *felonice*, sir, *felonice*, or it will not do! The indictment will be quashed without that word; and who can charge a man with a felonious intent, who is disordered in mind, and can have no intention at all? 'Tis true, the appearance was bad and sufficiently terrifying to authorize your apprehending him; but, as you suffered neither loss nor hurt, I cannot suppose that a gentleman of your humane appearance would desire to add to the misery of his present unhappy condition, that of imprisonment till the next sessions, when he must be acquitted of course, as that would certainly make his madness for ever incurable. Whatever expense you have been at in bringing him here, I will take upon me to reimburse you out of the money in his purse, beside what gratification you please to require for your own time and trouble. This, sir, is what I would recommend to you, as a Christian and a gentleman, as you appear to be; but, if you are of another opinion, you must only swear to your information, and enter into recognizance of prosecution, while I sign his *mittimus*, and send word to his friends, who are people of condition'.

'Indeed, sir, you judge very rightly of me; I would not aggravate the distress of any human being. If you know the unhappy man, and that he is under so severe an affliction as the loss of reason, I have nothing further to say than that I am sorry for his misfortune, and would not for the world be the cause of heightening it, as I had no motive for apprehending him but the duty which I and every member owe the public. I thank Heaven for my own escape from him, and do not desire to make any advantage of it. As to the people who assisted me in bringing him hither, they are still unpaid, and you know best how to deal with them. So I leave the whole affair to you, and am your humble servant'.

I have not interrupted this account with any notice of the behaviour of the criminal, as it consisted only of the most outrageous imitation of madness with imprecations and blasphemies, too horrid for repetition.

As soon as the gentleman was gone, and the room cleared of all but the justice, his clerk, and the madman, who was left bound to keep up the farce, his worship thus addressed him: 'So, sir, you thought to reign for ever; but you see what your fates have come to! I suppose you are surprised at the pains I have taken to bring you through this affair'?

'Not at all, sir', replied the criminal; 'the bank-note for two hundred pounds which I concealed in the sleeve of my coat, and gave your clerk'.

'How, sir', said the justice in a rage; 'do you pretend to say it was upon any such account. But you judge of others by yourself. However, I shall not stand to argue the matter with you now; you have escaped for this time, and may be glad of it; but

take care for the future; your luck may not always be so good'.

'Will your worship please to order your people to return my horse and arms? and I hope you will give me my purse; for life without something to support it is no great obligation'.

'What, sir! do you pretend to capitulate? Your horse you shall have, not that you have a right to expect him, but because it would not be proper to keep him after the representation that imposed upon the fool who took you; and here are half a score guineas to carry you to some place where you are not known, and to maintain you till you can get into some honest way of earning your bread. The rest is little enough to give the people instead of your horse, and to stop their mouths. You may stay here till the crowd is dispersed, when you may go where you please'.

As there was no remedy, the criminal was forced to submit; nor indeed, did he seem much dissatisfied at the heaviness of his composition.

CHAPTER XXX

AN INSTANCE OF HIS WORSHIP'S EXEMPLARY JUSTICE ON A SHOP-LIFTER—THE UNFASHIONABLE COMPASSION AND GENEROSITY OF A SAILOR—A DISPUTE ABOUT SUPERIORITY OF SKILL, BETWEEN HIS WORSHIP AND HIS CLERK, OPENS NEW MYSTERIES IN THE PROFESSION

It was now pretty late, and my master was just retiring to supper, pleased with having made so good a day, when he was stopped by more business. A woman who kept a chandler's shop in the next street, had dragged before him one of her poor neighbours whom she had caught in the fact of stealing a pound of cheese off her counter, as she was reaching a twopenny loaf from the shelf; a crime that was heightened by ingratitude too, as she was giving her the loaf on trust; the thief having owned to her that she had not a farthing in the world to pay for it, nor a morsel to give her three small children, who had been fasting the whole day.

Enraged at the heinousness of the crime, and at being kept from supper while the chickens and asparagus were cooling on the table, his worship, knitting his brows, and putting on all the magistrate, asked the trembling wretch, with a voice that pierced her soul: 'What she had to say for herself, and whether she was guilty of the crime laid to her charge, or not'.

The poor creature, almost dead with wretchedness, want, and fear, threw herself at his feet, and pouring out a flood of tears, that for some moments choked her utterance: 'Oh, mercy! mercy!' said she; 'for the love of the sweet Jesus, have mercy on a poor wretch, whom want alone compelled to this first offence, to save the lives of three poor infants, who are this moment perishing with hunger. Oh! send and prove the truth of what I say; send and

learn their misery, and it will move you to relieve them, and then I care not what becomes of me'.

'Very fine, truly; if we admit such excuses for shop-lifting, there will be enough ready to plead them. Here, make her *mittimus*; she confesses the fact; as for her brats, bastards too, I suppose, let them be sent to the workhouse'.

'Oh, the poor creatures! they are not bastards; and they have no parish to be sent to. My husband is a sailor, who was pressed on board a man-of-war six years ago, and has been in the West Indies ever since, till the summer, when the ship was ordered home to be laid up. Poor soul! he thought they should be paid off, and so wrote me word to Cork to come to him, for he meant to go and settle in Scotland, his own country; but the moment he came to Portsmouth he was turned over into another ship, without getting a shilling of his six-years' wages or prize-money, and sent away directly to America; so that after spending every penny I had in the world, to come to him from Ireland, as he desired, I am left here with my poor children to starve in a strange place, where nobody has any compassion for me, though my husband wrote me word that he had above three hundred pounds due to him for wages and prize-money. Here is his letter; I never go without it; it is all the comfort I have in my distress'.

'Ay, I thought so! I thought you were one of those Irish thieves that came to rob us, and cut our throats; but I shall take care of you; I shall make you wish you had continued eating potatoes at home. I wish I could provide as well for every one of your country; we shall never be well till we have hanged you all'.

'Oh, good your worship; I am no thief, I never stole anything before, and this woman who has brought me before you, knows the truth of everything I have told your worship; and that I have always paid her honestly while I had a penny in the world, for I have dealt with her ever since I came to London; but hunger and the cries of three starving children, forced me to this! Oh, my children, my children'!

'Peace, woman! All you can say signifies nothing; you were taken in the fact, and to Newgate you shall go directly. And as for your brats, it is better for them to die of hunger now, than to live to be hanged like their mother'.

By this time the *mittimus* was ready, which he signed without the least hesitation or pity, and then hurried away to his supper, having almost fretted his bowels out to think it was spoiled by waiting so long.

But though the justice's compassion could not be moved by such a poor wretch, his clerk was not so inexorable, but yielded to the persuasion of an honest tar, who seeing a crowd at the door, had given sixpence to go in and see the fun; and for two guineas, which barely paid his fees, ventured to make up the affair, and let her go about her business, though he did not know what might be the consequence, if it should come to his worship's knowledge. Jack took no notice of what he said, but taking the poor creature, who was just sinking under the agitations of fear, joy, and gratitude, by the hand:

'Cheer away, sister, sister', said he; 'cheer away, we'll bring up

all this leeway the next trip. Damn my eyes and limbs if I'll see a brother seaman's family at short allowance, while I have a shilling. Come, heave ahead; I'll rig and victual you and your children against your husband comes, to man you for a voyage home. I'll swing my hammock in the next berth, and you shall cook the kettle, while I stay ashore'. Saying which words he led her off in triumph. This the clerk told his worship, when he came in to supper, giving him one of the guineas, as his share of the composition.

I now thought the business of the day over, and was preparing to take a view of my new master's heart, while he and his clerk were enjoying their success over a hearty bottle. But I was prevented by an accident, which disturbed for a while, and had like to have entirely broken off this harmony between them; a dispute, like those between all conquerors, arising about the division of the spoil and the merits in the acquisition of it.

'This will do', said his worship, clapping his hands akimbo, after a full glass; 'this will do! what between the bawd in the morning, and the highwayman in the afternoon, we have made a noble day of it! But what have you ordered about that fellow? I hope you have taken care that we may have him ourselves next'.

'Never fear', replied the clerk; 'I have done for him; I have sent people to lay all the roads he can go, from the inn where he ordered his horse; and plausible Tom is fixed there to scrape an acquaintance with him, so that he cannot escape'.

'Ay, let Tom alone to manage him! many a cunning fellow's heart has that Tom crept into, till he has wheedled him to Tyburn! Not a lawyer of them all has a smoother tongue. But did not I improve the hint of his madness well? How quietly the gudgeon swallowed it. Had I set about it, I believe, in my soul, I could have persuaded him out of his own senses, and made him think himself mad, as well as the highwayman: ha, ha, ha! though you were not quite clear enough in your note, you should have told me all the particulars; I was often at a loss, but upon the whole, I think I did pretty well, pretty well, I think'.

'Why, ay, you did manage it pretty well when I had given you the cue, and so might any one have done. But how would you have contrived to bring him off, if I had not made that hit'?

'How? why, easily enough! I would have—— But what have you done with the bank-note? Let me see that'.

'The note! It is safe enough. But you do not tell me how you would have managed to have earned it; I think you should do that before you ask for it'.

'How I would have earned it? Why, pray, good sir, do you know whom you talk to in this manner'?

'Whom I talk to? I talk to the worshipful justice, whose betters I have talked to before now; and who would not have asked me that question some years ago, when he applied to me to instruct him in the business of his office'.

'Insolence! Instruct me! I'll make you know, sir, that I understand my business without your instruction. I'll take another clerk to-morrow'.

'With all my heart! good master justice; with all my heart!

and see who will be the loser by that. If you do not know it yet, you will soon learn then, whether the business comes to the justice or his clerk, for I give you notice that I shall take all the people with me ; you shall have the credit of making a new set for yourself, I assure you '.

' Very fine, very fine treatment this ' !

' Why do you deserve it then, sir, if you do not like it ? I say very fine treatment too, that you should take upon you to undervalue my skill, and assume the credit of it to yourself ; you, whom I first taught, and still support in your office, in spite of all your blunders ! As for the bank-note, here it is, and here it shall be, till we have settled the account of the last sessions, when you were so clever upon me, sending me on a fool's errand out of the way, while you took up the reward. Perhaps you thought I did not see through your design, or that I was afraid to speak of it ; but you were quite mistaken ; I only waited till the remedy should come into my own hands, and now it has, be assured I shall make use of it, whatever you may think, sir ? And further let me tell you, that if you say much more, I will think of parting in earnest, if you do not think proper to come to a new agreement ; for I see no reason why you should carry off two-thirds of the profit only because you are justice, indeed, though I do all the business ' !

CHAPTER XXXI

THE BREACH HAPPILY MADE UP BY THE ARRIVAL OF COMPANY—
THE EVENING CONCLUDED IN CHARACTER—HIS WORSHIP GOES
NEXT MORNING TO HEAR A CHARITY SERMON, AND FROM THENCE
TO EAT A CHARITY FEAST, WHERE CHRYSAL ENTERS INTO A NEW
SERVICE—SOME ACCOUNT OF THE NATURE OF A CHARITY FEAST

MATTERS were now at such a height, that I every minute expected they would have proceeded from words to blows, when a ring at the bell brought them both to themselves in an instant.

' Ah ! that is true ! this is quarter-night ', said the justice, ' and here the ladies are come ! give me your hand : why should we fall out about our skill when the business goes on well ? Here's my service to you ; and let there be no more of it '.

' With all my heart ' ! replied the clerk ; ' but why will you urge me on thus when you know that I cannot bear to have my skill called in question '.

By this time the ladies entered, whom I directly saw to be the commodore matrons and compliant fair of this district, who came duly to compound with him for the breach of those laws he was appointed to support.

The very mention of this scene sufficiently explains the nature of it, and makes a more particular description unnecessary. All parties behaved properly on the occasion. They paid their subsidies, for which he returned them very wholesome advice, to behave with diligence and discretion in their professions ; and especially those

who lived in his neighbourhood, he cautioned to avoid all riots and causes of offence, which might bring his connivance and protection into suspicion; then relaxing from the severity of his morals, he gave up the rest of the night, and a good part of the next morning, to mirth and good fellowship, in the company of a few of his particular favourites, and the best customers of this motley set, having dismissed the rest to the pursuit of their occupations.

The business of the day, and the pleasures of the night, had so far exhausted his spirits, that nature required a long pause; accordingly, no business coming in to disturb him (for such was his vigilance in his office, and care for the public, that everything gave way to that) he made a late morning, not waking till he was called to attend a sermon and dinner, which were to be that day for the benefit of a charity, to which he was a constant benefactor; as indeed his public spirit made him to all that were already established, and prompted him to strike out many new; in which, as the author of them, he hoped to have the management, while novelty should make it the fashion to support them.

But in this he was always disappointed. For though, in the multitude of his schemes, he sometimes stumbled upon a good one, yet his head was so confused, and his notions so wild and unmethodical, that before he could digest his plans into any regularity, some one else took up the hint, and ran away with the credit of the design.

At church he edified greatly by a comfortable nap during the sermon, which finished his refreshment, and sent him with a clear head and keen stomach, to the feast, where every person seemed to vie in demonstrating his attachment to the cause of their meeting, by the quantity he ate and drank.

I here changed my service once more, being given by his worship to the subscription, and so came into the possession of a community in general, which gave me an opportunity of seeing the human heart in a more complicated view than perhaps any other scene of its actions could afford; as there was hardly a profession, degree, or rank of life, which had not a representative in this meeting, nor a motive of action, however apparently contrary to its design, or contradictory to each other, which did not contribute its influence to the bringing them together.

While I lay in the hands of the treasurer of the charity, unassigned to any particular use, or person, I enjoyed a state of liberty, something like that of living in a commonwealth, having it in my power to enter into the hearts of all the governors (who were now my owners) as I liked, and to make any observations, without restraint, to any particular person, time, or place.

Charity is the most amiable and most exalted of the human virtues, and that which rises to the nearest imitation of the divine. Nor can anything be stronger proof of the beneficence of the author of the human nature, than his placing this virtue, which is the perfection of it, within the reach of every individual.

For charity is a disposition to think well of, and do well to every other human being, without partiality, prejudice, or respect to any other motive, than this universal duty; giving of alms being no more than one, and that perhaps the very meanest effect of it.

But this extensiveness of the nature of charity is the reason of its being generally misconceived, and most erroneously confined to this effect by minds unable to comprehend its greater excellence ; and, from this mistake, have proceeded many of the extraordinary instances of this effect of charity, which distinguishes the present age.

This is a most dangerous error ; it is too like thinking to bribe heaven with the wages of hell ; and yet, profanely absurd as such a notion is, daily observation shows the extensive prevalence of it.

As charity is such a refined and exalted virtue, and purely scriptural, it must appear strange to you how it should enter into the head of man, to make so gross, dull, and sensual a passion as eating, the foundation of it ! Indeed, so unnatural is the thought to pure speculation, unacquainted with the perversions of life, that a charity feast, in the literal meaning of the phrase, must be taken for a meeting of the poor, to eat the provisions supplied for them by the rich, instead of the rich meeting to gorge their own appetites.

But a little observation on the present bias of the world will solve this difficulty. Of all the natural appetites and passions which possess that part of mankind, whose age has enabled them to amass money enough to give away, eating is the most universal. I say natural passions, for fraud, avarice, or ambition, or even lust, at that time of life, are not the passions of nature.

To gratify this, therefore, was the most probable scheme for drawing them together ; and, when that is sufficiently done, the full heart opens easily, and shares its abundance with the empty.

CHAPTER XXXII

A REPRESENTATION OF THE COMPANY—THE HISTORY OF ONE OF THE PRINCIPAL MEMBERS—THE MODERN METHOD OF BRIBING HEAVEN WITH THE WAGES OF HELL

THEY had feasted, nor did their minds yet require such another banquet¹, when I became a member of their society ; you must not expect a particular account or description of such a scene. A few general hints must satisfy your curiosity, as I have told you on other occasions.

Let your imagination represent to you a number of people whose highest pleasure is eating, seated at a large table, covered with all the delicacies, all the rarities of the season, in a plenty that promised satiety to the keenest appetites. But I must stop ! I see the very thought has an effect upon you, that savours too strongly of sensuality, and might, if not checked, put a stop to our conversation, by some human hankerings. Let us therefore pass over such a scene, and turn our observation to the company as they sat after the fragments of the feast were removed. And here it will be proper to have recourse to the expedient we made use of before.

¹ Homer

and, holding up the mirror to imagination, view the whole scene as if actually present.

Observe, then, that enormous bulk of flesh that sits at the head of the table, with his waistcoat all unbuttoned, and gasping for breath; the distention of his stomach having left his lungs scarce room to perform the animal functions, and his fat almost choking the passages of vital air.

He is one of the principal supporters of this and every other public charity, founded on the modern method of a feast; the natural avarice of his heart outwitting itself in this instance; for as he is sure of satiating his appetite with more and better victuals and wine at these meetings, than he could have at home for much more than the price of the ticket, the advantage of that bargain always tempts him to go; and then the happiness of his heart, in the fulness of his stomach, opens his purse, and he subscribes with a liberality that arises almost to profusion.

But look into his heart, and read the rest of his life; the very money which he bestows with such an appearance of virtue, on this best of uses (for no error in motive, or manner, must take off the merit of an action that does good), this very money, I say, has perhaps been acquired by vices the most opposite to the virtues it is applied to.

The greatest frugality, application, and skill, in the mysterious business of a scrivener, have raised this person from the most abject poverty to affluence, above the moderation of a rational wish. But so powerful is the force of habit, that though the cause has been long since removed, the effect still remains, and he persists to save and heap up money, by all the mean and iniquitous ways which want first suggested to him. One instance, and that not singular in him, will give you a sufficient insight into his character.

A gentleman whom indiscretion and indolence of temper had involved in some pecuniary distresses, had the greater misfortune, some years ago, to be recommended to this person, to borrow such a sum of money as should extricate him from his immediate difficulties on a mortgage of his estate.

As his security was good, his business was soon done; but the convenience of his estate to another which the person had lately purchased in his neighbourhood, and an acquaintance with the unwary easiness of his disposition, made him cast a wishful eye upon it, and form schemes for getting it absolutely into his possession.

At first he strove to tempt his indiscretion by the offer of more money to supply his pleasures; but finding that would not take, and that the sense of his former extravagances dwelt so strongly on him, as to give his mind a kind of turn to industry, did he know how to apply it, his ready genius struck out a method that he imagined could not fail of success.

He therefore cultivated an intimacy with the gentleman, in which upon all occasions, he affected to boast of his own success in life and to attribute it to his having always a command of money to take the advantage of any bargain that might offer.

As this turn of conversation seemed to flow only from the fulness

of his heart, and to be free from all design, it had the effect he proposed, and raised a desire in his friend to follow a method which had been so successful with him. He therefore one day communicated to him a resolution which he had formed of selling his estate and applying the money to business, and desired his friend's assistance to execute his design. After an appearance of surprise, the scrivener testified his pleasure and approbation of his prudence by the readiness with which he undertook to serve him.

The ease with which the first part of his scheme had succeeded, made him form further hopes, and think of getting the estate he desired even at a cheaper rate than purchasing it.

After some time spent, as he said, in fruitless inquiries for a purchaser, he most artfully drew his friend to desire that he would buy it himself; at first he seemed to hesitate, but then, as it were, yielding to the impulse of his friendship, he concluded a bargain for it, on terms evidently advantageous to the seller.

All things being agreed upon, the parties met to conclude the affair; when the writings being read over, and the money lying on the table, while the scrivener told it, the gentleman executed the deeds of conveyance, and receipt before proper witnesses, who withdrew as soon as they had signed them.

In the meantime the scrivener continued to tell the money, till a servant entered hastily with a letter as from a lord, who was one of his best clients, and desired to see him that moment. The difficulty this threw him into was soon solved by his friend's compliance to defer his business for a few hours, as the lord's urgency would not admit the least delay. Accordingly, he put up both the deeds and money, in all the apparent confusion of hurry, and went away to his lordship.

Next morning the gentleman called to receive the price of his estate, but his friend was not at home, nor to be spoken with in the afternoon, for his turn was now served, and he neither desired, nor perhaps thought it safe, to keep up any further acquaintance with him.

As such things might happen to a man in business, the gentleman took no notice of them, but quietly swallowed the same excuses for some days successively. At length his patience began to be exhausted, and his fears alarmed at a behaviour so strange and contrary to that height of intimacy that had subsisted between them, even where there was no business in the case.

In this perplexity he went one morning, resolving not to quit the house till he should see him, and when a message to that purpose was, after long attendance, complied with, upon a warm expostulation, he received for answer, from his friend that, 'he had been of late too much engaged in affairs of consequence to attend compliments, and knew not any business he could have with him'.

'Not know my business, sir', replied the gentleman in astonishment, 'I come, sir, for my money, and shall hereafter never trouble you more with business or compliment'.

'Your money, sir! I do not understand you. Pray, sir, what money do you mean'?

'What money! the purchase money of my estate, sir, which you were to have paid me above a week ago, when I signed the deeds of sale'.

'Poor gentleman, it is so! as I was informed, and always feared. He has lost his reason, and I should not seem much better to trust myself longer with a man in his condition'.

'Take care, sir, this is too tender a point to be trifled with; you almost make me mad'!

'Ay, there it is; he is mad, poor man, and is even sensible of it himself'!

'Death, sir, do not dare to dally with me a moment longer. Answer me directly! Pay me my money; and do not really provoke me to a madness that may be fatal to us both'.

'Sir, your madness, or reason, is nothing to me; however, I will answer you directly, that I owe you no money, and none will I pay you. As for the purchase money of your estate, your parting with which I see has turned your brain, when you come to yourself, you will recollect that I paid it to you when I executed the deeds of sale; or, if you do not remember it, your own receipt, properly witnessed, will prove it for me, and I desire no more; and therefore, sir, let me have no further trouble with you, if you do not choose to take up your lodgings in Moorfields'.

'This is too much! Just Heaven! this is too much; too much for human patience to endure! or wait the law's delay for remedy! I will avenge myself, assert the cause of justice, and rid the groaning world of such a monster!' exclaimed the unhappy gentleman, now really irritated into the extremity of that frenzy which the other only wanted to impose upon him, and drawing his sword, before the wretch could call for help, or take any method of defence, he plunged it through his body.

His shrieks soon alarmed his servants, who, rushing in, found him weltering in his blood, and the madman smiling, in the absence of frantic ecstasy, over him, and incapable of attention to any other circumstance, though some of them dragged him before a magistrate, while the rest were busied in procuring relief for their master.

The madman was committed to prison, to wait the event of the wound he had given, which Heaven, to let the measure of the scrivener's iniquity be full, had directed to a part where it was not mortal.

In a word, he recovered, though not to a sense of justice or humanity, but persisting in his iniquity, which now was sharpened by a spirit of revenge for what he had endured, the first effort of his health was to have the unhappy sufferer confined in Bedlam, where he still languishes under all the horrors that attend a total loss of reason, without relief or even compassion from his base undoer, who, this very morning, as he was stepping into his chariot to come to this charity feast, spurned from him with his foot, and refused the smallest alms to the wretched wife of the ruined madman, who begs in the common streets, and was driven by misery and despair, to throw herself even at his feet, to implore relief.

I see your abhorrence rise at such a monster, but how will wonder even heighten it, when I tell you, that this oppressor has neither

child nor kinsman to inherit his wealth ; for he was himself a foundling, and reared at the public expense, without the knowledge or tenderness of a parent to soften his rugged soul ; nor would the selfishness of his heart ever permit him to marry for fear of the expense of a family ; but he is this moment meditating on some ostentatious scheme of charity, to the foundation of which he designs to dedicate the wealth which he has amassed by such villainies.

CHAPTER XXXIII

CONTINUED : THE HISTORY OF A GENERAL ALMONER—HIS METHOD OF MAKING CHARITY BEGIN AT HOME—HE CONVERTS A NOTED BAWD, BUT DISAPPOINTS HIS DESIGNS BY TOO GREAT CONFIDENCE IN HIS OWN SKILL—THE CHARACTER OF A CLERGYMAN

Move your eye to the left, and view that demure-looking picture of devotion, who sits there in silence, lifting up his eyes to Heaven, and sighing in spirit, at the festivity and sensual conversation round him.

Who, that can see no deeper than outward appearances, would not think that man sincere in his professions of religion and virtue ? whereas, in truth, he is the most abandoned contemner of both ; and deepens the dye of his blackest crimes by the most hardened hypocrisy, secretly living on the practice of those very vices, of which he professes the greatest abhorrence.

With all that consequence, which he assumes in the direction of this charity, on the merit of the largeness of his subscription to it, in reality, he is but the dispenser of other people's benefactions, into whose good opinion he so insinuates himself, by his pretended piety, that they entrust their charity to his disposal, who always pays himself for his trouble, by subducting largely from the sums confided to him. For, as real charity vaunteth not itself, they never divulge the secret, completely imposed on by his address, that never lets one half of his contributors know of the other ; by which management, as the sums he gives are always made public, for example and imitation, each thinks that he adds most liberally to his own donation. But this is not the only method by which he turns his piety to advantage. The access which the reputation of it gains him in almost every family, opens to him an opportunity of carrying on the deepest intrigues, and becoming a pander for vices both natural and unnatural, which the interest of the parties concerned makes them still keep secret. As for the former, the mystery of that trade has been in part explained already, and the latter is too horrible for explanation. I shall, therefore, pass over those scenes, and conclude my account of this extraordinary personage, with one instance of his address, in finding out and managing the weak side of superstition and vice.

In the course of his love negotiations, he had made an acquaintance with a woman who kept a public *bagnio*, or house of prostitution, which acquaintance mutual interest cemented into an intimacy.

In this most infamous trade had this woman amassed considerable wealth, the disposal of which, after her death, took up much of her thoughts, in those moments when the consequences of her debauched life forced her to think of dying.

As the secrets of their trade had removed every reserve from between them, she often used to consult him upon this head ; when he always comforted her with dissertations upon religion and virtue, stripping them of the vain incumbrances of priestcraft, and bringing them back to their genuine principles of benevolence and charity.

Frequent inculcations of this doctrine had the effect he designed ; the matron was pleased with the thought of having all the benefit of religion, without the trouble of the practice, and immediately began to exercise her donations to public charities, which, as it was not quite so much in character for her to offer in person, while she continued her profession, and she saw no necessity, nor felt inclination to quit that, she always confided to the distribution of her spiritual guide.

Nor did his success stop here ; he improved his influence on her superstition so far, that he prevailed on her to compound with Heaven for the vices of her life by bequeathing the earnings of them to its use, after her death.

For this purpose he himself drew her will, which pious application of her fortune set her conscience at ease ; and she continued her usual business to the hour of her death, which happened three years after, with such care and industry, that some instance of negligence in one of her servants administering to the pleasure of her guests, gave her such uneasiness in her last moments, that, with her dying breath, she lamented the ruin her house must come to, after she should quit the care of it, for the joys of heaven.

You must not think that his design extended no further than to prevail on her to make such a will ; he had drawn it himself, as I have told you, and took care to word it in such a manner, as he thought should give him, under the appearance of her executor and trustee, as she designed him, a real property in her wealth ; as it was immediately to come into his hands on her death, and there was no time appointed for the fulfilling her pious intentions.

But here his sagacity disappointed itself ; for, neglecting to take proper advice, or afraid of making any person privy to his designs, he had committed such material errors in the form of the will as gave room to learned counsel to set it aside in favour of the heir-at-law, her nephew, who from cleaning shoes under a gateway, was enriched with at least a third part of his aunt's fortune, which remained to him, after the costs of the suit that had been carried on for him *in formâ pauperis*, while her executor had the vexation of disappointment aggravated by a decree to pay all the cost. This was a severe stroke ; but it did not break his spirit, though it obliged him to return to his former occupation of an almoner, which you see he pursues with that attention which always insures success.

I see you sink under the pain of finding the best actions debased, by springing from such motives ; but be careful to avoid an error, fatally too prevalent, of concluding from the abuse, against the use of anything that may, in its end, be conducive to good.

These instances I have given, and I could add many more ; not to depreciate the custom of giving to public charities, which is the noblest use of wealth, but to caution you against the dangerous error of thinking that such giving alone, without reformation of life, and the active practice of the other virtues, can be acceptable in the sight of Him to whom it is offered, or efficacious to procure his favour ; and to show the absurd impiety of persisting in vice, with a vain hope of bribing Heaven with the wages of Hell.

But to relieve your pain, behold that venerable person who sits opposite to him ; the serenity of whose looks shows the happiness of his mind. Read his heart, and you will not find one discontent or sorrow there, but what humanity imprints for the distresses of his fellow-creatures, which his beneficence, his real charity, is forever finding methods to relieve, not only by pecuniary benefactions, though to these is devoted the far greater part of his ample fortune, but also by his advice, instruction, and good office, the judicious application and sincerity of which makes them very rarely fail of success. He is a real supporter of charity in its most extensive sense ; his example giving a sanction, a seal of virtue, to everything he appears in, which puts wicked wit out of countenance, and stops the tongue of calumny ; and is (even were it alone), sufficient to counterbalance all the instances which could be brought against it. His long life, which has been extended by Heaven, as a blessing to mankind, has been a constant illustration of the religion he teaches ; not one instance of his actions ever contradicting his profession, as near as human weakness can act up to divine perfection.

Such is this clergyman ! such should all clergymen be, to preserve the purity, the dignity of a function, whose rules are drawn from perfection, and calculated to prepare the human for a participation of the divine nature ; to accomplish which greatest end, all profession, not enforced by practice, must be ineffectual.

To mention any one instance of his good works would be doing injustice to the rest, and contradicting the desire of his heart, which next to doing good, is to conceal what he does, his actions being so far from ostentation, that to Heaven only, and the parties themselves, are they revealed ; nor to these even is the hand that reaches them the blessing always known.

CHAPTER XXXIV

CONTINUED : THE HISTORY OF A BEAR-LEADER—HIS METHOD OF MAKING HIS PUPIL'S MASTERS EARN THEIR MONEY—THE GENERAL CONSEQUENCE OF CLOSE FRIENDSHIPS BETWEEN THE DIFFERENT SEXES—HE MODESTLY OFFERS HIS PUPIL'S MOTHER A NUT ALMOST TOO HARD FOR HER LIQUORISH TOOTH ; BUT SHE SWALLOWS IT WHOLE TO SAVE THE TROUBLE OF MUMBLING, AND MEETS A JUST RETURN FOR HER UNTIMELY PASSION

OPPOSITE to him, you see a man, whose rich dress and supercilious carriage give him the appearance of a superiority to all the rest of

the company ; but such artifices impose only upon the ignorant and vulgar : to a judicious eye they aggravate the defects they are meant to disguise ; and the low-bred, avaricious wretch appears doubly contemptible, through the unnatural veil of pride and munificence.

There is something so whimsically singular in the story of this person, that I will gratify your curiosity with a short sketch of it.

He was born in the lowest class of the people, in a poor village, in one of the most remote parts of the kingdom ; but the delicacy of his constitution making him unfit for a life of labour, the common lot of his condition, his poor parents denied themselves almost the necessaries of life to send him to school, to qualify him for some employment better suited to his natural imbecility. The master of the school, who was a person of discernment and good nature, soon perceived that the weakness of his body was amply made up by the abilities of his mind, and took a pleasure in giving instruction which he saw received with advantage. Nor did he stop here ; but, when his pupil had made the ordinary progress of the school, he used the persuasive argument of teaching him for nothing, and supplying him with books at his own expense, to prevail upon his parents to let him pursue his studies.

When he had advanced, by this assistance, considerably beyond the usual boundaries of school education, being not only critically skilled in the learned languages, but also well grounded in the principles of the liberal sciences, his kind master crowned the benefits he had conferred upon him by recommending him warmly to a widow lady, of large fortune, to educate her only son, whom female fondness would not permit her to trust out of her sight at a public school.

In this employment he behaved himself with such circumspection and care (for the weakness of his constitution saved him from all danger of excess, and the horrors of returning to his former poverty and distress, fixed his attention, invariably, to every possible means of advancing his fortune), that he won the confidence of his pupil's mother so far, that she ventured to send her darling son to the university in his care ; and when he had finished his studies there with credit, gave him a genteel stipend, to accompany him in his travels to the different courts of Europe, to complete an education so happily begun, and enable him to make a figure in life, suitable to the affluence of his fortune.

The unbounded confidence with which this trust was committed to him, gave him sufficient opportunities of gratifying the ruling passions of his heart, vanity and avarice, as it enabled him to secrete to his own use, as much as he pleased of his pupil's fortune, satisfied that his accounts would never be examined ; and to acquire, late as it was, the ornamental parts of education, which his original poverty, and the necessary gravity of his literary life and employment had precluded him from.

Accordingly, as soon as he arrived in Paris, the first place where he designed to make any delay, he suffered himself to be prevailed upon by his pupil, to remit something of the strictness of his authority, and, seemingly winked at his plunging into all the levities

and excesses of unguarded youth, that he might have the more convenient opportunity for executing his own schemes. Thus, while his abused charge threw away the time he ought to have spent in receiving profitable information and improvement, in idle expense and vicious pleasures, the prudent tutor took the advantage of his absence to attend the masters he retained for him, and learnt dancing, fencing, music, and all the other accomplishments of polite education—a conduct which he carefully observed in all the different stages of their travels. But still his labour, as you see, was for the most part in vain, the rust of his mean original being too strongly confirmed, to be worn off by so late application, so that his awkward affectation only makes defects, which would otherwise have passed unnoticed, become more visible, and exposes him to contempt and ridicule.

But, eager as he was in these favourite pursuits, he did not let them divert his attention from the main point, of continuing to cultivate the good opinion and confidence of his pupil's mother, to whom he constantly wrote in such a strain of piety, and gave such pleasing accounts of her son's conduct, expatiating on his good qualities, and palliating his failings, with the tender titles of youthful levity, and the frailty of nature (for fear she should receive information of his excesses from any other person) that she thought herself happy in having placed him under a man of such virtue and goodness; her opinion of which was not a little heightened by the care he took of his parents, to whom he constantly remitted, through her hands, such a portion of his stipend as enabled them to live with comfort; and with his former master he kept up a regular correspondence, informing him of everything he saw in his travels that he thought would be agreeable and entertaining to him, and expressing his gratitude for the friendship which had advanced him so happily in life.

When his pupil had finished his travels in this manner, they returned home, where the fond mother received them with the highest joy, her esteem for the tutor almost equalled her love for her son. But this natural affection did not long maintain the pre-eminence! Her established opinion of the understanding, learning, and virtue of the former, levelled the height from which difference of condition had made her look down upon him before, and she admitted him into all the intimacy of friendship. There is nothing more deceitful than connections of this kind between the different sexes. Let them be formed with whatever resolution they will, at first, Nature will insensibly take the alarm, and force the execution of her most powerful laws.

This intimacy had not been long cultivated before the lady began to see perfections in her new friend, which she had never perceived before, and to feel a pleasure in his conversation which her heart had long been a stranger to. She knew not how it was, but nothing pleased her except what he said or did; even her fondness for her son began to cool, and her eyes to open to faults in him which she had always been blind to before, though he had never taken any pains to conceal them from her. This did not escape the penetration of her friend a moment, nor was his judgment at a loss how

to improve it to the best advantage. He immediately began to assume a timid tenderness in his looks and manner, and took every occasion of displaying the genteel accomplishments he had acquired in his travels, while her unhappy son, as if he had entered into the scheme against himself, seldom came near her, and when he did, behaved with a careless indifference, scarce short of rudeness and insult.

Such a contrast was too striking to pass unnoticed ; nor did her friend fail to aggravate the impressions of it by doubling his assiduity and tender complaisance, whenever his former pupil withdrew, and lamenting the unhappy turn he had taken in terms of the deepest concern, but without ever offering a word in his excuse.

This subtle conduct had the desired effect ; the love of the mother was entirely diverted from her son to her friend ; and as the foolish fondness of her deceased husband had left much the greater part of his large fortune in her power, the improvement of this change was an object worthy of his highest attention. But still the difficulty upon both was, how to open the affair ; for, powerful as the different motives that urged them to bring it to a conclusion were, a sense of the impropriety of such an action, made them equally at a loss how to mention it.

But here again the evil genius of the son prevailed, and he did that for them which they knew not how to do themselves. For some of his friends observing the intimacy between his mother and his former tutor, desired him to be upon his guard, and strive to prevent the consequences of it, by a change in his behaviour to her. Such prudent advice, if properly followed, might probably have had effect. But instead of that, he flew immediately to his mother, and indiscreetly charged her with a design of betraying the confidence of his father, and ruining him, to gratify a ridiculous passion for a mean, unworthy object ; and then turning to him, who happened to be present, he told him fiercely, that, if he did not that instant quit his mother's house, he would treat him as the villany of such a design deserved, in the next place he should ever meet him ; and so flung out of the room in the highest rage, leaving them staring at each other, and almost petrified with astonishment.

But a few moments restored them to themselves. The affair was now revealed, and so the greatest difficulty over. 'I wish' said the tutor, as if he spoke to his former pupil, though he took care to wait till he heard him out of the house, 'I wish no other person beside me had reason to fear your resentment ; or that I had no other obstacle but that, to prevent the happiness my heart languishes for'. And then turning to the lady, as if he did not know that she had heard what he had said : 'I am most unhappy, madam', proceeded he, 'to find myself the cause of your being treated in this manner, and shall immediately withdraw to prevent a repetition of it ; as for me, since I am to lose the happiness of your conversation, it matters not what becomes of me'. Saying which, he made her a most respectful bow, and with a look of the highest tenderness and grief, seemed to prepare to leave the room.

'Hold, sir'! exclaimed the lady, the warmth of whose resentment at her son's behaviour made her the more readily melt at the distress of her lover. 'Hold, sir! what are you going to do? Will you desert me in this danger and distress'? And then softening her voice and looks into the greatest tenderness, 'I thought', continued she, 'I should never want a protector while my friend lived'.

'Nor shall you, madam', answered he, with an appearance of warmth that banished all reserve. 'My life shall protect you from every danger and affront. But, oh, that I had a tie to justify such an attachment to the world, which else will censure it severely'. And then, taking her hand, he bent his knee, and pressed it to his lips.

Such an act of gallantry was not to be resisted in the condition she was then in. She bent forward to meet him, and laying her head upon his bosom as he arose: 'Let it be justified', she murmured in a broken, faltering accent, 'by every sacred tie of love and truth; of honour and religion'.

This was all he wanted. He seized her in his arms, and pressing her to his breast, sealed the contract on her trembling, withered lips.

The impatient love-sick fair now thought every obstacle to her wishes removed, and therefore distantly proposed sending for a priest directly to tie the sacred knot and prevent any designs her undutiful son might form to disappoint her happiness. But her prudent lover was in no such haste! He now had her secure beyond danger of retreating; but as her person was not the only object of his desires, he wisely judged it best to refrain a few moments from the possession of that to secure the more solid enjoyment of her fortune; as he was not certain but this fit of fondness might wear off, and her natural affection for her son return, when her untimely passion should be gratified. He, therefore, resolved to improve her present disposition beyond the danger of repentance, and sent for the priest directly, passing the intermediate moments till his arrival, in the most passionate, endearing dalliance.

But, just as the blushing, bashful bride was going to approach the altar, he stopped short, as if upon a sudden thought, and turning to her: 'This, madam, secures our present happiness', said he; 'but how are you to be revenged upon your base, ungrateful son? What certainty have I that a return of your former fondness for him may not sacrifice me to his implacable resentment? Some settlement should first be made; and then anxiety and fear won't damp the ardour of our joys'.

'I understand you not'! answered she, in confusion and astonishment. 'What settlement can you mean? Do I not give you the possession of my fortune with myself'?

'True, madam', replied he; 'you do! And could I be sure of having them for ever, I should be satisfied. But death may rob me of you, and then your fortune will descend to your ungracious son, while I am thrown upon the world, destitute of every means of self-defence and support'.

'And can you doubt my love'? added she, not a little surprised and startled at his caution.

'I doubt it not! nor would I doubt it!' returned he; 'and therefore will remove all room for doubt'.

'What must I settle then'? said she. 'How much of my fortune will remove your fears, and satisfy your wishes? Here, take this paper, and write down your terms'.

'That is soon done', said he, and taking the paper, directly wrote the word ALL, and reached it to her.

It is not easy to describe her astonishment and indignation at the assurance and unreasonableness of such a demand. 'What! ALL!' said she, with evident emotion; 'will no less do? Is nothing to be left to my disposal? This is too hard'.

The lover instantly perceived his ticklish situation. However, he was resolved to try the utmost, assured that even if her resolution held, he was in no danger of losing her quite. 'Madam', said he, throwing his arms around her, and embracing her tenderly; 'I give you myself, and all I have; and I expect the like return. I pretend not to compare the value of the gifts, but love is delicate, and will bear no abatement'.

If the passions of youth are impetuous, those of old age are silly. The ardour of this address, with shame of being refused upon any account thus in the very crisis of her hopes, made her comply, and she betrayed the confidence of her husband, and signed away the inheritance of her child to gratify a preposterous, untimely, ridiculous love.

The return she met with was just! Her new husband, now all his schemes were accomplished, scorned to preserve even the decency of appearance, but threw off the mask directly, and treated her with such indignity and contempt, that she broke from him in despair, in the first week of her marriage, and threw herself upon the mercy of her basely ruined son; whose resentment was not proof to such a trial, but, yielding to filial piety, he shared with her the poor pittance which he happily had independent of her, till she sunk under the weight of misfortune, shame, and remorse.

Nor did her husband treat his first benefactor, or his parents better. With the former he directly dropped all correspondence; and, giving the latter an allowance of twenty pounds a year, just to keep them from starving, he positively forbid their ever letting him hear from them more, on the penalty of forfeiting that, and every other instance of his favour.

Far from being satisfied with the success of his villany, or enjoying the fortune he had so basely obtained, his whole life has been spent, as you see, in anxious attempts to hide the meanness of his original under the splendour of his appearance; and the iniquity by which he acquired his wealth, by vain ostentation of charity and munificence.

CHAPTER XXXV

CONTINUED : SOME REFLECTIONS THAT MAY APPEAR IMPERTINENT TO MANY, AND UNPROFITABLE TO MORE, BUT STILL ARE NEITHER IMPROPER NOR UNJUST—THE HISTORY OF AN HONEST ATTORNEY—MORE WONDERS !—THE WAY OF THE WORLD REVERSED : RIGHT TRIUMPHANT OVER MIGHT ; AND GRATITUDE SHOWN IN HIGH LIFE

MOVE your eyes towards the lower end of the table, and behold that person whose aspect and appearance command veneration and esteem. He was bred in a profession, the very name of which is become a reproach, from the abuse of unworthy professors. Nor can it be otherwise, while every low-bred person, who is just able to give a son the first rudiments of education, and ambitious of seeing him in the character of a gentleman, is admitted to breed him an attorney ; and as soon as he has served a time, as to the most illiberal mechanic trade, to turn him loose upon the world, to live by the practice of the very crimes and iniquities which his profession was originally instituted to suppress, without any fortune to save him from the necessity of having recourse to such base means ; and without being instructed in the principles of probity and virtue, to support him against the temptations of the many frauds and villainies which his business brings him to the knowledge of. Nay, so far from giving any attention to this indispensable duty, of forming the mind by proper instruction, such is the perverseness of man, that if a child betrays an early propensity to chicanery and fraud, by setting his play-fellows together by the ears, and cozening them of their toys, he is immediately marked for this profession, and, instead of being corrected for such a disposition, and having it nipped in the bud, is encouraged in it, by hearing it made the omen and ground of his future success in life, till it is confirmed beyond the sense of shame and remorse, and becomes the ruling principle of his life. The conduct, consequent to such education and principles, has brought the profession into so great disrepute, that scarce any person of character or fortune will breed a son to it ; by which means the evil is daily aggravated more and more, and threatens to become absolutely irremediable at last. For, at present, so many are the opportunities that tempt to iniquity in the practice, and so universal the reproach affixed to the very name of an attorney, that all regard to reputation, that powerful preservative of virtue, seems to be in vain, and it requires an uncommon rectitude of heart to support the conflict ; but that there are some who are equal to this trial, and that the fault is not in the profession, but in the abuse of it, the person before us is an eminent instance.

A nobleman, who died some time since without legitimate issue, thought proper to bequeath, not only his own great acquisitions, but also the immense possessions of his ancestors, to a spurious son, without ever considering whether there might not possibly remain some distant branches of his family, capable of inheriting

what they must have a just and legal title to, though the direct line failed in himself; accordingly the heir took possession of his adventitious fortune, and, as wealth hides every defect, entered into alliance, and made connections with, persons of the most exalted rank, whose friendship and interest, supported by the immense riches he possessed, seemed to hold every inquiry into the justice of his title to them, in defiance.

But a generous heart is not easily terrified in a just cause: the person before us, by his knowledge in his profession, and the uprightness of his practice, had acquired a fortune and established a character that placed him above the reach of slander and the frown of power. He had been born under the patronage of this nobleman's house, and in the course of his business had happened to get some insight into the settlements of his family, by which he found that it was not in his power to alienate the acquisitions of his illustrious ancestors and give them to a stranger to their blood while any of their descendants were in being. Such an act of injustice, therefore, raised the indignation and pity of his honest, generous heart, and he resolved to set it aside, notwithstanding the trouble and expense that must necessarily attend such an attempt.

The greatest discouragement to his undertaking was the difficulty of finding out and ascertaining the real heir, for the family was apparently extinct. But upon examining into the many alliances it had formerly made, which his known attachment gave him an easy opportunity of doing, he found that some generations before, a daughter had been married to a nobleman of a neighbouring dependent kingdom; the issue of which marriage, if any remained, was the true and only representative of this noble house.

Having made this discovery, he went directly over to that kingdom, where, after a long and painful search, he had the mortification to find that the family was reduced, by the revolutions of government and the calamity of the times, to two poor, low-bred, illiterate women, who had been married to mechanics of the meanest rank, and, being left widows, and without children, now strove to procure a wretched subsistence by joining their poor stocks to keep a chandler's shop, in a city in the remotest part of the kingdom.

So melancholy an instance of the instability of human grandeur only raised his compassion, and confirmed his resolution to vindicate the blood of the illustrious patrons of his family from such injustice and disgrace. Accordingly, he instantly relieved their immediate distresses, and, taking all the proper methods for ascertaining their descent, brought them over to this kingdom, lodged them in his own house, and treated them with the respect due to their noble blood and better hopes.

As soon as everything was prepared for the great attempt, he regularly demanded a restitution of their right from the unjust possessor, and, upon his expected refusal, instituted a suit at law for the recovery of it, in the prosecution of which neither difficulties nor dangers, neither threats nor promises, could slacken his ardour till he had obtained the justice he demanded for them. A detail of the proceedings, in such an affair, must be distressing to any

humane heart, It is sufficient to say that every method which the art of man could invent to impose upon judgment and defeat justice was exerted against him for several years, in hopes of exhausting his fortune, and wearing out the lives of his injured clients (the elder of whom actually did die during the suit), and so disappointing his hopes. But justice at length prevailed, and he recovered for them the inheritance of their ancestors, leaving their antagonist only the immediate acquisitions of his reputed father, which, large as they are, he eagerly labours to increase by every artifice of sordid avarice.

As for the heiress, the exalted gratitude she showed proved her noble blood. As soon as she had executed all the forms of law necessary to give her an absolute power over her fortune, and justly paid the expense, and rewarded the trouble of recovering it, as every branch of her family was extinct, she thought it but justice to settle her great fortune upon the generous recoverer of it. Nor was she content with leaving it to him when she could no longer make use of it herself, but, obliging him to quit the business of his profession, she gave the greater part of it into his immediate possession, and, retiring to one of the principal seats upon her estate, spent the remainder of her life in happiness and esteem: the goodness of her heart, and the true nobleness of her soul drowning her want of early education in the superior radiance of innate virtue.

The absolute possession of her entire fortune, which her death gave him much sooner than he wished, has made no alteration in the conduct of this worthy person, who invariably pursues the dictates of justice and benevolence in all his actions, making his wealth a blessing to all, whose wants and virtues mark them as objects worthy of his regard and assistance.

CHAPTER XXXVI

CONTINUED: THE HAPPY FRUITS OF UNEQUAL MARRIAGES—A SHORT WAY TO PAY LONG DEBTS—THE PLEASURES OF POLITE LIFE—A BOLD STROKE OF FEMALE GENIUS TRIUMPHANT OVER LAW AND RELIGION—AN UNLUCKY MISTAKE BRINGS AN IMPROPER VISITOR INTO TOO GENTEEL COMPANY

IMMEDIATELY below him, you see one of those instances of inconsistency which diversify the motley character of man. In the deep sunk lines of his face you may read learning and intense thought, as the placid serenity of his eye shows a heart warmed with piety and moral virtue; what pity that a listless indolence of mind throws a shade over so bright a character, and submission to the capricious yoke of female tyranny make him passively guilty of the very follies and vices most immediately opposite to his own virtue and good sense!

The pious care of a good father had so improved the eminent abilities with which nature had blessed this gentleman, by the most

judicious education, that the promise of his youth gave hopes of his being an ornament and advantage to his age and country; but one indiscreet action overcast this pleasing prospect; and in its consequences has brought him to be the insignificant thing you see.

This was a marriage of mere inclination, with a person who had neither fortune, beauty, nor merit, to justify his choice; and who yet has taken the unjustifiable advantage of this indolence of his temper to usurp as absolute an authority over him as if she possessed them all in the most eminent degree, and conferred upon him the benefit and obligation she herself received.

This makes his life one scene of the most irreconcilable inconsistency, between the wisdom and virtue of the very few actions in which he is admitted to follow the dictates of his own judgment, and the follies and vices into which she wantonly leads him every moment of his life. When I say vices, I mean those of dissipation, luxury, and extravagance, which, though the most injurious to society, and productive of the worst consequences to particulars, are yet too often looked upon in another light, and thought harmless, at least, if not even commendable exertions of greatness and generosity of spirit, and the proper use of affluence of fortune; for, not content with the rational enjoyment of the fortune to which he raised her, in her proper sphere, she has assumed the absolute disposal of the whole, which she dissipates in every kind of fashionable folly and profusion, so as utterly to disable him from exerting the natural generosity and benevolence of his heart in the extent and manner suited to his apparent wealth, and too often from discharging the moral obligations of honesty, in the payment of his just and necessary debts.

Such an ungrateful abuse of obligation and influence may appear strange to you, who have been so little conversant in the ways of man; but, to a more extended view of life, constant observation shows that conferring a great benefit actually extinguishes gratitude, instead of raising it higher, and that the meaner the hands into which power is entrusted, the more exorbitant and tyrannical the use they make of it. Whether this arises from a consciousness of inability to pay so great a debt, and a consequent desire to cancel it by an absolute breach, that may, at the same time, also support the debtor's pride, and seem to hide the obligation, by an implied disavowal in the former case, and from a desire of returning the tyranny felt before in the latter, would be a curious and not unprofitable disquisition, but shall be reserved to another place, where the occasion will illustrate it more forcibly; and only the justice of the observation, as to the present case in particular, proved by a few, out of innumerable instances of the same kind.

Of all the methods of dissipating wealth, and precipitating ruin, the most speedy and effectual is gaming. The present prevalence of the passion for this vice (for to call it by any other name would be a false tenderness) among all ranks and sexes has been already often observed, as it is the characteristic of the times. However, to soften the horror, with which the barefaced practice of it, by the fairer sex must strike every rational mind, it is blended with matters of mere amusement, and represented only as an innocent

method of relieving conversation when a number of persons meet in public company, which must otherwise languish and grow tiresome, or else fall upon improper subjects. This ingenious expedient has given rise to those meetings at the houses of the greatest fashion, which, from the noise, bustle, and confusion inseparable from such crowds, are emphatically called routs. In these, the mistress of the house always presides, and, consequently, attendance at them is looked upon as a compliment peculiar to her, and in which her husband has no share. For this reason, the greater the crowd collected the more important the entertainer appears, and therefore no pains or expense is spared in inducing them to attend.

From the character already given of the wife of this gentleman, it may be concluded that she exerted all her efforts to make a figure by the frequency and greatness of her own routs, and by the profusion with which she gamed away her money at those of others. However, the mode was become so universal and so eagerly pursued that she soon found it was impossible for her to distinguish herself in the manner she desired if she could not strike out some new way. But in this she was not long at a loss; the boldness of her genius prompted her to try an expedient which no one before her had dared to venture upon.

This was to fix her routs on the day set apart, by laws human and divine, for the duties of religion; and which till then had been held sacred to these alone, from every kind of business and recreation. So bold a stroke necessarily attracted the notice of the public, and the remissness of the legislature overlooking it, the crowds who, from an insensibility to those duties, were utterly at a loss how to get rid of so much time, gladly embraced such an opportunity, and flocked to her in numbers that amply satisfied her ambition. Such success and impunity soon made her example imitated; but, as she had led the way, the merit of that secured her from being supplanted by any rival, and having her company decoyed from her.

The circumstances of her husband's birth, and the principles in which he had been educated, made him at first look upon such an insult upon religion with the strongest horror; but she made light of his scruples, and overruled all his objections with such an absolute authority, that, for the sake of peace, he was obliged to submit, and join in what he dared not contradict, till he has at length forfeited the acquaintance of every serious, rational, and religious person.

He was at first greatly affected at this falling off, and much distressed to think what it could proceed from, as he was not sensible of any deviation, in his own sentiments, from the principles which had made his acquaintance sought by every man of sense and virtue; but an accident soon opened his eyes to the absurdity of his situation.

The acquaintance on which he justly set the greatest value, was with a prelate of distinguished merit and virtue, an intimate friend of his deceased father. With him he spent the happiest hours of his life; and, in the wisdom and piety of his conversation, found relief for the sick heart, from the follies and riotous excesses which he was a slave to at home. Though he always met with the most

benevolent and friendly reception from this worthy person, yet the coolness with which he found himself treated by some others, made his apprehension so ready to take alarm, that, upon his grace not returning a visit or two with the exactest punctuality, either from sickness or some necessary engagement, he could not help expressing his uneasiness with such warmth, when he went to see him next, that his grace, who, though he despised ceremony, would not give pain or offence to any person, especially one for whom he had so sincere an esteem, accounted for his late omission, by giving the real reason of it, and told him that he would do himself the pleasure of visiting him any day when he might be sure of finding him at home.

The gentleman answered that if his grace would appoint any day agreeable and convenient to him, he would gladly break through all engagements, and attend to receive him. This was a strain of complaisance which the prelate would not agree to, but insisted upon knowing what day he was usually at home, when he would call upon him in a friendly manner without putting him to the trouble of waiting for him in particular.

The affectionate, sincere manner in which this was said, was so pleasing to the gentleman, that it put him entirely off his guard, and he answered eagerly, and without ever considering that the next day was Sunday, when he was always at home. This was strictly true; he was always at home on that day because it was his lady's day for seeing company; if he had in the least reflected on which, he would never have appointed his grace to come, as he was sensible that he should for ever forfeit his acquaintance by it.

Though that was a day which the prelate dedicated to employments of a very different nature from paying complimentary visits, there was something in the earnestness of the manner in which the gentleman appointed it, that made him apprehend he had some secret uneasiness upon his mind which he wanted to communicate, for assistance or advice; wherefore he complied without hesitation; nor did the other recollect the impropriety of what he had done till it was too late to be remedied. For his grace going the next evening, as he had promised, was not a little surprised to find a crowd of coaches before the door, for he had never heard of, nor suspected the scene that was acting; but, however, being informed that his friend was at home, he thought it best to proceed, and so alighting from his chariot, was shown up into a room where there was a mixed multitude seriously engaged at cards!

The very mention of such a scene would have struck him with horror; judge then what his sentiments must be at the sight; and particularly to be betrayed to it, as he imagined, on purpose to insult him, by a man whom he esteemed, and whose father he had sincerely loved.

As soon as he had recovered himself from his astonishment, he directly turned about and departed, just as he was perceived by the master of the house, whose confusion at his own indiscretion, in appointing such a time, which he instantly recollected, is not to be described. He started from his chair, and exclaiming, 'Good God! what have I done?'—would have followed him directly,

if his lady, with whom he was playing, and who was just then dealing, had not stopped him and insisted on knowing what was the matter.

‘Good God ! madam,’ said he in the utmost confusion and distress ; ‘did not you see his grace come to the door this moment ? I went to pay him a visit yesterday, and unfortunately engaged him to return it this evening without ever considering that it was *your night*’.

‘And is that all ?’ answered she, who had gone on with her deal, and just turned up an ace ; ‘then pray sit still and play your cards ; you see clubs are trumps ! His grace may come at a proper time if he pleases’.

Great as the husband’s distress was, the accent with which these words were spoken nailed him to the chair, so that he was forced to let his grace go home, and remain that night in an opinion so painful and injurious to him. But he laid not his head to rest till he had written his grace a letter of apology for his mistake, which he candidly acknowledged, and conjured him to forgive, in the most earnest manner.

The imaginary insult of being trepanned into such a scene, had at first provoked his grace beyond the usual evenness of his temper ; but he had had time to cool before he received the letter (for he never lay down in anger, nor arose but in charity with all mankind), and, reading it dispassionately, was so moved at the situation into which he found his friend fallen, that all thoughts of personal resentment vanished, and he answered it with the greatest humanity and tenderness, drawing the folly and danger of such a complaisance in its proper strength, and urging his return to the practice of his own principles, with every argument of reason, virtue, and religion, promising to renew his acquaintance with the same, or greater intimacy than before, as soon as he should desist from such an impious profanation and abuse of a day made sacred to piety and devotion by every civil and religious law : till he should do which, it was inconsistent with his character and principles to keep up any further intercourse with a person in such circumstances.

The justice of this reasoning was acknowledged by the person to whom it was addressed, and the loss which followed the neglect of it, severely felt, but he wanted resolution to resume the authority that was necessary for putting it in execution, and so tamely submits, against his better judgment, to all the impositions of a tyranny which was first erected upon his folly, and still subsists by his indolence.

CHAPTER XXXVII

CONTINUED : CONFUSION WORSE CONFOUNDED, ROUT ON ROUT :
THE TRANSFORMATION OF A CONSTABLE INTO A DEVIL INTRODUCES
A STORY OF THE DEVIL'S DANCING IN MASQUERADE, AND FRIGHTENS
A POLITE ASSEMBLY INTO A FIT OF DEVOTION, WHICH LASTS A
WHOLE NIGHT WITH MOST OF THEM—A GLIMPSE OF THE COURAGE
OF A MODERN MAN OF HONOUR

BUT, though such meetings as these are held in apparent defiance of the laws, you must not imagine that those who go to them are insensible of the impropriety, or unapprehensive of the danger of such a conduct. By danger, I mean the immediate one from the secular power, for that of the Divine wrath they never gave themselves the trouble of thinking about.

Of this a remarkable instance happened at this place, not very long after the affair of his grace. A gentleman of humour, as well as reason, who was intimate in this gentleman's family, and had often strove in vain to convince his lady of the disagreeable consequences that might attend such an avowed disregard to decency at least, resolved to take another method, and try what effect ridicule and shame might have, where every argument from reason had failed.

Accordingly, one night, in the midst of the riot, he contrived to have it whispered in the company, that a neighbouring constable, remarkable for punishing every offence for which he did not receive a proper composition, intended to come with the church-wardens and all the parish officers at his heels and interrupt their diversion ; and dressing himself exactly like the constable, whom he nearly resembled in size and figure, and buckling on a wooden leg like him, he stalks among them just as the servant announced his coming by the name of the constable whom he personated.

It is impossible to describe the astonishment and confusion of the whole company at such an attack. Though there were several present whose rank placed them above his authority, surprise and consciousness of their guilt so far deprived them of all resolution and presence of mind, that they joined in the just fear of the rest and attempted to make an ignominious escape with them. The candles were all instantly put out, the windows were broken open, and stars and ribbons were seen among the crowd that leaped into the court, and ran through the streets, without regarding dirt or cold, while the more timorous sex stood petrified with fear, uncertain which to face, shame or danger.

In the meantime, the pretended constable took the advantage to slip off his wooden leg, tie-wig, and long cloak, just as the servants had taken the alarm, and come in to see what was the matter, and so had an opportunity of enjoying the whole scene, without the danger of being suspected for the author of it.

The first question which the lady of the house, whose active spirit first recovered itself, asked, was, what was become of the constable,

and who let him in ? At the mention of a constable, the servants all started, as not one of them knew anything of him ; and the very servant, who had announced his entrance, declared he had never heard a word of him, for, as he had not told his office, not one of them had the least notion of such a person's presuming to come among them. But upon telling his name, and describing his appearance, their surprise was changed the other way ; they all remembered his entrance, but every one of them positively insisted that he had not gone back ; so that the question now was, what could have possibly become of him ? as his leaping out of the window, as the others had gallantly done, was neither necessary, nor indeed possible for him to do, maimed as he was.

While they were forming sagacious conjectures on so strange and unaccountable an affair, the metamorphosed constable, who had joined in the conversation, said to an old lady, who seemed more strongly affected than any other of the company, that the oddness of this affair put him in mind of one, not very unlike it in many circumstances, which he had read in accounts of good authority to have happened in France during the minority of Louis XIV.

This raised the curiosity of all who heard him, who immediately crowded round him, and desired him to tell it. At first he seemed rather unwilling, and very gravely prefaced his story with declaring, that for his part he believed nothing of the matter, though he owned it was related by writers of undoubted veracity, and attested in a manner almost beyond any fact he had ever read in history. Having thus prepared them for something extraordinary, he proceeded thus : ' You know, madam ', addressing himself to the old lady, to whom he had first mentioned it, and who he knew plumed herself not a little upon her knowledge in secret history, everything that bore the name of which she had read, and implicitly believed every word of ; ' that, in the minority of Louis the Great, Mazarine, who governed the kingdom, took every method of diverting the attention of the young monarch from state affairs, by all kinds of pleasurable entertainment that could be devised '.

' True, sir ', answered the old lady, who could not restrain her desire of showing her knowledge ; ' and that is said to have influenced the conduct of his future life, in that expensive pomp and vain magnificence, which attracted the admiration of foreigners, while it exhausted and ruined his subjects. ' Hem ! hem ! but I beg pardon, sir, pray don't let me interrupt you '.

' As this Mazarine was an Italian, you know, madam ', continued he, to which she assented with a nod, as she constantly did, ' it was natural for him to have a fondness for the entertainments of his own country, he therefore introduced the Italian opera into France. The first time it was presented, one of the principal parts of the entertainment consisted of a comic dance that was performed by six of the nimblest caperers in all Italy. At first they went on expertly, and with great applause ; but immediately found themselves at a loss, and were unable to proceed any further, being put out by the intrusion of a strange dancer, who came among them nobody could tell how, and disconcerted the entire scheme of their dance, which had been calculated only for their own number.

This at length threw them into such confusion, that they were obliged to stand still! when the manager of the entertainment coming to them to see what was the matter, perceived the cause of their confusion, and obliged them all to unmask (for they were dressed exactly alike and wore masks) that he might detect and seize the impertinent intruder, when, to his, and to the utter astonishment of every one present, he vanished as unaccountably as he had come, though the eyes of the whole house were upon him, and there appeared to be no more than the original number, and the same persons who began the dance. I believe, madam, you may recollect the other circumstances of the story, which I do not choose to mention on this occasion; they are told in the secret memoirs of Cardinal Mazarine'.

'I do, sir', returned she, with great emotion, 'remember something of it. But really——'

'Dear madam', interrupted another, whose curiosity was raised too high to bear a moment's delay, 'pray let the gentleman proceed! When he has ended, if he omits anything, you may then inform us further.—Pray, sir, do proceed'.

'Why, really, madam', continued he, under some apparent confusion; 'I am at a loss how to act, and had much rather be excused; however, I must beg leave to observe, that for my own part, I do not believe a single syllable of the stories of ghosts and apparitions, and devils, and such-like stuff that ever was told, though this story, in particular, is told in a manner, and confirmed with circumstances not easily to be contradicted'.

This solemn preface raised the curiosity of them all to a torture, and alarmed apprehensions that would not admit of a moment's suspense. 'Dear sir, pray proceed', echoed from an hundred mouths at once, as they pressed closer to him.

The gentleman bowed and continued: 'The whole company was now thrown into a confusion as great as that of the dancers: they had all reckoned a seventh person, and the connoisseurs in particular had observed that one of them had shown greater agility, and cut higher than any one they had ever seen before, and indeed than they thought it possible for any human person to do. This hint alarmed the whole house, and it was immediately concluded that the devil had maliciously joined in the dance on purpose to spoil their sport; an opinion, which one or two unlucky circumstances seemed to give weight to, which were, that all the dancers had been dressed like devils, the opera being *The Fall of Man*, and the dance exhibited, as a triumph of the devils upon the occasion, that it was acted on a Sunday evening. Trifling as these circumstances really were, they threw the whole audience into a consternation; some directly fancied the candles burnt blue, others that the place smelt strongly of sulphur; and one more impudently foolish than all the rest, insisted that he had observed the cloven foot; but what was most surprising of all, the cardinal, who could not be suspected of superstition, was so affected by it, that he ordered the house to be dismissed directly, and that opera never to be performed again, nor any other on a Sunday, which was observed during his life, and for some time after'.

It is impossible for words to describe the situation of the company at the conclusion of this story. At the mention of the candles burning blue, all turned their eyes about, and fancied the same; as to their smelling sulphur, it was more than imagination—the pretended constable having taken an opportunity, while they were all in confusion, to throw, unperceived, a composition which he had brought with him on purpose, into the fire, which had filled the room with a most sulphurous smell—and more than one of the company declared they thought they saw a cloven foot, or something very like it, fly out of the window.

The scene was now changed to an appearance really frightful. Every lengthened visage was as pale as death, every haggard eye staring in wild affright. The old lady to whom the tale had been particularly addressed, confirmed every syllable of it, and added many circumstances from secret histories of her own immediate invention: and every one present had some similar story to tell in support of it, till they at length terrified one another to that degree that they were afraid to look around, or even raise their voices to bid their servants prepare for their departure.

The gentleman, pleased at the success of his artifice, resolved to improve it to the utmost, and take advantage of their present situation to work them up to some action that should make them ashamed, at least, ever to be guilty of the like profanation of that sacred day again: ‘Defend us, Heaven!’ exclaimed he, fixing his eyes with horror on one of the windows. What can that be?’

This completed the terror; they all believed the devil was returning to destroy them, for the boldest of them all had not the spirit to turn their eyes to see what he looked at, and joined most devoutly in his ejaculation to Heaven for defence.

He saw this was the proper moment for what he intended, and so, dropping suddenly upon his knees, in which they all followed his example, he repeated aloud the confession in the service of the Church, adding, with particular emphasis, to the sins of commission, this of breaking the Sabbath, and to those of omission, the neglect of the duties of religion, to which it was devoted; and concluded with a solemn vow, never to be guilty of either again, if Heaven would remit its wrath and spare them for the present.

All the while he had been performing this ceremony, he had kept his eyes fixed on the window, and at the end of it, exclaimed in a rapture: ‘Our vows are heard! it vanishes! the danger’s over!’ Upon which he arose, as did they all, and fell into the most serious and devout conversation, upon so signal an instance of divine favour and mercy, while their coaches and chairs were getting ready to carry them home, when they retired with thoughts very different from those which they usually brought from such places.

Though every lady in the company had been frightened into a fit of devotion by what had happened, none suffered so severely by it as the lady of the house, who, notwithstanding the public contempt she showed for religion, was so fearful of ghosts and hobgoblins, that after having persuaded her husband to lay out a large sum of money (much more than prudence would have permitted) in repairing and fitting up in the modern taste, a beautiful antique

castle that was upon his estate, upon hearing that a particular apartment in it was haunted by a spirit, quitted it directly, and never could be prevailed upon to sleep a second night in it. As soon, therefore, as the company was all gone, and she left to her own meditations, her fears recurred so fast upon her, that she fell into fits, which seemed to threaten her with the total loss of her reason, raving of devils and damnation, and railing against cards, and Sabbath-breaking, with all the vehemence of a modern enthusiast among his mad brethren in Moorfields. But this did not last long ! the gentleman, to avoid detection, had been obliged to leave his tie-wig, cloak, and wooden leg behind him. These, which were found upon clearing out the apartments, unravelled the whole mystery of the affair, and showed that it had been all a trick ; nor was the lady long at a loss for the author of it (for the first mention of the discovery had put an end to her fits of fear and devotion), the pains he had often taken to persuade her against these meetings on this particular day, and the zeal he showed in the late affair, convinced her it was all transacted by him. This threw her into the most violent rage against him ; but as it was impossible to prove, and he denied the fact when charged with it, she could have no other satisfaction of him than that of disappointing his design, by returning to her former practice with double eagerness, and aggravating the scandal of it by every act of irreligion and profaneness that she could devise, in which hopeful course she still persists.

As for the male part of the company who had so manfully leaped out of the windows, and made their escape through the cold and dirt of the night ; some of them caught cold that cost them their noses, and one or two lost their lives in duels, which they fought in vindication of their characters from so scandalous an aspersion, for it was thought proper to deny the whole story.

CHAPTER XXXVIII

CONTINUED : MATERNAL TENDERNESS OF AN UNCOMMON KIND—
A MOST MAGNIFICENT WEDDING DISAPPOINTED BY AN UNHAPPY
INSTANCE OF FEMALE FRAILTY—A NEW METHOD OF CALCULATING
GENERAL OPINION—AN UNLUCKY ACCIDENT CHANGES A SCENE OF
JOY INTO GRIEF, AND AFFORDS A USEFUL CAUTION TO OLD AGE
AND INFIRMITY, TO GUIDE THEIR STEPS WITH PROPER CARE—A
DRAWN BATTLE—AN INSTANCE OF FELL REVENGE MAKES ROOM
FOR A STRANGER, WHO RESTORES GENERAL HARMONY

NOR is she content with offering this flagrant insult to religion and law ; the tenderest feelings of nature are also wantonly made the objects of her grossest ridicule ; in the absurdity of which, to show her matrimonial power in its utmost plenitude, she obliges her passive mate to bear his foolish part, and sacrifice common sense, as he had before done conscience, to her capricious tyranny.

As she has no children, upon whom she can display maternal care and love, she affects holding the important and inexpressible tenderness and duty of these in the lowest contempt; and to show this in the most glaring colours, prostitutes them upon some insignificant animal, in all the solemn pomp and parade of ceremony, usual on such occasions, to make the ridicule more striking.

The present worthy object of her affection was an owl, which she caresses and treats with the endearments of a darling child, calling it the fondest names, talking to it for hours together every Sunday morning, and entertaining her most intimate acquaintances with a particular detail of its most engaging qualities and sensible actions. Nor does her humour stop here; she dresses her favourite in all the fantastic extravagance of the mode, makes a complimentary inquiry after its health, part of the ceremonial of her acquaintance, and celebrates the anniversary of its birth, with the expensive magnificence of a public entertainment, when the dear creature is produced with all the ceremony and state of a royal babe, to receive the praise and caresses of the company; and, to finish the farce, her husband is obliged to act his part, and join with her in receiving the congratulations paid upon the happy occasion.

Perhaps you will imagine that such an unaccountable caprice is meant to expose the servility of complaisance, and to show to what a height it is capable of being strained, to gratify the humours of the rich. Such a conclusion is not unnatural, nor the general satire implied in it unjust; but here in respect to her it does not hold, for she has no such aim in view, nor thinks of anything beyond the immediate gratification of her own whim; on the contrary, she would be as ready to pay the same compliment to any of her acquaintance, if they required it; indeed the share she makes her husband take in the ceremony, bears a different construction, and is plainly seen to be designed as a most severe and insolent ridicule upon him, as it is no secret that she imputes her want of children to his fault: a charge, which his blind submission to her will, makes not improbable.

But this is not the first instance of the extravagance of her humour, nor he the only one who has been made the object of public ridicule by it, though he has never missed of his share.

Before her present favourite, a cat engrossed her fondness in as eminent a degree, but unhappily lost that and her life together by a slip of female frailty: for slighting the example of her mistress's chastity, she had taken an opportunity to carry on an intrigue with a cat in the neighbourhood, whom she used to meet in the evenings upon the leads of the house, while her mistress was abroad, and her own attendants engaged in parties of pleasure below stairs.

This unfortunately broke through all her mistress's great designs, who was just then in treaty for a marriage between her and the male favourite of a lady of quality in Paris, the preliminaries of which were all settled, and nothing remaining but to determine where the wedding should be celebrated; she, for the honour of her sex, demanded that the gallant should wait upon his mistress, and the other insisting upon the example of all royal marriages,

where the bride goes to the bridegroom ; a reason so just, that the heroine of our tale disputed it only for form's sake, and was preparing to set out for Paris, with her husband and a grand retinue, to solemnize the wedding, as soon as the proxy, which had been proposed to be sent by the other party, should arrive.

Upon the first discovery of it, therefore, by apparent symptoms of the frail one's pregnancy, the whole house was in an uproar, every servant turned off, and a council of her most intimate friends directly summoned, to consider what was to be done in such an emergency, and how the treaty of marriage could be broken off, without giving offence to the other parties, or exposing her own disgrace. After much and mature deliberation, it was resolved to send an express immediately to Paris, to prevent the proxy's setting out, and to apologize for breaking off the marriage, on account of a pre-contract, into which Madam Grimalkin had inconsiderately entered, without the knowledge of her mistress ; and to make this embassy the more respected and effectual, the person thought most proper to be sent upon it was her husband, who accordingly was obliged to set out on his journey directly, but was rescued from the ridicule of it by a fit of the gout, which arrested him at his first stage ; so that he was forced to transfer the honour of the employment to his gentleman, who acquitted himself of it with great reputation.

But this was not the only distress in which this unfortunate misbehaviour of the favourite involved her mistress. In the first transports of her rage, she had ordered her to be taken out of her presence, and publicly avowed that she would never see her more : but when her resentment cooled a little, her former fondness returned, and she could not bear the thought of abandoning her, for a first fault, to the low life of a common cat, or depriving herself of the pleasure she enjoyed in her company. But the difficulty was how to receive her again into favour, consistently with the purity of her own character, and without seeming, in some measure, to countenance the incontinency she had been guilty of by such lenity. While she was in this perplexity between delicacy and love, her instructor in the important science of gaming most luckily happened to pay her a morning visit, to give her a lecture and inform her of some new discoveries he had made in his mysterious art. As she knew that he was a nice casuist, the moment he approached her toilet, she informed him of the whole affair, and desired his advice.

After taking some time to deliberate upon the case : ' Madam ', said the sage, shaking his hoary head, and extending the forefinger of his right hand, ' this is a very difficult point to decide ; however, I have calculated the chances on each side, and have found that the odds are as seven, one-fourth, and two-fifteenths to five, nearly (for it would be too great a trouble for you to examine the proof of it in more minute fractions) in favour of your receiving the offender into your good graces again, which I prove thus : all the ladies in the world are liable to some failing or other ; now, as from weakness of constitution, derived from the goodness of their families, or brought on by their own intense application to the pleasures of

polite life, there are not above five who are guilty of this particular foible (I mean among people of fashion, such as you converse with) to eight who are not, it is evident that there will be almost eight who will not condemn your conduct, for five who will; it being the general maxim always to exclaim against the faults of which we are guilty ourselves, to deceive the generality of the world, and make an appearance of our being innocent of them. If this reasoning does not appear plain, I will draw it out at length, and adapt the calculations to the general rules of whist, so that they may be proved by the cards, as the method most familiar to you, to satisfy your own scruples, and answer the objections of your friends; for ladies cannot be too circumspect in affairs of this kind, where so deep a stake is played for. The scheme will not take up much time to draw, nor be attended with much expense, not above twenty pieces, or some such trifle; for you know I never am in the least unreasonable with my friends'.

This judicious solution was so agreeable to her that she saw the justice of it directly, and embraced it without a moment's delay, ordering the poor delinquent to be immediately brought to her, and, after a little gentle chiding, almost killing it with her caresses. As to the sage casuist, she thanked him for his decision, and, having received his lecture, desired him to reduce his arguments into the form he proposed, as soon as he pleased, as she never had any objection to his demands, and then dispatched cards immediately to all her acquaintances, to inform them of the reconciliation, and invite them to an entertainment which she gave upon the happy occasion.

Accordingly, they all attended, and poured out their compliments in the most polite profusion; but, in the height of their joy, an unfortunate accident happened, that changed their congratulations into condolence.

As the dear creature was handed about to receive the caresses of the company, an elderly gentlewoman, to show her extreme fondness for it, by keeping it as long as she could upon her bosom, would needs carry it herself to a lady of quality, who sat on the other side of the room, and desired to have it brought to her; but, striving to be more alert than her paralytic tottering would permit, she fell at her length upon the floor and almost crushed the poor animal to death.

You may conceive what a confusion this threw the whole company into: the cat screamed, the old lady roared, and the voice of all present echoed a general exclamation; and, to heighten the distress, they all got up at once, and, rushing together to raise the falling pair, hindered each other so, that they lay struggling in no very agreeable situation or decent posture, on the floor; for the cat, enraged at the injury she had received, exerted all her strength for revenge, and fixed her claws in the face and neck of her supposed enemy, growling with the most envenomed spite, which made the innocent author of her disaster roar, kick, and sprawl with all her might, as she was unable to disengage herself from the claws of her furious adversary, or even rise from the ground where she lay.

At length, some of the company made a shift to raise and part the combatants, when the poor gentlewoman was hurried to her chair, with her face and neck all in a stream of blood, the attention of the company being entirely taken up with the fright of the lady of the house for the danger of her favourite.

The spirit and strength which she had shown in revenge of the injury she had received, was some consolation to her mistress, as it seemed to show that she could not have been very much hurt; but one of the company, happening to mention her condition, renewed her fright, and made her resolve instantly to send for one of the most eminent male practitioners of the obstetric art, to inquire into the circumstances of her case, and administer any assistance that might be necessary upon the unhappy occasion.

Accordingly, a servant was instantly dispatched in the mistress's name to the doctor, who attended, without a moment's delay, imagining, from the urgency of the message, that some lady of distinction might be taken ill in her house, as he knew the lady herself had no occasion for him, and the footman could give him no further information than that some accident had happened in the company, of which there was the usual crowd. As soon as he arrived, he was shown directly into the drawing-room, whither the lady, with a few select friends, had retired, where one of them leading him up to her, and lifting up a handkerchief, that covered the poor dear creature, in her lap, opened the case to him, for the mistress's grief was so great, that she was not able to speak.

It is impossible to describe the rage into which this threw the doctor. He looked upon it as an insult, not to be forgiven; and, as he could not wreak his resentment upon ladies, by any act of violence upon their persons, resolved to show it by his treatment of the creature, for which they implored his assistance. Accordingly, he stooped very gravely, and taking it out of the mistress's lap, laid it on the ground, and setting his heel upon its head, crushed it to death before any one had time to interpose in its behalf. Then, turning to the lady, whose astonishment was so great that she had not power to speak, 'There, madam!' said he, 'your favourite is delivered from all danger of abortion; but take care how you provoke another time the resentment of a man whom nobody provokes with impunity'. Saying this, he turned about and marched away, leaving the whole company, and particularly the mistress of the innocent victim of his vengeance, in a condition not to be expressed. She wept, beat her breast, stamped with her feet upon the floor, and vowed the bitterest vengeance. Nor is it easy to say how far her passion might have transported her, had not a gentleman entered the room that very moment with a young owl in his hand, which he had taken out of the nest that morning.

The sovereign remedy for a woman's grief, for the loss of any favourite, whether a cat, a sparrow, or a husband, is a new one. The sight of the owl instantly struck her; it had such a gravity and wisdom in its looks, that she resolved to make it the confidant of all her secrets, and the only counsellor from whom she would take advice that should contradict her inclinations. Accordingly, poor Grimalkin was ordered to be taken away, and the new favourite

received in her place. This restored the general harmony and good humour, and the entertainment that was designed to celebrate Mrs Puss's restoration to her mistress's bosom, served for the reception of the stranger. However, though a new favourite consoled the mistress for the loss of the former, she did not neglect to pay a proper respect to its remains. The body was carefully laid up till next morning, when an eminent undertaker was sent for, and orders given for her decent interment.

CHAPTER XXXIX

MORE HAPPY FRUITS OF FEMALE GOVERNMENT—THE HISTORY OF AN EMINENT PATRONESS OF THE POLITE ARTS—HER PECULIAR METHOD OF SHOWING A DISTINGUISHED TASTE AND JUDGMENT—AN EXTRAORDINARY CHARGE IN A BILL AT AN INN

TURN your eye now to the other side, and observe that superannuated figure of foppery at the upper end of the table, who plumes himself like a peacock upon the gaudiness of his dress, and gives his contribution with an ostentatious and affected dignity that would disgrace a prince. He is another instance of the happy fruits of woman's government. With all the importance he assumes here, in his own house he is a perfect cipher, of no consequence in himself, but, as he adds to that of his wife.

So insignificant a character may be thought incapable of affording either instruction or improvement sufficient to reward the trouble of displaying it; but then it introduces another, to which it serves as a shade to show the glaring colours of it in a proper light, and illustrate the vanity, as the former did the vice, of female caprice and ambition.

He had the solid advantage of entering into life with a very affluent fortune; but instead of making it a means of happiness to himself, and benefit to society, by a rational and benevolent use, to gratify the most absurd avarice, he gave up every enjoyment of it, by marrying an heiress, the known vanity, imperiousness, and extravagancy of whose temper so far over-balanced the greatness of her wealth, that no man of reason or spirit, who had any other possible way of earning a morsel of bread, would have linked his fate to hers.

The consequence was just what he deserved. The moment he became her husband, she assumed the most absolute authority over him and all he possessed, as if the words of their connection had been inverted, and he had made the covenant of duty and obedience to her, and instantly set up for the patroness of merit in the fine arts and sciences, to show her superiority of genius over the rest of her sex.

Such an ambition directly marked her out for a bubble to all the needy, sharpening adventurers, who, under the pretence of such merits, fly like locusts to this fantastic people from every part of

the globe, in swarms that literally devour the fruits of the land in such a manner as to starve the natives who are engaged in the same pursuits, and thereby discourage and prevent the rising to that excellence, the want of which is objected to them. For though there may not perhaps be any natural difference between the sexes in the abilities of mind necessary to form a proper judgment of any science, yet the female labours under such disadvantages from a wrong education, that it is next to impossible for a woman to exert the faculties of reason in any distinguished degree; the time when the seeds of knowledge should be sown being devoted to trifles or absurdities, that deserve a worse name, which by these means take such possession of the mind as to influence the conduct of the whole life. Some rare instances indeed there are, of women who break through this oppression and rise above the prejudices of such an education to a degree of eminence equal to the foremost of the other sex. But this requires such uncommon strength of genius, as is indulged to a very few, and was by no means the lot of this person, all her pretensions to taste and judgment being founded on her ability to reward them liberally in others. But even in this, her injudicious vanity has always marred the good effects of her generosity and wealth, for, not being able herself to discern real merit, and disdaining to follow the opinions of others for fear of passing unnoticed among the crowd, she blundered upon the most unlucky method of distinguishing herself that ever entered into a human head; for, as if her opinion was of more weight than that of all the world beside, she sets up to contradict the voice of the public, and always patronizes those whom they reject and decry.

Such a conduct, as I said, naturally lays her open to the impositions of flattery and fraud. Though she professes a taste for all the finer arts, music is the particular object of her favour and encouragement. As soon as a new performer arrives, if he is in distress, as is almost always the case, he immediately waits upon this lady to implore her patronage. This necessarily introduces a display of his abilities, which she never fails to reward munificently, and profess her approbation of, but cautiously, and in general terms only, that she may retract it afterwards, should the public unluckily join with her, for her opinion is always in the opposite scale to that of the rest of the world. But if he is disapproved, she takes him under her immediate protection; she invites him constantly to her table; she supplies him with money, with the most boundless profusion, and makes parties among that crowd of company which her wealth and turn for expensive pleasure constantly collect about her, to support him against the favourites of the public. And to show that she does this merely from a spirit of contradiction, should the most eminent of these fall off, or be eclipsed by the superior merit of a rival, she instantly forgets the animosities with which she pursued his success, and receives him into her protection and patronage, admiring his grossest faults, and praising the very defects she decried before; while her gentle mate is obliged to submit to this dissipation of his darling wealth, and to be the humble echo of her opinions, in all their various

changes, without daring to interpose a word in vindication of his own judgment or authority, but thinking himself happy in being permitted to make use of the pittance of his fortune, which he thus contributes to public charities, to give him the opportunity of assuming the momentary consequence you see.

The many impositions which she has suffered from those rapacious sycophants, would be sufficient to make any person see the folly of such a conduct, who had not wilfully resolved against conviction. I shall just mention one instance, for the grossness and singularity of it, and so conclude the disagreeable representation.

To show her elegant taste in this most pleasing entertainment, and raise an opinion of her importance in the polite world, among her tenants and neighbours in the country, whither she retires in the summer, she always takes with her some of her favourite performers, who cannot fail to please persons who never had an opportunity of hearing any better, and sometimes even will condescend, upon very particular occasions, as when she gives public entertainments, to comply so far with the taste of others, as to send for some of those who are the highest in general repute, though her country-seat is almost at the extremity of the kingdom, which makes the expense of such a compliment very considerable; for she defrays all the charges of travelling, besides giving a very genteel gratification for the trouble.

Upon an occasion of this kind, some little time since, she sent for a musician of note to conduct a concert, which she designed to give her neighbours, in the highest taste. The man, finding he had nothing to pay, an unlimited credit being established for him at every stage upon the road, travelled down in the highest luxury to her house, where his performance was also rewarded with a very handsome present. But, whether he thought it unequal to his merit and trouble, or imagining that he should never be sent for thither again, resolved to make the most of the present opportunity. Upon his return, he took up money at every inn he stopped at on the road, upon the credit given him, and, where he lay, constantly prevailed upon one of the compliant females who attended to sleep with him for a considerable gratification, which he also ordered to be charged to the bill, and left for this lady to pay.

Such an insult might be thought to merit her resentment; but as the punishing of it would open scenes which must lay her under a necessity of discontinuing her favourite practice of sending for such persons, and expose her extravagance and taste to public ridicule and censure, she thought proper to overlook it as unnoticed, and pay the bills, without seeming to examine into the particulars of them. And to prevent the story's receiving credit, should it happen to be made known, continued to countenance the man, and even invited him into the country with her the next summer, when he played her many tricks of the same kind, finding he escaped so easy after this.

I have dealt so long upon the characters of this and the former lady, to save myself trouble upon other occasions, as their actions afford a general representation of female life. I mean the life of those females who, looking upon themselves as raised above the

rest of their sex by rank or fortune, think it necessary to show their superiority by breaking through all the rules which reason and religion have established for their conduct.

How prevailing the force of such examples the instances just given sufficiently show. Indeed, such is the implicit adoration paid to wealth, such is the reigning passion for joining in what is called good company, and partaking of their luxurious entertainments that, let the rich and great propose any folly and vice, however gross and absurd, as the means of introduction to their tables and parties of pleasure, they will be sure of finding persons enough to comply with their humours. These instances are taken from the most licentious caprices and absurd vanity of this ambition. The former admit of no excuse, and though the latter may be less blamable in themselves, and even bear a kind of resemblance to virtue in many cases, the success is not much better, nor ever sufficient to justify this ambition in females to quit the subordinate sphere allotted them by nature, and strive to make a figure in the busier and more extensive province of man.

Nor is this the only useful instruction that may be drawn from a display of these characters. It shows also the ridiculous and unhappy situation into which man falls when he tamely gives up the reins put into his hands by Providence, and submits to the government of a woman, whom he was born to command.

CHAPTER XL

AN IRREMEDIABLE DEFECT IN HUMAN POLICY—THE HISTORY OF A MOST EMINENT PERSONAGE—A NEW WAY OF PAYING THE DEBTS OF GUARDIANSHIP—A DAUGHTER'S DISOBEDIENCE IN REFUSING TO COMPLY WITH MORE THAN PATERNAL LOVE—THE HERO OF THE TALE EXTRACTS PROFIT FROM CHARITY, AND ASSERTS THE RIGHTS OF AGENCY IN DEFIANCE OF PUBLIC OPINION AND SHAME

TAKE notice of the person immediately below him, whom I have just given you an account of. By his large athletic make, nature seemed to design him for some of the most laborious employments in life; but his genius led him to other pursuits, and made him depend upon the sharpness of his mind, rather than the strength of his body, for his support and advancement in the world.

The depravity of man makes many employments necessary in a community for public safety and advantage, the execution of which is attended with so many circumstances of horror in the punishment of unhappy delinquents, that no man, who is not destitute of that sympathetic tenderness which is the highest honour of his nature, can bear to undertake them. This throws them upon persons, speculatively speaking, the most unfit for such offices whose poverty obliges them to practise every iniquity of the profession into which they were first initiated by vice, and whose hearts are hardened by habit, against every sentiment of virtue and

honour, every finer feeling of nature. Thus the hangman, whose crimes first reduced him to take up the horrid trade, continues it from distress, and puts to death wretched offenders, for facts which he is hourly guilty of himself, without compassion or remorse till he is detected, and suffers the same punishment from another hand. But this is one of those defects of human policy which no human heart can remedy.

In an employment not very dissimilar in its nature, though dignified by a less opprobrious name, has this person displayed his abilities for many years, to the astonishment of all who have been witnesses of his exploits. There is a mystery in such scenes, too horrid for representation; I shall therefore pass them over, and barely relate a few anecdotes of his private life, which will sufficiently enable you to form a judgment of his whole character.

A man who, from one of the poorest employments by which a wretched life can be honestly sustained, came unexpectedly to the possession of a considerable fortune by the death of a relation, who would have suffered him to perish for want of a morsel of bread, had some way conceived such a confidence in this person, that upon his own death, in a very little time after his elevation, he entrusted his orphan daughter to his care, together with what he had been able to save for her during his short possession of his estate, the inheritance of it passing away, for want of his having male issue, to another branch of the family.

During the minority of his ward, he took care to educate her according to the direction of her father, in a decent but frugal manner, as the fortune she had a right to expect was not sufficient to place her above the necessity of industry and economy; but upon her coming of age, he was obliged to act another part. He had spent the greatest part of her fortune in his pleasures, for, strange to think, even he had a passion for the pleasures of polite life, and was admitted into the genteel company, to enjoy them, without any inquiry into his character or station, while he was able to bear the expense. Such a situation must have been distressing to any other man, but the business of his profession soon suggested a method of disengaging himself, which his extensive principles made no objection to his putting in practice.

On the day before she was to receive from him the fortune which was the whole foundation of her future hopes in life, he showed no signs of uneasiness, but confidently gave her notice that he designed to pay her the moment she was entitled to receive it, and even appointed the other trustees of the will to meet at his house and be witnesses to his punctual execution of his trust. Such a conduct naturally gave satisfaction to every person concerned, and entirely removed some apprehension which they had entertained before. But they soon found reason to change their sentiments again, for, that very evening he took an occasion to go through a bye-street, just after it became dark, and when he thought himself in no danger of being taken notice of, where he rolled himself in the kennel, battered his head against the stones, as if he had received several severe strokes, and scattered some paper he had in his pocket for that purpose about the streets; and then, in that abased appearance

and with all the symptoms of affright and despair in his looks, ran into a neighbouring coffee-house, where he told the company that he had been just knocked down and robbed of a considerable sum of money, which he was to pay the next day. Some of them instantly went to the place in which he said this had happened, where they found his hat and wig, and the papers he had left for them, which at first gained credit to the story. But when the general tenor of his character, and the circumstances of his being to pay that sum the next day, came to be considered, the whole artifice was seen through, especially as he never offered to prove where he had received the money, nor gave any reason for his carrying such a sum about him, the very bulk and weight of which (for he said it was all in specie to prevent too particular an inquiry about bank-notes) must have been a trouble and incumbrance to him, but barely alleged that he had always kept the money by him in cash, ever since he had received it; and if any one expressed the least doubt of what he said, or desired to have these particulars better explained, he directly charged them with making insinuations injurious to his character and credit, which he threatened to vindicate by law.

Such a menace from such a man was not ineffectual! The injured lady was absolutely deprived of every means of doing herself justice, and, as the poor are ever friendless, no unconcerned person cared to enter into a dispute with one of his known experience, and who was acquainted with methods of putting his menaces into execution, which the most innocent might not find it easy to guard against. Besides, it was universally and well known, that even if the whole affair could be detected, he was not able to make satisfaction. Thus every circumstance concurred to give success to his scheme, though not quite so smoothly as he could wish, and the poor young lady, having no redress, was obliged to return to the low state from which she had so lately been raised, and in which she still lives a life of servitude; happy had she never been flattered with better hopes.

But though he could escape the reach of man, Divine Justice was not to be defeated so, Whose vengeance attacked him in so signal a manner, as plainly showed the just retaliation of the unerring hand of Heaven.

Seared as his heart must be by such a life, to the more general feelings of humanity, nature was not quite debauched, and he felt the tenderness and fond anxiety of paternal love in all its force for an only daughter, on whose education, in all the polite accomplishments of the more exalted ranks of life, he spared neither pains nor expense, supporting and adorning her in the genteel manner, and taking evident delight in lavishing, on such uses, all that he could acquire by every possible means.

Such a conduct, though carried to an excess, had something so amiable in it that, in some measure, it palliated the blacker parts of his character, and even weakened the credit of many of the stories told of him. But just as he was beginning to enjoy the fruits of his care, by seeing his daughter's eminence in the accomplishments he had taken such pains to teach universally acknowledged.

an event happened, that not only deprived him of that pleasure, but also turned the merit of all his former fondness into the foulest reproach.

His daughter was observed for some time to bear the appearance of the most poignant distress. Whenever she was asked the cause of it by any of her friends, she would melt into a flood of tears, nor would give any other answer than that she was the most miserable of human beings. This raised a variety of conjectures, some of which were far from being advantageous to her; but at length the secret was revealed. She flew one day, in the utmost agony of distress, to a lady of her acquaintance, who had seemed to show the liveliest sense of her grief, and begged her protection from the cruelty of her father, which, she said, was too great to be borne, ever since she had refused to gratify an impious passion which he had long entertained for her, and which had been the motive of all his care and expense in her education.

Such stories are so shocking to human nature, that they are generally doubted; but his character gave such weight to any charge against him, that this was universally believed. At first he made some efforts to induce his daughter to return to him, but she was deaf to his solicitations, and, being destitute of every other means of support, threw herself upon the favour of the public, and lives by her skill in the accomplishments which he took so much pains to have her taught. This was not only a severe mortification to his pride, but also made him be looked upon with such horror and detestation, that he has been ever since secluded from the society of every person of virtue or reputation.

I see you wonder at the inconsistency of such a person's appearing in the situation you see him at present, contributing to a public charity, for the relief of the calamities of the poor. To one who can look no farther into man than as he appears at the present moment, such a conduct justly appears unaccountable; but consider that these are the only places now open for him to mix with persons of character and fortune; for institutions of this kind make no distinctions of persons, but receive, indiscriminately, the benefactions of all who offer. Besides, a genius so ready as his can turn everything to advantage, and extract profit even from giving charity. One instance of this kind of address will prove the justice of this reflection and show, that in every action of his life, he really preserves a consistency of character.

Some years ago, the sea broke over its banks in a distant part of the kingdom, and not only laid the country waste for a great extent, but also threatened the ruin of the whole, if some means were not immediately applied to put a stop to it. Such an exigence required instant care. The government sent workmen directly to repair the breach, who were obliged to struggle with all the severities of the season in a most inhospitable climate, to effect their work, it being in the depth of winter, and the danger admitting of no delay.

So severe a service naturally excited the compassion of this people, the most humane and generous under heaven. Accordingly, a public subscription was opened to buy warm clothing for

the labourers thus employed for the advantage of the public, which met with such general approbation, that a fund, sufficient for the purpose, was immediately raised. This person, from the reason hinted above, was one of the first subscribers, and appeared most active in promoting the scheme, offering frequently to undertake the most troublesome part of the conduct of it. But some of them who were acquainted with his character, absolutely refused to let him interfere in any manner that should give him the least power over the fund. However, as they did not think proper to make the motives of this caution public, he took an opportunity one day, when they were indispensably obliged to be absent, to renew his offer, which his assiduity and success in soliciting subscriptions gave such weight to that it was received, and he was appointed to purchase and send down some particular articles that appeared to be immediately wanted, to pay for which, five hundred pounds were directly given into his hands.

This was what he had all along laboured for. Accordingly, as soon as he received the money, he remitted of his assiduity, and came no more to their meetings, never taking the least care about the things, for the purchase of which it had been given to him. So flagrant an act of injustice raised the resentment of every one concerned; but that he was prepared for, and despised; and, when they required him to return the money, he gave them a bill for his own trouble, in which he charged every step he had ever gone, to solicit and promote the subscription, and fees of agency for every shilling he had received and paid in the course of it, by which means he greatly overbalanced their demand.

Barefaced as such an imposition was, they had no redress, for he had carefully made his charge, according to the rates of his profession; and, though it had been always the intention of every one to bestow their labour as well as their money, without any lucrative view of return, yet, as he had never entered into an actual engagement to that effect, there was now no possibility of defeating his charge.

Such an attempt can never be made with success a second time, as the first instance raises a general alarm. However, he still persists to join in everything of the kind that is proposed, in hopes of seizing some such lucky opportunity as he did before. But it is easy to foresee he will be disappointed, for though he exerts himself so strenuously, and takes upon him to offer his advice and direction, as you see, the prejudice against him is so strong, that everything he says is suspected of design, everything he proposes rejected, even without examining. Nay, so strong is the detestation of him grown, since this affair of his daughter, that some societies have refused him admission, and others even gone so far as to expel him, in the most ignominious manner, from among them.

CHAPTER XLI

THE REPRESENTATION CONCLUDED WITH AN EMINENT MAN-MIDWIFE
—HIS MOTIVES FOR TAKING UP THAT PROFESSION, WITH SOME
UNFORTUNATE ANECDOTES OF HIS PRACTICE

I SHALL now present you with a character, the folly of which is a shade to its virtues, and shows them through a medium of ridicule and contempt, more humbling to human vanity than the most atrocious vice.

Observe that skeleton, that figure of famine, who, even after a feast, looks as if he had fasted for a month, and was just ready to perish for want. That is another of the principal promoters, and indeed supporters of public charity, from the best motives, his benefactions always flowing from the benevolence of his heart, though too often qualified in the manner by circumstances that throw both the gift and giver into ridicule.

For such is the vehemence of his temper that, not satisfied with providing for the wants of the poor, he will see that the supplies which he bestows are applied in the manner he directs, which introduces him too familiarly into the domestic distresses of the unhappy, many of whom would rather perish for want than make the circumstances of their wants known. Nor is his fortune only devoted to those uses; his very personal service is always ready, particularly in some cases where, unfortunately, a motive of a different nature from his real one is liable to be mistaken for it, by the malignant temper of the times.

There is no situation of human distress that calls so strongly for compassion and relief as child-birth. How severe, then, must the case of those unhappy creatures be, who are left to struggle through such pangs unassisted, unprovided with any of the comforts so necessary to support Nature in such a conflict.

A sense of this struck his humane heart. He felt the distress, and liberally supplied the relief. Well had he stopped here! But fearing that such relief should be misapplied or insufficient, he would attend himself, to see that nothing was wanted; and at length, to make his assistance complete, learned the obstetric art, and now necessarily has more business in it, as he pays for being employed, by the benefactions he bestows, than any one member of the profession.

Laudable as this care and the motives of it are, it would have been much better had not the sanguineness of his temper hurried him so far, had he been content to supply their wants, and let others, whose profession it more immediately is, administer relief. For now, what a field does it open for ill-natured ridicule to see a man of his consequence descend to offices, in the ordinary acceptation of the world, so far beneath him. How easy it is to say, how easy to be believed, that idle curiosity, or some grosser motive, prompts to such uncommon assiduity.

Nor is the evil of this indiscretion confined to him alone; it reflects a kind of ridicule upon the very virtue it would serve, and

makes less sanguine minds refrain from the good, for fear they should also share in the reproach. For it is not sufficient for a man to have the testimony of his own conscience for the rectitude of his intentions; there is also a debt of appearance due to the public to avoid offence, and inculcate virtue by example. One instance will illustrate this, and show the inconveniences of his inconsiderate zeal.

A poor woman applied to him for relief some time before the moment. According to his custom, he supplied her necessities and took a direction where to call and see her. The woman, either mistaken herself, or tempted by distress to deceive him, told him a wrong time, which made him come too soon, and, as he always made her some charitable present whenever he came, she still found some complaints to induce him to repeat his visits.

At length the frequency of his coming took the notice of the alley in which she lived, who could not conceive any honest business that a gentleman of his fine appearance could have with such a poor woman, in so obscure a place, and, as such remarks are always improved, some friend hinted to the woman's husband, a labouring man, who was at his work all day, and therefore could not be witness of his disgrace, that his wife had many improper visitors come to her, and must certainly have taken to bad courses, to encourage such doings.

The cuckold in imagination went directly home in the greatest rage at his dishonour, but the name of the visitor, and an assurance that there came no other, soon pacified him, especially as a ready thought struck him that he might turn the good man's humanity to an advantage of a nature very different from what he had designed; for the fellow was well supplied with what is called mother wit, which want had sharpened, and freed from every restraint of honesty. He therefore sullenly told his wife that it might be so as she said, but he would have a better proof than her word for it, and therefore she must let him see her visitor the next time he came, and, as she valued her life, assent to everything which he, her husband, should do or say.

The readiness of her consent encouraged him to open his design to her, which her nuptial obedience and hopes of gain made her not only give in to, but she also improved the scheme to a certainty of success.

The husband accordingly, having prepared some of his associates, placed them properly the next time the gentleman went to visit his wife, who immediately, upon his coming into the room, began to cry out and implore his assistance.

Though the business came a little inconveniently upon him as he was full dressed, he would not desert her in her distress, but directly set about, giving her the necessary assistance, in the hurry of which some unlucky stoop burst the string that tied his breeches behind, and down they fell about his heels.

Though this disaster disconcerted him a good deal, the cries of his patient would not give him time to adjust himself; but he was proceeding in his business with the most anxious assiduity, when in rushed the husband with his gang, and rewarded his care with a

stroke that felled him, fettered as he was in his breeches to the ground.

The scene was now changed ! The woman, no longer in labour, cried only for revenge on the base man who had attempted her virtue, as the witnesses present attested they had heard her before, and now caught him in the very fact, which the posture he was in, and, above all, the circumstance of his breeches, too strongly confirmed to the crowd whom the noise had drawn together.

Terrified almost to death at the threats of the enraged husband, who could hardly be held from taking personal vengeance that very moment, and sensible of the consequence should public fame catch hold of such a tale, the poor criminal threw himself on his knees, and, convinced that all vindication of his innocence would be in vain, besought only a composition for his offence.

This was just what the parties wanted ; but still, to increase his terrors, and enhance the price of his escape, such difficulties were raised, as made him glad to yield to any terms they could impose ; and, accordingly, he not only purged himself of having done any actual dishonour to her husband, for the attention they would not permit him to controvert, but also made satisfaction to his resentment for the attempt, with one hundred pounds, for which, as he had not a sum immediately about him, he gave a draught on his banker, and waited in duress, till the arrival of it released him.

This misfortune made him more cautious for some time ; but he begins to forget it now, and goes on with his business as before. One thing, indeed, he takes sufficient care about, and that is, that the waist of his breeches is properly secured ; for so strong is the impression which that accident made upon him, that he never walks a dozen steps without pulling them up.

You see, most of them begin to nod. I shall therefore draw the curtain here, and leave them to their nap with this observation, that a few such examples as the clergyman, and many of the kind there are, particularly eminent in this exalted virtue of charity in both the sexes, are sufficient to take off the prejudice which the others must excite, and to preserve the proper respect to principles they propose to imitation.

CHAPTER XLII

SOME ACCOUNT OF THE OFFICERS OF THE CHARITY—THEIR CARE OF THEMSELVES—THEY FALL OUT ABOUT THE DIVISION OF THE SPOIL—A TERRIBLE UPROAR IS APPEASED BY A DEMAND OF GENERAL CONCERN—THE CONCISE MANNER OF PASSING PUBLIC ACCOUNTS—CHRYSLAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE

WHEN I had taken sufficient view of the governors, I had leisure to turn my observations to the servants of the society, whose behaviour raised an indignation too strong to be expressed by words.

If the governors feasted, they paid for their feasting ; but the

servants feasted no less, and were paid for it! Nor was this enormity confined to this day; their whole time was one continued scene of it, and much the greater part of the contributions of the public was prostituted to this abominable abuse, while the poor, for whose relief they were given, too often languished in want of the meanest necessities, the fund being insufficient for their wants, and the luxury and wages of their servants.

I was diverted from these reflections by an uproar in one of the private apartments of the house, where some of the superior servants had got together over a bottle of wine to settle their respective dividends of the subscriptions of the day. I call them servants, for that is the proper appellation of all who serve for hire. As I was yet undisposed of, to any particular person, I had it in my power, as I have told you before, to range through the whole territories of the society to which I belonged, and therefore flew to see what might be the cause of this riot in so improper a place, where I was witness to such a scene as almost transcends belief.

At the upper end of the table sat the treasurer, for it would be a reproach to the poorest society to have fewer officers than the state, with his accounts before him. After a bumper to the success of the charity, 'Mr Steward', said he, 'our subscriptions have been so good this year that I think we may venture to enlarge our salaries a little, for last year they were really scarce worth a gentleman's acceptance'.

'That is true', replied the steward, 'and I believe we may enlarge the house allowance too, for, upon the present establishment, it is hardly enough for the days we meet here, and will not afford anything to carry home, to entertain a friend with, as a gentleman would desire. It is but swelling some of the sick articles, which at present are scarce above the consumption. When I was overseer of the parish, we managed things better. We then lived like gentlemen. Nay, I remember when I was churchwarden, that we spent the whole summer jaunting about the country in pursuit of a gentleman who had a child sworn to him, for fifty shillings, which he had been ordered to pay, till the bill of our expenses came to fifteen pounds; and yet nobody could say against it, so that it is our own fault if we do not live well.'

'Right!' joined the apothecary; 'nor was the appointment for medicines any way sufficient. Had half what the physicians prescribed been given, there would have been nothing to be got by the contract'.

'How, Mr Apothecary?' returned the cook, with a sneer. 'Nothing to be got! pray was not all you got clear gain? I am sure from the benefit received by the patients, there did not appear to have been anything above brick-dust, or powder of rotten post, in any of the stuffs they took'!

'Pray, s—s—sir', stuttered the apothecary, in a rage, 'wh—wh—what's that you say? Who m—m—made you a judge of medicines'?

'Not you, I thank God, sir', said the cook, 'as my health shows. But I have a good reason for what I say, for though I put double

the quantity of meat in my broth, I could not prevent the people's dying, nor make the few who recovered able to go out in twice the usual time'.

'S—s—sir, 'tis all a d—d—damned lie. Their d—d—dying was occasioned by the p—p—poorness of the b—b—broth and the badness of their p—p—provisions, and not by the w—w—want of medicines; and I'll p—p—prove it, sir; and how you sup—p—ported your family on the m—m—meat that should have been d—d—dressed for the sick'!

'You'll prove it, sir? Take care that you do! Gentlemen! take notice of what he says! This is striking at my character, and must affect my bread'.

'That is true, Mr Cook', said the secretary, who had been an attorney's clerk, 'and whatever strikes at a man's character, so as to affect his bread, is actionable'.

'B—b—but, sir, he attacked my ch—cha—character first, and I'll b—b—bring my action, too'.

'So you may, sir', replied the lawyer, 'the action will lie on both sides'.

The disputes had hitherto been kept up with such heat, that the company could not interpose a word to pacify them, but the mention of the law made it everyone's concern in a moment.

'Silence, gentlemen', said the treasurer, raising slowly his august bulk, and striking his hand upon the table. 'Silence, I say, and let me hear no more of this brawling. Mr Cook! Mr Apothecary! What do you both mean? to discover the secrets of our society, and to blow us all up at once? You both heard me say that everything which was wrong should be adjusted? Could you not wait for that, without falling into this indecent, this unprofitable wrangle? As for you, Mr Secretary, the leaven of your profession will break out; it is sufficient to infect the whole mass. Is this your promise, your oath, to follow your business and do as you were ordered, quietly and implicitly, without meddling any farther, or perplexing us with the tricks of your former trade? But it was in vain to expect it. A lawyer can as well live without food as without fomenting quarrels and setting his neighbours together by the ears. Bring an action, indeed! and so betray our mystery to the impertinent remarks of counsellors, and the scoffs of Templars and attorney's clerks. Let me hear one word more of the kind, and this moment I declare off all connection, and leave every man to shift for himself. Our general oath of secrecy, attested under our hands, secures me from information, as it would invalidate the testimony of us all'.

With these words, he turned about to leave the room, when the steward, catching him by the breast, pulled him into his chair, and holding him down by main force, addressed him thus:—

'Good God, sir, what do you mean, to take notice of the warmth of madmen, who know not what they say? You, Mr Treasurer, have moved in a higher sphere of life, and ought to be above such things. You were not raised from the cleaning the shoes of a pettifogging attorney, in whose drudgery you lost your ears! from being scullion in a nobleman's kitchen, or servant of a mountebank, to dispense his packets to the mob! You were not raised,

I say, from any of these stations to the rank of a gentleman, by this office, and should be above taking offence at the low-lived behaviour of such creatures who know no better'.

'Nor w—w—w—was I a full-handed ten times b—b—b—bankrupt', interrupted the apothecary, as he would have done sooner, had rage left him power of utterance, 'that b—b—b—being unable to get credit any l—l—l—longer, came from cheating the p—p—p—public, to cheating the p—p—p—poor; nor a c—c—c—cast-off, worn-out p—p—p—pimping footman, whose dirty services w—w—w—were rewarded with this place'.

This made the madness general, and they were just going to proceed to blows, when the porter entered hastily, and told them the committee were adjourned to their chamber, and sent for their accounts, to sit upon them directly.

This brought them all to their senses, and made them friends in a moment.

'Gentlemen', said the treasurer, 'we have all been too hot—all to blame; but let there be no more of it. Let us agree among ourselves, and we may defy the world'.

Upon this, a general shake of the hand put an end to the whole contest, and they proceeded to business, as if no such thing had ever happened, unanimous in their endeavours to cheat the public, and fatten on the spoils of the poor.

By that time, the committee had smoked a pipe and drank their coffee. The accounts were laid before them, over which they nodded a few moments, and then passed them, without exceptions. The next thing was to pay the salaries of the officers, in which distribution it fell to my lot to be given to the chaplain.

CHAPTER XLIII

SOME REMARKS ON LANGUAGE—CHARACTER OF CHRYSAL'S NEW MASTER—CHRYSAL ATTENDS HIS MASTER'S WIFE ON A VISIT TO A SUPERIOR LADY—POLITE RECEPTION

I HAVE often been apprehensive that the manner in which I express myself may lead you into some mistakes of my meaning, the signification of words, in the language of men, being so unsettled, that it is scarce possible to convey a determinate sense without such a periphrasis as would take up too much time in such complicated scenes as those I describe; for where different, or perhaps contrary meanings are signified by the same word, how easy it is for a mind prone to error, to take the wrong one!

For instance, the character of a good man may be thought to be as safe from misapprehension, from the immutability of the virtues which constitute it, as any that can be attributed either by or to human frailty; and yet how variously, how contradictorily, is it applied!

On the Royal Exchange he is a good man who is worth ten thousand pounds, and pays his bills punctually, by whatever private

and public frauds and injustice he has amassed that sum, and maintains his credit. At the politer end of the world, goodness assumes another appearance, and is attributed to him who entertains his company well, pays his play-debts, and supports his honour with his sword, though he is guilty of the basest breaches of every civil and moral virtue, and lives in professed violation of all laws, human and divine ; while in the strictness of truth and propriety of expression, no greater abuse of words can be conceived than that of prostituting this character on either, except it were in compliance with the modern, modish way of speaking by contraries.

I do not give this as the only instance ; they are innumerable, and occur in every moment's conversation. The horse that wins the match goes damned fast, as the one that loses goes damned slow. The weather in summer is hell-fire hot, in winter, hell-fire cold.

Now, what sense can the very devil himself, to whom you refer all difficulties, make of such contradictions ? Though, indeed, these particular phrases give him pleasure, as they show the inclination which men have to his empire, by making the very terrors of it familiar to their minds in their common conversation.

But I am not at leisure to prescribe rules for avoiding this confusion, one of the most extensive causes of human error. I shall only give you some cautions to prevent your falling into it, in respect to what I say to you.

You are to observe, then, that whenever I speak in the person of another, I always would be understood in the sense which that person would be understood in at that time, without any further regard to moral or physical truth, or propriety of speech. But, when I speak my own sentiments (which indeed I very rarely do), I shall always deliver them with perspicuity and precision, as far as the jargon I am obliged to use will allow, and would have my words taken in the sense usually given to them, in the particular subject I may be then speaking of, as the barrenness of language has not been able to afford distinct terms to them all, but is forced to wrest known ones to different, and often unknown meanings—a proof of the injustice of the general complaint against the verbosity of the moderns—whereas, if (by many) distinct words are meant, their fault is directly the reverse.

My new master was a person of some learning, and what was of more use, of thorough knowledge of the world ; but wanting friends and interest to advance him to those dignities, which he thought due to his merit, he had solicited this place, in discharge of the duties of which he was indefatigably diligent, not merely for the paltry consideration of a poor salary (for, as he was not in the secret he had no share of the spoils), though his circumstances and knowledge of the value of money could not let him refuse it, but to place his abilities in a more conspicuous light, where they might take the notice of his superiors.

As soon as he had received his stipend, he went home, where he found his wife, dressed in all her best clothes, and expecting him with the utmost impatience. ' My dear ', said she, ' how could you stay abroad so late ? I have been waiting for you above these two hours, and was just going without seeing you '.

'So late, my dear, it is scarcely six o'clock ! But where are you going in such haste' ?

'To the bishop's ! The Rector of —— died in an apoplectic fit as he was taking his nap after dinner this evening, and, you know, my intimacy with the bishop's lady entitles me to ask anything from her'.

'But, child, this is not in her power to give, and, even if it was, it is too much for a common acquaintance to expect'.

'This diffidence has been your ruin ! You are always afraid of asking, as if there was ruin in being refused ; but that is not the case. Ask, and you shall have, is my text ! Nowadays, nothing is got without it'.

'Yes, child, but too frequent and improper asking brings contempt'.

'The manner—the manner of asking is the thing. And you cannot think I want to be taught that now, after having lived so long among the great. Often have I known a request properly made gain a man a place, for which he was never dreamed of. As to the greatness of this living, never mind that ; the greater it is, the greater will be your obligation to the person who gets it for you. What money have you got about you ? We shall make a party, perhaps. And let me have the five hundred pound note ; I may have occasion for that, too, to make a bet'.

'There, my dear, is the money I received to-day. I'll step up for the note. But, my dearest, take care what you do ; it is our all ; and be sure you are not tempted to anything like simony ; it is a great crime, and makes a man incapable of ever rising if it is detected'.

'And the fool that is detected deserves never to rise. You may call a thing by what nonsensical name you please, but, if knowledge of the world were to prevent people's rising in it, I do not know who would be uppermost nowadays. Bring me the note, and leave the rest to me. You shall know nothing of what I intend till it is done, and then the fault, if any, will be all mine. Here, Jane, settle the furbelows of my scarf, and John, call a chair to the door directly'.

'Well, my dear, here is the note ; I leave all to you. I do not desire to know what you intend, but remember, my dear, this note is our all'.

'Never fear ; the chair is come, and I must lose no time. You will divert yourself with your children or books, I suppose, or go to the coffee-house. Perhaps I may not return till it is late'.

'I wish you success, my dear, and pray be cautious'.

With these words, the doctor retired, but to which of the amusements his wife mentioned, I cannot say, for he had given me to her, who carried me away to the bishop's.

When she came there, the footman answered that it was not his lady's night, and she was not at home ; but my mistress had lived too long among the great to take his words in their literal meaning, and putting half-a-crown into his hand, told him she had some earnest business, and must see her. The doors instantly flew open, his lady was at home, and my mistress shown up without any further difficulty.

The bishop's lady was sitting at a snug party, with three or four select friends, and seemed not much pleased at the intrusion of my mistress, to whom she scarce deigned a nod, but turning to the footman, 'I thought, sirrah', said she, 'that I was not to be at home this evening. I suppose I shall have all the mob of the town let in upon me'.

'Dear madam', replied my mistress, 'the man is not to blame. He told me you were not at home; but, having some very earnest business, I made bold to break through your orders, but hope for your pardon when you know the cause of my intrusion'.

'Oh, madam', returned the lady, 'you know I am always glad of your company. I only chide the fellow for not obeying my orders. Pray be seated, madam; as soon as the rubber is up I shall wait upon you'.

'Dear madam', added my mistress, 'you need not give yourself that trouble. Now I am with you, my business can wait your leisure'.

CHAPTER XLIV

A GENTEEL EVENING—A DREAM AND A BET, AND A FAMILY SUPPER—CONJUGAL TENDERNESS—THE BISHOP'S DEJECTION AT THE DEATH OF THE DOCTOR AND DANGER OF THE ARCHBISHOP IS DIVERTED BY ANOTHER DREAM

WHEN the rubber was finished, my mistress was asked to cut in—one of the party being taken suddenly ill—which she did, and sat out the whole evening, her success at cards keeping up her spirits, and giving her hopes of the like in the greater affair she came about. But her patroness had very different fortune, having lost every rubber, and, what was still worse, several by-bets, which she made to bring herself home.

This put her into such a temper, that the moment the rest of the company was gone, she turned to my mistress, who saw them all out—'And now, pray, madam, may I ask you what was the great business that brought you here this evening,' said she. 'Unlucky business it has been for me, I know, for I have never held a card since you came. But I shall take care that rascal who let you in shall never serve me so again. He shall strip, and turn off without his breakfast, the moment I am up in the morning'.

'Dear madam', replied my mistress, unabashed at such a salute, 'have patience a moment, and I hope to make you amends for all. Will you please to sit down to one sober party of piquet? You are always too hard for me, yet I'll venture all my winnings, and perhaps what I have to say in the meantime may compensate for my intrusion'.

The lady could not imagine what she meant; but the thought of so good a match brought her a little to her temper, and, though it was near ten o'clock, she sat down to cards with as much

keenness as if six hours drudging at them had only whetted her desire for play.

As soon as a *repique* or two had confirmed her good humour, my mistress says to her: 'Dear madam, that is right. Have you heard of the sad accident that happened this evening'?

'Not I', replied the other. 'Pray, what was it'?

'Why, poor Dr —— was taken ill shortly after dinner, and died in his chair'.

'Ah, then, I suppose he had plum-porridge, and over-eat himself, and so burst a pudding, as we say to children. Ha! ha! ha! Ha! ha! ha!'

'But pray, madam, have you any faith in dreams? What do you think? I dreamed last night that I saw you at court, on some great occasion, with just such a diamond necklace on as the Countess's, which you had bought with five hundred pounds, that you won from me on a bet, you laying that my husband would, and I that he would not get the doctor's living. Well, to be sure, there must be something more than ordinary in it, for, can you believe it? this very morning I put a bank-note for five hundred pounds in my pocket. Here it is; though I did not think of the poor man's death till I heard it as I came by this evening, when the dream ran so strongly in my head, that I could not forbear breaking in upon you, a rudeness I never should have been guilty of upon any other occasion'.

'Dear madam, you need make no apology to me; you know your company is always welcome; I am always at home to you'.

'But, madam, what do you think of my dream'?

'I don't know. I only wish it were to prove true, for five hundred pounds could never come more seasonably'.

'Then you must win it, for my heart is set upon making the bet; and I assure you, I have such a regard for you, that I do not even wish you to lose, and that is what few gamblers can say'.

'You are a pleasant creature; but as for the bet, it shall be upon condition that my lord is not under any engagement to the minister, or her grace who got him the bishopric. If he is disengaged, I will lay you, and you shall lose, my girl, if it was ten times as much, and there's encouragement for you to hold. The bell rings. Will you walk down and take a bit of supper? There is nobody but my lord and I. But do not take the least notice of anything about the matter, nor even seem to have heard of the doctor's death, should my lord mention it. But muster all your spirits, and be as entertaining as you can, for I always work him up best when he goes to bed in a good humour'.

The piquet match being thus at an end, I was paid away to the bishop's lady, whose winnings and expectations sent her to supper in high spirits, where she found his lordship already seated in a very thoughtful mood.

After the usual complimentary expletives that usher in every polite conversation, 'Pray, my lord', says my new mistress to her husband, 'what will you eat? Shall I help you to a bit of this fricassee? I believe it is very good'.

'No, my dear, I thank you', replied his lordship, 'I have not the least appetite. What is it, pray'?

'Sweet-breads and cocks'-combs', returned his lady. 'You used to like them, and they are very nice; or will you help yourself to a bit of that fowl before you? Something you must eat'.

'No, my dear, I am obliged to your care; but I do not choose anything to-night; I am not very well. We all eat too much. Repletion kills half the people of England; we eat too much'.

'You are going to be hipped, my dear. John, give your master a glass of Madeira. Fill the glass; eating never hurt anyone who washed down his victuals with a glass of good wine; horse-meals, indeed, are enough to choke human creatures. So! do you not find yourself better now? Taste this fricassee; you cannot think how good it is'.

'Well, you will have your way; you may do as you please, though never so contrary to my inclinations. Do you call this a fricassee? I thought fricassees had spice put in them; this is as insipid as chopped hay. Lord deliver us from such cooks. The badness of servants, in general, seems to be a judgment on the vices of the age'.

'Well, my dear, taste that fowl; it looks like a good one, and the cook could not spoil that. Pray, madam, shall I trouble you to help his lordship to a leg and a wing, and a bit of the breast'?

'You give me too much; I shall never be able to eat all this; besides, you know, my dear, I choose a bit of the rump'.

'Eat that first, my dear, and then you shall have the rump. But what has happened to make you so low-spirited this evening'?

'Oh, child, who can be other than low-spirited when such instances of mortality happen before our eyes every hour? Who can tell but the misfortune may be his own next moment? There's Doctor —, poor man, was taken off this evening, without a minute's warning to prepare for such a tremendous change, just after he had made an hearty dinner.—Here, John, take away my plate; I will not eat a bit more, nor ever sleep after dinner again'.

'And, John, give your master another bumper of Madeira; that was what the doctor wanted; he ate a great deal, and did not allow himself any drink. Drink good wine, and never fear that eating will hurt you'.

'Ah! but that was not the case of his grace of —, who lies this moment in the agonies of death; his physicians left him two hours ago. The Lord prepare us all, and give us notice of His coming! He did not stint himself of wine; he took his bottle cheerfully, good man'.

'Cheerfully, did you say? I should have said sottishly; for he has done nothing but drink for these many years past. He has run into the opposite extreme from the doctor—drinking too much, and not eating enough to support nature. And I hope you do not say he is gone without warning at fourscore? He has had time enough to prepare; but why should these examples affect you particularly? You do not eat like the doctor, nor drink like his grace, and are young enough to be son to the youngest of them.

Why, then, should you fear their fate? Here, John, give me a pint glass half full of Madeira, and reach me three or four of those jellies. Now, my dear, if you are afraid to eat or drink, sup this with a bit of bread, and I will answer for its agreeing with you'.

My late mistress sat all this time at her supper, without being able to join in the conversation; but as soon as his lordship's taking the jellies made a pause in his lady's tenderness, she called for a glass of wine, and, bowing to the bishop, drank to him by the title of *his grace*, very gravely.

His lordship started, and his lady stared, while she finished her glass without any emotion, and seemed quite unconscious of having said anything unusual or improper. This behaviour still embarrassed them more, when the lady, unable to contain her surprise—'Dear madam', said she, 'what have you said? or how came you to address my lord by that title?'

'I hope, madam', replied the other, 'I have not said anything improper. You really frighten me. I hope I have not been failing in my respect, or addressed his lordship by any improper title?'

'I cannot say an improper one, indeed! but one that does not belong to him, at least as yet', returned the lady.

'Dear madam, what do you mean? Pray do not distress me. But you must divert yourself, surely. It is not possible that I could fail in any respect to his grace'.

'Ha! ha! ha! There it is again. Fail in your respect? No. You only raised your respect too high. You called him his grace, that's all'.

'And is that all? Thank Heaven that I did. And long live his grace, I say again', said she, dropping on her knees and eagerly kissing his hand. 'Long live your grace. There is, there must be, truth in dreams, and infidels alone can doubt it'.

At the mention of dreams, the bishop, who had hitherto continued to sip up his jelly without seeming to take any notice of what they were saying, could not forbear showing some emotion; for he had the strongest faith in them, and always sanguinely defended their credit, especially since his present elevation had confirmed those of his grandmother.

'What dreams, pray, good madam?' said he, addressing my late mistress with a visible anxiety. 'What dreams do you mean? Those which were thought to have respect to me are understood to be already accomplished'.

'Please, your grace, the impulse of the spirit is upon me, and I cannot call you by any other title. Please, your grace, I say I dreamed last night, as I told your lady but just now, that I met her at court on some very great occasion, as fine as hands could make her (I told her this just now, before I knew one syllable of his grace's death), and that she came up to me smiling, and thanked me for the cause of her coming there, for it was I who had made you a great man. Now, what could this possibly mean, but what has happened here this moment, when, by giving you this title first (and, Lord knows, I did it without the least design, or even being sensible of it when I did it), I may, in some manner, be said to have made you the great man it belonged to. Let the world say what they will, I do believe there is truth in dreams, and I think mine is out now'.

She ran on with this rant at such a rate, that it was impossible for the bishop to interrupt her, even had he been so inclined. But that was far from being the case. He heard her with attention, and what she said made such an impression on him, that he sat some time musing on it after she had stopped, before he had power to speak a word.

As for his lady, she at once took it to be all a fetch, calculated merely to forward the scheme of the wager about the doctor's living, and as such, resolved to humour it, and not interrupt his meditations; but addressing herself to the other, 'Indeed madam', said she, 'I do not know what to say to this affair. When you told me your dream just now, I made nothing of it, but this account of his grace's death almost staggers me. Well, if this succeeds, and who knows what may happen, I shall ever hereafter have more faith in dreams'.

CHAPTER XLV

A DISSERTATION ON DREAMING—THE DREAM PURSUED TO THE ASTONISHMENT AND ALMOST CONVERSION OF THE BISHOP'S LADY—HER VERACITY IN RECOUNTING SOME CIRCUMSTANCES RELATING TO IT—SHE AND HIS LORDSHIP PERSUADE EACH OTHER TO DREAM THAT IT IS TRUE

By this time his lordship had considered the matter, and addressing himself to the dreamer—'Pray, madam', said he, 'what time had you this vision or dream? In the night, or towards the morning'?

'In the morning, my lord', replied she, 'at the conclusion of my second sleep; and, indeed, it made such an impression upon my mind, that I could not go to sleep after; for it was not in the confusion of common dreams. I saw everything distinctly and regularly, as if I was in the very place; and particularly your lady appeared as plainly to me as she sits there, Lord bless her! And by the same token, she was dressed in white damask, spick and span new, and had the most beautiful diamond necklace on that ever my eyes beheld; and charmingly she looked, I thought'.

'I really do not know what to say to this matter', replied his lordship, with great deliberation. 'The visions of the morning have ever been held in most repute, for then the mind has recovered from the fatigues of the preceding day, and is able to exert its abilities, and look forward into the time to come. There are some good circumstances, I own, in this dream. I am glad that my wife was not dressed in colours; that would have been an ill omen; but white is the peculiar garment of success—angels are clad in white—and in this case particularly, it may prefigure the episcopal lawn, as that is an emblematical type of the purity of the episcopal function, and the episcopal and archiepiscopal differ only in degree. As for the necklace, there may be more in that also than is apprehended. Precious stones are the insignia of dignity, and in the Jewish priesthood, particularly, were symbolical of the highest

order ; for none of the priests wore them but the supreme or high priest, whose dignity answered nearly to that of primate with us ; and if such further blessings should be the Divine Will, it were impious and ungrateful to refuse its favours. Perhaps I speak unintelligibly to you, but the opinions of the learned must be delivered in their phrase'.

'Pray, my lord, proceed ; I could hear your lordship for ever. I am always the wiser and the better for hearing your lordship'.

'Then, as to the credit to be given to dreams', resumed his lordship, 'though the scepticism of these unhappy times may deny it, yet the piety of wiser antiquity was of another opinion, of which numberless instances might be given out of the holy Scriptures. And among the Gentiles, the greatest of their poets says,

"Οὐρανὸν ἐκ δῖος ἐστ."

That is, in English, dreams proceed from Jove—that is, from the Supreme Deity—whom they erroneously call by that name. And though the heathens were guilty of great superstitions in this particular of dreams, it was not in the credit they gave them, but in the methods which they used to procure them ; such as offering sacrifices, and sleeping in the skins of the victims, and many others ; whereas the dream that comes from Heaven, comes unsought and unexpected, and should be received with reverence. And if this is such, and I own it has much of the appearance, Thy will be done, O Lord ! Thy servant submits as it is his duty'.

Greatly as they must have been edified by this elaborate dissertation, the ladies had much ado to refrain from laughing in his face while he delivered it, especially his wife, who knew not which to admire most, the readiness of the thought, or the ease with which it was received. But the dreamer had a further scheme in her head, to carry on which she now got up to go away ; and, bending the knee to the bishop, 'My lord', said she, 'may I beg your lordship's blessing ? I hope, and I am confident in that hope, that mine was not a common dream, from the impression it made on my mind, which could not have been stronger, if I had actually been present at your lady's kissing the king's hand, on your promotion. But, if my zeal has hurried me too far in my expressions of it, I rely on your goodness to forgive my fault, which was rather an enthusiasm than a design ; and so, my lord, I beg leave to wish you a good night'.

With these words, she withdrew, and her patroness, wondering she had not thrown her a wink, and desirous to have a laugh with her at her husband's credulity, went as to see her to her chair ; when turning with her into another room—'That was an excellent thought', said she, 'and will make our affair quite easy if he is not engaged'.

'I do not understand you, madam', replied the other, 'pray what thought do you mean' ?

'Why, child, that of the dream. What else should I mean' ?

'A thought, dear madam ! Why, do not you think I was serious, and the dream real' ?

‘Not one word of either, I assure you ; and I wonder at your asking me that question here, where no one is present to observe us’.

‘Dear madam, you have quite mistaken me, I assure you. It is true, I can jest sometimes, but in this, give me leave to say that I was most serious ; and what is more, that I am sure the event will confirm it’.

‘You astonish me, madam ; I declare, I looked upon the whole as a mere *finesse* to promote our scheme about the doctor’s living for your husband’.

‘I am sorry, madam, that you should have such an opinion of me, as that I could invent such a story on any account’.

‘Well, as I said before, though in another sense, I know not what to make of the whole. But, as you are so positive, and my lord seems inclined to believe you, perhaps there may be more in it than I can see, and therefore I shall suspend my opinion till I see the end of it. This though I promise, that my assistance shall not be wanting to either part of the dream’.

‘And I promise you that I will make good all I said, particularly about the wager and the necklace ; and so, madam, I wish you a good night. I shall do myself the pleasure to call and see how you are in the morning’.

This gave the whole affair a new face, and threw the bishop’s lady into a meditation as profound as his lordship’s.

‘Can this be possible’ ? said she to herself. ‘And yet, how could she have the face to stand it out so, if it was not true ? But then it was but a dream. Ay, but my husband says dreams are not to be slighted, and he should know more than I, at least of those things that are to be found in books. And what if it should be so after all ? and that I should take place of Mrs —, and Mrs —, and Mrs —, and all the rest of the bishops’ ladies ? That would be charming. And I believe in my soul I shall ; for I have always looked upon them with a contempt that showed I should be one day their superior. Well, happy come lucky, says the proverb ; my endeavours shall not be wanting, as I promised Mrs —, whose five hundred pounds will be a pretty earnest of the archbishopric’.

Having thus argued herself into a kind of belief of the dream, she went in to his lordship, whom she found absorbed in thought about the vision.

‘Well, my dear’, said she, sitting down by him, ‘what is your opinion of this strange matter ? I own it is above my comprehension. At first I imagined she might have been only in jest, and have invented the whole story merely to divert your lowness of spirits ; but when I went out with her into the next parlour, and put it home to her, she still persisted in it, and confirmed the truth of what she said by such assertions that I could not avoid believing her’.

‘But, my dear,’ replied his lordship, ‘she said she told you her dream before she came in here, or had heard a word of his grace’s illness’.

‘She most certainly did, my lord, and with other circumstances, that make the whole still more surprising. Pray, what time did the doctor die, my dear’ ?

'About half an hour after four'.

'That is most wonderful. And pray, my dear, who is to have his living? or are you under any engagement about it?'

'No, child, I am not; nor have I determined whom to give it to. But why do you ask these questions? What are they to the purpose of the dream?'

'I shall tell you, my lord. You must know, then, that she came here about four o'clock, just as I had got up from dinner, all in the greatest hurry, and with a kind of wildness, I do not know how, in her looks, told me her dream; but with some circumstances that I know her bashfulness would not permit her to mention before you; and these were, that I had bought the diamond necklace she thought I had on at court, with five hundred pounds which I had won from her, on a wager that you would give her husband the doctor's living. Now, as he was not even sick at the time of her telling me this, there could be no design in it; and this is what makes me take the more notice of the matter'.

'But are you sure, child, that she told you this so early as four o'clock?'

'Rather before it, my dear; and what makes me so positive about it is, that a little after she had finished her story she happened to look at her watch; but it was down, and so she asked me what o'clock it was by mine, that she might set by it, and I remember it wanted exactly six minutes of four'.

'Pray, let me look at your watch; have you not altered it since?'

'No, my dear. But why do you ask?'

'Because it is nine minutes faster than mine, and it was just half an hour past four by his watch, as they told me, when he died, and his and mine were exactly together, so that the six minutes which your watch wanted of four, and the nine minutes it is faster than mine, make a quarter before four, which was three quarters before he died. This is most wonderful, for there could be no design or art in it. This is most wonderful! But there have been many revelations made in dreams, even in our own times, as for instance, that in Drelincourt; for it could be no other than a dream; and that other of the great Duke of Buckingham's rise, and afterwards of his death, as it is most judiciously and faithfully represented by the Reverend Historian¹, not to mention many more. As to the doctor's living, my dear, I make you a compliment of it; you may give it to whom you please. Though the curate is a very learned and good man, and has a large family, beside that, he has been recommended to me by the whole parish, whom his long residence among them—for he has been there above thirty years—has made love and respect him as a father'.

'Then let them provide for him, like dutiful children. What assurance! to pretend to dictate to you, as if you were not the proper judge of such matters. If it was for no other reason, I would not give it to him, to teach them their duty and distance another time'.

'There may be something in that. I do not like such interfering

¹ Echard.

in my conduct neither ; and therefore you may give it to whom you please. And her husband is a man of learning and good character, too, who will not discredit any preferment ; but take care that you do not anything improper. As to your wager, there is no harm in that ; but even so, it should be kept a secret. I must know nothing of the matter'.

'I thank you, my dear lord. I shall be sure to observe your directions ; and the accomplishment of this part of the dream I take a happy presage of the rest. But you must not be wanting to yourself. You had better, I think, go to her grace, and see what may offer to promote our hopes'.

'That is not a bad thought, my dear ; but it grows late ; in the morning we shall see what is to be done'.

Saying this, they withdrew whither we must not follow them ; for of the genial bed 'with most mysterious reverence I deem'.

CHAPTER XLVI

HISTORY OF THE DREAMER—SHE LOSES HER WAGER, WHICH SHE PAYS WITH PLEASURE—HIS LORDSHIP WAITS UPON HER GRACE—HIS KNOWLEDGE OF THE WORLD PROMOTES A NOBLE INSTANCE OF CHARITY—CHRYSLAL ENTERS INTO THE SERVICE OF HER GRACE

I HAVE observed your surprise and admiration at the ready presence of mind and confidence of my late mistress, who could, in a moment, invent such a story, and persist in it so steadily, as not only to impose upon the bishop's easy credulity, but even upon his wife also, who was, in a manner, in the secret of her design, but could not interrupt my story to satisfy it sooner by giving you her history.

She was a distant relation to a noble lord, on whom the extravagance of her father left her dependent. This occasioned her being taken into his family, where she lived several years as a humble companion to his lady. As she was handsome, his lordship had a mind for a nearer relation with her ; but an unfashionable virtue prevented her compliance, which turned his love into the strongest hatred, for fear she should inform his lady, to whom she was not more agreeable, and upon the same account, as her observing temper had given her an opportunity of seeing much more than her ladyship desired to have her tell.

This made her situation very unhappy in the family, and inclined her to hearken to the addresses of the chaplain, to whom his lordship gave a small vicarage with her, as did his lady five hundred pounds, that they might part decently, and not provoke her to speak. As for herself, you have seen that Nature was liberal to her in the endowments of her mind, which the state which she was bred in improved, or rather sharpened into a thorough knowledge of the world, that enables her to take the advantage of all its follies.

But to return to the bishop and his lady. This affair had made such an impression on their minds, that they could dream of nothing

else all night but pomp and precedence, which effectually secured the grant in favour of my late mistress from all danger of revocation.

They were scarce seated to breakfast, when word was brought them that she was below, upon which she was immediately invited up, her company being too agreeable to admit of any distance or reserve.

The compliments of the morning being paid on all sides, his lordship, with a look of great benevolence, asked her for her husband, and if he was at home, to which she answered that he was, and ready to pay his duty to his lordship, if he had any commands to honour him with.

'None that will be disagreeable, I hope', replied his lordship, 'and if he is at leisure'.

'At leisure, my lord'! replied she, in a kind of rapture, for a wink from the lady had explained the matter to her. 'He is, he must be at leisure. No business can interfere with his duty. I'll step for him this moment'.

'You need not give yourself that trouble, madam', returned his lordship. 'John, do you go and tell Mr — that I should be glad to speak with him; for, madam, I think I cannot do less than reward his learning, piety, and good life, with the living of the poor doctor. It is what I have long resolved, though I never mentioned it before, because I would not torture him with expectations; and I give it to him now, thus early and unasked, to spare his modesty, and to save myself from the solicitations of others'.

'Long live, God bless your grace'! said she, throwing herself at his feet, and embracing his knees in ecstasy; 'for so I see it will be; everything will come out just according to my dream. I could not forbear sending to the late archbishop's just before I came here, and the porter (for I would not send a servant, for fear my known attachment to your lordship should make it taken notice of) brought me word that he was at peace'.

This completed the bishop's faith, and prevented his sending to inquire, for the same delicate reason that she gave.

'I must wish you joy, madam', said the bishop's lady, 'of this advance in your fortune, though I am almost angry that my lord did not let me into the secret. I have lost some hours' happiness by his reserve, for I always make the happiness of my friends my own'.

'Dear madam, I thank you; on my knees I thank, I pray for you both. And give me leave, madam, to wish you joy of his lordship's promotion, and of your just advance in rank, as well as of all the ornaments belonging to it'.

'The necklace, I suppose you mean? Ha, ha, ha'!

'I do, indeed, dear madam, and of every other happiness that can attend so elevated a station'.

Her husband now entered, in the utmost agitation of spirits between hope and fear, for he was not a stranger to his wife's scheme; (indeed he had suggested the first hint of the bet himself, but with an address that made her think it was her own, he spoke so distantly; for he always preserved the appearance of character, even with her), and the ladies, not thinking it proper to be present at the mysterious

ceremony of the bishop's signing the collation—which he did directly to avoid giving offence, by refusing other applications—they withdrew, when my mistress was paid her bet, with as great pleasure, by the loser, as she felt in receiving it.

The dream, being thus far happily accomplished, the successful dreamer and her husband went home in the highest joy at being at length relieved from the anxiety of dependence and the fears of want, while my lord prepared to pay his duty at her grace's levee,¹ and see whether anything should offer that might promote his part of it.

When he was ready to go, he called to his lady to receive her advice, and, recollecting that he had forgot his purse, he desired to borrow her's, in which I was, and thus I changed my service once more.

When his lordship entered her grace's levee, and had paid his most humble respects, he found the conversation turn on a melancholy accident that had lately happened to a village in his diocese, which was entirely burnt to the ground by an accidental fire. There were many circumstances so moving in the account of this misfortune as to raise the compassion of the whole company, and particularly of her grace, who said that she would most willingly contribute to the relief of their distress, but that unluckily she had not less than a bank-note for twenty pounds about her.

All the company, who knew the world, understood her grace, and dropped the subject; but my new master, who had his knowledge of mankind mostly from books, was so far from taking the hint, that he thought he showed his respect to his patroness by offering to change her note, or lend her whatever money she wanted.

Her grace was surprised, as the company were confounded, at the ignorant insolence of such an offer. However, as this was not an occasion for showing her resentment, she coldly told him she would trouble him for the change, and having received it, gave two guineas to the person who had mentioned the affair, and carelessly threw the rest, among which I was, into her pocket, not caring to pull out her purse, as it was full of money.

My late master, pleased with the thought of having been instrumental in so meritorious a benevolence, displayed his eloquence in thanks to her for her eminent charity to his poor flock, and then gave a guinea himself (for respect to her grace would not permit him to exceed the half of her bounty), as did the rest of the company, who all laughed in their sleeves to think how my master had ruined himself with her grace by his blunder.

But his mind was too full of the dream to observe their looks; and he was so far from being sensible that he had done amiss, that when her grace was going to retire, he boldly stepped up to her, and begged leave to speak a word or two with her in private.

Though the assurance of this request greatly aggravated his former offence, yet she could not decently refuse such a favour to his rank, and therefore slightly nodded to him to follow her.

¹ The Countess of Yarmouth, George the Second's mistress, Amalie Wallmoden, *née* Von Wendt.

CHAPTER XLVII

THE BISHOP OBTAINS THE HONOUR OF A PRIVATE AUDIENCE—HIS EXTENSIVE CHARITY—HE MAKES HER GRACE HIS ALMONER TO RELIEVE HIS FELLOW-PROTESTANTS IN GERMANY—HE IS STRANGELY AFFECTED AT THE NEWS OF THE ARCHBISHOP'S RECOVERY—HER GRACE'S CHARACTER

THE great honour of this private audience at first put him into some confusion, but, recollecting the consequence at stake, he, after much hesitation, made a shift to tell her that, 'sensible of her grace's great humanity and commiseration for the sufferings of the distressed, of which she had just given so noble an instance'.

'Pray, my lord, no compliments', said her grace, interrupting him with a look and accent not very encouraging, 'I am not at present at leisure for them; and if you have no other business—'

'May it please your grace', replied the bishop, 'your virtues are above compliment; and I come to give you an opportunity of exerting them, not solely to praise them'.

'I do not understand you, my lord, and I am in some haste'.

'I most humbly beg your grace's pardon; I shall not delay you long. To come, then, briefly to the purpose, I must inform your grace that out of the income which it hath pleased the Divine Providence, through your grace's means to give me, I have thought it my duty to lay by some little matter, to make a return with, to the Divine beneficence, in charity to His distressed creatures. Now, as your grace's kind interest was the means through which this ability was conferred upon me, I have made bold to trouble you with the distribution of my mite'.

'Me, my lord? You astonish me! I cannot comprehend you'.

'I beg your grace's indulgence for a moment. You will forgive this boldness when you know the motive—hem! hem!—The sufferings of my Protestant brethren in Germany—I say brethren, for men should know no distinction but religion—their sufferings, I say, in this calamitous time of war and rapine, when the ambition of princes works the ruin of their people, has made such an impression upon my heart, that I come to offer this small matter to your grace, to be applied to their relief, as your better knowledge shall see most proper; a trouble which I should not have presumed to give your grace, did not I know that such works of charity are a pleasure to you, and that the better information, which in your high rank you must necessarily have, will enable you to apply it more effectually to their relief than I, in the darkness and ignorance of my humble station, possibly can. I am almost ashamed of the smallness of the sum (it is but two thousand pounds), but it is all that I have yet been able to save, though I hope to give a better account of my stewardship another time, and that I shall be found not to have buried my talent, especially if it should please the Divine Providence to raise me to a higher station, and thereby put the means more liberally into my power. 'I most

humbly beg your grace's forgiveness of this intrusion of your time. I am your grace's most humble servant'.

'Stay, my lord', returned her grace, with a look and accent softened into the most engaging affability. 'Pray, do not go. I see you so seldom, except in the crowd, that I cannot part with you so soon. I thank you for the confidence you place in me, and shall apply your charity to the best of my judgment. Poor people! they greatly want relief, and if the invincible fortitude of the Bulgarian monarch does not extricate them soon, they will be entirely ruined. But everything is to be hoped for from such a hero. You are very good to consider the distresses of the poor people. There are few now who think of anything but themselves; so their appetites are satisfied, they have no feeling for what others suffer. But, my lord, is there anything that I can serve you in? You may depend upon my interest at all times'.

'I am much beholden to your grace', replied his lordship, elevated at such an offer, and now secure, as he thought, of his hopes. 'I am much beholden to your grace. I have had too much experience of your grace's goodness to doubt it. Nothing that I know of, at present. If anything should happen, I shall be most grateful to your grace for your kind remembrance. We are all desirous of having our power to do good enlarged'.

'Yes, my lord, all good men, like your lordship, are. It is a duty to desire so. But, have you heard anything of the Archbishop of — lately'?

'Not very lately, please your grace'.

'I believe that old man will never die. He was taken with a fit yesterday, and it was thought he would expire every moment; but he has got over it, and is abroad to-day, as well as he has been for many years'.

'In—d—e—d'!

'What is the matter, my lord? Something seems to ail you'.

'A—a—sud—den—f—aint—ness—has—come—o—o—ver—me; I—mu—st—beg—y—our—Grace—'s—p—ardon.—I—am y—our—Grace—'s—m—ost—h—h—umble servant'. With which words he made a bad shift to crawl out, muttering to himself—'Oh, my money, my money! Oh, this cursed dream; my money, my money'!

Her grace looked earnestly after him for a few minutes, as if lost in thought, and then, bursting into a loud laughter: 'And is it so, my good lord? does the wind sit that way? Then I can account for your charity. Ha! ha! ha! But you are disappointed this time, and, I fear, will be the next, too, if you do not bid better. Two thousand for five hundred a year! Is that your conscience? but it will never do'.

I was now at the summit of human grandeur, the favourite of the favourite of a mighty monarch. For curiosity tempting me to take a view of my new mistress's heart as she sat at her toilet, I found myself established there without a rival, in the most absolute authority, every passion being subservient to my rule; even the love of power, which had, in every other instance, disputed the empire with me, being here my most abject slave, and encouraged

for no other reason than solely to promote my interest, the mighty spirit of the immense mass of gold which my mistress had accumulated having taken entire possession of her soul.

CHAPTER XLVIII

THE TRUE USE OF COURT FAVOUR—THE BITER BITTEN—AN EASY WAY TO OBTAIN A FINE FEATHER FOR A FOOL'S CAP—THE INSOLENCIE OF OFFICE IN HINDERING A HOUSE TO BE BUILT INSTEAD OF A HEN-COOP, AND SPOILING HER GRACE'S DAIRY—HOW TO MAKE THE MOST OF A COMMON—A BEAU LORD BEATEN BY A BAILIFF FOR WALKING THE FIELDS IN AN UNDESS

WHILE my late master retired, to meditate on the exposition of dreams and to please himself with the virtuous reflection of so singular an act of charity, her grace sat down to her toilet, where I saw art triumph over the depredations of time, and create a beauty denied by nature.

When this serious work was so far completed that she could attend to other business, one of her most favourite domestics told her that she had that very morning received an offer from a man who kept a noted beer-house and shuffle-board for the place of a tapster to the Lord-Mayor, which she was sure her grace's interest would readily obtain.

'Tapster', answered her grace, 'what is the value of that place? Reach me the list of employments, with their salaries and perquisites, out of that drawer. Let me see: Tapster to the Lord-Mayor: ay, here it is. Well, and pray, what does he offer for it?'

'A thousand guineas, please your grace', replied her woman, 'which I really think enough for it, considering everything'.

'Do you, indeed; but I do not. Why, it is rated to me here as worth five hundred pounds a year, and is that worth no more than a thousand guineas? Does the fellow value his own life only at two years' purchase?'

'Five hundred pounds a year! How can that be? The salary is no more than sixty; there must be some mistake in your return'.

'The salary, the salary signifies nothing; it is the perquisites. The perquisites are the thing! Do you think any place is valued by the salary? The perquisites of this place are very considerable. Let me see. Why, he buys in all the beer and gin himself, for which he can charge what price he pleases, and then his own account is taken for the quantity that is drank. Ay, indeed; there must be a mistake in my return, to be sure, but not of the kind you mean. The place is rated too low, for, with such opportunities, it must be worth twice the sum, and I shall inquire into that matter before I dispose of the place. A thousand guineas for such a place! I wonder at the fellow's conscience to make such an offer'.

'All this is very true; but then there are some circumstances that must be considered on the other hand too. You know the Lord-Mayor's year is almost ended, and then, who knows whether

his successor will continue all the servants or not ? This one, it certainly is most likely he will not ; for, as he is a known enemy to gambling, and has publicly declared that he will put the laws in execution against all such practices, it cannot be thought that he will permit a fellow who has kept a house that has been so notorious for it, and where so many men have been brought to the gallows and their families to beggary, to hold a place of such profit under him. Besides, he has people of his own to provide for, who have served his father and himself in such a manner as to deserve his confidence and regard, so that every chance, to speak in his own way, is against this man, which is so well known, that nobody else would bid for the thing at all ; wherefore, if I may presume to speak my opinion, his offer should be immediately accepted'.

'There may be something in what you say ; but then, if it was so very precarious a place, do you think some of his customers would not inform him of it ? they certainly must know it'.

'Why, the very reason of my desiring your grace to close with him directly is for fear they should tell him, as they undoubtedly would, if they suspected his intention in the least ; but he conceals it from them, for the principal motive of his quitting the business he is in, and seeking this place is, because the greatest part of his customers have got deeply into his debt, which he can never expect them to pay, while he continues his business ; whereas, he thinks, if he can get this place, it will be a good excuse for his calling in his money, and then the Lord Mayor's power will protect him from their resentments. This is the true secret of the matter, for, if it was not on this account, he has a much better opportunity of getting money where he is than in any place'.

'Well, then, be it so ; make the most you can of it, and I care not how soon the fellow is turned out after. What is the matter ? What do you laugh at ?'

'I beg your grace's pardon ; an odd thought just came in my head, but it does not signify'.

'What is it ? Come, I must know it'.

'Why, I am almost ashamed to mention it ; though it is but a trifle neither, as such matters go now. Your grace knows that my husband has a place under the Lord Mayor. Now, it just came into my head that, when his lordship comes to wait upon the king to be knighted, it would be no bad joke if his majesty could be prevailed on to knight my husband also'.

'Ha ! ha ! ha ! And so madam has a mind to be a lady ? Why, with all my heart. There is no great matter in it, to be sure, and I see no reason why you should not have that title as well as a chandler or shoemaker's wife. Indeed, the candidates for knighthood have run so very low of late that a man of honour should be ashamed to accept of it. But that is no concern of mine. I get the money and where I can do that, I care not if it was from Jack Ketch ; let others look to that. Well, since you have taken a fancy to stick a fool's feather in your cap, tell your good man, when he kneels by his master at the important ceremony, not to be too hasty to rise, and I'll take care that your ambition shall be satisfied, though I do not know what we must do then. Your

ladyship will never condescend to put on my shoes, or take away the bed-pan, so that I believe I must look out for another servant'.

'Your grace is pleased to joke; but you are very well convinced that I have no ambition above your service, and shall ever be proud to perform the meanest offices about you. Indeed, in this affair, I have more respect to your grace's honour than to myself. While I wait upon you (and I would not give up that to be made a countess), I am but your servant, let me be called by what title I will; but then I think it is not proper that you should be waited on by common servants, like any other person of your apparent rank. As you are the fountain of all honour and nobility, you should have nobles to attend you as well as knights, if I could have my wish. And it was this tenderness of your grace's honour that made me so particularly affected at what happened yesterday'.

'Yesterday? I do not understand you. What happened yesterday'?

'Your grace may remember that you were so kind some time ago as to obtain leave for me, from the lord of the manor, to build a little poultry house in a corner of yonder common field. I accordingly set the masons to work, and, liking the situation, thought it was no great trespass to enlarge the yard a little, and build a lodge, with a room or two, where I could have my clothes washed, and drink a dish of tea with a friend at any time when I might have a mind to be retired. But, behold, after the wall of the yard was built, and the lodge raised as high as the first storey, the bailiff of the manor happened to come by, and, seeing what I intended, had the insolence to fly into a passion, and, saying it was an encroachment beyond the leave I had obtained, obliged the workmen to pull down every stone they had laid, though I myself, on receiving notice of it, went there, and told him it was by your grace's order, and for your own use, and alleged the expense you had been at. But it was all to no purpose, for he would not leave the place till his orders were executed. Nor was this all. He has had the assurance also to send me word this very morning that he will distrain the cows that you desired me to put to graze in that field, if I do not directly pay for their pasture, according to the rate he is pleased to charge, which is more than I have been able to make of the milk, though, by your grace's recommendation, I have had such good customers for it; so that instead of the profit I expected to make for you of your dairy, your grace is like to be a loser'.

'Insolent, unreasonable fellow! not to be content with his own extravagant profits, without hindering everybody else of coming in for the least advantage with him; but he has neither shame nor conscience, or else he would be satisfied with plundering the ponds, and selling the fish, and hiring out the grass as he does, without putting the parish to the expense of fencing in the common to prevent the people even from walking over the grass. But I may, some time or other, find a way to be even with him. He stands but badly in his master's favour, who despises such avarice, and would turn him out of his place directly, but that, unluckily, he has it under his hand for life. However, I shall watch every opportunity to return him the compliment; that I can assure him. Let

him take such liberties with his equals ; I'll have him to know that he shall treat me with more respect'.

'That is true. Has your grace heard how cavalierly he behaved lately to the young Lord —— ? I forget his name. The great beau that made such a noise by dangling after the gentleman's wife'.

'I know whom you mean. No, I have heard nothing about him. What has been the matter' ?

'Ha ! ha ! ha ! I do not believe I shall be able to tell it for laughing. Why, your grace must know that the beau was walking one morning in a very plain dress, across the upper part of the common, where, happening to meet a farmer's maid going to drive home her cows, he entered into chat with her, and prevailed upon her to quit the path and walk with him to an unfrequented part of the field, where they sat down under a clump of trees, for the sake of a little very innocent conversation, to be sure. Well, they had not been there long, when one of the under bailiffs, whom this insolent fellow keeps to watch the grass, seeing them go out of the road followed them, and, coming upon them in a very unseasonable minute, not only interrupted their conversation, but also asked the lord, whose quality he never suspected, in an imperious manner, how he dared to trample the grass, and threatened to take him and his whore before a justice and have them directly sent to Bridewell. This insult aggravated the offence of his intrusion to such a height, that the lord in a rage bade the scoundrel instantly get out of his sight, or he would break his head. Such words, from a person of his appearance, raised the insolence of office so high, that the bailiff, without any more ado, lifted his staff and knocked his lordship down, where he belaboured him severely, repeating the word scoundrel between every blow, till the poor battered beau was in a most doleful plight, though he had often told him who he was, and roared out his quality with all his might ; but the enraged fellow either did not, or pretended that he did not, believe him.

'When he had beaten him as much as he thought he could, without danger of the gallows, he dragged him along to the highway, where, fortunately, a coach happened to come by, the owner of which knew his lordship, and took him up, ordering his servants to apprehend the bailiff. But he was too nimble for them, and made his escape ; and now, finding his mistake and the danger into which he had fallen, he went directly to his master, and telling him the story in the most favourable manner for himself, prevailed upon him to promise to stand by him, particularly as he alleged that the affair had proceeded from his great care of his master's grass, which could never be kept, if he should be left to suffer for defending it.

'In the meantime, the poor lord was in so very bad a taking that all the physicians and surgeons in town were gathered about him, by whose assistance he was confined to his bed for near a week. As soon as he was permitted to speak and see his friends, he sent directly to the head bailiff, to let him know how his man had used him ; but all the satisfaction he could obtain, even when he went and applied in person, was to have the fellow removed to another part of the common ; nor could he obtain this, till he declared that he would

make his complaint directly to the lord of the manor if he had not some redress. It is said he talked of challenging him, but he is one of the grand jury of the court-leet, and therefore cannot be called to an account that way'.

CHAPTER XLIX

AN ODD VISITOR TO A LADY—THE MYSTERY OF STOCK-JOBGING—
CHARITY BEGINS AT HOME—HER GRACE'S KIND INTENTIONS FOR
HONEST AMINADAB—ANOTHER VISITOR—THE WORTH OF HONOUR
—THE BEST SALVE FOR A BROKEN CHARACTER

By this time the mysteries of the toilet were over, and my mistress's face finished for the day, when a person entered to her, whose appearance was far from promising such an intimacy with a lady of her rank.

The most shabby, squalid dress covered a distorted carcass, not much above four feet high, but so gross that, laid upon his back, he would have cast a shadow near as long as when he stood upright. A deep olive complexion, an aquiline nose, and a mouth from ear to ear, fringed round with a greasy curled beard, made the beauty of his face correspond with the elegance of his figure.

This extraordinary person approached her grace without introduction or ceremony, and, entering immediately upon business, told her that he came to know if she meant to buy in that day; for the report raised in the alley, by their express from abroad, had given such a stroke to the funds that they had tumbled to the ground, but would most certainly rise again the next day, as soon as the news which had arrived that morning should be known, which could not be kept a secret, as the people wanted something to keep up their spirits among so many miscarriages, and divert them from making too close inquiries into the conduct of affairs.

'Why, my honest friend Aminadab', replied her grace, 'I must be directed in these matters by you. If you think there is anything to be got by buying in to-day, with all my heart; though I must own I cannot conceive why you should sell out the very last week to buy in this'.

'Ah! my lady', returned Aminadab, 'there is a mystery in all business, and in none greater than ours. The Bulgarian king's success last week raised people's spirits so high that they thought the world was to be all their own, and therefore bought at any price. Now that was the time for a prudent person to sell, as I advised your grace, which we had no sooner done, than instantly comes an express of our own, with an account that the enemy had turned upon him in their retreat, and entirely vanquished the vanquishers.

'This news quite overthrew the spirits raised by the former, and made every one eager to sell out at any loss, for fear the enemy should get wings and fly over to take all they had. Now, as this was but a terror raised by ourselves, we take the advantage of it, and so buy in when others are selling out at twenty per cent. cheaper than we ourselves sold out last week, when the madness bent the

other way, and may perhaps sell again the next, when another packet shall set things right, and bring the people back their senses. For the senses of the people of this country are as inconstant as the sea, depending entirely upon the winds that blow them news'.

'But is it really possible that any people can be such fools'?

'Oh! please your grace, they are only too rich; they have more money than they know what to do with, that is all'.

'Then, Aminadab, we will ease them of some of the burthen. And would it not be better to conceal this news for another day? Might not that make them fall still lower'?

'But, my lady, the people want the good news'.

'The people may hang themselves in despair; I care not, so I get money'.

'The government, though'.

'What is the government to me? I will get all I can, and then leave them to themselves to sink or swim as they will; it is all one to me'.

'That is true; your grace says right. A people who do not know, or, at least, will not follow their own interest, are not worth any person's care longer than while he can make something of them. But we must reserve that stroke for another time. This news has got into the offices, and nothing there is a secret, you know. Besides, the panic was too violent to last; it begins to wear off already. In another day, they would recover their senses of themselves. I think, therefore, with your grace's approbation, to buy in all I can to-day, without you had rather lay out your money in the supplies for the Protestants of Germany'.

'With all my heart, if you can make as much of it that way as in the funds; but not otherwise. I would not lose one shilling for any people under heaven'.

'Your grace has a just notion of the world, and of the value of money that governs it. Indeed, I must say that the terms for these supplies are very unreasonable, considering how such things have been done for some time past. It is expected that people should bring in their money without any premium or other advantage than what was publicly calculated for at the granting them. But these economists will find themselves mistaken. The world is wiser nowadays than to give up advantages which they have once gotten possession of. As to that affair, therefore, I should think it better to let it stand a little longer till the necessity becomes more urgent, and then they will be glad to come into our terms, if it were not that the poor people may be ruined in the meantime; so that indeed I am at a loss what to advise your grace to do in so nice an affair'.

'Why, let them be ruined, then; it is not my fault, nor is it my business to save them, nor will I part with a shilling to do it. Besides, if they do suffer by the delay, those who gave them this supply to prevent their ruin may give them another to repair it'.

'I cannot but admire your grace's judgment in all things. You are above the foolish weakness of nature, and have the noble resolution to see your own family perish, rather than injure your own interest to relieve them. I shall obey your grace in all things. I go now to the alley, where business will soon begin'.

'Do, honest Aminadab, and fear not; though I could not procure an establishment for your whole nation, as I would have done, I certainly will for your family, and that is enough for you. Your son shall be made a baronet, at least; you have riches enough to support the title'.

'Your grace is very good. Our people are all satisfied of your kind intentions; but, alas! that was a severe disappointment to us, after costing us so much money. The children of the Lord weep over it in their synagogues, and the daughters of Sion lament it in their songs; but my household shall rejoice in thy favour, and the labours of my life prove my gratitude for it'.

Honest Aminadab was no sooner gone than there entered an agent, seemingly of another nature, this dealing in honour, as the other did in money; but the difference between them was only in appearance, the end of both being ultimately the same.

'May it please your grace', said he, advancing with due reverence and ceremony, 'I come to wait upon you about that place in the ———; that gentleman will not, indeed cannot, give one shilling more for it'.

'Then, let the other have it; I will not lose fivepence, much less five hundred pounds, for him'.

'But, please your grace, you know what grounds he has to expect it; besides, your promise, which cannot well be broken through, it was so positive'.

'My promise was only conditional, in my own intention, that he should give me as much as another, and in no other sense will I keep it. As for his grounds of expectations, I regard them not; let him make the most of them where he can'.

'Just as your grace pleases. I only took the liberty of speaking my own opinion, but always in submission to yours. Not but I must own I am apprehensive of this gentleman's resentment, though not immediately for myself, so much as for your grace's character, with which he may be provoked to make too free upon such an affair'.

'Ah! that is liberty, boasted English liberty, to speak disrespectfully of your superiors. But I despise whatever he can say, nor will I give up my own way for fear of his impertinence'.

'Very right; your grace is very right. It were by no means fit that you should. Then it is to be considered whether this breach of promise may not be attended with inconveniences that may overbalance the advantage, as it may make others afraid to deal with you at another time'.

'I will venture that: none can come to me, but for their own advantage, and while they can find that, they will scarce stay away for punctilios. So, let me hear no more of this, but close with the other directly'.

'Will not your grace please to abate of your demand for that place in Ireland? I really fear you rate it too high'.

'Not a shilling; I will not abate a shilling. Surely I ought to know the value of things in Ireland by this time; I have had sufficient dealings there to teach me; it has been my privy purse for many years.'

'But what I fear is, that if your grace does not fix upon some one directly, the lord-deputy may, and that would disappoint you;

for this place has ever been immediately in his gift, and it would reflect a kind of dishonour on him to give it up'.

'Dishonour, indeed! I am much concerned for his honour, certainly; and as for his naming anyone to contradict me, I believe he will be cautious how he does that. The example of his predecessor will teach him'.

'However, if your grace pleases to prevent any disputes, I will wait on him and tell him that you have a friend whom you design to recommend.'

'With all my heart; you may, if you will. But as to the price, I will not abate one shilling, as I said before. Do not I know that places in that country are either mere pensions, without anything to do, or even necessity of ever governing there at all, or where that cannot be dispensed with from the nature of the place, that no learning, no abilities are requisite. If it was here, indeed, where knowledge in a profession is absolutely necessary to a place in it, there might be something in higgling about the price; but for a coward to scruple paying for being made a general, or a blockhead a judge, there can be nothing more unreasonable, and I will not hear another word about it. But what have you done about those titles which I gave you to dispose of'?

'Really, I do not know what to say to your grace about them; the bent of the people does not seem to incline to honours of late'.

'No, I thought they were always as good as ready money, especially with those who have more money than sense, and think it easier to buy than earn honour by merit. An Irish title was the constant refuge of those sons of fortune who, not being born in the rank of gentlemen, or having forfeited it by their villainies, were desirous of changing their names for sonorous titles, to hide their disgrace, as it were, under an heap of honours, which, in reality only make them the more exposed to the view, and consequently to the censure of the world. But I find even that imaginary sense of honour is gone out of fashion, and the shadow is in no more request than the substance at present. But since they are grown such a drug, even make the most you can of them; sell them to whoever will buy; I shall take no exceptions to persons'.

'I shall certainly do the best I can for your grace, though they have been so oddly given away of late, that I verily believe people are ashamed of taking them, for fear of being laughed at. Rattles are given to children, but titles to old men, to divert them; to some, in reward for not doing the very worst possibly in their power, and to others, for doing nothing at all. But pray, has your grace seen the old colonel yet? He got his commission yesterday; I wish he may mean your grace fairly'.

'Why? Sure you do not imagine he can have the assurance to think of playing me a trick'?

'I do not positively say so, but his behaviour has been very mysterious'.

Just then a servant let her grace know that the very colonel of whom they were talking desired leave to wait upon her.

'I thought so', said she, 'show him up; I thought he would not dare to trifle with me'.

CHAPTER L

THE COLONEL PUTS THE OLD SOLDIER UPON HER GRACE—HER RAGE AND RESENTMENT FALL UPON HER AGENT—HER JUDICIOUS APPLICATION OF THE BISHOP'S CHARITY, WITH HER TENDER CONCERN FOR HER FRIENDS ABROAD

THE colonel advanced to her grace with the assurance of conscious virtue sparkling in his eye, though sharpened by a cast of indignation. 'I come', said he, 'please your grace, to return you my thanks for your favours; I have got my commission, and had the honour, just now, to kiss his majesty's hand upon it. As your recommendation was more effectual to procure me this reward than the labours of a life which has not been undistinguished in the service, I thought it my duty to make your grace this acknowledgment, and to offer you any service in the power of an honest heart, and no bad hand in return'.

'Colonel', replied her grace, 'I am glad it has been in my power to serve a man of your character, and I do not desire any such return'.

'I am much obliged to your grace for your good opinion', returned he, 'which I hope I shall never forfeit. I thank God my character will not disgrace your recommendation; nor shall you ever have reason to blush at the mention of my name. I have the honour to be your grace's most humble servant'.

'But colonel', said the gentleman, the agent, who stood by, 'though her grace has no occasion for such a return as you offer, having no quarrels to be fought, there is a return of another nature which you should not forget, especially as you promised it, too'.

'Why, look you, sir', replied the colonel, 'as to that matter, it is most certain that I did something like, promise some such thing; but when I have told the whole affair honestly to her grace, I am sure she will be above demanding it'.

'Sir', said her grace, 'I do not desire to hear anything more about it; and I must tell you that you have behaved like an old knave'.

'Say an old soldier, rather, madam', replied he, with some warmth; 'the other is a term I am not used to'.

'A nice distinction, truly, and well worthy of a man of honour', said the agent with a sneer.

'Have a care, sir; guard your expressions; my respect, my obligations to her grace will make me bear anything from her. But I must be so free as to tell you that I have not the same sentiments for you'.

'What, are you going to make a riot in my apartments'?

'Not in the least, madam; my respect for your grace is a sufficient security from that. I would only hint it to that gentleman, that he may not always have the protection of your grace's presence; that is all, madam'.

'You are a knavish old ruffian; but I shall take care that you do not come off so'.

‘As your grace pleases for that. By the laws of my country I cannot lose my commission while I do my duty, nor will my gracious master be influenced to do me wrong, though, in the multiplicity of greater affairs, my services, my hardships could not reach his eye. But as I would not bear the imputation of any crime, much more so black ones as dishonesty or ingratitude, you must give me leave to set this affair in a just light to your grace now, especially as I may never have another opportunity of doing myself that justice.

‘Enraged, almost to desperation, to find that thirty years’ service—the merits of which were often written in my blood, and stand recorded in these scars—were not sufficient to procure me the regular advances of my rank, without a merit of another nature, I resolved to quit the barren paths which I had so long pursued in vain, and try those methods which I saw practised with success by others. I therefore applied myself to your grace, who seemed struck with my hardships, and promised me your favour, referring me, for more particular information, to this gentleman, who would have lowered my sense of your goodness, by loading it with terms which were not in my power to fulfil.

‘Had your grace mentioned them to me yourself, I should most certainly have owned my inability; but, coming from him, I looked upon them as the finesse of his own art, which it was not unjustifiable to return with a feint of mine; and therefore I gave an equivocal acquiescence with his proposal, for he dares not say I made a particular or positive promise of anything.

‘If I have done wrong in this, I am mistaken, and sorry for it; but still it is not within the article of war that makes an error in judgment criminal, because it was not against an enemy; but by all the rules of war, and that is my profession, and the only one I have studied, it is allowable to oppose art to art, and try to foil the devil at his own weapons. This is what I have done; and the success of this stratagem, which has effected by a *coup de main* what I had been making regular advances to so long in vain, proves the justness of my plan, and must extort your grace’s approbation, when the passion raised by this gentleman’s mercenary influence shall cool’.

Saying this, the veteran marched off in triumph, leaving my mistress and her agent staring at each other in the strongest surprise.

Her grace found utterance first, and having no other object of her rage, turned all its violence upon her agent.

‘So then’, said she, ‘after all, I find the old ruffian has outwitted you, with a general promise, or no promise at all, it seems, for you did not dare to contradict him. I thought, sir, that I had cautioned you before against this very thing, and given you positive orders to take nothing but the money. But you shall pay for your neglect; you shall make good the loss to me. As for the old ruffian, I will speak to his general, and have him broke for a cheat. Talk to me of his services! what are his services to me? But I will have him broke; his example shall terrify others from attempting to abuse me so again’.

‘I wish it were proper or possible’, replied her agent, as soon as want of breath made her stop, ‘for your grace to have him punished

for his insolence ; but such a tongue as his might lay matters too open, if once set a-going, for you see he is not to be over-awed to anything. As for his commission, there is no loss in it ; for it was ordered for him before I applied, though I made him think it was obtained by your interest, to try what I could bring him to. Your grace may be assured that I would not have taken any promise, had it been otherwise ; and I was just going to tell you this, when his coming prevented me '.

'It may be so', returned she, 'but I shall be better satisfied of it before I give up your making good the loss '.

The agent was relieved from further persecution for that time by the entrance of a messenger, who was going to Germany, and called to know if her grace had any commands for her friends there.

'None but my good wishes and prayers for their deliverance',¹ replied she, with a deep sigh, 'which are constantly offered up for them. I am sorry I am not able to send them any relief from myself ; but I have nothing in my power—no places, no opportunities of getting anything. These few pieces', taking about a dozen guineas from her pocket, where she had thrown the bishop's change of her note, 'are all, at present, in my possession. Give them to my dear mother, with my duty, and tell her I will send the clothes she wrote for as soon as possible ; and assure the rest of my friends of my constant attention to their interest '.

¹Alludes to the Seven Years War [1756-63] during which the fate of Hanover, of which the Countess was a native, was at stake.

VOLUME II

CHAPTER I

CHRYSALE CHANGES HIS SERVICE FOR THAT OF A USUAL ATTENDANT UPON THE GREAT—THE HISTORY OF THE UNFORTUNATE GLYSTER-PIPE MAKER, WHO WAS LIKE TO BE HANGED FOR DIRTYING HIS FINGERS — AN HUMBLE IMITATION OF HIGH LIFE — ANOTHER CHANGE BRINGS CHRYSALE INTO THE POSSESSION OF A PERSON OF AN EXTRAORDINARY CHARACTER—CONVERSATION BETWEEN HIM AND A VERY NOTED PERSON—LET THOSE LAUGH THAT WIN

I WAS, by this time, so sick of high life, that I was very glad of being one of the number her grace gave to the messenger, as I saw no prospect of pleasure in such a service. He had no sooner received her grace's commands, than he immediately went to the office for his dispatches, where he was sent on another errand, while they were getting ready.

This was to apprehend a poor wretch¹ who sold glyster-pipes about the streets, but being unable to get bread in his profession, had fallen upon a scheme that he imagined might raise him to the notice of the world in the light of a state criminal; and get his hunger well satisfied, while he should be a happy prisoner for offences which he imagined could not be attended with any bad consequences.

Big with this project he had entered into a correspondence with some person abroad, of equal consequence with himself, and to him communicated the secret intelligence which he daily picked up at coffee-houses, or found in the public newspapers, which his great friend was to forward to some great person in the service of the enemy.

He had long continued this trade unnoticed, as he thought, though all his letters had been opened at the post-office, but the stuff contained in them was thought below regard; so that he began to fear that this scheme would turn to no account. But now some miscarriages in public affairs, alarming the resentment of the people, making it evident that the secrets of the nation were betrayed, this insignificant creature was thought of, and ordered to be taken into custody.

Though this was the thing which he had always proposed by his undertaking; to keep up the farce he counterfeited the strongest terrors, and put on every appearance of conscious guilt, so far, that he had like to have over-acted his part, and fallen a sacrifice to the law, which he only meant to elude; a just judgment

¹ Dr Kenzie [Davis's *Olivia*]. Glyster or clyster-pipes were tubes employed for the application of clysters. Clyster-pipe was sometimes used as a contemptuous term for a poor sort of doctor.

on the base depravity of the soul that could descend to so iniquitous a scheme, as to trifle with his sacred duty to his country, to support an anxious, burthensome being. For his counterfeited fears not only gave weight to the appearances, which were before so very strong against him, but also made it probable that he was guilty of more than he was at first suspected of; this justified the prosecuting him with the utmost severity, and sacrificing him to the indignant rage of the people, who called aloud for some victim, to atone for their reproachful losses.

The criminal soon perceived his error, and would have recanted all he had said; but this was not admitted him; his own confessions had confirmed the charge against him, and he was given up to the laws: to which, on the evidence of such strong appearances, though no intelligence could be proved against him, but what he showed the public authority mentioned before, his life was declared a forfeit.

But the contemptibility of his station and behaviour proved his safety, and mercy was extended to a wretch beneath vengeance, after he had served the turn, and amused the people for his day.

I did not then stay in England, to see the event of this affair, but having learned it since my return, I thought it better to conclude the story in this place together, than to interrupt my narrative with it, at another time.

It would be doing injustice to my master, to imagine that he had profited so little by his frequent intercourse with persons in genteel life, and particularly by her grace's late example, as to think it necessary to apply the money she had given him to any other use than his own: accordingly, when he was setting out, he gave me to his wife, for the support of his family in his absence.

But this spirited lady had a politer way of thinking, than to obey his directions, or deny herself any of the genteel pleasures of life, for the sake of such a mean, domestic duty, as the care of a family. As soon therefore as his back was turned, she put on her hat and cardinal and posted away to one of her most intimate acquaintances, a lady who kept a chandler's shop in the neighbourhood, to advise with her, about settling a party at her house, for the next evening.

An affair of this importance required deliberation; accordingly, after tea, they retired into the bed chamber, the parlour they sat in being open to the shop, so that they were liable to be overheard by everyone who should come in, and there, over a comfortable glass of right Hollands, fixed upon the company, and settled the ceremonial, and fare of the entertainment. This great business being dispatched, my mistress returned home, and getting a gentleman who lodged in her house, at the expense of the state, to write cards for her, sent them by her husband's assistant to the company, to invite them to play a game at cards, and spend the next evening with her, and then proceeded to put everything in order for their reception.

Her great anxiety, and the preparation she made, raised my curiosity not a little, to see the vanity and vice of the higher ranks of life mimicked by such a set; but I was disappointed at

that time, being paid away to a tavern-keeper, next morning for wine and brandy for the occasion.

My new master was a striking instance of the inconsistency of life, and the hypocrisy of the human heart: he had for many years kept one of the most notorious brothel-taverns in the town; but not content with this public insult to the laws, in defiance of every sense of shame, he at the same time professed himself a reformer of religion; and while the grossest scenes of riot and debauchery were carrying on openly in his house, was chanting hymns in a conventicle, and groaning in spirit, for the wickedness of the times, with a face as meagre and mortified as the picture of famine. I see you wonder at such a palpable contradiction; but that proceeds from ignorance of life, every view of which shows instances as gross as this; the gaming devotee, the pensioned patriot, and the drunken priest, being equally offensive to common sense and reason. As for my new master, he had as powerful motives for his conduct as the greatest of them all. Poverty made him, in his early youth, turn pander to such a house as he now kept, when the demure sanctity of his looks screened him so effectually from suspicion, that he was able to make acquaintances in families, and accomplish seductions, which no other of his trade dared to attempt. By these means, he soon acquired a sum of money sufficient to set up this house for himself; when his character immediately brought him into business, that in a little time made his fortune: but, for this success he was chiefly indebted to a master-stroke of superior genius; for, having observed in the mystery of his profession, that there is no private sinner like a public saint, as soon as he thus arose above the drudgery of business, and, from porter, became master of a tavern, he associated himself with a set of reformers, who went preaching up and down the town, at whose meetings he had an opportunity of finding out new faces for his best customers, and making acquaintances with the leaders, who, observing his discretion, soon admitted him into their mystery, and made his house the scene of their secret meetings, to settle their business, laugh at the follies they lived by, and practise the vices which they preached against. Such success might be thought to have satisfied his avarice, but the habit has taken such hold of him that he cannot desist, and he now does from inclination, what was at first the effect of necessity.

I should not have dwelt so long upon this character, but that it serves to explain the ways of the world, and prove the folly of an opinion, generally received among men, that they can change their course of life whenever they please; and as soon as their end is answered, and they have heaped up a fortune, by the iniquity of a profession, quit it at once, and live virtuously upon the earnings of vice.

The evening after I came into his possession, the high priest of the conventicle¹ called upon him, to spend an hour in spiritual

¹George Whitefield [1714-1787], the Methodist, who was in England now between his third and his final journey to America.

conversation. After examining into his progress in grace, and the increase of his faith, and assurance of election (for such is the power of custom, and the pleasure of cheating the world, that they practise the art even upon each other) he told him that he had a most particular occasion for his most private room that evening. 'For', said he, shaking him by the hand, 'my friend, as I have found by experience that the only way to foil the devil is at his own weapons, I have appointed Momus, the ballad-singer¹, whose attack upon me has made such a noise, to meet me here this evening, and make up the affair over a glass of wine'.

'In truth', answered my master, a good deal surprised, 'your reverence's meekness and patience must needs be very great; or you could not bear ever to mention him, in any degree of Christian charity and benevolence, after so outrageous and gross an attack as he has made upon you, without the least personal provocation; for what was that to him, what you said or did to the rest of the world, his morals or religion were in no danger! But you were born to be an example to the age, and a shining light to guide the steps of the faithful'.

'A truce with this canting now, my friend', replied the doctor, 'and let us talk a few words like men of the world. Your proved fidelity and prudence making me not scruple to reveal the whole mystery of the ministry to you, I will let you into the secret of this affair. You must know, then, that I have, for some time, perceived the humour of the people begin to waver greatly, and the fervency of their devotion to cool, in spite of all I could do to keep it up, by preaching, fasting, prayer, and lamentation, by crying up my own piety, and the wonderful effect of my spiritual labours; it was necessary, therefore, to have recourse to some expedient, to prevent their falling off entirely, and accordingly, I pitched upon this, which has exceeded my expectations; for, instead of making my people ashamed of coming to me, it has piqued their pride, and now they resolved to show, that they scorn as much to be laughed, as preached, out of their own way. This, my friend, is the way of the world, which, since we cannot in reality mend, we must only strive to make the best of. If I could carry on my business without his assistance, I most certainly would never have entered into such a confederacy, any more than you would keep a brothel and entertain whores and rogues, if you could make equal profit by any other company'.

'I am much obliged to your reverence', returned my master, 'for putting me in any degree of comparison with yourself; but it is too great an honour! I act in a low sphere; but I still have the pleasure to think, that, even in my poor way, I contribute something towards your great work; as there could not be so many converts to resort to you for spiritual comfort, if there were no places of this kind to encourage vice and debauchery. You see, sir, that I enter into the spirit of your design, and deserve your confidence, by this return of mine. There are secrets in all

¹Samuel Foote, the actor and farce-writer [1720-77], satirised the Methodists in *The Minor* [1760-61].

professions; and as you have entered into a league with your professed enemy, that you may be able to play into each other's hands, so I, notwithstanding the probity of my profession, have a private understanding with all the ladies of pleasure who resort to this house, who, in return for their being brought into good company, never fail to enhance expenses, and countenance every imposition of false measures, false charges, and a thousand others, by which a prudent man turns the folly of the world to his own advantage. As to this confederacy between you and the ballad-singer, I own I never suspected the least of it; and, indeed, I still am at a loss to think how you could bear the personal reflections, especially, which he has thrown upon you. What was the misfortune of your form to him, that he should call you Dr Hunchback¹?

'Why, that is true enough', answered the doctor: 'in that he exceeded my directions; and to call him to account for it, is part of the business of this appointment. Everything was settled between us. We have hitherto met at our friend Mrs Brimstone's², who first negotiated the affair between us, and consented to take her share of the ridicule, to advance the common cause. She will be here to-night, too, so that we shall have an agreeable set. I believe I hear him just come in. I directed him to inquire for number one; do you show him into the private room, and when the coast is clear I'll join you'.

CHAPTER II

CHRYSLAL'S MASTER STARTS AT HIS OWN APPARITION—INTERVIEW
BETWEEN THE DOCTOR AND A NOTED BALLAD-SINGER—THE
HISTORY OF A FAMOUS BALLAD—ALL TRADES ALIKE

THE person³ my master was sent to meet had something so uncommon in his appearance as instantly struck my attention. Every passion of the human heart was printed in his face so

¹ Hunchback and Squintum are two nicknames of Whitefield; the latter is the name he goes by in *The Minor*, because of the cast in his eye.

² Foote's Mrs Cole, in *The Minor*, identified with Mother Douglas, a noted procuress, who lived in a splendidly furnished house in Covent Garden, d. 1761. Hogarth put her into his 'March to Finchley'. Foote himself acted the part in *The Minor*, where her mixture of religious unction and abandoned morals is horribly comic.

³ Cf. Churchill's description of this Protean mimic:—

By turns transform'd into all kinds of shapes,
Constant to none, Foote laughs, cries, struts, and scrapes;
Now in the centre, now in van or rear,
The Proteus shifts, bawd, parson, auctioneer.
His strokes of humour, and his bursts of sport
Are all contain'd in this one word, *distort*.

The Rosciad, 395-400.

strongly, that he could at pleasure display it in all its force, while his very look and gesture turned some vice or folly into ridicule.

'You inquire for number one, sir?' said my master, bowing with the profoundest respect.

'I do, sir,' answered the other, returning his bow, assuming his look, and imitating his voice, in a manner that would have extorted laughter from despair, 'inquire for number one'.

Though my master was no stranger to his talents, which he had often seen him display at the expense of others, this personal application of them to himself threw him into such confusion, that, in spite of his long-practised assurance, a blush broke feebly through his unimpassioned, lifeless face, and he had scarce power to show him into the room. The ballad-singer, seeing that he had him at command, would not pursue his advantage any further, at that time, for fear of frightening him away; but putting on the exact countenance, and mimicking the voice and manner of the doctor, 'I am come, my friend and brother in the Lord', said he, 'to inquire into thy spiritual estate, to give thee ghostly advice, and commune with thee, for a short space, for our mutual edification'. The surprise and manner of this address had such an effect upon my master, that he could not refrain bursting into laughter; and immediately recovered from the confusion into which the ridicule of himself had thrown him.

They were scarce seated, when the doctor entered, and addressing himself to the stranger, 'I am glad to see you, sir', said he, taking him by the hand, 'and heartily congratulate you on your success. You see, I was not mistaken in my judgment. I knew what would take with the taste of the public. There is nothing pleases them so much as a little profaneness, and ridicule of religion: a fling at the clergy never fails to raise a laugh.'

'I acknowledge your judgment, sir', answered the other, raising up his shoulders, rolling his eyes and echoing every cadence of the doctor's voice, 'and thank you for your congratulation; but I must beg leave to differ in opinion with you, as to the cause of my success, for I have never had the least fling at the clergy, nor been guilty of profaneness, or ridiculing religion, in my ballad; the abuse of religion by hypocrisy, and making the profession of virtue a sanction for the practice of vice, were the objects of my satire; and the reception it has met with from the public, shows that the people have a proper sense of such vices'.

The doctor was so struck at the reflection of himself, when the other began to speak, that he started, in the utmost astonishment, and was unable to interrupt him till he had finished his discourse, which else he certainly would have done, while my master stood almost convulsed with laughter. But his triumph was not long; for the ballad-singer turning short upon him, and instantaneously assuming his cadaverous appearance, and bowing in the same manner, 'And you, sir', continued he, addressing him-

¹ *The Minor*, Foote's piece ridiculing the Methodists, failed on its first production at Dublin in 1760, but was a great success next year, when it appeared in an enlarged form in London.

self to him, 'must have had ample experience, in the course of your business, that the taste of the town inclines quite another way, the most profligate in practice being the most pious in profession'.

This sudden transition from the doctor restored him to his spirits, who in his turn could not avoid pointing with his finger, and laughing most immoderately at the silly look of my master, though he was not quite so much abashed as he had been before.

As soon as the doctor could speak, 'However I may doubt your opinion', said he to the ballad-singer, 'I acknowledge the irresistible force of your powers of ridicule, and beg a cessation of them for a moment, till we talk of our business. I will not dispute about the cause of your success, but I think you need not have fallen upon my person. My professions and practice surely were enough, with your own exaggerations! Why, then, need you give me the opprobrious nickname of hunchback, which has spread so, that I shall never get rid of it? The very children haunt me with it, as I go along the streets'.

'Good heavens!' answered the other, 'how subject are the wisest men to the weakness of vanity! I should have thought that you were long since proof to anything the world could say of you, or you would have given up your trade before now. As to my calling you this name, you must know that the whole success of our scheme depended upon it; for if I had not turned the ridicule against your person, the taste of the public is so gross, that I might have laughed alone at your opinions. But what success have you had? Do you find your flock gather upon this attack on their shepherd'?

'Why, pretty well', replied the doctor, 'pretty well. They seem to show a proper sense of it. As for me, I appear affected at it in a very extraordinary manner, that is solely upon your account; and to convince them and all the world of the strength of my charity, I design to-morrow to offer up prayers for your conversion, as being in a dangerous state of salvation, and then, on the merit of that, to propose a subscription for the relief of two or three families, whom your example has led into ruin'.

'Bravo, doctor', interrupted the other, 'tell me of profaneness again! But I hope I am to have a share in the subscription, as it is to be proposed on my account; at least, you will let me assist in the distribution of it'?

'Take care, my friend!' returned the doctor: 'another word of that kind, and I declare off the connection. I will have nobody pry into my conduct, or interfere with my business. I did not ask any part of your gains, though you got so much in every company where you sung your ballad; nor did I speak a word in behalf of the other poor ballad-singers you picked up about the streets, and set to sing for you, though the wretches complained that you starved them'.

The ballad-singer, perceiving that he had touched upon a tender point, thought proper to waive it, as he did not choose to break off so advantageous a connection. 'As to that', said he, 'I did but jest. I never interfere with any man's matters. But that's

true: I have bad news to tell you! The clerk of the parish sent me word yesterday, that understanding I sung my ballad to a psalm-tune, he let me know, that I must change my note directly, or he would order the beades to whip me out of the parish, if ever I presumed to sing there again; and to mend the matter, at the same time ordered me to make use of an old blackguard tune, which he sent me, the vulgar stupidity of which blunts the edge of the ridicule, which has never turned against the tune itself, but solely against the prostitution of it; which can never be so effectually attacked, as by repeating the manner exactly in which it is sung. But where is our friend Brimstone? I expected to have met her here'.

Just as he said this, my master was called out, where he found a venerable matron, supported by two chairmen, who inquiring in a feeble voice for number one, he directly showed her in to the company.

CHAPTER III

A VENERABLE MATRON COMPLETES THE COMPANY—THE CURTAIN LIFTED UP, AND SEVERAL UNEXPECTED DISCOVERIES MADE—MOMUS PLAYS SUCCESSIVELY UPON DR HUNCHBACK AND MOTHER BRIMSTONE—AFTER VARIOUS DISASTERS, THE EVENING IS CONCLUDED IN CHARACTER

THE matron,¹ whom my master was handing in to his friends, displayed one of those figures which lose by the most forcible description. Her face, though broken by debauchery and disease, preserved the remains of a most pleasing sweetness and beauty; but her body was bloated by intemperance almost out of every resemblance of the human form. She wore on her head a richly laced cap, over which half a dozen fine handkerchiefs almost concealed a piece of greasy flannel. Her gown, of the richest silk, flowed loosely round her, under a velvet cloak, lined with ermine; while her legs and feet, swollen out of all shape, and too tender to bear any ligature, were wrapped up in flannels.

My master received this amiable creature from the chairmen: and stooping under as much as he was able to bear of the burthen of her body, assisted her to limp into the room. The contrast between her and the shabby skeleton of her supporter was so strikingly ridiculous, that the moment they appeared Momus, burst into an immoderate fit of laughter; and turning to the doctor (who was not much less affected, though practice had given him such a mastery over the muscles of his face, that they never betrayed the passions of his heart), 'Behold,' said he, 'the blessed fruit of thy ministry, and rejoice. See how the spirit assisteth the flesh to struggle with the infirmities of nature'. And then, waddling up to her, in her own gait, 'Dear mother', address-

¹ Mrs Brimstone, *alias* Mrs Cole, *alias* Mother Douglas.

ing himself to her, 'give me your other arm; rest a little part of your weight, an hundred or two, upon me! Come! Let me help you into that great chair'!

'Oh! oh! oh! my poor bones'! exclaimed she. 'How you pull me along! you will tear me to pieces! Oh! oh'!

'Never fear, mother! never fear that'! answered he. 'Crazy as your carcass is, it will stick a little longer together. Your friends are not ready for you yet'.

'Go! go! you're a wicked creature, a profane wretch. Dear doctor! I thought I should never see you more! I had a sad night of it; a most sad one indeed. But the spirit comforted me. Oh, if it were not for the comforts of the spirit, there would be no bearing the pains of this life! I was purely when you left me! Your pious conversation had comforted my heart; and the other bottle we cracked together raised my spirits, so that I forgot all my pains. But I was not to be so happy long! Satan envied me, and threw temptation in my way! This wicked imp, and half a dozen of his roaring companions, came in upon me, just as you went out at the back-door! Well! to be sure they have a great deal to answer for! I was just beginning to read my pious exhortation you left me, when in they came, snatched the book out of my hand, and, calling for the ladies, insisted on my sitting with them; so, as you know I always loved innocent mirth, I could not refuse. But, alas! I paid dearly for it this morning! My poor bones! And then my head! My poor head is quite gone, quite gone! I can bear nothing! Oh, what a difference there is between spending an evening in edifying conversation over a sober bottle, with a pious friend or two, and these ranting riotous scenes! though they behaved so like gentlemen, and were so good company, that there was no leaving them! But it is all folly, all vanity! I am resolved I will leave it off! I will not follow it much longer, I am resolved! I'll wean myself from this world, and think of nothing but a new life! I hope the baronet won't use poor Betsy ill! I did not like his refusing to taste the ratafia! I should be ruined if anything ailed her! She is more inquired for than all the ladies in the house. And my lord—he is sweet company. But it is a pity he is so wicked! He was going to burn my book of devout exercises; and then, that profane song of yours! what need he sing that! I wonder what pleasure people can find in profaneness! Where there is any enjoyment, it is another thing; but this is being wicked for wickedness' sake. It is a great pity, for he is a very generous fine gentleman! He gave Poll ten guineas this morning! He is very fond of Poll; he always has her when Betsy is engaged. Oh! oh! oh! shall I ever get rid of these pains! When shall I be happy in heaven?—

While she was running on thus, the doctor was busied in writing a letter to himself, as from a family in distress, for whom he intended to solicit a subscription the next day from his congregation; and my master was laying glasses on the table, and drawing the corks out of several bottles; so that Momus alone attended to her, by the significant archness of whose look it was easy to perceive, that he was laying up a fund for future entertainment,

and would not have interrupted her, had she continued her discourse ever so long; but the doctor's turning to the bottle put a stop to her, and introduced a general conversation.

'I am sorry, my friend,' said he, addressing himself to her, 'to hear you complain so: I left you in a blessed temperature of mind and body last night, but I much fear that the intemperance you mentioned must have equally disturbed both. The most pious man knoweth not what folly he uttereth when he is full of wine. A little is good, and rejoiceth the heart; but too much marreth the understanding and letteth loose the secrets of the wife.'

'As for that there, dear doctor, never fear me; since the blessed hour of my call, I have never disclosed one secret about the matter: I never mentioned a word of it. But, doctor, what did you do with the young lady whom you would see home last night? I would not refuse you, to be sure; but I hope you have not put any more idle notions in her head: she is very young, and like to do a great deal of business, therefore her call need not come this great while! It will be time enough some years hence; I had a great deal of trouble to bring her to; and now, if you have spoiled her, I shall have all the work to do over again. Nobody knows the trouble and expense I am at for the service of the public: nobody knows! If it was not for me, gentleman would be forced to take up with common servant-maids, and such low-lived creatures; but I provide gentlewomen for them! ladies of birth and education, and yet I am not regarded; nobody thanks me: this is poor encouragement to serve the public, very poor, indeed; but virtue has its own reward, that's my comfort. I do the best I can; and if I do not receive a proper return, that is not my fault; let the world answer for it: I do my part; and so my mind is at ease'.

'That you do', said Momus, while she stopped to drink, 'that you do; your diligence never slackens; come, fill your glass! Here's to the reformation of manners, a work that we all labour in alike'.

'By your leave, good sir', interrupted the doctor, with a look of offended importance and tone, 'not all alike, I presume: I believe you will allow, that there is some difference between your profession and mine, at least'.

'So then', answered Momus, 'you are returning to the old point: I thought I had said enough to you on that head before; difference, ay; that there is indeed; but perhaps you are not sensible in whose favour that difference is; I sing a song that makes people laugh; and put vice and folly out of countenance, by showing them in a ridiculous light, and this only for a trifling pittance of that money which they devote to mere pleasure. But you, by drawing horrors that never existed out of your own imagination, and preaching up doctrines impossible to practise, frighten your poor deluded followers out of every enjoyment of their lives, and pillage them of the money that should support their families and pay their debts, under pretence of imaginary charities! This is the difference between us.'

'Good lack! good lack!' interrupted the sage matron, 'how can people be such fools as to fall out thus about nothing!

What signifies it where the difference lies, so you can both can do your business? It is just the same thing as if my landlord here and I should enter into a dispute about the reputation of our houses. I thought I had made you both promise never to mention this matter any more! Come, doctor, here's prosperity to all our business, without any such foolish distinctions.

The judgment of this mediation was too plain to admit of any dispute. The competitors filled their glasses, and, shaking hands very cordially, drank their friend's toast. 'Well, now there is some pleasure in this,' continued she, 'things are like to go on well, when all parties agree; but when some people fall out—you know the rest of the saying—But, my friend Momus, I have news for you! That story of the young lady, that you put in your ballad, has answered just as I said. The world thought it would blow me up; but I knew better; I never had a better run of company in my life, than to inquire into that affair; and they all of the right sort—your secret, grave, old, rich culls, just fit to do business with. At first, I always deny it with the strongest oaths and imprecations, and rail at you for inventing such a scandalous story; but afterwards, as if I am put off my guard by the liquor, I seem to place a confidence in their professions of secrecy and friendship, and, with many tears, own the whole; that is, so far as to my having the lady in my power; and then the consequence is, that they all entreat me to let them see her (that is, singly, for such chaps always come alone); when, such is the pleasure in debauching virtue, that, besides making me a handsome present for my kindness, they leave no temptation untried to prevail upon the lady, whom they generally take to themselves upon a genteel settlement; by which means I have got a pretty sum, and have besides had an opportunity of providing for near a dozen of my women, who were too well known upon the town to do anything in the public way; for this kind of customers have too great a regard for their characters ever to mix in company that might undeceive them; so, you see, doctor, that I do not forget your instructions of doing all the good in my power; and sure it is no small matter to rescue so many poor women, who were no longer capable of getting a genteel livelihood for themselves, from want and misery, and getting them a comfortable settlement for life, so that they have nothing to do now, but attend to you, and make their peace with heaven. Come! here's my service to you, my friend Momus; and if you can think of any other story of me, that can serve your turn, and get off another ballad, never spare me, I'll forgive you'.

'And so will I too', added the doctor, 'though he should call me a worse name than Hunchback! Let them laugh who win. While our railing at each other in public answers our own ends, we were fools to drop it; as to the deceit in it, it is a virtue; for sure it is better to live thus in friendship and charity with all mankind; than to be the real enemies we seem; and so, sir, here's my hearty service to you. And let us pursue our works in concert, without any more of these broils. So let us drink about, for an hour or two; for I must leave you early, being obliged to

write an exhortation for the old duchess¹, which I must carry her early in the morning, when she designs to visit her cousin, the colonel, who is under sentence of death in Newgate for murder; not that I think either that, or her preaching, will have any effect upon him; but she will try: and I do not care to disoblige her, as she is not only a good subscriber on all occasions, but also a credit to our conventicle, which would never have arisen into such esteem with the people, if some persons of quality had not brought it into fashion'.

'Why, ay, to be sure, there is a great deal in that', added the matron, 'fashion is a powerful thing. If it was not for that, I could never do the business I do. But, since the nobility have made it a fashion to marry their mistresses, there is no great difficulty in bringing a private gentleman's daughter into our way of life, as it gives her the only chance she can possibly have, of making her fortune, and becoming a lady; for, as to the example of those few, who married ladies of virtue for mere love, it was too old-fashioned, and romantic, to have any influence. But that's true, doctor, I forgot to mention something to you last night, that has given me great concern! How could you be so indiscreet as to accompany that highwayman to Tyburn the other day? And then to take his hand, and kiss it, before all the people? Fie! it turns my stomach to think of it! I do not know how you can expect any lady will ever let you kiss her lips after such a filthy action. Besides, it is a scandal to all your congregation, that you should appear so familiar with such low-lived creatures, and seems a kind of encouragement to their crimes. If you had heard what remarks two or three ladies, who called at my house yesterday evening, made upon it, I am sure you would never do it again'.

'Go to, woman, go to!' answered the doctor, with a contemptuous look, 'take the beam out of thine own eye before you find fault with the mote in your neighbour's. What highwayman's crimes are equal to yours? The greatest danger of scandal that I ever ran has been in condescending to keep company with you. In that, indeed, I may be said, with too great an appearance of truth, to encourage the basest crimes'.

The matron, who, with all her prudence was of a warm temper, could not brook such an insult as this, even from her spiritual guide, but catching up her glass, in the madness of her rage, which had deprived her of the power of utterance, she flung it at his head with all her strength, and with such an unlucky aim, that it felled him to the ground. 'Woman!' sputtered she, as soon as her passion permitted her to articulate a word. 'Woman! Call your women about you! I scorn your words, you canting, hypocritical, vicious wretch, who, under the appearance of sanctity and religion, cheat the credulous fools that mind you. You condescend to keep me company! you! a creature who would never have been

¹ Selina, Countess of Huntingdon, founder of 'Lady Huntingdon's Connexion'. She employed Whitefield as one of her chaplains, and took his part against the Wesleys

taken notice of had it not been for me! Did not I point you out the persons proper for you to work upon? Was it not I that introduced you to those very people of quality that now make you give yourself such airs? Were they not most of them my acquaintances, and even indebted to me for the rank they now enjoy? I'll make you know yourself, you scoundrel, I will! I'll expose you to the world, and then see who will go to your conventicle, or subscribe to your sham charities! I'll make you know how to treat your superiors for the future'.

While the enraged matron thus vented her fury, Momus and my master raised the doctor from the ground, in a pickle not to be described. The glass had been thrown with such strength, that, had not his skull been of a comfortable thickness, his labours would have been at an end. However, it had made such a gash upon his temple, that he was in a moment in a gore of blood. The sight of this terrified them all: the matron fainted (or pretended to faint away; my master ran to get a napkin to wipe off the blood, while Momus supported the doctor in his chair; but the first sight of the wound convincing him that it was not dangerous, he resolved to increase the accident to that diversion which was the great pursuit of his life.

'Good Heaven'! said he, in a low voice, as if speaking to himself, and with all the appearance of distress. 'What will become of us all? We shall all be ruined by this unfortunate affair, even if we escape the death which inevitably awaits the wretched murderess'.

'Oh, sir', said the doctor, alarmed almost to despair, 'what do you think? Am I a dead man? Speak, I conjure you; give me some hopes'!

'Alas, my friend! I wish I could; but I must not flatter a man in your condition: if you have any concerns in this life to settle, delay not a moment. This horrid fracture in your skull threatens immediate death. Heavens'! (stooping, and pretending to look earnestly) 'how his brain works'!

'Oh, what shall I do'? exclaimed the terrified wretch. 'I cannot die! I am not fit to die! Oh, that I had followed some honest trade, and never taken to this of preaching! I might then have earned honest bread as my forefathers did, and escaped this miserable death, and the more horrid fate that awaits me. What shall I do? What will become of me? How can I even pray to that God, whom I have so often provoked by my hypocrisy and crimes'?

My master, by this time, had wiped the wound; and seeing that, though it bled so violently, from the number of little vessels that are in that part, there was no fracture of the skull, and therefore no danger in it. 'Be comforted, sir,' said he, 'you have time enough to prepare yourself for death. I'll insure you from any danger this time'!

'How, my dearest, best friend'! said the doctor, catching his hand, and kissing it in ecstasy, 'is my life safe? Is not the wound mortal'?

'Mortal? no: nor even dangerous; if the surgeons do not make it so. Give me leave to put a plaster to it, which I always have

in readiness in the house, in case of accidents, as gentlemen often quarrel for their women in their liquor; and I'll engage that it shall give you no further trouble. Many a guinea have I got by it; for, when any such things happen, I immediately slip on a full-trimmed suit, a bag-wig, and a sword, which a surgeon once pawned to me for a debt of two guineas, and up I go, do the job, take my fee, and come away as good a surgeon as the best! Never fear, sir; I'll insure you from this scratch'.

The consolation which this news gave the doctor is not to be expressed. He hugged and kissed his dear friend, till he made him in as bloody a condition as himself, and in the joy of his heart even forgave the cause of his fears, who had all this time counterfeited a swoon. But Momus, who saw his sport with the doctor thus cut short, soon brought her to herself; for, taking a glass of brandy, as if to hold to her nose, in the affected awkwardness of his hurry and confusion he spilled it all over her face, and then taking a bit of burnt paper, to try what that would do, he designedly neglected to blow it out, and so holding it to her nose, set the brandy he had spilled upon her face on fire. This instantly awoke her from her swoon. She shrieked out, when he, in the same affected confusion, flung the basin of bloody water, in which the doctor's wound had been washed, full in her face. This, indeed, quenched the flame, but then it put her in a condition as dirty and disagreeable as that of my master or the doctor; the consequence of which was, that the doctor could not refrain from bursting out a-laughing.

'Well, my friend,' said he, taking her by the hand, 'it is but just that you should share in the effects of your own rashness. But let there be no more of it. We have both been in fault, perhaps; and so let us only be more cautious for the future. What I have suffered was done by design, and had like to have been attended with dreadful consequences; yours is all accidental and trifling'.

While the doctor was thus piously making peace, my master was cleaning himself, and setting the room to rights. Momus assisted the matron to cram half a dozen napkins down her bosom, to dry the water he had bathed her with, which he performed with so well acted an anxiety and care, that even she was deceived, and attributed all that had happened to her to his confusion; and being glad to get so well off an affair that might have ended so much worse, she complied with the doctor's advances to a general reconciliation, and so all things were restored to their former harmony. As to the doctor's wound, by a ready presence of mind, he found a way to make an advantage of it, by telling his congregation next day, that he had received it from some of Momus's gang, who had attempted to assassinate him, in revenge of the contempt in which he had brought their master.

Matters being thus happily settled, the rest of the night was devoted to mirth, and concluded with a song in character by each of the company, of which Momus's was the most humorous, my master's the grossest, the matron's the loosest, and the doctor's the most daringly profane; perhaps to obliterate the remembrance

of his late religious qualms. After this, the company broke up, when the doctor, having occasion for some money early in the morning, borrowed a couple of pieces from my master, among which I was, who lent them very unwillingly, and then returned to bed to his barmaid; for he had too genteel notions of life to marry.

CHAPTER IV

THE DOCTOR PAYS A VISIT TO A USEFUL FRIEND—THE MYSTERY OF CONTROVERSY—HE WAITS UPON HER GRACE WITH A PIOUS EXHORTATION FOR HER FRIEND—CHRYSLAL ENTERS INTO THE SERVICE OF HER GRACE—HER DISAPPOINTMENT IN HER VISIT TO THE PRISON—HER GRACE'S CHARACTER

THOUGH it was late when the company broke up, my new master¹, who never neglected business for pleasure, did not forget the exhortation which he was to carry to her grace the next morning. Not that he was at the trouble of composing it himself; his time was too precious to be employed so; the more important cares of his flock, which he could not entrust to any other, as visiting his great proselytes, receiving and distributing charity, and his incessant exercise of all the sacerdotal functions, scarce allowed him time for the necessary refreshments of nature, and would have been deemed an intolerable burthen, had they been enjoined by the most express revelation of the divine will, though ambition, avarice, and the pleasure of deceit, made him undertake them voluntarily; but still, to secure to himself every degree of religious merit, he kept a most laborious author, a degraded clergyman, in constant employment, whose works he passed upon the public for his own, when he did not immediately direct them against himself.

To this learned person, therefore, he went upon the present occasion; and having him called from a night-cellar, where he was holding forth on religion and politics to a company of chairmen, he told him his business, and desired him to set about it directly.

'Good God, sir', said the author, 'this is a very unreasonable time to set me upon such a work. From five this morning till eleven at night, have I laboured incessantly; and now, when I have just stepped out to take a little necessary refreshment—'

'Refreshment'! answered my master. 'Tell me not of refreshment, or anything else! Either do my business, or say you will not! I can get enough to undertake it, and gladly too, for less than I give you'.

'That is impossible', replied the author, 'if they are to live by it! I am sure what you give me scarce keeps me from starving'!

'Starving', returned my master. 'So it appears indeed; when you this moment have been indulging in riot and luxury, and

¹ Whitefield.

smell so strong of spirituous liquors, that it is offensive to sobriety to stand near you. I wonder you are not ashamed to be guilty of such intemperance; it ill becomes a man of morality and religion'.

'Sir, sir'! interrupted the author, provoked beyond his patience. 'Have some regard to truth and reason in what you say; and look at home, before you accuse me of intemperance! I laboured the whole day, without any other refreshment, or sustenance, than a mouthful of bread and cheese, and a draught of small beer; and now have had only a quartern of gin in a pint of warm porter, to wash down half a pound of sausages, and you call this intemperance. If I may judge by appearances, you have not spent your evening on such fare'.

'How I have spent my evening', returned my master, who, in spite of himself, felt the justness of the reproach, 'is nothing to the purpose! I am answerable for what I do! But this manner of talking signifies nothing! I must have this exhortation by eight in the morning. It will not take you up much time! You are sufficiently practised in the style; the matter is of little consequence. If you choose to drink a glass of wine, here is half a crown, which I make you a present of. I would by no means have you stinted of anything that is proper'.

'Sir', answered the author, 'I am much obliged to you! I will take care that it shall be ready at the time. You are sensible that I never think much of any labour to serve you. I have finished all the pamphlets you ordered, about the ballad-singer's affair¹! Here they are! This is a letter from you to him that lays him flat! I have quoted half the Fathers of the Church against him! These two are letters to you, upon the subject; one as from a great lord, and the other from a reverend divine, setting forth the great benefits of your ministry, and exposing the profaneness and immorality of his ballad. This here is a silly vindication of his ballad, in a letter to the author, from one of his ranting companions; and this last is an address to the public against all those irreligious and profane amusements of ballads, balls, routs, etc. This is a masterpiece! You see it as from myself, if you do not choose to own it; though I do not know but it may have more weight with your enemies if it appears as from another. So you see I have worked hard to-day; and now I believe we have done with Mr Momus and his ballad'.

'Why, ay; pretty well, I believe', said my master. 'But hold, I have a thought just come into my head. You must know that the parson of the parish² has sent for that reprobate, that Momus, and ordered him to alter the tune of his ballad, as it happened to have several of the same notes with the psalm tunes. Now, as this is known, what do you think of writing a letter to me, as from the parson, setting forth what he has done, and insinuating that it was the direction of the squire³? This will clench the affair. After such an authority, no one will dare to say a word in its behalf;

¹ Whitefield's replies to, and criticisms on *The Minor*.

² The Archbishop of Canterbury.

³ The King.

besides, it will have a good look to be taken notice of by such people'.

'That is true', answered the author, 'it will be so, and the parson's notice shall not be thrown away. I'll do it to-morrow morning, as soon as I send you the exhortation'.

My master then wished him a good night, and left him to return to his company, while he himself went directly home, to prepare for the duties of the next day.

He had scarce slept off his debauch, when he was called to chant his matin song, after which he did not fail to display the wound in his temple, the occasion of which he promised to unfold to his congregation in the evening. This he did to raise a curiosity that should gather his whole flock to hear so extraordinary an affair, as he designed to propose a subscription, when their passions should be warmed by such a horrid attempt upon their pastor.

By the time he had finished this first work of the day, the exhortation was brought him from the author, with which he went directly to her grace.¹ He found her (unfashionably early as it was for a person of her rank to be even up), dressed, and waiting for him.

'Please your grace', said he, 'here is the exhortation your grace desired of me, and I pray Heaven it may prove successful. I am afraid I have made your grace wait, but I came the moment I had finished the first duties of the morning. If your grace pleases, I will do myself the honour to accompany your grace. Perhaps my personal exhortation and prayer may have more effect. My ministry has often been blessed with astonishing success'.

'I am sensible of that, doctor', answered her grace, 'but this unhappy man is of such a strange temper that I apprehend he might be guilty of some act of rashness, that might be dangerous to your person, if you were to go to him without his consent, and that I am much afraid I shall hardly obtain. No longer ago than yesterday, near as the dreadful hour of his execution approaches, did I find him engaged at cards with his gaoler, and when I expostulated with him on the danger of trifling away his few remaining moments in so idle a manner—for I was apprehensive of exasperating him if I spoke with greater severity—he only smiled, and answered me with a passage out of some play'.

'Yes, please your grace', replied my master, with a lifted eye and deep-fetched groan, 'cards and plays are the bane of half the world; religion is quite neglected for them. The great work of reformation will never be completed till they are utterly abolished. As your grace does not think it meet that I should visit this unfortunate gentleman in person, I am obedient to your grace's pleasure. However, I will offer up my prayers for him, and my spirit shall assist your grace's pious endeavours. Not that I fear what man can do unto me; the angel of the Lord watcheth over me, or the stroke that made this wound had given me rest from my labours'.

He then displayed the mark of Mother Brimstone's rage, and told her grace so moving and circumstantial a story of his being waylaid, and being attacked by some of Momus's riotous companions

¹ The Countess of Huntingdon.

that she implicitly believed him, and sympathised in his sufferings. He then gave her the exhortation, which she was to deliver to her unfortunate cousin, and, seeing her uneasy at being obliged to wait till the Bank should be open to get money to distribute among the poor wretches in the prison, he accommodated her grace with change for a twenty-pound note, having, as he told her grace, just so much about him, which he was carrying to relieve a poor industrious family in great distress.

It was a great pleasure to me that I changed my service upon this occasion, as I was heartily sick of my master, though, from a view that I took of his heart, I saw that I had not been witness to half the mystery of his iniquity.

My new mistress went directly to the prison to her cousin, where she had a sufficient opportunity for the exertion of her charity among his unhappy fellow-prisoners, while she waited for his rising, which was not till very late, as he had sat up the whole night before, at his beloved diversion of card-playing. When at length she got admittance to him, her reception was far from being worthy of the trouble she had taken, and of the piety of her intentions. He asked her if she had procured him a pardon, and when she answered in the negative, and assured him that all such hopes were vain, he then told her that he would dispense with the continuance of her visit, and the repetition of any more, and in a manner forced her away, scarce permitting her to mention the motive of her coming, or to enforce the exhortation of my late master, which she, with difficulty, persuaded him to take, though, from the manner of his receiving it, there was little probability of his ever taking the trouble to read it.

My mistress—for I had the good fortune to remain in her possession—was so shocked at this insensibility, that she went directly home, and sought relief from the solid comforts of religion, pouring out her heart in unfeigned prayer, for the conversion of him and every other object of the Divine displeasure; for though a misguided fervency of devotion had made her in some measure a dupe to the hypocritical zeal of my late master, nothing could lead her from the purest paths of true piety and virtue; nor did she suffer the extravagance of his pretended enthusiasm so far to blind her better judgment, as to make her avoid the entertainments frequented by persons of her sex and rank.

CHAPTER V

HISTORY OF A LADY OF FASHION—DESCRIPTION OF A ROUT—CHRYSAEAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE FOR THAT OF A LADY OF ENTERPRISE—A BOLD STROKE FOR A HUSBAND

SHE accordingly went that afternoon to the house of a lady of quality, where a great concourse of the best company usually assembled on set invitations, to spend the evening at the favourite amusement of cards. The lady of the house was one of those

children of fortune, who rise by the means that ruin thousands. In her early youth, she had sacrificed her virtue to vanity, and yielded to the loose desires of the nobleman she was now married to, over whom her humble obliging temper, and particularly her complaisant blindness to his other amours, gained her such an ascendancy, that in a fit of uncommon fondness, he made her his wife. But the method he took to secure himself the ease and conveniences he enjoyed with her, directly overturned them; for her humility and complaisance were all feigned, and the necessity of counterfeiting them being thus removed, she immediately assumed all the importance of her new character, and exerted the usual prerogatives of it in as high a manner as if she had never been in a meaner rank. The infatuated husband soon saw his error, but it was too late to remedy it. He therefore is forced to compound with her for the indulgence he desires, by submitting to let her gratify her passion for vain pomp and expensive ceremony, under the parade of which she strives to hide her obscure original, as she attempts to obliterate the remembrance of her fall from virtue by a most rigid profession of religion. Thus her routs are the most splendid, and difficult of access, of any in the town, no person being invited but those of the first rank, nor any who are not invited being admitted, be their rank what it will; and she professes herself a strict follower of my late master, in his most extravagant opinions, where they do not immediately interfere with her own vanity.

It is impossible to convey any notion to you of such a scene as this, to which my mistress carried me, it is so different from that sphere in which you have acted. Suppose you see several hundred people of both sexes and of every age, dressed in all the profusion and elegance of expense, and wearing dissipation and happiness in their looks, assembled together to spend the evening in mutual entertainment. This is the face of the picture; but turn the reverse, and you shall behold a set of people who have sacrificed their real interest and the peace of their minds to the gratification of this and such-like pleasure, and who come purely to prey upon each other. Accordingly, the whole is one continued scene of sharpening, mutual distrust, envy, slander, and malevolence; the very few who, like my mistress come there for mere amusement, and are untainted with such vices, being forced to submit in seeming acquiescence to the torrent they are not able to stem.

In the course of the evening it was my fortune often to change my service; but as the stay I made with my momentary possessors was so very short, I shall waive giving any account of them, especially as the two most remarkable of the set, and under whom all the rest who launch out of the common road of life are in a great measure characterised, have been sufficiently described on a former occasion, though the histories I read in many of their hearts would afford much entertainment, and hasten to the lady in whose possession I left the company.

My new mistress was the young widow of a person of great distinction, who, in the decline of life, had overlooked the disparity of age and rank, and married her, solely to gratify his passion for her beauty. During the few years he lived, his care and prudence

kept her indiscretion within bounds, but as soon as that guard was removed, she plunged into all the fashionable follies of the times, with a keenness that courted ruin.

But, though she eagerly followed every pursuit that bore the name of pleasure, vanity was the ruling passion of her heart. The rank into which her husband had lifted her placed her on a level, in point of society, with the best company, and the fortune he left her was sufficient to support that rank. But still, as there were many degrees above her, her heart pined for precedency, and she could not enjoy the honours she had, while she was obliged to give place to so many.

She had formed a variety of schemes to obtain this desired object, but still without success. At length, the very night I came into her possession, an accident suggested one to her, which she immediately put into execution, with the most sanguine hopes. There had been a nobleman of the first rank in the company, the weakness of whose reason had obliged his friends to put him under the government of a person to whose fidelity they thought they could entrust so important a charge. As private misfortunes are always an agreeable topic for public conversation, an elderly lady, who was acquainted with this nobleman's family, entertained the company with several melancholy instances of his weakness. My mistress regarded this only as it was meant, as common chat, till some time after, the nobleman, happening to fix his eye with some earnestness upon her, a sudden thought darted into her mind that, if she could any way bring about a marriage with him, all her dear views of ambition would be gratified at once.

The moment this thought took possession of her head, it drove out every other. She lost deal, she revoked, she omitted reckoning her honours. In short, she was so absent that she was obliged to pretend a violent headache and leave the company. As soon as she got home, she went to bed, where she spent the night in forming numberless projects for accomplishing her design. But still the account which the old lady had given of the vigilance of the person to whose care the nobleman was entrusted disconcerted them all. At length she resolved to attempt corrupting his fidelity, as she could not expect to elude his vigilance. She had often heard that the greatest honesty was not proof against a proper price, and her knowledge of her own heart did not contradict that opinion. However, not to be too rash, nor betray her design before she had some prospect of success, she resolved to sound the person before she applied directly to him.

Accordingly, as soon as she got up, she wrote him an anonymous letter, letting him know that a person had a certain affair to propose to him for his concurrence, in which he should receive immediately a thousand guineas, and an annuity of five hundred pounds a year, besides several other considerable advantages, and that what he was desired to do could be effected without any possible loss or danger to himself. This letter she sent by the penny post, and desired the answer might be returned in the same manner, under a feigned direction, to the house of a person in whom she confided.

Such a letter necessarily surprised the gentleman to whom it

was sent. Though the greatness of the offer convinced him that some extraordinary piece of villany was designed, yet, as he knew himself above temptation, he resolved to humour the scheme, till he should discover the whole of it, for the honest revenge of punishing a base attempt to seduce him into dishonesty. Accordingly, he answered the letter directly in such terms as he imagined would tempt the writer to be more explicit, expressing his readiness to embrace any proposal that should be so advantageous, when he should be satisfied that the person who made it was able to perform it, and worthy of his confidence.

This bait took as he desired. My mistress, whose eager imagination was too full of the desired object to let her use any caution, thought her work done, and immediately wrote him another letter, to which she signed her name, and in it explained her whole scheme of marrying the nobleman by his assistance, enforcing her former offer, by a promise of continuing him in the agency of the estate, or rather, indeed, of sharing it with him, and desiring to meet him that evening, either at her house, or any other place he pleased, to confer upon proper means of bringing it into immediate execution.

The gentleman was not a moment at a loss how to act on such an occasion. He immediately waited upon the nobleman, who was next heir to his unhappy charge, and, showing both the letters, desired his directions how to act. Though this nobleman was struck with horror at a piece of villany that did such dishonour to the sex, respect for the memory of the worthy man whose name she bore would not permit him to expose her to public insult. However, to prevent her making the like attempt elsewhere, he resolved to shock her, by a personal detection. Accordingly, he made the gentleman write her word that it was improper for him to be seen going to her house, but that, if she pleased, he would meet her at eight that evening at a certain tavern, where she should inquire for him by the name of Mr Trueman. Such a prospect of immediate success made her blind to every appearance of deceit or danger, and, accordingly, she prepared to attend the appointment with the most sanguine expectation.

But his lordship had prepared a reception for her which she little suspected. Shortly before the time, he went to the tavern with the gentleman, and fixing upon a room in which there was a closet large enough for him and another nobleman, whom he took with him, left word that if any lady should inquire for Mr Trueman, she should be told that he was above alone, and the gentleman called down to her. As they judged, her impatience brought her rather before the time, when her imagined confederate, showing her up into the room, and placing her so that every word she said might be heard in the closet, he entered into a conversation with her on the subject of their meeting, in which he led her to repeat her whole proposal, and by starting difficulties, to enforce it with every iniquitous argument in her power.

As soon as his lordship thought she had said enough, he issued from his concealment, and, looking her full in the face, calmly thanked her for the care she was taking to preserve the noble family of his relation, which she had whimsically given as one of the reasons

of her desiring this marriage. It is impossible to describe her situation at the sight of this nobleman, whom she well knew, as well as his interest in defeating her design. Astonishment, shame, and confusion struck her motionless and dumb. She was just able to turn her eye to her betrayer, and then fell in a swoon upon the floor. Such distress naturally softened the resentment of the generous nobleman to whom she had designed such an injury ; he assisted to raise her from the ground, and, having with difficulty brought her to herself, instead of aggravating her distress by reproaches, mildly advised her to desist from such unjustifiable schemes, and promised her that he would take no notice of what had happened, if he found that her future conduct merited such tenderness.

This treatment had the wished effect. That false spirit, which would have borne her up against any severity, sunk before such unexpected delicacy and compassion. She melted into a flood of tears, and, unable to utter a word, fell upon her knees and kissed the hand of the nobleman in a rapture not to be expressed, who immediately raised her from the ground, and telling her that he imagined it must be disagreeable to her to stay there any longer, ordered a chair, and handed her to it himself, with the utmost politeness and respect.

Her situation when she got home was truly deplorable. The assurance of her late hopes doubled the distress of her disappointment, and the fear of shame made the thought of her guilt intolerable. She cursed her own folly, the perfidy of her betrayer, and all the ways of faithless man ; and, in the agony of her grief resolved to leave this detested town next morning, and bury herself for ever from the world, in her country seat.

This resolution she held in till next morning, when she actually set out for the country ; but I have reason to believe it did not hold very long, as I have frequently seen her since in all public places, as gay and unconcerned as ever. As for me, I was given to her coachman to pay the farrier who took care of her horses ; but he thought it more necessary to give me in payment of a debt of his own to a man who kept a beer-house, who gave me to an attorney, to defend him against a prosecution for entertaining a gang of street-robbers, and buying their booty. By the attorney I was given, in the course of business, to a knight of the post, whose evidence was to acquit the publican. From this conscientious person, as he was on his way to a country assizes, where the lives of many depended on his good nature, I was taken by a highwayman, who lost me that evening to a nobleman at a horse-race.

CHAPTER VI

CHRYSAI, BY A NATURAL PROGRESSION, COMES INTO THE POSSESSION OF A KNIGHT OF INDUSTRY, WHO BRINGS HIM TO A HORSE-RACE, WHERE HE HAS AN OPPORTUNITY OF SEEING A NOBLE JOCKEY PRACTISE PART OF THE MYSTERIOUS SCIENCE OF THE TURF, WITH OTHER COMMON OCCURRENCES

IN the three or four last changes of my service there was nothing remarkable. The progression was natural, and the events common ; but I must own I was a good deal surprised at several occurrences in my present station, which were, in the proper course of things, so strange and unaccountable, that the most whimsical devil could never have thought of them without information.

The gentleman who had acquired me so easily on the road, and brought me to the meeting, was a native of a neighbouring nation, who, on the credit of his skill in the mysterious science of chance, supported by a good stock of assurance and personal courage, had come over to make his fortune, in which design he had really so far succeeded, that he had lived for several years in the highest life, and maintained the appearance of the estate he talked of in his own country, by the sole force of his genius, the fertility of which was not confined to one resource ; but, when fortune frowned upon his labours at play, was always ready to redress the effects of her malice by the method in which I came into his possession.

The roads had been bad that morning, which kept him a little later than usual, so that the company were at the post when he joined them. By their noise and appearance as we rode up to them, I took them for a crowd of their own servants ; their dress being exactly the undress uniform of that parti-coloured tribe ; and every voice being exerted with the same vehemence, and in the like style of oaths and imprecations with which those gentry receive them at the door of a play-house or palace ; so that I scarce knew how to believe my senses when I recognised the faces of several persons of the most elevated station, and, particularly, most of those among whom I had spent the evening I described to you at the club on my first coming to this part of the world.

As soon as the bets were made, and the noise began to subside a little, my master pressed through the mob of pickpockets, bubbles, lords, and jockeys, and came up to the post just as they were preparing to start, when calling to one of the grooms, ' Well, my lord ' , said he.

' Well, Jack ' , replied the other, ' where have you been all day ' ? This was all the discourse they had time for, the horses going off that moment ; but on the strength of this my master backed his lordship deeply.

It is impossible to describe to you who have never seen anything of the kind, a scene of such confusion as the field was during the running, the whole mob, high and low, riding headlong from place to place, and driving against each other, without any respect to rank, or regard to safety, and roaring out their bets, and shouting

for joy at every vicissitude in the running. At length the heat was ended, but so contrary to my master's expectation, that he lost to a noble duke who was in the secret, not only all the fruits of his morning's campaign, but a large sum besides, more than he was able to pay him.

This was a severe stroke. He rode directly up to the post, and, addressing the same groom, just as he came out of the scales, 'Sblood, my lord', said he, 'how could you fling me so? I am quite broke up. His grace has touched me for five hundred; and the devil of the thing is, that I have been so torn down by a bad run of late that I am quite out of cash, and have not a shilling to pay him'.

'How could this be?' replied the groom; 'did not I give you the word? But you are such a careless son of a bitch'.

'The word with a vengeance', answered my master, 'you returned my well, but I have found it very ill'.

'Ay, I guessed it was so', added the groom, 'you were ignorant that we were smoked, and found it necessary to change the lay. Where the devil were you all this morning? Taking a ride, I suppose. You will never leave off till these rides bring you a ride in a cart to Tyburn. But keep out of his grace's way till the horses start, and we will bring you home, I will engage. He thinks he has all the secret, but he is mistaken this bout, and shall pay for his entrance before we admit him to be one of us'.

This discourse passed as they were walking together to a booth, where the groom was to rub, and settle the next heat.

You are surprised at this familiarity between my master and the groom. When he first addressed him by the title of 'my lord', I own I thought it no more than a cant, which in the freedom of this intercourse, where lords and lackeys are upon a level, is common; but what was my astonishment at a nearer view to see that he really was the thing he was called, and that a laudable ambition of excelling in every, the meanest art, had induced him, and many others of his rank, who were riding against him, to take the place of their servants in this fatiguing and dangerous employment; ennobling, by this condescension, the most abject and vile offices with the honours earned by the merit and virtues of their ancestors. Strange ambition, at a time when the interest and glory of their country called for their assistance!

As soon as the noble groom and my master were alone: 'Now, Jack, what think you of my little stun-orse?' says his lordship. 'You must know that I have measured the foot of them all in this heat, and find that I have the heels by a distance at least; but the weights are above my trim. However, we have a remedy for that; look at this cap'—taking one out of a chest, in which his running dress had been brought to the ground—'this is a leaden skull, and weighs above two stun; put this on your head, the thickness of your own skull will prevent its giving you the headache. Ay, it fits you very well. Now, I will wear this to the post, and, just before we start, complain that my cap is too wide, and borrow yours to ride in; and then, when I alight at the scales, after the heat is over, I will pull off yours as if to wipe my face, and give it you to hold, who can return me this to weigh in; and as I wear the same trusses, stuffed with handker-

chiefs, in which I carried the weight last heat, they will never suspect us. Ha, Jack, what say you to this ? Match me this among all your Hibernian tricks, if you can. Go your way ; double with his grace, and lay all you can, I'll go with you ; but be sure to meet me at the post before, and at the scales after the heat, and not to blow the business by being in too great a hurry '.

I see you wonder how his lordship should put such confidence in my master as he seemed to know him so well ; but the truth was, my master's character for courage was so well established, that it bore him through things every day of his life, unconvicted at least, if not unsuspected, for which a more timorous villain would have been pilloried. And this made the other think him the safest person to entrust with the execution of such a scheme, as no one would dare to attempt examining the cap, or prevent his reaching it to his lordship. The finesse succeeded ; his lordship beat every tail hollow ; and my master not only cleared with his grace, but also won considerably for himself, and his confederate besides. Things were carried on in the same genteel manner for the remainder of the meeting, at which there was a vast concourse of the best company, the weather being very favourable, the turf in choice order, and the sport very fine, and so fair that the knowing ones were all taken in ; and to make the pleasure complete though the crowd was so great, there was no unlucky accident happened, except to two of the noble grooms, one of whom was borne down in the crossing by the superior strength of a servant, who rode against him and slipped his shoulder ; and the other broke his neck, by his horse's falling in the running.

It was on a sporting bet, on one of the bye matches, that I was lost that evening to a nobleman, in whose possession I happened to remain to the end of the meeting.

CHAPTER VII

CHRYSAI'S MASTER ENGAGES IN A GENTEEL AMOUR, A DELICATE WAY OF REFINING PLEASURE—HIS MISTRESS PERSUADES HIM THAT SHE HAS POISONED HIM AND HERSELF—HIS SITUATION ON HEARING THIS—STRIKING PROOFS OF MEDICAL SKILL, WITH THE ADVANTAGE OF A REGULAR COURSE OF PRACTICE—AN EXEMPLARY INSTANCE OF CHARITY AND FORGIVENESS DIVERTS THE DOCTOR'S ATTENTION TO THE MURDERESS

As it was late in the evening when my new master arrived in London, he resolved to indulge himself for that night, in the embraces of a tender-hearted female, whom he picked up in the street (for he was no way nice in his amours), as he walked from the inn where he alighted to his own house, in order to stretch his legs.

Nothing more than common occurrences passed upon this occasion. When his lordship had made his mistress nobly drunk by way of refining his pleasure, the delicate pair went lovingly to bed together, where, awaking about midnight, he was surprised to

find her cold and lifeless in his arms. After some fruitless efforts to move her, he started out of bed in a fright, and called up all his servants who, perceiving that she was not actually dead, took such pains to recover her, that she at length opened her eyes, and staring wildly around her for some moments, 'Where am I?' said she, 'are these the regions of the damned? For thither only can such self-murdering wretches as I am go'.—Then seeing his lordship, whose curiosity had brought him to the bed-side, 'and are you dead too?' continued she, wringing her hands, and weeping most passionately. 'Oh! why did I not confine my rage to myself? Why did I add your murder to my own, to plunge my soul still deeper in perdition'?

This surprised all present. The servants, who were indifferent whether it was true or false, imagined she only raved, and doubled their efforts to bring her to herself, soothing her with expressions of tenderness, and telling her she was not dead, but would soon be very well: but my master was too nearly concerned to think so coolly on the matter.—'What is that you say?' said he, trembling in horror. 'What is it you say about murder? There is no one murdered here'.

'How'? answered she, fixing her eyes eagerly upon him. 'Is it possible that I am still alive? And that you also live? It cannot be! The poison which I swallowed this night, and in which you shared too largely, cannot have missed of its effect. But, soft! its operation now begins! that pang!—oh!—that pang bespeaks the near approach of death!—Oh, mercy!—Cry out for mercy on your sins'!

'What poison?' interrupted he, terrified almost to distraction. 'What poison have I shared in? Speak! tell me directly, or'—

'Spare your threats, my lord', said she, with a composure in her looks and manner, that persuaded everyone present she was in her senses, 'spare your threats to a wretch, whom death will soon deliver from your power; and forgive a crime that proceeded from despair. Wearied of the miseries of this life, I this night resolved to put an end to it, and for that purpose, though on another pretence, procured a dose of poison from a chemist's apprentice, who, on giving it to me, said it was sufficient to kill twenty of the strongest men alive: and this poison did I take an opportunity to put into the last bottle of wine, when you went out of the room, determined to sacrifice one man to my revenge for the injuries I had received from the sex: though, after I had done it, my heart relented; but you insisted on my drinking, and fear of your resentment prevented me from making a discovery that would have saved us both from this unhappy'—At these words she fell into convulsions, so strong, that everyone who saw her thought she was really in the agonies of death.

The situation of my master, at this sight, may be easily conceived. He instantly felt every pain the poison could produce; and, falling on the floor, roared aloud in anguish of mind and body, lamenting his untimely fate, and confessing all the sins of his life to the servants who stood around him. As soon as they had raised him up, and carried him into another room, a dawn of hope arose at his finding he did not immediately die. 'What', exclaimed

he, 'is everyone combined against me? Am I to perish for want of assistance? Will nobody even call me a physician? Perhaps I might yet be saved, were proper means applied! Will nobody call me a physician'? On his saying this, everyone was running to obey him, the sight of which threw him into new distress. 'Oh, wretch that I am', exclaimed he, 'and so I am to be left alone! to perish even for want of a drop of water? It is not enough for some of you to go; and not all to desert me in this base, this barbarous manner'?

This seemed to restore them to their senses; and accordingly, while some went to call the doctors, the rest stayed to take care of him.

Where the carrion is, the crows will soon be gathered together. He was immediately surrounded by half the meagre faces of the faculty (for, as he had not named anyone in particular, his servants, to show their care, had summoned all they knew of), who, taking the account he gave them of his being poisoned for truth, proceeded instantly to practise upon him every method they had ever heard of being used in such a case, in hopes that some one of them might take effect. He was cupped, bled, and blistered; vomited, clystered, and purged, in the space of two hours; the doctors sagaciously discovering new symptoms of the poison, every new remedy they tried. When they found that, beyond their expectations, he had strength enough to outlive all this, they put him into bed, and covering him up warm, to take a sweat, comforting him with hopes of his recovery, in consequence of their skill and care. While they waited patiently for this important crisis, some one of them happened to think of the poor murderess, who had been neglected all this time, and now lay in a swoon, the convulsions having gone off, as her strength failed. On hearing her name mentioned, his lordship, to show his Christian charity, and prove the sincerity of the repentance and amendment which he vowed in case his life should be mercifully spared, desired that they would do something for the unhappy creature, if she was still alive. This was sufficient to attach their compassion and care. They answered with one voice, that it was a pity to let her perish without even attempting to save her, and praising his lordship's goodness, prepared to try some experiments upon her also, if only to do something for their fee.

CHAPTER VIII

THE RECOVERY OF THE MURDERESS OPENS A NEW SCENE—SHE
CLEARS UP THE MYSTERY, LESS TO THE SATISFACTION OF THE
DOCTORS THAN OF THEIR NOBLE PATIENT, WHO REWARDS HER
LIBERALLY FOR HER GOOD NEWS, AND SENDS THEM OFF WITHOUT
THEIR ERRAND—REFLECTIONS ON SOME GENTEEL MATTERS—
CHRYSLAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE

THEIR practice upon this new subject, however, was cut short by a success more speedy than they desired, their first operation of bleeding bringing her directly to herself.

As soon as she perceived what had been done, and recovered strength to speak, 'Good God', said she, 'what is the meaning of this? Who can have been so inhuman as to bleed me, when it is known to be ruin in my disorder'?

'In your disorder'? said one of the doctors, with a contemptuous frown. 'What disorder? Have you not poisoned yourself? and, what is still worse, his lordship also, who now lies in the same desperate condition with you, and has, from his unmerited goodness, directed us to take this care of you; though, if we can save you from this death, it must be to suffer one more ignominious'.

'I poison myself'? interrupted she, raising herself up in the bed. 'I poison his lordship? What can you mean by this? I understand you not, and am innocent, even in thought, of any such crimes. Explain yourself, therefore, and do not sport with the misery of a wretched creature who has more real distresses than she is able to bear, without the addition of imaginary guilt'.

This amazed them all. They stood looking at each other for some moments, wrapped in reflections not the most pleasing, on the consequence which might attend their precipitation in treating his lordship in the manner they had done, in case what she said should prove true. At length, on her repeating her entreaties, one of them condescended to inform her of everything that had passed, dwelling particularly on the desperate condition his lordship had been in, and the various methods they had used to relieve him.

Weak and dispirited as you must suppose her to have been, she was scarce able to refrain from laughter at this account.

'A desperate condition he must be in now, indeed', said she, 'whatever he was in before; but, if you will give me leave to slip on my gown, and go to him, I'll soon complete his cure'.

This was a step so contrary to all rules of practice, that they could not permit it. On the contrary, one of them, observing the impropriety of listening to the ravings of a person whose head must certainly be distracted by the effects of the poison, they all took the hint, and were actually going to hold her down by force, in order to proceed in their experiments upon her, which you may think would not have been the more merciful for what she had just said.

But she was delivered from this discipline by the appearance of his lordship, who, on one of his servants carrying him the pleasing news of what she said, had found strength enough to run to her, and throwing himself on the bed, 'Oh, my dearest girl!' exclaimed he, clasping his arms around her neck, 'am I not then a dead man? Tell me, tell me the truth directly, am I not a dead man'?

His haggard looks, and the bandages and flannels in which he was wrapped all over, convinced her of the truth of what the doctors had told her he had suffered. Shocked at the thought, she held up her hands in a supplicating posture, and imploring his pardon for what she had been the involuntary cause of, informed him that she was subject to fits, which attacked her with double violence whenever she drank to any excess, as his lordship had compelled her to do that night, much, he must have been sensible, against her inclination, had she dared to refuse him; and that when she was in

those fits, which lasted till the effects of the liquor went off, she was apt to rave, and speak every extravagance and inconsistency that could come into a disordered head. The manner in which she spoke, left not the least room for doubt. All his fears were instantly removed, his joy at which obliterated the remembrance of everything he had suffered in mind and body, and he not only forgave her, but also made her a handsome present, in recompense for her happy news. But his doctors met with a very different treatment. He reviled them in the severest terms for their ignorance and presumption in putting him to such torture, and tearing his constitution by such violent means, before they were certain of his ailment; and without permitting them to allege in their vindication his assertions of what he felt, and entreaties not to leave anything unattempted that they thought might possibly relieve him, ordered them to be turned out of doors, without paying them a farthing for all their trouble.

I have seen that you were surprised at his lordship's indelicacy and disregard to his health, in having an amour with a creature in so low a state of infamy and wretchedness as to walk the streets to offer herself to casual prostitution, as well as at her expressing herself in a manner so much above her appearance and circumstances. But the least acquaintance with the world would easily account for both.

When once a woman falls from chastity, the characteristic virtue of her sex, the descent to this lowest degree of human misery is natural, and seldom, very seldom, fails to come of course. The kept mistress, who this day shines in brocade and jewels, and rattles about in her chariot, will, in a few months, spend the night in the streets for want of a habitation to hide her head, and without clothes to shelter her from the inclemencies of the weather, when the novelty that first recommended her is worn off; for no prosperity that is not established on virtue can last. Theirs, indeed, is of all the most fleeting; the vice which is their support affecting their own conduct by example, and making them lavish profusely what they get from profusion.

Such had been the case of this female. She had been entitled, by birth and education, to better hopes, but vice had blasted all, and left her only the reflection of what she might have been, to aggravate her present wretchedness. As to him, his health possibly was in a state not worthy of regard; and for his delicacy, the indiscriminate, vague intercourse of the sexes effectually destroys that, as well as the sentimental attachment, which refines the desire of rational beings, and distinguishes it from the gross appetite of brute animals; so that in general, nothing further than the gratification of that appetite is now sought; and as that can be effected by any one object, as well as another, whether it is found in a palace or a brothel, makes no difference with those who profess themselves men of pleasure. The sex is all they seek, without regard to any qualifications; and consequently, when their appetites are gratified, they desert the objects of them with the same indifference as they took them.

But to return to my master. It was some time, as you may

imagine, before he recovered the effects of this affair ; but I remained not with him so long. The doctors, in revenge for the treatment they had met with, blazed it abroad, with the addition of every ridiculous circumstance they could invent. This brought all his acquaintances to have a laugh at him upon the occasion, to one of whom he lost me that afternoon on a bet, at a race between two of the maggots which they found in the nuts they cracked after dinner.

CHAPTER IX

CHRYSAI'S MASTER PAYS HIS COURT TO A GREAT PERSON, WHO SEEMS NOT MUCH TO RELISH HIS HUMOUR, AND EXPRESSES SOME UNFASHIONABLE SENTIMENTS CONCERNING POLITE PLEASURES—IN THE COURSE OF A REGULAR CIRCULATION, CHRYSAI COMES INTO THE POSSESSION OF A MINISTER OF STATE, WHO REFUSES A FRIENDLY OFFER FOR VERY ODD REASONS—HIS STRANGE NOTIONS OF SOME AFFAIRS

SOME public occasion had brought a concourse more than usual in those retirements, to pay their duty to the prince¹ that morning. As my master was one of the last who came, as soon as his devoirs were ended, some of the company accidentally asked what had kept him so late, on which with an air of pleasantry, he answered aloud that 'he had been detained by a very whimsical affair. A certain nobleman', said he, 'went into company last night so immensely drunk, that having set in to play, and lost five thousand pounds, he quite forgot it this morning, and refused to pay the money, till some person of honour, who was unconcerned in the matter, should vouch his having lost it fairly, on which it was referred to me, and sorry I am that I was qualified to give it against him'.

'How, my lord, by being a person of honour' ? says the gentleman he spoke to.

'No', replied my master, with a significant smile, 'not so neither, but by being unconcerned in winning it'. And then, turning short to another, 'But have you heard the news, my lord' ? said he. 'Mr — caught his wife yesterday taking a serious walk in Kensington Gardens with the gentleman whom we all know he forbade her keeping company with some time ago'.

A smile of general approbation encouraged him so much that he concluded with saying he wished he had himself been the happy delinquent so taken, as he doubted not but the gravest bishop on the bench would, were he to speak his mind honestly.

The prince had heard him without interruption ; but as soon as he had ended, turning to a nobleman who stood near him—'There can be no greater insult', said he, with a determined look and solemn accent, 'to a person who is appointed to put the laws of a country in execution, than for any one to boast of a breach of those in his presence. For my part, if I am ever called by Providence to that

¹ The Prince of Wales (George III)

station, it is my invariable resolution that no man, how exalted soever in rank, who lives in open violation of any law, human or divine, shall ever hold employment under me, or receive countenance from me'.

This rebuke damped my master's spirits, as it struck a reverential awe into all present. He hung down his head, and in a few moments withdrew, quite abashed. But he soon recovered; and to silence the jests of his companions, and show that he was not to be brow-beat out of his own way, he made one with them to spend the evening at a brothel-tavern, where he gave me to a pimp, who gave me to a whore, who gave me to a bully, who gave me to a pawn-broker, who gave me to a beau, who gave me to a tavern-keeper, who paid me into the bank, from whence I was sent, in the change of a note, to the first minister of state.¹

The notion I had hitherto entertained of human politics made me enter into this service with reluctance; but my prejudice was soon removed. My new master was just coming from his closet, when I was delivered to him; he stopped to count the money, then putting it into his purse, and turning to a clerk, who followed him with a huge bag of papers in his hand—'I must have all these finished against morning', said he, 'that I may be able to read them over before they are signed. I know there are a great many, but the business requires dispatch, and diligence and method overcome the greatest difficulties'.

Saying this, he went into his drawing-room, which was filled with several of the most eminent members of the community, who came, some to consult, some to advise (for he refused not the advice of the meanest), and all to congratulate him on the success of his measures. When the business and formality of this scene were over, the company withdrew, all but one gentleman, who desired some private conversation with my master. As soon as they were alone—'I have done myself the honour to wait upon you this morning', said the gentleman, 'to inform you that there is a vacancy in my borough, and to know who you would have me return; for, as I see that all your measures are evidently calculated for the good of your country, I am determined to support you'.

'I am much obliged to your good opinion', answered my master; 'but I am resolved never to interfere in matters of this nature, nor to attempt influencing the election or vote of any person by any other means than reason. All, therefore, that I have to ask is, that you will return an honest man; while he approves of my conduct he will certainly support me, and no longer do I wish to be supported'.

'What, sir', replied the gentleman in astonishment, 'not desire to have your friends returned? Why, sir, is it possible that you can be a stranger to the intrigues that are forming against you, by a faction, who, when they had reduced the state to a mere wreck, like a cowardly, mutinous crew, flew in the face of their

¹ William Pitt, afterwards Earl of Chatham, Prime Minister and Secretary of State (for the second time), 1757-61.

master, took the boat, and made their escape to shore, and now, when you have not only brought her safe into harbour, but also fitted her out for another voyage, with every prospect of success, are caballing to undermine, and turn you away from the helm ; not that they even pretend to arraign your conduct or skill, but just that they may have the pillaging the fruits of your labours. As this, sir is notoriously the case, you must excuse the warmth of my honest zeal, when I tell you that I think you must be guilty of very strange, very blamable remissness, if you neglect any possible method of disappointing their pernicious designs'.

'My friend', returned my master, 'I am too sensible of the truth of all you say, but hope there is no necessity for my having recourse to methods which my soul disapproves. Without the assistance of any such did I—to pursue your mode of speech—first point out to our master, and the rest of the ship's company, the errors in their steering, the rocks they were ready to run upon, and the way to avoid them. Without any such did I take the helm in that dangerous time, when they fled from the wreck, and worked her out of the breakers they left her among ; and without any such, will I support my place at the helm, or resign it, for, in my opinion, no end can justify improper means.

'Shall I own to you, my friend, that your offer gives me pain ? Do not mistake me ; I am sincerely obliged to you for that good opinion which dictated it to your honest heart ; but the truth is, that any member of the community's having the power of making such an offer, proves such a degeneracy in our constitution, as threatens its overthrow in the end. A parliament should be a representation of the people ; but how can it be said to be that, if the people are not at liberty to choose whom they please to represent them ? Besides, such a manner of nominating disappoints the end, as well as it destroys the essence of a parliament, as it is too probable that the nominator shall stipulate conditions with his member, that may not only take away the power of his voting according to the dictates of his judgment and conscience, but also enjoin such as may be directly opposite to both, and injurious, if not destructive, to that country, which he thus nominally represents. A parliament, therefore, to be free, should be freely chosen, no man having it in his power to do more than give his own vote, and such a parliament, to keep up the excellence of its nature in its first institution, should not continue longer than one session, but a new one be called as often as the occasions of the state should require it, once in every year, at least, for so often does the interest of a nation demand that its guardians should meet. Such a parliament, sensible of the shortness of its duration, and nature of the tenure of their power, would take care never to act against the interest of their constituents ; or, if human frailty should err, their time would be too short to establish the evil, and, as it would be impossible for them to be chosen again, the next parliament would remedy the mischief. Such should a British parliament be ; such I hope it will be. It is every honest Briton's duty to hope so, and not only that, but to endeavour to make it so. Nor shall any act of mine ever seem to countenance a practice that contradicts this

principle. By speaking and acting in strict conformity to the dictates of my judgment and conscience, have I hitherto succeeded, contrary to the apprehensions of many, beyond the expectations of all, and the same means, and none other, will I ever pursue'.

'Heaven bless your pious intentions', said the gentleman, taking his hand and kissing it in a rapture, tears of joy running down his face. 'Heaven will bless them. Happy sovereign in such a servant; happy Britain in such a guardian'.

Saying this, he took his leave of my master, who went directly to wait upon his.

CHAPTER X

CHRYSALE'S SENTIMENTS OF HIS MASTER'S MASTER, WHO GIVES A REMARKABLE REASON FOR HIS APPROBATION OF HIS MINISTER'S MEASURES AND MANNER OF DOING BUSINESS—THE MINISTER'S CHARGE TO A GENERAL ON APPOINTING HIM TO A COMMAND—CHRYSALE ENTERS INTO THE SERVICE OF THE GENERAL—CONFLICT BETWEEN MATERNAL TENDERNESS AND GLORY, IN WHICH THE LATTER IS TRIUMPHANT—STRANGE ADVICE FROM A MOTHER TO HER SON

THE first view of this august person¹ struck me with a reverence which I had never felt for man before. Man may be deceived in the looks of man, but we see through all disguise, and read the real character in the heart. Honest, benevolent, and humane, the social virtues brightened in his royal breast.

'Sire', said my master, addressing him with the most respectful sincerity, 'here are the dispatches which you ordered me to draw up yesterday. Since I had the honour of your commands then, I have received some further intelligence that confirms the justice of your resolutions. Disappointed, but not deterred by the repulse which they justly met with from you, those people have the confidence to make a new attempt, and think to obtain by menaces what was refused to their entreaties; but the event will convince them that it is more difficult to a generous mind to deny the suppliant, than repulse the insolent. Strong in the natural strength of your dominions, and stronger in the love of your people, you are able to assert your own cause against all the powers of the world, on that element which nature has pointed out for the scene of your triumphs; nor will you permit any other to interfere with you on it. All you require is a neutrality, where you are entitled to assistance. This shows your confidence in your own strength, and your contempt of them. But even this contempt will not overlook any disrespect to yourself, any partiality to your enemies. Let them behave themselves as friends, or profess themselves foes; this choice is indifferent to you. As to their complaints, their own unjust actions are the cause of them, and, when this is removed, they will

¹George II

cease, of course. Till then, to seek a remission of the punishment, and still persist in the crime, is an insult upon justice and mercy ; and for their menaces, they are beneath the notice of an answer¹.

'Be it so', replied the reverend monarch, the indignation of his honest heart flashing from his eyes, 'be it so ; you speak the sentiments of my soul'.—Then, turning to a favoured subject, who stood near him—'It is a pleasure to me to transact business with this man', continued he ; 'he makes me understand him, and does not perplex my soul with a vain maze of timorous wiles, but speaks and acts with open honesty and boldness'.

The honour of this testimony warmed the heart of my master with a joy that overpaid his labours, and added new fire to the assiduity of his soul. As soon as he went home, he found a person¹ waiting for him, whom he had appointed to meet him, on an affair of the greatest importance.

'I have sent for you, my friend', said my master, 'on an occasion which, I am sensible, will give joy to your heart. You are to command a separate body of the troops, which have been sent to prosecute this necessary and just war in America. I need not put myself nor you to the pain of repeating the causes of the shameful inactivity, to give it no severer name, by which this war has been drawn into such a length ; you know, and will avoid them. You will not wear out opportunity in making unnecessary preparations for improbable occasions ; you will not damp the ardour of your soldiers by delay, nor prolong a burthensome war, to enrich yourself with the spoils of your country. You are young, active, and brave ; such a commander only do British soldiers want to lead them to victory. You have no senior, no superior here, to restrain the efforts of your spirit by timid caution, at the same time that your judgment will supply the place of experience, and prevent your falling into the misfortunes which self-sufficient, brutal rashness has made so fatal to others. Your instructions are comprised in a few words. Make the best use your judgment shall direct you of the forces entrusted to your command, to defend the property, and avenge the wrongs of your fellow-subjects, and to vindicate the honour of this abused nation. I know whom I speak to, and therefore I say no more. Proceed, my friend, my soldier, answer my expectations, and you will fulfil the wishes of your country'.

Saying this, he embraced him tenderly, and as he went with him to the door, happening to look into the street, he saw a number of disabled soldiers, who had placed themselves before his window, to solicit relief for their miseries. 'Oh, my friend', continued he, grasping his hand, 'behold those victims of the unjust ambition of that enemy against whom you go, and let the sight add the wings of an eagle to your haste, to tear down a power which has been thus fatal to so many of your brave countrymen, to prevent any more from suffering the like evils from the same cause. The man who does not use, to the best advantage, the means entrusted to him

¹ General Wolfe, whom Pitt singled out to take command of the forces sent in 1759 against Quebec. On 13th September 1759, the battle of Quebec was fought, and Wolfe fell in the hour of victory.

by his country to destroy its enemies, is guilty of all the evils which those enemies may afterwards do to his country. Shall I beg a favour of my friend? Distribute this money'—giving him a handful of guineas—'among those men, as from yourself. If it is not enough to give each a guinea, I will be your debtor for what is wanting; if it is more, keep the residue in your hands to apply to the same use on the first occasion you meet. This much will relieve their real wants, and more might only tempt them to excess. The invidiousness of my station makes it improper for me to do even an act of virtue, which may be mistaken for ostentation. Adieu, my friend. Heaven guard you in the day of battle, and guide your sword to victory'.

I here quitted the service of this great man; the instances of whose conduct, which I have given, make any further character of him unnecessary.

The regard with which the minister had addressed himself to my present master raised my curiosity to take an immediate view of his heart, as I knew not but that I might leave his possession directly. But my fears were agreeably disappointed, for the number of guineas given to him by my master exceeding that of the objects to whom we were to be distributed, it fell to my lot to remain a little longer with him.

The honour of his new command, and the confidence with which it was entrusted to him, warmed his heart with the most exalted joy. He executed his charitable commission, and then went directly home, where, bending his knee to his beloved mother, and kissing her hand in rapture—'Oh, madam', said he, 'congratulate your happy son. My prayers at length are heard, and I am blessed with an opportunity of proving to the world my attachment to the service, my ardour for the glory of my country. I am honoured with the separate command in America, where Heaven fires my soul with an assurance that I shall have the happiness of crushing the injurious power of our enemies in the very place where it first attacked my country, where it has too long triumphed in its wrongs'.

'Heaven bless my son', replied the matron, as soon as a gush of tears of joy and tenderness permitted her to speak. 'Heaven guard my son, and bless his pious hopes. Let me only live to see him return with the honour of having done his duty, and I shall die contented. But why do I say this, as if my heart felt a doubt for him? My son will never fail to do his duty; he will never fail from the paths of honour, however dangerous, nor seek to colour over with specious arguments the loss of his honour. He will not make his mother ashamed of having borne him, nor bring her grey hairs with disgrace and sorrow to the grave. I know the instructions which have formed his youth; I know the principles of his heart; I know my own blood better. But oh, my son! remember also that prudence distinguishes true courage from rashness, that your country has now a peculiar interest in your life, and that you betray its trust, if you lose it by any unnecessary boldness. Remember your aged mother, who hangs weeping over her grave till you return. Remember your'—

'Oh, my mother, no more! Recall not ideas which my present

situation requires me to forget. Fear not, your son will not be a disgrace to the honest race from which he has sprung. He will do his duty as a soldier, a British soldier, and as a man sensible of the obligations of reason and religion. Whether I shall ever have the happiness of kissing this hand again, is only known to Heaven ; but it is in my power to promise that the name of your son shall never raise a blush in the face of his mother, nor his actions require the palliation of excuse from his friends. If life is to be short, let it be well filled ; one day of glory is better than an age of idleness or dishonour. Adieu, my mother ; your blessing is a shield to the head, a support to the soul of your son ; one tender parting more, and then my heart must be resigned to other cares'.

'Heaven bless, Heaven guard my son' ! and then, as he went from her, 'O glory, what a tribute dost thou expect from wretched mortals' !

My master paused a moment to wipe away the pious tear which filial duty owed to such a parting, and then hastened to another scene of equal tenderness.

Mutual merit had improved the instinctive liking of youth between my master and a young lady,¹ whose elevated rank and large fortune were her least recommendations, into the strongest attachment of real love. As reason could make no objection on either side, parental approbation gave its sanction to their happy choice, and had encouraged virgin timidity to appoint the day that was to seal their bliss. Hard task upon a favoured lover to communicate to the chosen of his soul the order which was to damp rising expectation by this delay, and tear him from the instant hope of that happiness which he had so long been suing for. But honour and the service of his country demanded this fiery trial, to prepare him for that height of glory to which his soul aspired.

CHAPTER XI

ANOTHER SCENE OF TENDERNESS—LOVE AND HONOUR IN THE OLD-FASHIONED, ROMANTIC STYLE—CHRYSALE QUITS THE SERVICE OF THE GENERAL, AND, AFTER SOME FEW COMMON CHANGES, ENTERS INTO THAT OF HONEST AMINADAB—CONCLUSION OF AMINADAB'S AGENCY FOR HER GRACE

As soon as he had recovered from the softness into which his mother's tenderness had melted him, he went directly to his mistress. She received him with the freedom proper in their present situation, but soon perceived an alteration in his countenance, that showed her his heart was not at ease. This alarmed her tender fears. 'What', said she, looking earnestly at him, 'can make a troubled gloom

¹ Miss Lowther, afterwards Duchess of Bolton. Before the battle of Quebec, Wolfe gave her miniature to his old schoolfellow and comrade-in-arms, John Jervis, afterwards Lord St Vincent, having a presentiment that he would die.

overcast that face, where hopes and happiness have, for some time, brightened every smile? Can anything have happened to disturb the prospect so pleasing to us? Can you feel a grief that you think me unworthy or unable to share with you? It must be so; that faint, that laboured smile betrays the sickness of your heart'.

'Oh, dearest wish of that heart', replied he, taking her hand and kissing it in ecstasy, 'how shall I merit such perfection? It is impossible; I am unworthy; but let my soul thank Heaven for blessing it with this opportunity of rising nearer to a level with your virtues—a hope that will soften the severity of absence, and make the delay of happiness seem shorter'.

'What canst thou mean'? said she, a jealous doubt alarming her delicacy. 'Delay! I understand thee not! I urge not'.

'Mistake not, O my love, the inconsistencies which anguish extorts from my bleeding heart. How can I say it? Our happiness is delayed—delayed but to be more exalted. Honour, the service of my country, call'.

'And am I to be left'?

'But for a time, a little time, the pain of which shall be overpaid by the joy of meeting, never to part again. Oh, spare my heart, restrain those tears; I am not worthy, I am not proof to such a trial. The interest, the glory of my country demand my service, and my gracious master has honoured me with a station, in which my endeavours may be effectual, to accomplish his commands—nay must be effectual—where love urges duty, where you are the inestimable reward'.

'If that reward is all you seek, why do you fly from it? My fortune is amply sufficient. Quit, then, the dangerous paths of ambition, and let us retire and seek true happiness in content'.

'Oh, spare my struggling heart! What can, what shall I do? The trial is too great for human fortitude. Assist me, glory! help, O my country, support me through this conflict, and I shall triumph over every other difficulty and danger! I go, my love, but to deserve thee'.

'Go! go! and Heaven guide and guard your steps'—waving her hand, and turning from him to hide her tears. 'I shall no longer struggle with the sacred impulse that leads you on to glory'. Then turning to him, 'But remember how you leave me; think what I feel till you return. What must I be, should'—

The horror of this thought made her unable to say more. He flew into her arms, and mingling his tears with her's, as her head reclined upon his bosom, in the tenderness of a chaste embrace—'This is too much', said he, 'this is too much. I never can repay this excess of goodness'. Then breaking from her arms in a kind of enthusiasm—'Heaven gives my soul', continued he, 'this foretaste of happiness, as an earnest of success. I go to certain victory; the prayers of angels must prevail'.

Saying these words, he rushed out of the room, leaving her half dead with grief. Nor was he in a much happier state; the thought of parting from her damping the ardour that had enabled him to give that proof of his resolution, and obliging nature to pay the tribute of a flood of tears to such a sacrifice.

But glory and the interest of his country soon dissipated this

cloud, and his mind, freed from the dread of such painful scenes of tenderness, resumed its wonted vigour, and entered upon the cares of his great undertaking with the most indefatigable assiduity. But I continued not in his possession to see the effects of these cares ; such objects as I was designed for occurred too frequently to the first of whom it fell to my lot to be given. I told you that I took a view of his heart. Never was honour more firmly established on the principles of virtue than there. To select any one instance would be injustice to the rest. All was uniformly great and good.

My next master was one of the pillars of military glory, who had contributed a leg, an arm, and the scalp of his head to raise the trophies of the French in America. Though he was destitute of almost every comfort which nature really stands in need of, his first care, on the acquisition of such a treasure as I was to him, was to gratify the artificial wants of luxury. He went directly to a gin-shop, where he changed me for a quartern of that liquid fire, the taste of which was too pleasing to his palate, and the warmth too comfortable to his heart for him to be satisfied with so little. Quartern followed quartern, till every sense was intoxicated, and he fell dead drunk on the floor, when his good-natured host had him kindly laid, to sleep off his debauch, on the next dunghill, first taking care to prevent his fellow-inhabitants of the streets from robbing him of the rest of his treasure, by picking his pocket of it himself. The scenes I saw in this service were all of the same kind, but I was soon relieved from the pain of them, my master giving me as a present to an officer of the custom that very night. By this faithful steward of the public, I was next morning given to the factor of a gang of smugglers, to be laid out for him in lace in Flinders, whither he was just going on the affairs of his profession. With this industrious trader I went as far as Harwich, where, while they waited for the tide, he lost me at a game of cribbage, to a person who was going over with him.

My new master was honest Aminadab, her grace's¹ agent, whom I have mentioned to you before. As soon as they had done playing, my master took a walk upon the beach with a person who strongly resembled him, and whom I found to be his son.

'I wish', said the father, 'that we were safe at our journey's end, for, though I have planned matters so well that I think there can be no danger, the immense consequence at stake must make me anxious'

'I do not understand you', replied the son ; 'I thought this was but such a journey as I have often known you take, and that you were going no farther than Holland, on some business of her grace's'.

'She thinks so, indeed', returned the father, 'nor would I have her think otherwise as yet ; but I do not design ever to see her face more. I am now, my son, arrived at the height of my wishes, being possessed of wealth beyond my most sanguine hopes. For you must know, that having gained the confidence of this woman by many services, I at length suggested it to her that the best way for her to make the most profit of the great wealth she had amassed,

¹ The Countess of Yarmouth.

would be to send it to Holland by some trusty person, who should bring it over again from thence, to save appearances, and subscribe it here, in some fictitious name, to the supplies given for the defence of Germany, now that her's, and the intrigues of some other great persons, had baffled the schemes of economy which the managers had attempted in vain to establish, and obliged them to come into our own terms. She took the hint, for it was a most plausible one, and immediately insisted that I should negotiate the affair for her, giving me one hundred thousand pounds for that purpose.¹ This was what I wanted, and had been always scheming for, having ever remitted my money, as fast as I could make any, into Holland, that I might be able to seize such a happy opportunity as this, at a moment's warning'.

'But you cannot think, father, of staying in Holland? You will be immediately pursued thither'.

'In Holland, fool? no, nor in the smoke of Europe at all. I design to set out for Africa without a moment's loss, and hope to be far enough out of her reach, or that of any Christian power, before she can suspect anything of my flight. And it will heighten the pleasure of my success to think, that while I am sailing to a land of circumcision, she will sit in anxious expectation of my return'.

'But, father, is it not injustice to deceive her confidence and rob her of so great a sum of money'?

'Injustice, fool! injustice to a Christian? Say such another word, and I discard you, disclaim you for ever! Thy converse with these Gentiles has debauched thy faith. For what do we mix with them, for what do we serve them, for what bear their abominations and their insults, but to turn them to our own advantage? Fools! vain presumptuous fools! to imagine that any benefits, any gratitude can bind us to them, or change the innate hatred of our souls to a sect that has been the cause of our dispersion and ruin. But, to silence thy weak scruples about injustice with a word, have I not the authority of our Holy Scripture, the example of our great prophet Moses himself, for what I do, who borrowed the wealth of the Egyptians, without a design of ever returning it, to pay the children of Israel for the labour they had been put to by their oppressors, and enrich them when they should arrive at the land of promise? And is this not my case? Have I not laboured hourly for this Gentile woman without payment? Did she not join to defraud our people of a greater sum than this, to which my mite was added too, under the pretence of procuring us a settlement. And did she not refuse to return it when the attempt failed of success? What, then, is this but a just retaliation? a fulfilling of our law that says, "An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth"? And do I not want her wealth to make my settlement happy, in the land of my forefathers'?

¹ One method by which Ministers and those in confidential positions enriched themselves was subscribing Government loans at par and then throwing them on the public at a high premium, *e.g.*, the shares on one loan of three millions rose to a premium of 11 per cent. forthwith, and the country lost £385,000 by the transaction.—*Hunt's Political History of England*, x.

The son had too high a reverence for the judgment of his father to offer any reply, but yielded to the conviction of arguments so conclusive. By this time the wind and tide served for us; we arrived in Holland without anything remarkable. I should, however, mention to you the sordid hypocrisy of my master, who, not to violate the custom of his race, made a pretence of poverty, to get his passage without expense.

CHAPTER XII

THEY ARRIVE AT THE HAGUE—POLITICAL CONVERSATION BETWEEN A DUTCHMAN AND A JEW—THEY DIFFER IN OPINION—AMINADAB LEAVES HIS FRIEND, VAN HOGAN, IN GREAT DISTRESS

As soon as he arrived at the Hague, my master set his son to prepare for their immediate departure, while he went himself for a moment to speak to one of the principal members of the States.

There was little ceremony between a Dutchman and a Jew, but entering directly upon business—‘My friend Aminadab’, said his mightiness, ‘I am glad to see you. I hope you have brought us good news, and that there is a stop put to the insolence of those English pirates, who, in a manner, block up our ports, and have almost ruined our trade’.

‘Really, my friend Van Hogan’, replied my master, ‘I am sorry that I cannot give you any satisfactory account of that affair; for such is the perverseness of people in power there at present, that they will not listen to any arguments’.

‘Will they not take money’?

‘No, indeed; nor does the boldest of us all know how to offer it with safety, it was rejected with such indignant rage the last time, though, indeed, the offer was a tempting one. I have seen the day, and that not very long since, when half the sum would have done twice as much. But matters are most strangely altered of late. They have got a manager,¹ who neither drinks nor games, keeps running horses nor whores, nor lives above his private fortune, and therefore has not such pressing demands for money as used to make our negotiators go on so smoothly with others formerly’.

‘Death! what shall we do? Is the whole court corrupted by this example? Are they all infected with such a strange madness’?

‘No, it is not gone so far as that yet, and it is to be hoped that the example of a few will not be able to do so much, and that, when the novelty of this humour wears off a little, it will go out of fashion insensibly, and things return to their old course. This is supposing the worst, that the engines now at work to overturn this new set should miscarry’.

‘But what must we do in the meantime? We shall be ruined

¹ William Pitt, whose unfashionable disinterestedness and incorruptibility were one secret of his popularity.

before that may happen. We must declare war, and do ourselves justice'.

'But may not the remedy there be worse than the disease? Are your affairs in such a condition as to entitle you to take such a step? Consider what a mighty naval force they have at this time. Consider how you will be able to resist it'.

'That is the thing, the only thing, that has kept us quiet so long. But something must be done; another Amboyna¹ affair, or some such stroke, must bring us satisfaction and revenge too'.

'Take care, my friend, be cautious what you do; this is no time for such strokes, nor are the present governors such people as those who suffered them so tamely; they will be apt to return the stroke in a manner that may be attended with consequences too dreadful to be hazarded. I hate those haughty islanders as much as you, except some few particulars. The sense of the whole nation has ever been against us; nor would they suffer us among them now, but that we have availed ourselves so well of the favour of those few, as to get the command of almost all the money in the kingdom into our own hands, so that now they dare not provoke us too far, though I own I do suspect that the design of the present rulers is to get out of our power as soon as this war is over, if our old friends do not counteract their designs'.

'But all this time this talking signifies nothing to our affairs; what do they say to them? What reasons do they give for encouraging these outrages, in breach of treaties and contempt of justice'?

'In truth, my friend, a great many, that are more just than agreeable, more easily exclaimed against than refuted. In answer to your alleging the faith of treaties, they insist that they strictly observe the sense and spirit of them, while you only cavil about the words, it being absurd to think that any nation should bind up its own hands in the manner you pretend; or, even if that was the meaning of the treaty at the time when it was made, that your abuse of the indulgence given by it makes it necessary to retract it now, and they express the most indignant surprise at your insisting so strongly upon one article, which, at best, is but doubtful, and would be in itself absurd, in the sense you wrest it to, while you break through so many, the meaning of which you do not even pretend to dispute'.

'Then we will dispute no longer about them; we will enforce their observation by the same methods that originally obtained them'.

'Ay, if that could be; but, my friend, I cannot flatter you; I am afraid those means are out of your power. You were then really mighty states, respectable for your power, and dreadful for your valour; but the case is now altered, I need not say how'.

'Ungrateful English, to forget how we rescued them from popery

¹ Alludes to the Amboyna massacre of 1623, when the Dutch tortured many English traders to death. In 1654 they were compelled to pay £300,000 compensation to the children of the victims.

and slavery but the other day. Had it not been for us, they would, at best, have been but slaves to France'.

'The very charge they make against you, who, they say, could never have resisted the power of Spain, or established your liberties, if their Queen Elizabeth had not hearkened to the cries of your poor distressed states. As for the affair you mention, though they do not deny the benefit, they take off from the obligation by attributing it to self-interested motives, as, they say, you were convinced that if anything happened to them, you must sink, of course; besides, that you have been amply paid for this, by the immense expense of blood and treasure with which they established your barrier in the late wars, which they evidently entered into on your account, to the neglect of their own interest. In a word, my friend, there is so much truth in what they say that I would not advise you to insist upon these points any more'.

'Confound the points, and the memories that rip them up so. What shall we do? I myself lost a ship last week, worth fifty thousand ducats; though all the precautions possible were taken, as sending her papers by another ship, supplying her with false bills of lading, false clearances, false consignments—in short, everything that human art could devise. And I know she was as well sworn for, to prevent her being condemned, as human conscience could swear; but nothing could elude the captors, or deceive or influence the judges'.

'But was she not insured?'

'Not a ducat; there is nothing to be got by insuring, except the ships are to be cast away. Oh, my ship, my ship! I will have war'.

'And then all your ships go at once?'

'I am distracted. What shall we do?'

'My friend, the best, the only advice I can give you is to put a stop to this trade, and open your eyes to your true interest. I hate the English as much as you possibly can; but that should not make me ruin myself to be revenged on them. They are your only natural allies. They first delivered, they still sustain you, nor can you support the very name of an independent state without them. Provoke them not, therefore, too far. I wonder how they have borne so much already. Preserve a fair neutrality; they despise your assistance, and desire no more; nor, by your avarice, force them to measures that must end in your ruin. If you break with them, to whom will you apply? The French have given you many proofs that they only wait for an opportunity to enslave you. Spain has at length learned its own interest, and will not break with the only power whose friendship can be of real service to it,¹ and this very war gives a sufficient demonstration of Austrian faith and gratitude.

'This is the obvious situation of things, and must strike a person at the first view; but a moment's thought will show them even in a stronger light. For, to grant that France and Austria both

¹ Alludes to the family compact entered into secretly by the Bourbon houses of Spain and France.

may be sincere in their professions to you, does not reason show you the imprudence of trusting to promises, which it is more than probable they will not be able to perform ? For, if you would but divest yourself of passion and prejudice for a moment, you would see that the measures entered upon, and the means used to carry them on by the English, at this time must, in all human appearance, disappoint the schemes of their enemies, and retort, upon their own heads, the ruin they meditated for others. Indeed, the prospect is such, that it is impossible to say where things will end. Every interior fund is exhausted, every external resource cut off. Their own trade is absolutely ruined ; the treasures of Spain, which supplied them in their last wars, are no longer at their command, so that I can foresee nothing less than their becoming bankrupts, not only to themselves, but also to every foreign state and individual, whose avarice of present gain has made them supply their wants.

‘ Nor is this distress the effect of chance, or of an unfortunate campaign, which the success of another, or some lucky hit, may restore. It is the natural consequence of a system of measures, planned with judgment, and prosecuted with vigour, by a minister who will not fail to improve it to the most solid advantage, and this, I say, not solely from my own opinion. You know I have had connections with persons able to give me the best information, by the assistance of which I have traced the progress of these affairs with astonishment ; and therefore, as England has thus at length shown a superiority in council, the usual resource of patching up a good peace at the end of an unsuccessful war seems also to be precluded from them. As for the house of Austria, it has ever been a dead weight upon its friends, though its infatuated ingratitude to England, which has been in a manner its sole support for near a century, will, probably, prevent any other state from undertaking such a burthen, so that it must sink back into its original obscurity and barbarism. Thus you see, my friend, that depending upon France is leaning on a broken reed, and trusting to Austria, going for shelter under a falling wall. What, then, can you do, if the English should take offence at your behaviour, and exert that power which is in their hands, to punish your avaricious partiality to their enemies ?

‘ Your power is, in every instance, contemptible ; your navy is gone absolutely to decay ; your land forces are filled with old men and children ; your officers, who might have served you, have been obliged to enter into other services for bread, to make room for ignorant, indolent, pusillanimous burghers, who barter their votes for such a share of the spoils of the public. Your finances are in the lowest state of embarrassment ; your public spirit, your valour, your virtue, all swallowed up by selfishness and sordid love of gain, everything in the situation that seems to invite ruin, if it is not speedily prevented, and that can possibly be done no other way than as I have mentioned ; for, as I have said, and must again repeat, things are now on a footing there that you do not seem to be properly aware of. The people are sensible of their own strength ; governors exert it properly, and there is a mutual confidence between them, that in a manner ensures success to their attempts. Consider this

fair, this friendly representation of real facts, and you will soon see the improbability of their bearing with you any longer, or suffering you to defeat the ends of their military efforts, by carrying on the trade of their enemies, and so enabling them to continue the war'.

'Is it come to this? Are the friends on whom we depended most turned against us? Are you an advocate for our enemies, and would persuade us to give up the most advantageous branch of trade we have'?

'Why will you let your passion blind you thus? I have told you before, and I repeat it again, that of all Christians, I hate the English most, because they resemble us least; as I love the Dutch most, as you come nearest to ourselves, both in practice and profession. But *my* passions never blind *me*, and therefore I speak the dictates of reason. I plead not for them, nor will I flatter you'.

'Notwithstanding all their boasted power, we have one stroke left to humble them, and we will make it directly; we will draw all our money out of their funds'.

"Will you so, at a third part loss? Oh, Moses! what fools are those Christians? Do you not see that even this stroke, as you call it, is guarded against; that, apprehensive of such an attempt, they have lowered the particular funds, in which your money chiefly lies, so far, that the loss of selling out now would be intolerable. And whose is this money which you would draw out? The property of private people? Absurd thought. If it was the money of the public, it would not be strange to see it sacrificed to private interest, but there is no instance in all your story of private property being given up voluntarily for the redress of public wrongs. Friend Hogan, I am in haste; my affairs call me elsewhere. When I shall see you again is uncertain; but my regard would not permit me to miss this opportunity of giving you my advice, which I know to be of importance to you. I can no longer undertake your affairs in London; nor would I have another amuse you with hopes that must deceive you in the end. While it was in my power to serve you, I did; I abused their confidence, I betrayed their secrets to you; but I can do it no longer, nor can any other, to effect. Measures, as well as men, are changed. Adieu'.

With these words, my master went to seek his son, leaving his friend, Van Hogan, in the highest distraction, between the opposite impulses of the strongest passions that could agitate his soul, avarice and fear.

CHAPTER XIII

AMINADAB BIDS ADIEU TO HER GRACE, AND SAILS WITH HIS SON FOR AFRICA—CHRYSL REMAINS WITH A DUTCH BANKER—THE PRINCIPLES AND CONSCIENCE OF A GOOD DUTCHMAN—CHRYSL IS SENT INTO GERMANY—HIS OPINION OF THE DUTCH

THE young Israelite met his father punctually, and gave him such an account of his preparations for their flight, that Aminadab blessed the God of his fathers; and to complete the fullness of his harvest with whatever gleanings he could pick up, he went directly

among his Dutch friends, and, in pious imitation of the example he had quoted before, borrowed, if not jewels of gold and jewels of silver, as much coined gold and silver as he could, and then, going with his son to the seaside, they embarked for their native country, in all the exultation of successful villany.

But I went not with them, my British shape being of more value in Europe than where he was going. My master left me with his banker, in exchange for the more fashionable coin of Spain, which neighbourhood made better known there. My Hebrew master had scarce left the banker, into whose hands he had given me, when in came his Belgic friend, Van Hogan, all aghast at the news he had received from him, and something else, which had come to his knowledge since.

'Oh, Mynheer', said he, 'we are all blown up and undone. The flood is pouring in upon us'.

'What is the matter now, Mynheer', replied the banker, 'that throws you into this strange consternation? The worms have not destroyed the dams, nor an earthquake swallowed up the Spice Islands'?

'Worse, worse, if possible, than even these. Those¹ stubborn, proud, self-sufficient English have refused to release our ships that were taken, carrying ammunition and provision to their enemies, so that we are like not only to lose those ships, but also the advantage of the trade for the future. What can be done to avert this blow'?

'Really, Mynheer, I cannot tell; the case is bad enough, to be sure; but it is no more than was to be expected. It was not to be thought that they would always remain such passive fools as tamely to look on, while we supplied their enemies with necessaries to carry on the war against them, without endeavouring to put a stop to us'.

'Death! I am almost mad to hear you talk thus; but say what you will, my province shall never bear it. Why, I have received advice this minute that all our ships, which were freighted for their enemies, will be condemned, and that they are as little moved at our menaces, as they were at our entreaties. If this continues, we shall not have a ship left in the Texel'.

'Nay, mine shall escape, I am resolved'.

'What will you do to save them'?

'Not run them into the danger, Mynheer'.

'How, give up the trade'?

'Most certainly, since it cannot be carried on with safety any longer, and glad that I have come off so well'.

'I do not understand you'.

'You are too warm, Mynheer, too sanguine in the pursuit of your projects. While the surprise or fright of the late managers in England gave me reason to think that they would not venture to

¹ These dealings of the Dutch with the enemies of Britain, and the consequent assertion of a right of search, were a sore point throughout the long wars with France, Spain, and America, and eventually led to our declaring war against Holland in 1778.

interrupt us, I carried on as large a trade in this way as any other, but, as soon as I saw the people recover their senses, and the reins put into other hands, I made a timely retreat with what I had acquired'.

'And what do you intend to do now'?

'Keep fair with those whom I can get nothing by breaking with, and throw my business into another channel, by which management I have already succeeded so far that I have got the British remittances to the parties engaged in the present war'.

'Why, there may be something in this, and, if one scheme fails, I believe I will even follow your example'.

'And pray, what is that, Mynheer'?

'No more than the old cry of piracy; but this is so laid, that it can hardly fail of success. We have bribed the captain of an English privateer to rifle a ship that we prepare properly for the purpose, and then to come into the way of one of our men-of-war, which is to take him and bring him in, where he is to insult the government, and vindicate his outrages on the pretence of authority.'

'And pray, Mynheer, what can you propose from all this, beside having the foolish villain hanged'?

'Why, the English, in detestation of such villany, will give up the point of searching our ships when they see their authority abused in such a manner, and so we shall gain our end that way; or, if they do not, our own people will be so enraged at the insult and injustice (as they will believe) of their proceeding, that they will immediately declare war against them; and so we shall obtain it the other. The pirate, when he has served our turn, we are to let escape, and it will be no great loss to the world if half a score of his crew are hanged'.

'A very just and public-spirited scheme indeed, to hang wretches for a crime you hire them to commit, and engage your country in a war that must be its ruin, to support your pretensions to an unjustifiable trade'.

'Mynheer Van Hogan, I am a Dutchman as well as you, and attached to my interest, as every Dutchman is; but that is, when my interest is not destructive of itself in the end, as I must tell you I think your present scheme is, in which I will be no further concerned, than to try to prevent the evil consequences of it to the state, the rest may lie upon your own head. Anything in the way of trade my conscience complies with without scruple; I can take every oath that every officer of the customs can impose, and not think myself bound by any of them, further than they agree with my interest. I can supply the enemies of my country with arms to fight against ourselves, provided they pay a price extraordinary, that will defray my taxes towards the support of the war. I can receive circumcision, stroke down my beard, and swear by Mahomet to avoid a tax at Smyrna. I can trample upon the Cross, deny Christ, and call myself a Dutchman, to obtain leave to trade in Japan, but I will not cut the dykes to drown a rat at home. I am not at leisure to say more on this subject, as I am this

minute going to remit a subsidy to one of the German princes,¹ whom England keeps in pay, to fight for their own preservation, from the same principles that it has long fought our battles, and would again, if we did not provoke it too far. And when this is done, I am to meet the French ambassador, to settle terms with him, for remitting the money that is to pay the army which fights against the allies of England. So that you see I am engaged, as you may be, if your warmth, unnatural to the cool temper of your country, will let you open your eyes to your true interest².

Mynheer Van Hogan departed rather silenced than satisfied with the reasoning of my master, who sat down to negotiate the hire of a principality with as much unconcern as he would that of a turnip-field; and bought and sold the inhabitants with as great indifference as he would have bargained for a cask of herrings, in which service it fell to my lot to be employed.

Greatly as I must have edified by the examples and principles, mercantile, moral, civil, and religious, of my late master, I must own there was something so grossly reprobate to every sense of real virtue, even in him, that I was pleased to leave him, and, indeed, to be candid, the country in general, where every profession of virtue was despised, their only pretension to it being the absence of one, hypocrisy, which they rejected as an unnecessary incumbrance, and acted their grossest enormities without reserve, or appearance of shame.

I now entered on the great theatre of the world, where the sovereign actor gave a dignity to the scenes, and the concerns of individuals were overwhelmed and lost in the confusion of nations.

CHAPTER XIV

CHRYSAI'S REMARKS ON MILITARY GLORY IN HER JOURNEY—TWO STRANGE PASSENGERS TAKEN INTO THE BOAT—NATIONAL PREJUDICE AND PRIDE BREAK OUT IN PERSONS NOT LIKELY TO BE SUSPECTED OF SUCH PASSIONS

WHILE I was travelling to my destined master, I had frequent opportunities of seeing the fruits of military glory in the misery of the people, and desolation of the countries through which I went. Such scenes as these cannot be made known by description to an inhabitant of this happy island, whose situation defends it from the sudden inroads of foreign enemies, as its natural naval strength does from the more deliberate devastations of regular invasion, and the excellency of its laws, from the yet severer outrages of arbitrary power. But, amid all this unhappiness, such is the insatiate ingratitude of the human heart that, not content with these blessings, you are ever complaining, ever grasping at more, till, in the end, you lose the enjoyment of what you possess, insensible that your

¹ Frederick of Prussia was receiving an annual subsidy of £670,000 and the Landgrave of Hesse one of £340,000 for the hire of troops

severest wants would be abundance to millions, who dare not even utter a complaint.

It has been said that there is a certain degree of madness requisite to make a great man ; that is, to enable humanity to conquer its first principle of self-preservation, to slight the most terrifying dangers, and to seek the most severe evils that interrupt its pursuit of an imaginary good. The lust of power and the intoxication of glory may seem to animate the great to this contradiction of nature, but madness alone can support the mass of mankind through it who are insensible to these fantastic motives, or, at least, cannot delude themselves with the fairest hope of ever obtaining them. Of this I saw many instances in my journey through the countries that were the scene of the present war ; but one more particularly that happened in one of the Dutch travelling boats, early in our journey, made the strongest impression on me, and deserves relation most. There had been an obstinate battle fought some time before between the parties then at war, in which the loss was so severe, and so equal on both sides, that, as soon as night covered their retreat, each withdrew, concluding itself vanquished, though next morning, when they came to a better knowledge of each other's situation, they both claimed the victory, while neither thought proper to return to the charge to assert that claim¹.

This uncertainty aggravated the misery of the unhappy wretches, who were left wounded on the field of battle, as it prevented their receiving relief either from friend or enemy. However, as this dreadful scene was acted in the neighbourhood of a neutral city, as soon as the first terrors of it were a little cooled, the common feelings of humanity moved some of the inhabitants to go and try to relieve as many of the deserted sufferers as had not perished for want of more timely assistance, without distinction or respect to any party.

Two of those victims of ambition, who had been enemies in the day of battle, but had since founded a friendship on their common calamity having been supported by the same charity, and cured of their wounds in the same bed, were now striving to get the mangled remains of their mutilated carcasses carried, like other worn-out instruments of the war, to their respective countries. In their journey they happened to be brought to the waterside, where we had just taken boat, where they begged in the most moving terms to be admitted, but were absolutely refused, till one of the passengers, an English gentleman, took compassion on their distress, and paid their fare.

We were all seated in the equality usual in such vehicles, in which, as in a grave, all conditions are thrown promiscuously together, when, the conversation happening to turn upon the war, which then reigned in most parts of Europe, and every one speaking variously, as prejudice or opinion dictated, the Englishman chanced

¹ At Lobositz, the victorious Prussians were said to have lost more in killed and wounded than the enemy ; and at Prague Frederick left 18,000 men on the field. Several battles in the Seven Years' War were very evenly contested.

to say that he thought such a combination of the greatest powers of Europe, as at that time laboured to oppress the King of Bulgaria,¹ was, to divest it of the intricacies of ambition, and bring politics to the rule of reason and justice, the most injurious and even base abuse of power that could be instanced in the Christian history; and he hoped, and indeed doubted not, but that glorious prince, and the bravery and attachment of his subjects to his cause, that is, really to their own cause, would rise superior to all the attempts of his enemies, and retort upon them the stroke which they had perfidiously aimed at his ruin, to their dishonour and confusion.

The rage into which this reflection, so injurious to the glory of the Grand Monarque, threw one of the passengers, who thought it levelled particularly at him, though no names had been mentioned, was so great, that he could not suppress it till the gentleman should conclude; but interrupting him, without the least respect to his personal obligation (for he was one of the two whom I mentioned to have been admitted into the boat on his charity)—‘What do you mean, sir?’ said he, ‘by saying that this war will end in the dishonour of the King of France? Was not his motive for entering into it the most disinterested and glorious? To support the right of sovereignty, and bring vassals to a proper sense of duty and obedience? And has not the success been answerable to the greatness of his designs? Have not his forces been everywhere victorious by land and sea?’

The tone of voice with which these words were spoken, drew the eyes of all present upon the speaker, a little, old, withered creature, who wanted both his legs, and scarce seemed to have skin enough, not to say flesh, to cover the remainder of his shattered bones, and keep them together. But his spirit supplied all these disadvantages and enabled him to raise himself upon his stumps, and cast a look of the most ferocious rage around him, as if he meant to destroy whoever dared to dispute his words.

But his triumph was not long; his fellow-traveller immediately taking him up with equal fury. ‘How’, said he, ‘the army of France ever victorious over Bulgaria²? What assurance can dictate such a falsehood? Where have they obtained one victory? Where have they escaped defeat, except when the superiority of their numbers have exceeded all proportion, and even then, their slain have generally equalled the whole amount of the forces whom they fought with. What armies have they lost already; how few of those which remain will ever return to their native home, even in the wretched condition that you do?’

These last words raised a general laugh at the person who spoke them, he being, if possible, in a more maimed and helpless condition than the one to whom they were addressed, having lost both his arms, and one of his eyes. He perceived the motive of their mirth, and submitting to the rebuke with a manly fortitude of mind—‘I see, gentlemen’, said he, ‘that you laugh at my mentioning the wretchedness of any other living creature with contempt, who am such a sufferer myself; but what absurdities will not passion hurry

¹ Frederick the Great, the King of Prussia.

² Prussia.

men into ? and how could human patience bear to hear this Frenchman boast of the victories of his monarch, whose forces I myself have assisted to rout at every place where I have ever met them'.

'You rout the forces of my master' ? replied the other. 'My master's forces would eat up all your master's subjects for a breakfast'.

'I do not deny their number nor their appetites', returned the Bulgarian ; 'they leave sufficient evidence of both wherever they go ; cruelty and rapine lead forth their armies, famine and desolation mark their marches. Shake not your head at me, nor lift up your hand, as you regard your life, else, loth as I am to make misery ridiculous by a quarrel between two such wretches as we are, though I have not a hand to strike, with my foot will I spurn out your life, and trample on your carcass'.

'Morbliou ! compare the mighty monarch of France with a little German king' !

'You mistake me greatly ; I never meant to compare them. The greatness of your monarch I do not deny, were it not abused to purposes that make it a dishonour to him, and a misfortune to his subjects ; whereas, our sovereign is the father of his people, and never exerts his power but to their advantage.

'Gentlemen, you must forgive my warmth ; anything against myself I can despise, but my king, my father, I cannot, I will not, hear spoken of with disrespect, while I have even a voice left to assert his cause. I have fought for him, I have fought with him ; for he does not sit rioting in the debaucheries of a court while his subjects are encountering hardships and dangers to gratify his vanity or revenge. His quarrels are the quarrels of his people, and he fights their battles with them ; and the only regret I feel for the loss of my limbs is, that I can employ them no longer in his service, for which I would lay down my life this minute with joy, could it gain him the least advantage, or was it necessary to prove my attachment to him.

'But since I can no longer have the happiness of being of service to him, all I have now to do is to retire to my native country, where his paternal care has made such a provision for my wants, that I shall wear out my days in content, without ever having my prayers for his welfare and success disturbed by one repining wish, one just complaint. But ask this vainglorious knight-errant if he can say so ? Did he fight for the preservation of his family, his country, and his religion, as I did ? Did he fight under the conduct of his sovereign, who personally provided for the necessities, the comfort of his men, as I did ? Is he sure of a peaceful retreat at home, safe from the additional distress of want, as I am ?

'Not at all. He fought for he knew not what, he knew not whom, at a distance from his king, who was insensible of his dangers, and revelled in delicacies, while subjects, the victims of his ambition, were destitute of the common, indispensable necessities of nature. Nor has he any other hope of prolonging his miserable days when he gets home, but the wretch's last resource of begging, in a country so exhausted by the vain tyranny of his master, that charity is almost an ineffectual virtue, for want of means for its exertion'.

All present were struck with the force with which the soldier delivered his sentiments, nor did his antagonist attempt any reply ; but opening their common wallet, in which the Bulgarian carried all their wealth, he took out what belonged to himself, saying, with a sneer, that since his feet were so good, he might hereafter use them instead of hands, for he would feed him no longer.

This poor-spirited sarcasm was received by the person to whom it was applied with a smile of disdain, though it raised the idle laughter of the greater part present. But the Englishman received it in another manner, for, drawing out his purse, he took twenty ducats, and putting himself into the pockets of the Bulgarian—‘Accept of these, my brother soldier’, said he, ‘to make your journey into your native country more convenient, where you cannot meet more tender regard from your sovereign and country than your sensible attachment to them merits. As far as I shall go your way I will take care of you myself, and that will defray the expense of the rest of your journey with comfort’.

CHAPTER XV

THE HISTORY OF THE BULGARIAN SOLDIER—CHRYSLAL IS CARRIED TO HIS DESTINED MASTER

THE Bulgarian was unable to express his gratitude for this charity, the manner of presenting which doubled the obligation of it. But the big tear that stole in silence down his manly cheek as he bowed his head to his benefactor, spoke it with a more affecting eloquence than any words could do, and influenced every person present so much in his favour, as to make them vie in offering him their assistance. As soon as he recovered utterance—‘Such’, said he, ‘is the noble benevolence that distinguishes the sons of liberty ; such the generosity of heart that always extends the ready hand of a Briton, with relief to the distressed. May Heaven preserve to your happy nation the blessings which enable it to exert its virtues, to make them a blessing to all who want their assistance. And though envy may malign, and ingratitude return benefits with evil, beneficence finds its reward in its own exertion, in the certainty of a retribution from those treasures which never fail’.

The turn of this soldier’s discourse, and particularly the last part of it, seemed so much above his present appearance, that it raised a curiosity in his benefactor to ask him if he had been bred to arms, or how long he had professed the military life, and in what station.

‘Oh, sir’, replied he, with a sigh that seemed to tear his heart, ‘your question recalls to my memory scenes that I would willingly forget for ever, and obliges me to relate such things as would draw tears from Tartars, Pandours, or the crueller soldiers of the King of France. I was not bred to arms, nor have I followed the military profession long, or in any other rank than that which rage and despair first placed me in, when I offered myself to my sovereign to repel the invaders, and revenge the desolation of my bleeding

country. My unhappy story is no more than this.—I am a native of Bulgaria, the son of a minister of the Gospel, who, observing a desire of knowledge in my youth, encouraged and improved it by his own precepts and example, and led my studious mind through the sublimest paths of science.

‘As soon as he saw my resolutions sufficiently established to be proof against the levity of youth and temptations of sense, he yielded to my entreaties, and I was admitted into the sacred order of which he was a member, and made the perfection of human wisdom, the practice of piety and virtue under the direction of the divine word, the business of my happy life. Happy, then, indeed ! but now the recollection of that happiness aggravates my present misery in the irrecoverable loss of it, almost to despair. As the religion of the benign Redeemer of mankind does not enjoin impossibilities by requiring us to eradicate passions which are the essence of our nature, and whose indulgence, under the direction of reason and virtue, is the end of our creation and the basis of our being, and fulfils the first divine command, by continuing our species, and increasing the number of His adorers, I obeyed the impulse of virtuous love, and married the daughter of a neighbouring divine, who completed to me, as I vainly thought, the sum of human happiness by a numerous offspring, which grew upon the knee of their aged grandsire, my father, now become too feeble for the active duties, while my labours supplied the necessaries of life to my contented family, in which I thus stood the happy centre of filial and paternal love.

‘In this blissful state did I advance toward heaven, when envy of his glory and fear of his virtues brought this destructive war upon the dominions of our sovereign. Oh, my father ! my children ! my wife ! in one day did I lose you all. These eyes beheld my habitation reduced to ashes, my children massacred in the wantonness of cruelty, in despite of the prayers of my aged father, whose snow-white hairs, whose whole appearance would have struck the ruthless hearts of the ancient heathen Gauls with reverence ; in despite of the cries of my beauteous wife, who both begged to draw their fury on themselves, from the defenceless innocents ; but all in vain. The murderers, deaf to their cries and entreaties, insensible to the beauty of the babes, who stood smiling at the swords that hung over their heads, first butchered them as in sport, then abused the person of my wife to death, and mangled my father’s breathless body, whose tender heart the grief of such a sight had burst, while I, unhappier far than any, stood looking on, bound to a tree, with my jaws distended with the head of a spear, and my cheeks cut open thus from ear to ear, a Bible being placed before me, and a French priest standing by, encouraging their cruelty as meritorious against heretics, and insultingly bidding me preach now to my congregation, at the same time refusing me the release of death, which I besought by all the signs despair could suggest, and making them leave me naked and whipped till my body was all one wound, to perish by famine and grief.

‘But Heaven had ordained otherwise for me. Some of my neighbours, who had escaped their fury, came, as soon as night

favoured their fears, to learn our fate, and offered any assistance in their power. They unbound me ; they buried the remains of my slaughtered family, and forced me from the grave to their retreat in the woods, where they healed my wounds, and strove to comfort my distress. But all their arguments would have been too weak to make me suffer life, had not a desire of revenge taken possession of my soul, and silenced every other thought.

‘As soon as I had recovered strength, I hastened to the army of my sovereign, where I threw myself at his feet, and told him all my distress. He heard me with pity ; he shed tears at my sad story, and raising me with his own hand—“Be comforted, my brother”, said the mighty monarch to his meanest subject, “be comforted, the losses of the just will be repaid in heaven ; there thy happy family expect thine arrival ; there thy virtues will be rewarded, thy joys complete, when the evils of this world, which endure but for a moment, shall be at an end. The horrors of war agree not with the innocence of your past life, or the humane tenderness of your disposition, and would but aggravate your griefs by the unhappy, unavoidable repetition of like scenes of ruin. Retire, therefore, to my capital, where all the comforts of life shall be provided for you, to alleviate your distress, while your prayers assist us in the day of battle”.

‘I heard his words with reverence, but his virtue was too sublime for my imitation. I fell again at his feet, and wringing my hands—“Oh, sir”, said I, “this goodness is too great for man. Alas, I am unable to obey its dictates ; my soul languishes for vengeance. Oh, bear with human infirmity, and permit me to fight under thy command. Heaven heard not my prayers, or it would have prevented my ruin. Let me, then, have recourse to other methods for redress ; let me contribute my poor help to thy victories, to the deliverance of my country ; I die this moment if my prayer is refused”.

“Be thou my companion in this just war”, said my sovereign, raising me up again, “and, since thy sacred function must not be disgraced with any other rank, fight by my side, and lead me to success”.

‘From that day have I followed his steps in the field of battle at an awful distance, and been witness to all the wonders of his conduct and valour ; till in the late action a cannon shot took off both my arms, as I had the honour of holding my own horse for him to mount, his having been killed under him as I fought by his side. He expressed concern at my misfortune, and commanded me to retire to his own tent ; but an Austrian Hussar, the moment after, cut me down with his sabre, though in the unpremeditated instinct of self-preservation I had held up both my bleeding stumps to ward the blow. Here I lay among my fellow-sharers in the common calamity, in submissive expectation of the stroke of fate, from the horse’s feet or the pillagers of the field. But Heaven had otherwise ordained, and, after two days’ weltering in my blood, I was relieved, and recovered by charity to the condition in which you see me, and am now striving to go and avail myself of my master’s humane offer, which your benevolence enables me to do with comfort.

This fellow-sufferer, whose arrogance first prompted me to speak, has been a sharer with me also in the charity which relieved us, where our common calamity created a kind of friendship between us, and our necessities suggested it to us to combine the remains of our limbs for mutual assistance, he preparing our victuals and feeding me, while I have carried, not only our poor baggage, but him also, upon my back. But that alliance is at an end, not because the relief which you so generously have bestowed upon me may seem to free me from the necessity of his assistance, for I must beg your leave to divide it with him, as half is sufficient for me, but that my soul abhors the principle which first led him into this distress, and which even such suffering cannot show the impious absurdity of, and disclaims connection with the enemy of my gracious sovereign, who would thus malign his glory, when he cannot deny nor longer resist the virtues that have raised it'.

By this time we arrived at the place where I was to be delivered to the minister of my destined master, who immediately carried me to him.

CHAPTER XVI

HOW CHRYSAL FOUND HIS MASTER EMPLOYED—THE GRANDEUR AND HAPPINESS OF ABSOLUTE POWER—HIS CARES FOR THE AUGMENTATION AND SUPPORT OF HIS REVENUES—HIS RAGE AT THE INSOLENCE OF LIBERTY, PUNCTUALITY TO HIS ENGAGEMENTS, AND RESOLUTION TO MAINTAIN THE CONSEQUENCE OF HIS RANK

WE found him¹ busied in reviewing some new levies, which he had just raised, to hire out to the best bidder of the parties then engaged in war, without ever examining the justice of the cause, or considering any other motive or consequence than just the immediate price he was to receive, out of which he bounteously allowed them a pittance to support the lives so useful to him.

As soon as the men were ordered to their quarters, his highness retired with his minister, who, presenting the bag in which we were, with a bent knee—'The subsidy, may it please your most serene highness, from England', said he.

'It is well', replied the sovereign, 'but upon what terms'?

'The same your highness had last year'.

'No more? They shall not have my men. I can have more elsewhere. France offers better'.

'Then I must return this money, please your highness'.

'Return it? No; for what'?

'If your highness does not like the terms, you will not keep the money, I presume'.

¹ The Landgrave of Hesse, who was in receipt of a British subsidy, may be intended by this caricature. The subsidy system had been denounced by Pitt, and was very unpopular in England. Chrysal, it is noteworthy, does not object to the huge subsidy paid to Frederick of Prussia.

'Fool! but I will. Such laws may bind you subject wretches, but sovereign princes are above them; laws are not made for us'.

'I humbly implore your highness's pardon for my ignorance. Then you will give those troops to France'?

'Yes, when France pays me for them'.

'But in the meantime, as England has already paid your highness, they will depend upon them, and consequently suffer by the disappointment'.

'Then let them prize my friendship properly another time; I am not obliged to support kings upon their thrones for nothing; I may invade, as well as guard against invasion. They shall know whom they dare offend'.

'Something has provoked your highness's wrath, which I am afraid my ignorance would aggravate'.

'I will teach the respect that's due to sovereignty. I am not king of England, curbed in my will, and limited in power; my subjects are my slaves; they dare not think of any other law besides my pleasure. Death! can you think it? My minister at the court of England writes me word that a base plebeian merchant has had the assurance to demand payment for the goods he sent me last year, for the support and splendour of my court, and, on its not being deducted from the subsidy, to refuse supplying me this year, and even to threaten complaining to their parliament. Now, judge you if a sovereign prince, whose forces are their security in time of danger, can brook such insolence. And, to conclude the whole, what did the English minister say when my minister remonstrated with him upon this affair, but that, by the laws of England, no man could be compelled to part with his property against his will, or hindered to complain, if he thought himself aggrieved, and that the laws were sacred, and must not be infringed. Think, now, if I can with honour keep an alliance with such people, till I have received satisfaction; I, whose subjects have no property nor laws but my will, to be treated in such a manner by a vile trader! It is not to be borne.'

'I am very sorry to hear of this affair, and particularly at this time, because, if your highness should break with the English now, when they think they want your men, they may be provoked never to deal with your highness for them another time, when they have no other occasion for them, only to do your highness a service'.

'Why, there may be something in that; and, therefore, if they will send me the merchandise I want, and raise the subsidy, perhaps I may not refuse them the succours they desire'.

'How much does your highness require to have the subsidy raised'?

'I have not thought of that yet. But surely they cannot be so unreasonable as to expect my men at the same rate, now in time of danger, as they had them in peace, when there was nothing at all for them to do; but they could work at their trades at home, and maintain themselves, without wearing out their uniform, or any other expense to me'.

'That is very true, if your highness was not to consider at the same time that even then they paid you as much as if it was a

time of war, and indeed, more than any other nation will, or can, pay you now ; for, as to the promises of France, they are not to be depended on at all, whereas England always pays well'.

'I do not care. What I have gotten here, I will keep, by way of reprisal for the insult offered to my honour, and, if they will have my troops, they shall pay me over again for them ; so, say no more on that head'.

'I submit ; but how will your highness subsist them at home in the meantime ? There must be an immediate remittance made of some of this money to Holland to buy provisions, for your magazines are quite exhausted, and the constant demand for men, to supply the troops you have agreed for, and recruit the losses they have sustained in battle, have not left sufficient to cultivate the land'.

'Then let them starve ! I shall not expend a penny to support them. Could not the women and children work ? I wonder you should dare to mention such a thing. If I lay out this money, what is to support the splendour of my court, since this Englishman has refused to supply me' ?

'I humbly beg your highness's pardon. But what answer am I to send to the English, who have demanded that the troops should march directly' ?

'Why, that I am so enraged at the insult offered to me by that merchant that I will not let a man of them stir till I have satisfaction and a new subsidy ; and that I keep this one in the meantime, to make up the deficiencies in former years'.

'Deficiencies ? I do not understand your highness ; the subsidies have been always regularly paid'.

'Obey my commands ! I say there have been deficiencies, which I am not at leisure to explain in this emergency, but I suppose my word will be taken for it'.

'I fear your highness does not attend to the change which has lately been in England. The people who might have taken such an answer, are now out of power, and their successors are the very men who have always been against dealing with your highness, and may now take the advantage of this breach of faith, for such I well know they will call it, to throw off your alliance for ever ; for the people begin to see their own strength, and their governors to exert it properly, and show them that they want no foreign assistance. And, as a proof of this, at this very time when their enemies not only talk of invading them more confidently than ever, but also have gone so far as to make preparations for such an attempt, so far from being diffident of their own strength, or intimidated to call for help, they have actually sent a powerful body of their troops abroad, and are carrying on the war with vigour and success in every quarter of the world, satisfied that the inhabitants who remain at home are able to defend their country, and repel every attempt that may be made against it. And this change in their measures should give a caution how the persons who effected it are provoked'.

'I care not ; I will make the experiment. But do you draw up your dispatches in such a manner that we may have it in our power

to explain them to whatever sense shall suit us best. In the meantime, we must keep up our appearance of treating with France, to give a weight to our designs'.

The minister was prevented from replying, by the entrance of the muster-master, who had been just making a survey, and taking an account of every man able to bear arms in his highness's territories.

'Well', said his highness, 'how do your musters answer? Shall I be able to enlarge the number of my troops this year'?

'May it please your most serene highness', replied the officer, 'here is the return, in which I have taken down every man from twelve to seventy, according to your commands'.

'And how do they answer? Better than last year, I hope; there must be a great many boys have grown up since'.

'The list, indeed, looks almost as full as usual; but the late battles have so drained us of men to fill up the troops, that there are scarce any but boys left at home, and those have been so badly fed of late, that their size does not answer their years, and they look wretchedly, besides. So that, upon the whole, I fear your highness will find it very difficult to complete the forces already established, much more to raise any new'.

'I must, I will raise them. Tell me not of difficulties. What I command shall be performed. If there are not men, the women shall put on the men's clothes and go. I will not be shortened of my revenue; they shall fight themselves, since they have not bred soldiers for me'.

'This, please your highness, is a list of the disabled men, who are not able to support themselves by any kind of work, having lost their limbs in the wars'.

'Disabled men? I thought I ordered you not to exchange them. They might have remained in the hands of the enemy, such of them, I mean, as are not able to breed soldiers for me, and cultivate the lands; or, such as were not prisoners might have been let perish of their wounds; it would have been a mercy to them to shorten their misery'.

'May it please your highness, I observed your orders, and left a number of such wretches unexchanged; but the enemy saw into my design, and sent them home, to be rid of the trouble of them; and now they are crying for subsistence, and demand the arrears of their pay, which was stopped while they were prisoners. The others our surgeons took proper care of'.

'Insolent slaves! Demand pay, when they are no longer able to earn it! And subsistence, too! They learned this impudence from their conversation with those English. It is much they did not demand roast beef and pudding too. Hang up half of them the next word of the kind they dare to utter, to terrify the other half to starve in quiet. And at your peril, let me hear no more of them. As for the musters, I will have them completed; man, woman, and child shall go. I will make my dominions a desert before I lessen my consequence among the sovereign powers of Europe'.

CHAPTER XVII

MORE CARES OF SOVEREIGNTY, AND CONSEQUENCES OF GRANDEUR—
CHRYSLAL IS SENT TO MARKET, WHERE HE IS GIVEN TO A JEW FOR
BACON

His highness had just declared this magnanimous resolution, when the steward of his household entered to let him know that the butchers and bakers of the next Hans-town,¹ from whence his table was supplied, had refused to send him any more provisions till their bills were paid, as they had heard that he was to receive no more subsidies from England; and there was scarce enough to make out dinner for that day, for the court was very numerous and brilliant, all the princes and princesses of the various branches of his highness's most illustrious house having come to pay him a visit of congratulation upon the birth of the most serene prince, his son and heir; and that his purveyors had been able to find nothing in his own dominions fit for his table but bear's flesh and venison, nor even a sufficient quantity of these, the misery of his people having made them venture to break through his laws and hunt in his forests, to save themselves and their families from perishing by famine.

His highness had hearkened to him without any emotion, or even concern, till he mentioned this outrageous insult upon his sovereign authority and pleasure. But then, bursting into a rage—'Hunt in my forests'? said he, 'Audacious slaves! Dearly shall they pay for their presumption. Order my troops to march that way directly; I'll lay the country waste'.

'Please your highness', replied the steward, 'that will cost you the trouble of marching your troops; the country is a desert already'.

'Who told you that they have been guilty of this insolence? You should have seized the author of the report for not apprehending the criminals'.

'May it please your highness, they took one wretch in the very fact, and have brought him here, to receive the sentence of your pleasure, and the stag with him alive, which he found in a pit, and borrowed a gun to shoot. He pleaded hunger and the cries of a starving family of grand-children, for he is an old man, and his three sons have been killed in the wars; but, though I own he moved me, I did not presume to let him go'.

'It is well you did not, or you should have suffered in his stead. Go, strip him naked, bind him on that stag, and then let him loose with him upon his back into the woods, proclaiming that no one, upon pain of death, presume to give him the least relief. He shall have hunting enough'.

'But what will your highness have me to do about provisions for the entertainment of the princes? I believe they design a long visit, for they have brought all the young princes and princesses of their illustrious families with them'.

¹ A town belonging to the German *Hanse* or Hanscatic League.

'I care not. I am not to be disturbed on such trifles now, when the fate of nations depends on my resolutions. Let them go home again'.

'Not fasting, I presume, for they have already signified, some of them, that they have come without their breakfasts, by calling for refreshment the moment they arrived; and, indeed, I fear the principal motive of this visit of their highnesses was want of anything to eat at home'.

'Confusion! What can I do? Here, take this money, and send for victuals for them'.

The sight of a handful of guineas was an agreeable surprise to the steward, who had not heard of the arrival of the subsidy from England. He received them with evident pleasure, and I felt no less in being delivered from this scene of sovereignty, of which I was sincerely sick, though, by the change, I fell from being the price of armies to the domestic office of going to market for a morsel of bread; from the glory of causing the slaughter of thousands to the virtue of supporting the lives of a few. The steward, as soon as he withdrew from the presence of his highness, called the other officers of the household together, and told them, with joy in his countenance, that there was no foundation for the report of their master's breaking with England, so that they might look famine in the face for another year, and confirmed the glad tidings by showing them the gold. The pleasing sight raised universal joy; they licked their lips, feasted in imagination, and prepared things for getting dinner ready, with all the alacrity of willing minds and keen appetites, while the steward, not caring to trust a commission of that importance to any inferior officer, waited only to wash down a mouldy crust with a draught of sour wine, and then went to market for them himself.

The appearance of things changed as soon as I left the hereditary dominions of his highness, and entered into the little territories of a free state. Plenty was the reward of industry, and content supplied well the place of grandeur. As his highness's minister had pressing motives to accelerate his negotiations, he went directly to the several dealers in provisions, and, ordering a comfortable supply on the credit of our appearance, returned with the greatest dispatch to the discharge of the offices of his high employment, in the ceremonials of the court.

In the course of these transactions, it fell to my lot to be paid to a Jew for bacon and sausages, the butchers of his religion being held to make the best of the latter, as they never cut out the nice bits to eat themselves.

CHAPTER XVIII

COMPARISON BETWEEN TWO DEALERS IN FLESH—THE CELEBRATION OF THE PASSOVER IN THE TRADITIONAL WAY, AND THE METHOD OF PROCURING (HUMAN) LAMBS EXPLAINED

I now entered into a service, the most diametrically opposite of any in nature to my last, my present master denying himself the

very necessities of life to hide his riches under the appearance of poverty, as my last lived in the most vain ostentation of splendour, to conceal his poverty under the appearance of riches. It is difficult to say which hypocrisy was most absurd, and contradictory to the immutable laws of moral justice, the former basely stealing, as I may say, from the public, that wealth which was ordained to be of advantage to it, and whose value arises only from its being used, by thus secreting it in his coffers, and the latter, in gratification of a vanity as unjustifiable as that of avarice, committing every kind of actual violence to supply the want of it.

I here was soon initiated into all the mysteries of that lower species of trade called peddling, which is in a manner engrossed by those people. False weights and measures, adulteration of wares, lying, perjury; in a word, every species of deceit that can impose upon ignorance and credulity were here reduced into a science, taught by precept, and enforced by example, from the earliest exertion of reason, to wear off every hesitation of conscience, and make the practice natural and expert. The beauty of my appearance, for I had hitherto escaped mutilation, made my master, who was an adept in that art, think it improper to throw me among his diminished heap, as I should but make their loss the more remarkable. He therefore put me into his purse, to make a show with upon occasions, and appear as a proof of his innocence of that practice, of which he was too strongly suspected.

The evening after I came into his possession happened to be one of their most solemn festivals. My master, therefore, who was one of the tribe of Levi, retired from business early to purify and prepare himself for the celebration of the most secret and mysterious ceremony of their religion. This was the sacrifice of the Passover, which, by a secret tradition, never committed to writing for fear of being betrayed, was changed from the typical offering of a lamb to the real immolation of human blood, for which purpose the most beautiful children were purchased at any expense, and under any pretext, from the ignorance of necessitous parents, or the perfidious avarice of servants, if they could not be obtained by stealth, and brought from all parts of Europe to these ceremonies, it being a long received opinion that the original sacrifice of a lamb was designed only for that one occasion, to conciliate the favour of Heaven to the escape of their forefathers out of Egypt; but that to render it propitious to their restoration to their country, and to the consummation of their promised happiness and glory, the type must be changed for the thing typified, and human blood, in the purest state of infant innocence, be offered instead of the ineffectual blood of a brute. But, as some traces of natural affection might remain, even in hearts divested of the feelings of common humanity, to remove every obstacle to this practice, and stimulate superstition by hatred and revenge, the children of Christians were appointed for this sacrifice, and those especially of the superior ranks of life, whose pride might be too apt to make them treat the people of the Jews with severity and contempt. As to other points, the rules laid down in the institution of the Passover were literally observed in respect to the victim, who was to be without blemish, a male of

the first year, that is, the first-born of his mother, and to be kept fourteen days before he was sacrificed, during which time they fed him with the richest food, to raise him to the highest perfection of his nature.

The place chosen for the celebration of this ceremony was a summer-house in a garden, belonging to one of the rulers of their synagogue, where they all met at the appointed time. As soon as they were placed in order, one of the elders stood up, and in a long speech, declared the occasion of their meeting, and read the original institution of the Passover, and then recited the tradition, which changed the sacrifice to be offered, as I said before, concluding with an oath of secrecy, which all present joined in, and confirmed with the most dreadful imprecations, and which was to be sealed by the participation of this horrid mystery.

When he had ended, the victims of that night were produced, their bodies examined for fear of blemish, and their primogeniture proved by those who had provided them, and who were reimbursed their expenses before the sacrifices began, by the general contribution of all present. This method was used that every person might have an equal share in the merit of the sacrifice, as it would be dangerous and too expensive to provide a lamb for every head of a family in the congregation.

CHAPTER XIX

THE RITES ARE INTERRUPTED, AND THE VICTIMS CHANGED—THIS
CLEARED UP WITHOUT A MIRACLE—THE FEW SURVIVORS OF THE
FIRST FURY BROUGHT TO PUBLIC JUSTICE

I SEE your astonishment how so absurd an opinion could ever take possession of a rational mind, as that the Deity can be pleased with the breach of His most strict command, and rendered propitious by an action against which His severest vengeance is denounced ; yet such are the errors which the least deviation from the straight paths of reason lead to, when ceremony is made the essence of religion, and human inventions substituted in the place of immutable, eternal virtue.

The devil, whoever is meant by that most comprehensive name, has long been charged with being the author of this and every other vice and folly, which men are ashamed of owning themselves, his temptation being a convenient and comfortable excuse. But, if man would consider a little, he must blush at so unfair and ridiculous a charge, and give the poor devil his due, who, among all his failings, has never been suspected of being a fool, and nothing else could have devised such gross enormities, such contradictions to the plainest rules of common reason.

But of this strange institution of human sacrifices we need search for the original no farther than in the heart of man, who, observing that to inculcate the duty of gratitude, the first of moral virtues, the Divine Will had directed returns of its blessings to be made, in

the way of oblation or sacrifice, soon perverted the original purity of the institution to his own depravity, and measuring the divine beneficence by his capricious avarice, concluded that the richer the oblation, or the dearer to the offerer, the greater would the merit of it be, and thus he arose from a lamb to a hecatomb, from brute to human blood. His eagerness to obtain the end, for which he thus strove to bribe the favour of Heaven, prevented his seeing the absurdity of the means he used.

All things being prepared, the victims were brought to the altar, naked and bound, the instruments for slaying, and the fires for roasting them (for, horror to human thought! they were to have feasted on their flesh) in readiness, and the butchers, of whom my master was one, just going to begin their work, when the doors of the house were burst open, with an outcry that heightened the terrors of the guilty wretches, and a band of soldiers rushed in and seized them, as they stood stupefied with the fright. The horror of the sight gave a respite to their fate, striking the very hearts of the soldiers, though hardened by all the cruelties of war, with an astonishment that deprived them of power to stir for some moments.

But this was only a short calm, that, as it were, gave time to the storm to gather, for, as they stood thus gazing at each other, one of the children cried out—‘Oh, father, father, come and untie my hands; these ugly cords hurt me’!

The voice no sooner struck the ear of the officer who commanded the party, than, starting in a frenzy, he ran to the child, whom he had not distinguished before, as he lay naked on the ground, and snatching him up in his arms—‘Oh, my child’, said he, in an ecstasy, ‘have I found you; have I rescued you in the very moment when you were going to be sacrificed by these wretches?’ Oh, my child! my child’!

These words awoke the fury of the soldiers, which burst upon the wretched Jews with a violence not to be restrained. The house was in a moment a scene of horror beyond description. Most of them fell instant sacrifices to this resistless rage. Happier far in having so speedily an end put to their sufferings, than the few survivors, who saved their lives for that moment, by throwing themselves among the dead, or taking hold of the children whom, even in this hurricane of passion, the soldiers took all care not to hurt.

The little respite which this caution gave, the officers improved to pacify the soldiers, who would not be persuaded to spare the rest by any other argument but a positive assurance of having them put to the most severe and infamous public death.

When the storm was a little calmed by these means, and the living separated from the dead, the pillage of the scene was given up to the men, who rifled all, living and dead, with the most unrelenting severity, and retaliated their wicked intentions with exemplary justice on the miserable criminals, stripping them quite naked, and binding them with the very cords which they took off their destined victims, who were unbound with the tenderest care, and carried away till their parents should be discovered, or, in case that could not be, to be educated at the public expense, as the

children of the state, while their intended murderers were thrown into prison, till a punishment should be appointed severe enough for their guilt. In the confusion of this affair, I fell into the hands of the officer who had found his child, whose passions were raised so high by the recovery of him, that, as soon as the plunder was over, he left his charge to another, and retired to share his joy with his disconsolate wife. The tenderness of this meeting was a just reverse of the former part of the last scene, where the helpless infants were led forth to be slaughtered.

As the Jews were some of the wealthiest of the inhabitants, and carried on a great part of the trade of the city, the magistrates, to prevent the imputation of injustice, and to set the whole affair in a proper light to the world, convened the people early the next morning, where the rescued infants were produced on one side, and the few that remained alive of their intended butchers on the other, when my new master, who bore a considerable office in the state, besides his military command, unfolded the whole affair in a short but moving speech. He told them that, having lost his only child, the infant there present, about a month before, and having been informed, when he served in Poland in his youth, that the Jews had a custom of stealing and sacrificing or murdering infants on the night when they celebrated their Passover, he made no search for him, but seemed to believe a story which he had invented himself to appease the distraction of his wife, that he had been killed and devoured by a tame wolf that was kept in the garden of his country-house, from whence he was stolen, watching, in the meantime, every motion of the Jews with such exactness that he had punctual information of their meeting at the place where he had seized them the evening before, where it was to be lamented that the just resentment of the soldiers had anticipated the severer hand of justice, and saved them from the laws, the judgment of which he now demanded against the remaining few for himself, and for the unknown parents of the innocent victims, whom they saw before them.

A roar of universal indignation pursued his words, which had inflamed the rage and detestation of the people so high, that they were with difficulty restrained from tearing the wretches instantly to pieces by the same arguments which had saved them from the soldiers before. Nor were the Jews admitted to say a word in their own defence, for, though none of the infants had been actually murdered that night, yet the intention was beyond controversy, and, besides, many of the people who had formerly lost their children, now charged them with their murder, with the strongest appearance of justice.

They were therefore dragged back to prison, where they lay, loaded with chains till the day of their execution, when they were all publicly burned alive on the very spot where they were to have perpetrated their guilt, the house being raised to the ground for that purpose, and all the effects of such as were taken in this fact confiscated to the use of the state.

CHAPTER XX

A BREACH OF NEUTRALITY PROPERLY RESENTED BRINGS CHRYSAL INTO A SERVICE WHICH HE HAD LONG BEEN AMBITIOUS OF—HOW HE FOUND HIS NEW MASTER EMPLOYED—THE KING OF BULGARIA'S RECEPTION OF THE HUMBLD MAGISTRATES—HIS APPROPRIATION OF MONEY TO HIS OWN USE—HIS REFLECTIONS ON THE SIGHT OF CHRYSAL

THIS affair was scarce ended, when I changed my master again. The city in which I was had professed a neutrality in the present war. but whether yielding to inclination, or biased by private interest, the magistrates had, on many occasions, shown the strongest partiality to the enemies of the King of Bulgaria.¹

Of this that heroic prince overlooked many instances, in compassion to their folly; but, instead of inspiring them with proper sentiments of gratitude, this moderation only raised their injudicious pride so high, that, attributing it to fear, they at length proceeded so far as to refuse him those good offices, which, by the universal laws of mankind, he had a right to demand, and treated his messengers with disrespect.

This drew on them a resentment that was never raised in vain. The king, without deigning to waste time in complaints, sent a body of forces directly to their gates, and obliged them to buy their safety with contributions, and deprecate his vengeance with submissions, which humbled their pride, and terrified their neighbours from being guilty of the like folly.

As these contributions were too large to be immediately discharged by the state, they were obliged to be levied on the subjects, by which means I came into the service of this monarch, to whose treasurer I was paid, by the humbled magistrates of the city, on their knees. The many great things which I had heard of this prince had long made me wish for such an opportunity of seeing him, and of having a knowledge of his heart, that I might be able to judge whether he really was the great man he appeared to the world, by all his actions, to be. How my expectations were answered, cannot be explained justly without a particular account of everything I saw while I was with him, but, as that would be too much for my time, which begins to grow short, I shall only give you a few of the most remarkable particulars, by which you may form a judgment of the rest. The king was walking in his camp before the entrance of his tent, after having finished the business of the morning, conversing with the most engaging affability with his officers, and even the private sentinels of his guard, redressing their complaints, and relieving their wants, when the magistrates of the city I had just left arrived to pay their contributions, and make submission for their misbehaviour; for, to humble them the more effectually, he had ordered that they should attend himself. As soon as they approached him, they fell on their knees, and

¹ King of Prussia.

delivering the money to his treasurer, implored his pardon in the abject terms of submission.

'Arise', said the monarch, 'and cease your supplications; the posture and address are both improper to be offered to a man; but the passions of the foolish are ever in extremes, and your fear sinks you now as low as your vain insolence raised you high before. Depart in peace and safety, and let this teach you not to mistake moderation for fear another time. But, beware that you offend not so again. Mercy, that is amiable in the first instance, degenerates to folly, if extended to a second.'

The magistrates, unable to speak before him, retired in confusion from his presence, when, turning to his treasurer—'Take', said he, 'so much of that money as will repair the losses sustained by the innocent inhabitants of the country around their city, and see that it is given to sufferers, to be applied to that use, and none other, for I war not with the poor, nor would I have my steps marked by desolation, when it can possibly be avoided. And of the remainder, leave the usual sum upon my table for my private occasions'.

Then addressing himself to the officers around him in general—'How abject', said he, 'is the submission of the proud! How does guilt humble the conscious heart! These unhappy men, who dared not now meet our eyes, but hasted with downcast looks from the flash of just indignation, when last we saw them, looked us in the face with the assurance of friendly respect, and seemed happy in the marks of our regard. Let this teach us to preserve the adamant shield of a clear conscience, and terror can never strike a dart through it to our hearts'.

When the treasurer went to divide the money, among which I lay, according to his master's orders, I was greatly alarmed for fear I should be torn so soon from the presence of this prince; but my anxiety was relieved when he took that bag in which I was and gave it to one of his master's pages to lay upon his table.

The many things I had heard of this prince's greatness had, I own, deceived me into expectations of pomp and grandeur in his court, and particularly about his person. This made me surprised to find everything in a plainness far greater than what I had in many instances observed in private life. But I instantly perceived my error—that his greatness was his own, established on the virtues of his soul, and independent of, and superior to, every adventitious circumstance.

I had not long lain upon his table when he entered alone, and, walking a meditated turn or two across the tent, kneeled down and offered up his soul in the most ardent devotion to Heaven. He then arose with a serenely cheerful countenance, and coming to the table poured out the money, and viewing it earnestly for a moment—'O thou source of every evil which distracts this wretched world', said he, 'let me not be infected by thy poison. Let not my heart conceive a fondness for thee, further than what the native value of enabling it to do good justly entitles thee to. I am yet free from thy infatuation, nor have ever suffered avarice to tempt me to desire thee, by improper means nor vain luxury or pride, to abuse thee by profusion. This pittance only do I call my own,

which I devote to the Divine Author of all the benefits and mercies of my life, in grateful return, by supplying with it the necessities of my distressed fellow-creatures'.

Then, taking a handful of it to put into his pocket, and happening to observe my shape, he took me up, and, looking attentively at me—'Is there no corner of the earth', said he, 'where the wealth of Britain is not dispersed? If its commerce collects the produce of every climate under heaven, its munificence does also diffuse its riches as far. Great and happy nation! wert thou but sensible of the blessings of thy condition; but the time is come when thou openest thine eyes to thine own interest, and feelest the mightiness of thy strength. How great is the power of true wisdom! how happy the people who have a good man for their guide'.

Saying this, he put us into his pocket, and, as soon as it was dark, wrapped himself in a cloak, and went out privately to take a view of his camp, in a disguise that secured him from misinformation or deceit.

CHAPTER XXI

THE KING TAKES A VIEW OF HIS CAMP IN DISGUISE—THE EXALTED PLEASURE HE RECEIVES IN THE VARIOUS OCCURRENCES OF HIS WALK—HE GAINS A VICTORY—HIS CONDUCT IN AND AFTER THE BATTLE

THE notion I had formed of a camp, from the effects which I had seen of war, made me expect a scene of tumult and confusion. But how was I surprised here to find everything as regular and tranquil as in the best governed city in the midst of peace.

My master had not walked far, when some conversation, that seemed to be carried on with warmth in one of the tents, catching his ear, he stopped to listen what might be the subject of it.

'I imagine', said a voice within, 'that we shall have a battle soon. The cheerfulness of the king's looks, and the more than common spirits he has been in for these few days, are certain signs that he has some great things in view. I always observe him so before a battle'.

'The sooner it comes the better', replied another. 'I only wish that our forces were not so overmatched in numbers; not that I fear success when he is with us, but that we may be able to give them a total defeat at once, and so prevent their making head again. For such is the inequality at present, that while we are killing half of them, the other half escape, and, though what we destroy exceeds the number of our own army, yet another army of the runaways still remains to give us more trouble. But, however, we must only do our duty, and kill them all, one after another'.

'And so we will, brother', continued the other, 'if it please God to preserve our king to us; for while we have him, we can fear nothing. The number of our enemies only increases the glory of

vanquishing them. Indeed, I wonder how they can stand before us even as they do, wretches that are dragged to the war against their inclination, who have no interest in the event, no attachment to their leaders. But what attachment should they have to such leaders, who show no regard to their distresses, nor make any provision for their wants, but just drive them to battle, like oxen to the slaughter, and, when it is over, take no farther care about them, but let them perish by famine, if they cannot relieve themselves by plundering the unhappy countries, friends or enemies alike, through which they go'.

'Well, brother', returned a third voice, 'thank God that it is not our case; we follow a leader who is a father to his soldiers, and provides for all their occasions. We fight for ourselves and our families, for our laws and religion, and are sure that he will support us in the enjoyment of them, when he has disappointed the designs of his enemies, and restored peace to his people. But if we are to fight to-morrow, we had better take our rest to-night, to make us fresh and strong for the battle. God bless and preserve our king, whilst his care watches over us; we can sleep in safety in the midst of our enemies'.

This genuine tribute of praise melted the heart of the king with the sublimest delight, and drew the tear of tenderness from his eye.

'O my God', said he, when the voices ceased, 'enable me to protect this people, and to bring this just war to a happy end, that they may enjoy the fruit of their virtues'.

He then continued his progress, in which he met many such occasions of conscious pleasure. When he saw that all things were in proper order in the camp, his next care was to visit the quarters of the wounded and sick, for he would not trust them to any person, where he could possibly attend to them himself. The manner in which all things were ordered here, for the relief and comfort of the evils inseparable from war, were alone sufficient to raise the highest idea of the tenderness and humane care which directed and supported it. No riot or disorder, no negligence or abuse among the attendants, no misapplication or embezzlement of the provisions made for the patients; all was order and harmony between them. How unlike to other scenes of the same nature which I had seen before! If he was delighted with the spirited attachment of his soldiers in health, his delight was almost raised to ecstasy by the behaviour of these victims of the madness of the great. The thought of having suffered in his cause the extremest anguish of pain, not even the agonies of death ever making them utter a syllable to his disadvantage, or forget him in their prayers, in which his preservation was always joined with their own relief, and his happiness recommended with their souls to Heaven.

This was too moving to be long borne; he joined in the general prayer, and hastened from the tender scene as soon as he had fulfilled the motive of his going, by taking a strict view of everything in which his orders might be disobeyed, and these his particular family, as he called them, suffered by neglect.

His tour was now finished, and he returned to his tent to take his

necessary rest, having distributed, on the various occasions that had occurred in his walk, all the money he had taken with him, except *me*, who happened to stick in the corner of his pocket. Temperance, exercise, and serenity of conscience insured his repose; he fell asleep the moment his head touched the pillow, nor awoke till his usual early time of rising next morning, when he returned to the fatigue and perplexity of such a multiplicity of affairs, with a clear head and undismayed heart, and soon reduced the confusion of them into such order as made their execution easy.

As the soldier had judged, the hour of battle was at hand. The king had scarce finished the business of the morning, when an officer brought him an account that the forces of the enemy were in motion.

'I expected it', said the king, coolly. 'I knew they could not remain long in the situation they were in. But let us observe their motions, that we may regulate ours by them'.

Then, ordering some of his generals to follow him, he went to the top of a neighbouring house, from whence he could view them distinctly, where, having observed them attentively for some considerable time—'It is done, my friends', said he, with a smile of joy that enlightened all his face, 'it is done. That last motion is what we wanted. Let us haste, and embrace the opportunity which Heaven has put into our hands'.

Then, descending with an alacrity that inspired every beholder, he made his dispositions for the battle, and, putting himself at the head of his forces, marched directly against the enemy.

Descriptions of battles¹ are never satisfactory; the confusion is too great, and the business of the scene too complex to be brought into the regularity of any one design. I shall, therefore, only say that my master was completely victorious, and, to raise his own glory the higher, the victory was entirely gained by that part of his forces which he commanded in person, the excellent disposition he had made of the rest rendering it unnecessary for them to do more than stand spectators of the action from the situation in which he placed them, while they prevented him from being surrounded by the enemy.

This victory was not gained without resistance. The field was long and obstinately disputed, and my master often obliged to lead his men to the charge. But numbers were at length forced to submit to superior valour, and the evening sun saw his banners wave in triumph, where those of his enemies had menaced his destruction in the morning. If the intrepidity with which he flew from rank to rank, and exposed himself to every shape of death in the action, had struck me with astonishment, I was not less affected by his conduct after it was over, when, cooling instantly from that enthusiasm of courage, he gave his orders for securing the glorious advantages he had gained, for taking immediate care of the unhappy sufferers, both friends and enemies, without distinction, and for refreshing his own laboured soldiers, with all the serenity of peace.

¹ Davis's *Olio* says the battle of Minden is here referred to; but Frederick was not present at that engagement. Victorics of Rossbach or Leuthen, 1757?

CHAPTER XXII

THE HAPPY FRUITS OF VICTORY—CHRYSL FINDS NEW REASON TO ADMIRE HIS MASTER—A STRANGER THROWS HIMSELF AT HIS FEET TO IMPORE JUSTICE—THE STORY OF THE STRANGER

THE transactions succeeding this event were but the common occurrences on such occasions, in which there is always something so cruel in the triumphs of the victors, and so severe in the sufferings of the vanquished, that, to a being free from the contradictory frenzies of mankind, the very thought is painful. His majesty's next care, after returning public thanks to Heaven on the very spot where its favour had been so signal, was to reward the behaviour of the soldiers. He praised, he promoted, he gave money to them, according to their different ranks and dispositions. Nor was his justice more bounteous in the reward of merit, than severe in the punishment of the want of it.

Under such a leader, what forces could withstand his soldiers? Under the discerning eye of such a prince, who was not actuated with ambition to distinguish himself in the execution of his duty, to obtain his favour? Who dared to be guilty of disobedience or neglect, to incur his wrath? From the field of battle the victorious army was directly marched away to a siege, their success in which was to open them an opportunity of attacking another army of the enemy with advantage. Such a round of carnage was so shocking, that the virtues of my master were not a balance to the horrors of his service, and I began to wish for a release from such a scene of glory, when an unexpected occasion showed me his character in a light that raised my admiration of him still higher.

As he was riding along the lines of his camp the morning after the battle, reviewing a body of forces which he was detaching on a particular expedition, a man, in the habit of a private soldier, threw himself prostrate across his way, crying, 'Mercy, O great king! Have mercy on the sufferings of a wretch in despair, and show yourself the substitute of Heaven, by impartial justice'.

The guards and attendants on the king would have spurned the suppliant out of the way, but his majesty, struck with the strangeness of the address, and imagining it must proceed from some extraordinary cause, interposed, and bidding him arise—'What is the grievance you complain of?' said he, with a placid look and encouraging accent, 'or against whom do you solemnly implore justice'?

'Oh, great and good king', replied the stranger, with an air that bespoke something above his present appearance, 'my griefs are too many to be told so concisely as your present situation demands, and the justice I implore will require time to divest nature of its strongest passions'.

'What can this mean?' said the monarch in surprise. 'Meet me directly at my tent, and expect that justice which the simplicity of truth shall be entitled to, without these laboured exclamations'.

The business which his mind was intent upon prevented the

king's thinking any more of this affair, till he saw the man at his return to his tent, when, calling to him—'Now', said he, 'speak your griefs with the boldness, but also with the guard of truth, and doubt not the redress of justice'.

Encouraged by these words, the stranger, bowing his head, and pausing a moment, as if to support his grief, began thus:—'So may the ear of Heaven be ever open to thy petitions, O gracious king, as thou hast readily vouchsafed to hear my cries! So may its justice redress thy wrongs, as thou shalt deal with mine. Thou seest before thee the most wretched of mankind, whom despair has reduced to the necessity of flying from the defence of his country, and imploring justice for his private wrongs, from the declared foe of my sovereign. But let me not waste your time with fruitless complaints. My name, though spoken with some respect in my native country, is too obscure to have reached your ears, as my ancestors wisely confined their virtues to private life, nor ever laboured to emblazon their names with titles, that too often mar the happiness of their owners. In their steps I trod, till the wrath of Heaven kindled the ambition of princes, and my country became the theatre of their contention. I then thought it my duty to arise in its defence, and the justice of my motive drew success on my attempts. But, while I vainly indulged the hope of being instrumental in delivering my country from the horrors of war, a foe broke into my house, thus destitute of its defender, and rifled all the treasure of my soul. Oh, my unhappy wife! my newly-wedded, beauteous wife! In vain didst thou call upon me in the hour of thy distress, when the hand of the ravisher was twisted in thine hair, and the horrors of immediate ruin took possession of thy soul. Thy protector was away, busied in the defence of others, while the wolf was ravaging his deserted fold—But whither does my distraction hurry me? Oh, pardon, gracious monarch, the inconsistencies of despair. I will be brief; I will not trespass on thy precious time'.

He paused then a moment, till a flood of tears eased the fulness of his heart, and then proceeded thus:—

'In the irruption of thy troops into Bohemia, about six months ago, my unhappy fortune led a party of them to my house, where the industry of my ancestors, for ages of peace, fell a sacrifice to the wantonness of unrestrained devastation in one moment. But I complain not of this; it was my share of the indiscriminate calamity. Alas! my woes are of another nature.

'The beauty of my wife struck the very hardened hearts of the soldiers with such reverence that, in the fury of their outrage, they dared not to lay a sacrilegious hand on her; but this safeguard that protected her from rapine only raised the more audacious rage of lust against her. The officer who commanded the party no sooner saw her than, inflamed with brutal desire, he hurried her away with him to the camp, where imagination sinks in horror from the thought of what she may have suffered. The news of my misfortune soon reached me. No restraints of military duty were of force to hold me a moment. I flew to the scene of my ruin, where, having learned what I have already related to you, the

greatness of my grief stupefied me for a time, till the thought of my wife's being still alive, and in the possession of her ravisher, roused me to a resolution of labouring for her relief. I therefore immediately entered in disguise into those very troops which had perpetrated my ruin, as I despaired of eluding the vigilance of thy officers by any other means. My stratagem had success. I soon learned that the officer who had brought my wife from my house had been obliged to give her up to his general, who had demanded her as soon as she had been brought to the camp.

'A dawn of hope broke in upon me, though I could not gain any account of her after this. I thought that a man, honoured with your particular esteem, must be possessed of virtue, and this, I knew, must be her protection.

'Big with this hope, I found means to rejoin my own corps, where my absence was easily excused to a general who was my friend, and who readily yielded to my request of sending a trumpet, with a letter, to inquire for such a lady, and to desire that she might be treated with the tenderness and respect due to her sex and beauty, till she should be restored to her friends. But all my fond hopes fell to the ground when an answer was returned that the general knew not of such a person. Despair now stared me in the face; I saw all the horrors of my condition, and would that instant have returned in my disguise and stabbed the ravisher at the head of his forces, had I not reflected that my Theodora might be only exposed by such an action to new insults, and her life, perhaps, sacrificed in torture and ignominy to revenge.

'While I fluctuated in this distress, Heaven inspired me with the thought of having recourse to your justice. Though he is the enemy of my sovereign, said I, he is a man who feels the tender impulse of humanity; he is a king who delights in justice. I therefore reassumed my disguise, and entered into your camp as a deserter the night before this battle, in which instinctive abhorrence of cowardice urged me to do the duty of a soldier; and I happened to fight near your person, where, though I was sensible of my crime in assisting the enemy of my sovereign, I had this palliative consolation that the forces I engaged were not my fellow-subjects, but those of a perfidious ally, who entered into the war only to take his own advantage, when a proper opportunity should offer.

'This, O gracious king, is my unhappy story. This is the grievance for which I implore thy justice, for which I fought against the allies of my sovereign yesterday, for which I threw myself before your horse's feet this morning, for which I now call upon you by that Power Who has placed you as His substitute on earth, and will require an account of thy stewardship. Oh, justice! justice! justice!'

CHAPTER XXIII

THE KING SENDS FOR THE GENERAL, AND ORDERS THE STRANGER TO BE CONFINED TILL HIS ARRIVAL—CONTINUATION OF THE STORY OF THE STRANGER—A NEW TRIAL OF THE KING'S FORTITUDE AND ACTIVITY OF SOUL

THE king heard out the stranger's story without interruption, and then, addressing himself to his officers and attendants round him—'How unhappy', said he, 'is the condition of princes, who must be answerable for the crimes of their servants, as if every man's own were not more than he can bear !

'I thought this man as upright as I knew him brave ; I thought justice and mercy attempered valour in his breast. But perhaps he is wronged ; let us not judge too hastily. Go !'—turning to one of his officers—'bid him come to me directly, nor tell him a word of the occasion. If he is guilty, he has forfeited my esteem for ever ; but if this complaint is only a calumny devised to exasperate me against one of my best friends, severely shall the author of it feel that justice which he so solemnly implores. Let him, therefore, be taken into custody till the event decides the doubt ; but let him be treated with that humanity which his apparent distress stands in need of ; nor let any hardship or indignity give justice the appearance of prejudice, or seem to intimidate his resolution'.

He then retired to enjoy those few moments of his life, which privacy enabled him to call his own. His majesty's commands were so punctually obeyed, that the general arrived at the camp the next day, where he immediately waited on his master, who received him with his usual familiarity ; and having conferred with him for some time, on the situation of the affairs under his care, he led him to the door of his tent, where he had ordered the stranger to be brought to confront him, and then spoke thus, as if in continuation of his former discourse :—

'It has ever been my strongest wish, my most positive command, that the calamities of this necessary war should fall as light as possible on the innocent subjects of those powers who have provoked it ; particularly, I have always enjoined the strictest care to avoid every unnecessary devastation of private property, every appearance of cruelty or ill-treatment to the defenceless weakness of the aged, of women, and children. What, then, must be my grief to find these orders disobeyed ? to find that the ruins of the poor mark the marches of my armies, and the cries of private anguish arise to Heaven against me ? But these enormities shall not lie on my head for neglect of punishing them, nor be persisted in on the hope of impunity. Were my right hand guilty of such crimes, I would cut it off with my left, rather than it should infect my mind'.

The solemnity with which the king spoke these words struck all present with terror for the accused, who alone was ignorant of their design. The king saw the general concern, and, to let the impression sink the deeper, he paused some moments before he proceeded ;

then, turning short upon the general with a determined look and awful voice—‘Tell me’, said he, ‘where is the woman whom thou hadst from the officer who brought her to the camp, when the forces under thy command entered into Bohemia?’ the woman whom the Bohemian generally sent to inquire after in vain, and whom, I fear, thou didst deny, and still detainest for purposes too base to mention?’

The unexpectedness of this charge deprived the unhappy criminal of all presence of mind; he stood abashed, and the confusion of his looks too plainly betrayed his guilt. The king saw his distress with the greatest concern; but, superior to every private regard that could interfere with his sublimer character—‘Tell me, where she is this instant?’ said he, ‘nor aggravate, by falsehood, crimes already too flagrant; for I will know the whole of this black affair’.

‘Oh, sir’, replied the general, throwing himself at his feet, ‘I acknowledge my crime; but I cannot bear thy wrath. Let me die this moment; let that punishment expiate my guilt, but afflict me no longer with thy displeasure, which is heavier than I can bear’.

‘Where is the woman? Speak’.

‘Safe and inviolate in my tent. My entreaties have not been able to prevail on her virtue; and my passion was too delicate to seek gratification by force’.

‘This moment let her be sent for! and let the cause of her coming be concealed from her. I will learn the truth of this strange affair from herself. In the meantime, let her husband be treated with tenderness and respect. His misfortunes deserve compassion’.

The king had scarce said this, when an express arrived from another of his armies, which guarded his own dominions from the calamities of war, to inform him that they had been repulsed with great loss in an attack upon the army of the enemy, which was now in full march to his capital.

‘Thy will be done, O God’, said the king. ‘Thy will be done!’ And then, without any appearance of surprise or alteration in his looks, he instantly gave orders for a strong detachment of the army under his own command to march to the re-inforcement of that which had suffered this loss, and retired to consider of the alterations which this event must necessarily occasion in the operations of the campaign, and write his several orders accordingly, for he was his own secretary. But, though his looks were thus easy, his heart severely felt this misfortune.

‘O God’, said he, as soon as he was alone, ‘when will Thy wrath be appeased? When shall this people have rest? If I am the unhappy object of it, oh, let it fall on my head alone, but spare them. There is nothing certain in this life, nothing worth a wise man’s care or regard. The victory with which it pleased Thee to bless our arms so lately, raised my hopes to a prospect of peace. But the scene is now changed; and this advantage will raise the pride and malice of our enemies still higher, and make new deluges of blood necessary to bring them to a sense of reason and justice. Thy will be done, O Lord! But, as it is not yet declared, it is our duty to make use of the means which Thou hast

put into our power to accomplish that end which appears to us most just and advantageous. The horrors of the war are ready to burst upon my country, after all my endeavours to save it, and divert them elsewhere. But they shall not be unopposed; I myself will stand in the breach, and defend my native country'.

The serenity in the looks of the king had deceived the fears of the army, and every one prepared to obey him with the greatest alacrity; and, though this affair put the whole camp in motion, it occasioned neither disorder nor confusion. Active as light, the king was everywhere, ordered everything, saw everything prepared, as well for the conveniences of his soldiers as for the greatest possible expedition of their march. His armies might be vanquished, for they were but men, but to deject or disorder his mind was not in the power of any event.

CHAPTER XXIV

CONCLUSION OF THE STORY OF THE STRANGER—HIS WIFE ARRIVES AND ACQUITS THE GENERAL—THE KING'S SPEECH TO HIM, AND GENEROSITY TO THE STRANGERS—CHRYSALE CHANGES HIS SERVICE, AND GOES WITH THEM—SOME GENERAL REMARKS ON THE CHARACTER OF THE KING OF BULGARIA, AND THE PROBABLE CONSEQUENCES OF THE WAR

By this time the Bohemian lady arrived, whom the king ordered to be brought directly to his tent. The first sight of this woman raised emotions in his heart which it had long been a stranger to. A beauty that exceeded imagination, and a sweetness and expression in her looks beyond description, soon made him sensible that all his heroism could not eradicate the passions of nature, and raised his pity, both for the unfortunate general and for her husband.

He stood some moments gazing at her in silent astonishment; but recollecting himself, he addressed her thus, with the highest complacency and respect in his look and accent:—'I have sent for you, madam, to this improper place for the delicacy of your sex, to learn from yourself the manner of your having been brought away from Bohemia, and the cause of your being since detained by the general of my army. Speak, madam! Have you suffered any violence, any usage improper for your sex and merit? Speak with the assurance of truth, and expect justice and redress'.

'Oh, mighty king', said the lady, prostrating herself at his feet, 'oft have I heard of thy wondrous virtues; but never till this moment could I think that you could stoop so low as to take notice of my wretchedness. My sad story is no more than this: I was torn from my house by an officer of your army; I was hurried away to the camp by him and there insulted by the base offers of his love; but Heaven delivered me from him. Your general heard of my distress, and rescued me from his power, since which time I have had no personal cause of complaint, besides the indiscriminate calamities of the wars, which have robbed me of my husband, and left me a friendless widow in the hands of my enemies'.

A flood of tears here stopped her utterance. The king, raising her from the ground, proceeded thus: 'A widow, madam, did you say? How long since have you lost your husband, and by what means did you hear of his death'?

'Oh, sire', replied she, 'as soon as I was freed from the horrors of brutal violence by the general I wrote to my husband, with his permission, but received no answer to many, very many letters. This suspense was worse than death, and almost drove me to despair, till the general at length, in compassion to my misery, wrote himself to the commander of the army in which my husband had served, who returned him for answer that he had been killed about the time I was taken prisoner. Oh, happy had been my lot had I shared his fate'!

'I hope, madam', said the king, 'you have received no injuries that make you weary of life; I hope my general has not misbehaved himself to you'.

'Oh, sire', replied she, 'I have received no injuries besides the irreparable loss of my husband, after which I can have no desire to live. As for the general, he has always treated me with the greatest compassion and tenderness. But now, will your majesty hear the voice of affliction? will you grant the only wish of a heart in despair? Let me be conveyed to some religious house, where I may devote the sad remnant of my days to the service of Heaven, far from the knowledge of the general and every other person who has ever heard of my name. I am sensible of the presumption of troubling you with this request; but to whom should we fly in the moment of distress, except to Heaven or its vicegerents, especially those whose virtues give its seal to their authority'.

'You may depend', returned the king, 'upon every endeavour in my power to make you happy. But, madam, what meant the particular mention of the general in your desire of being retired from the knowledge of the world? Pray be ingenuous; I hope he has not transgressed the limits of his own virtue and my command'.

'Oh, sire', replied she, 'mistake not the incoherencies of distraction; the general has always treated me with respect and tenderness; tenderness in excess—for nothing can be hid from you—was the only thing my soul could disapprove of his behaviour. He offered me honourable love, but, alas! my husband, my dead husband, has possession of this heart; there he is buried, nor ever shall another love disturb his dear remembrance'.

'Madam, be comforted', returned the king, 'such virtue as yours is the peculiar care of Heaven; you may be happy yet; your husband may still be alive. In the disorders of these unhappy times, many strange things happen; many who are thought to be alive are long since dead; many who have been long thought dead are found to be alive'.

'Oh, sire, what can your words import? You would not jest with misery; you cannot speak in vain? Oh, am I yet to hope after so long despair'?

'Hope, always hope; but I shall send a proper person to explain my words'. Saying this, the king went to the door of his tent, and, seeing her husband bursting with anxiety and impatience—

'Go', said the monarch, 'in there, and see what blessings Heaven reserves for virtue. Go in alone; such meltings of the soul as must attend your meeting are too delicate to be exposed to other eyes'.

Then, turning to the general—'You have behaved nobly, my friend', said he, 'in such temptation, which was almost too great for human virtue. Had you injured such excellence, dear as you are to my heart, your life should have expiated the crime. But you have behaved nobly. In such a trial, it is virtue to refrain from vice; the errors you have fallen into are but the weaknesses of nature; for to have been insensible of her beauty and perfections would have argued a deficiency in humanity. But beware, my friend, of indulging those passions; they enervate the heart, and wean the soul insensibly from virtue; the example is before thine eyes. See how the violence of love has been able to urge the noble heart of this woman's husband to desert his charge, to enter into the service of his enemies, to fight against the dictates of his own conscience; think of this, and be more cautious for the future; the heart of a soldier has not room for love'.

The general, unable to reply, threw himself at his feet, and embraced his knees.

'I understand you', said the king, smiling, 'your passion is not quite cured; but you shall have employment to wear off this rust of idleness. Return to your command this moment, and expect my further orders'.

The general obeyed, and the king, addressing those around him—'To be without fault', said he, 'were not to be a man; he is the best who has the smallest; and allowance is to be made for human frailty, where the temptation is too great for human virtue'.

As the king said this the stranger and his wife came out together, and, throwing themselves at his feet, bedewed them with tears of grateful ecstasy.

'Arise', said the monarch, 'and be happy in each other.—I have restored you to your wife', said he to the husband, 'and am ready to do you every further instance of justice which you can demand'.

'My soul is satisfied, O gracious king; my soul is satisfied', replied he. 'I ask no more of Heaven but to reward your goodness, your justice, and compassion'.

'But there is one thing more to be considered', said the king; 'your estates were wasted; your house burned by my soldiers. I do not know the loss you may have suffered. Take this' (giving him a large purse of gold); 'if that is not sufficient to repair it, when Heaven, in mercy to mankind, shall bid the calamities of war to cease, if my life is spared, come to me, and I will remove every cause of your complaint. I do not ask you to enter into my service this war, but if your honour, your conscience, oppose it not, you may expect every encouragement due to your merit'.

'Oh, sire, it is too much; your goodness overwhelms me. I will retire from the seat of war; I will implore Heaven for your happiness and safety, and though I cannot, may not, fight for you, my arm shall never more be raised against you'.

His wife and he then withdrew to prepare for their departure,

leaving the king no less happy in being the author of their happiness, than his goodness and bounty had made them.

I here quitted the service of this great prince, being in the purse which he gave to the stranger. The happiness which this pair experienced in being thus unexpectedly restored to each other is not to be expressed, the delicacy of their love being as much too sublime for description, as the sensuality of other scenes is beneath it. In a word, they wanted, they wished for nothing more, and, to secure the possession of what they enjoyed, they resolved to go and live privately with his brother, an ecclesiastic in Vienna, till the war should be at an end, and they might with safety return into their own country. This resolution was soon taken; they applied for passports that evening, and left the camp the next morning.

Sick as I was of such a scene of blood, I own I could not leave this prince without reluctance. I see you are desirous that I should give you a character of him, but I must not gratify your curiosity. What I have told you of his actions, may convince you that he is the greatest of men; but humanity is too frail to be able to form any definitive judgment from his past, for his future life. Success may elevate, misfortune may sour his mind, and so overthrow that equality of it which now rises him almost above man. His enemies are numerous and inveterate, his friends few, and hardly steady enough to be relied on, so that his dependence is solely on the attachment of his own subjects, and the strength of his own soul.

What will be the event of his fortune is not permitted me to conjecture. This only I must say, that, if he falls, it had been better for his country, for Europe in general, that he had never been born, as his struggles will exhaust their strength, and leave them an easy prey to a foe (the Turks) whose silence makes them not apprehensive of him, but who laughs in his heart to see them thus do his work, and destroy against each other the forces which might prevent his adding them to the number of the nations which already groan under his yoke; a design which he certainly meditates, and will not lose a moment to put into execution, when the opportunity he watches for is ripe.

CHAPTER XXV

CHRYSAI ARRIVES AT VIENNA, WHERE HE MEETS AN OLD ACQUAINTANCE—THE HISTORY OF HIS MASTER'S BROTHER—HIS MISSION, LABOURS, AND SUCCESS IN ENGLAND—HE IS SENT TO PERU—HE DISAPPROVES OF THE PRECIPITANCY OF THE MEASURES CARRIED ON THERE, AND RETURNS TO EUROPE TO PREPARE MATTERS BETTER

If the immediate scene of the war was shocking, the appearance of the countries around it was rather worse. In the former, the hurry of the action kept the mind too busy to attend to every minute distress; but here a dismal desolation opened a field for melancholy reflection, which every object added horrors to. The lands laid waste, the villages in ashes, the inhabitants perishing in the fields

and high-roads of wounds, sickness, famine, and every various kind of misery, which the madness of human nature can inflict upon itself.

Through such monuments of military glory did we travel to Vienna, where my master and his wife were received with open arms by his brother, who insisted on their living in his house. The scene was here changed from the tumults and wants of war, to all the luxury and ease of peace. The moment I saw this ecclesiastic, I knew him to have been a member of the convent, to the head of which I belonged in Peru. This unexpected meeting, at such a distance, raised a curiosity to know the cause of his removal from a place where I thought I had left him settled in all the happiness which riches and sensual pleasures could afford. It was not long before this curiosity was gratified, for, the very evening after my master's arrival, he led him to a walk in his garden, and, sitting down under a tree on the brink of a fountain, addressed him thus:—

‘It is many years, my dearest brother, since I had the happiness of seeing you last. Various have been the climates I have gone through, various the vicissitudes of my fortune since that day; from despair to exultation, from royal affluence and power, to apprehension of perishing by famine, or in a prison. Wonder not at my words; I will explain them to you in a short view of my life, which it is necessary I should give you, to prepare you for the participation of secrets, in which your assistance may be employed in establishing the most extensive and firm power which ever yet was raised upon this globe. You may remember, though you were then very young, that the representations of the Jesuits, to whose care our education was committed, made such an impression on me that, in despite of my father's threats and entreaties, I renounced my patrimony in your favour, and, taking only a small sum of money to defray the expenses of my journey, went directly to Rome with my tutor, where I readily obtained admission into the Society of Jesus, as soon as I had gone through the usual preparatory forms of education. Nothing remarkable happened to me during the first years of my being professed, my studies engrossing my whole time and attention, in which I made such a proficiency, that the general of the order thought it proper to send me into the world, in the service of the society. The first stage of my mission was to England, whither I went to counteract the poison which was dispensing against us, by an apostate¹ of our order, who, under the pretence of employing his abilities in the service of the society, had been admitted to all the libraries, and suffered to take extracts from all the records of the Church. But no sooner had he made such a collection as he thought sufficient for his purpose, than he fled to England, his native country, where, renouncing his vows and religion, he turned the weapons which had been entrusted in his hands for the defence of the Church, against her, employing

¹ Archibald Bower [1686–1766], a Scots Jesuit, who twice left the Roman Church, of which he was proved guilty of continuing a secret member. Author of a *History of the Popes* in seven volumes. This account of his mode of life is by no means severe as coming from a Jesuit.

the abstracts he had made to the defamation of the character, and subversion of the power of the Holy See.

‘My success in this, my first, negotiation (for, in defiance of truth, reason, conscience, and common sense, by plausible insinuations, by forged certificates, or, which was the same thing, by certificate, from people who would certify anything in their own favour against a man who attacked the very fundamentals of their power; by bribery, subornation, perjury, and every kind of artifice, I, in a great measure, defeated his design, and overturned the authority of his work); my success, I say, in this difficult undertaking, for he had gone out from among ourselves, and was versed in our whole science, encouraged the order to continue me in that mission, but in a higher office.

‘The laws, religion, and government of the nation were now the objects assigned to my attacks, in which I laboured with various success for some years, in every character which human volubility could assume. I was a Quaker, a Methodist, a Deist; I wrote for the ministry, or against the government, as the prevailing humour of the day promised attention to my writings; the sea which flows around that island being not more unsteady than the minds of the inhabitants, nor more liable to be ruffled by the winds of heaven, than they are by every breath of popular rumour. I proceeded thus for some time with various success, till, happening to disclose some secret transactions, which were known there only to the persons concerned, and had been communicated to me from abroad, in order to sow dissension between the people and their governors, to the ruin of both, the conscious parties were alarmed, and my intelligence traced so secretly, that I had difficulty to escape by flight from an ignominious death, which the resentment of those, whose ruinous machinations I had thus discovered to their country, would certainly have brought me to. My failing in this attempt, in which thousands had failed before me, was no prejudice to my character, nor in the least lessened me in the opinion of the order. On the contrary, the efforts I had made were so daring, so deeply laid, and so well conducted, that I was now judged a proper person to be employed in greater matters.

‘I was therefore sent the next year to what is called the Spanish world, but is really the Jesuits’ heaven in America, where matters of the highest moment were just ripe for execution. When I came there, I found things in a forwardness too great for their foundation, the eagerness of some of our people hurrying on events before proper preparation had ensured their success. In short, they were ready to revolt from Spain and Portugal before they had made provision to support themselves in such an attempt. They wanted European officers, soldiers, arms, and ammunition, for on the natives there is no dependence; but, above all, the time was unfavourable. The powers they meant to attack in this vital part were at peace with all the world, and consequently at liberty to turn their whole force against them.

‘I therefore counselled them to moderate their zeal, and wait till better preparations and a more favourable minute should make their success more probable. But they would not hearken to my

advice, but attributed it to envy or want of resolution, on which I left them to their own ill-fortune, and hasted home to provide a remedy for evils which I could not prevent'.

CHAPTER XXVI

CONTINUATION OF THE JESUIT'S DISCOURSE—HE SHOWS THE PROMISING SITUATION OF HIS AFFAIRS AT PRESENT—THE CONCISE METHOD BY WHICH SPAIN AND PORTUGAL ARE TO BE BROUGHT INTO THE WAR WITH ENGLAND—HE PROPOSES TO HIS BROTHER TO JOIN IN THE GENERAL, THAT HE MAY ACCOMPLISH HIS PARTICULAR DESIGN

'THE event has confirmed my opinion; by striking too soon, the blow has been ineffectual. However, things, though disconcerted by this precipitancy, are not quite ruined, and care may yet repair the effects of their folly.

'In this cause I now labour in concert with others of my brethren in every court of Europe, and I have the satisfaction to think that we have a prospect of success. The only obstacle that retards us at present is the difficulty of making the courts of Spain and Portugal¹ enter into the war against England. Could we bring this to bear, our work would be easy. The mighty naval power of England will not only prevent their sending over forces to oppress us before we can establish our power, but will also assist us to carry on the war, to share in the spoil, and distress our enemies. But while the present kings are on the thrones of those kingdoms, it will be scarcely possible to bring our designs to perfection, they are so utterly averse to hazarding the consequences of a war with a nation from whose alliance they receive such advantages. The first thing, therefore, which we do, must be to remove them. The former has already swallowed his death, though the process will be so slow as to escape suspicion. With the other, such caution is not necessary, nor is there time for it; the arm is already lifted up against him, for a stroke that will terrify the world. When these obstacles are removed, the execution of our designs will meet with no further delay. The successors to these princes we have secured such an influence on, that we can work them to whatever we please, and have already poisoned their minds with prejudices against England.

'To provide officers of approved fidelity and experience to command our forces is the next object of our care. Shall I candidly own to you that such a length of time and multiplicity of affairs had almost obliterated all my remembrance of my family; but the moment I heard your name mentioned, with the respect due to your merits in the present war, a flood of infant fondness melted my heart, and tears of tenderest joy acknowledged that I had a brother.

¹ In January, 1762, Great Britain declared war against Spain, the step being rendered inevitable by the secret Spanish alliance with France. A month or two later, Spain invaded Portugal, whose king was our ally.

I immediately gave notice to our general, and by his order am empowered to treat thus with you.

‘On my engagement for your fidelity, for your abilities are known to be far superior to any that shall oppose you, I am commissioned to offer you the supreme command of all our forces in this great undertaking. With what joy I make this offer, the pleasure that you would feel in serving your brother can best enable you to judge.

‘Though I will tell you further that mine is raised higher than common feelings can convey a notion of, I have hitherto only unfolded the general design of our order, in which I am but a party, though a principal and material one. But shall I tell you also that my designs terminate not with their’s; as your command will make you master of all their forces, and, as power is the consequence of that, you will be able to confer it where you please, or, indeed, rather to retain it in your own hands, while I shall only ease you of the trouble of conducting and establishing the policy of an infant state. This was my motive for writing to you so pressingly to come to me to Vienna. This is the end which I have been labouring for all my life. I am advanced in years, and shall never marry to beget an heir; you are young, and will have many. Assist me, therefore, to acquire our throne which must descend to your posterity—a throne which, by holding it at first as under the sovereignty of the order, will soon be established by them, even beyond their own power to shake.

‘I have now unbosomed myself to my brother with all the confidence of so near an alliance. You will, perhaps, wonder at my openness with one whom I have not seen since he was a child. But I know your character in life, and, above all, I know myself safe from being betrayed, because the information would not be received. Consider, therefore, whether you will embrace this offer, whether you will reign in a splendour that will dazzle the eyes of the greatest prince in Europe, or live here in slavery and dependence. The alternative will not admit a moment’s hesitation; I see you yield. I will acquaint our general with it. You and your wife shall remain here with me, till the proper time for our departure comes, which will depend on circumstances not yet settled. In the meantime, we shall have an opportunity of conferring on these subjects together, and preparing all things for our undertaking in a manner that shall ensure success’.

Though my master made no reply to this proposal that testified the least disapprobation of it, I could easily see that many parts of the scheme affected him with the strongest abhorrence, at the same time, that the offer of royalty was a temptation which shook his resolution, and almost vanquished his virtue. His brother saw the conflict in his heart with pleasure; had he yielded readily, and without reluctance, he should have withdrawn his confidence from such a depravity of soul, and the struggle convinced him that he was his own, and he knew that man, as well as the woman, who deliberates between virtue and vice, is lost.

CHAPTER XXVII

THE JESUIT PROCEEDS TO SHOW THE RISE OF THE WAR IN GERMANY, AND EXPLAINS THE MOTIVES OF THE SEVERAL PARTIES ENGAGED IN IT, AS ALSO OF THE NEUTRALITY OBSERVED BY SOME PARTICULAR STATES

THE Jesuit the next evening resumed the conversation, and, to remove every doubt of success that might deter his brother from joining in his designs, proceeded thus :—

‘My brother’, said he, ‘there is nothing so disgusting to a rational man as the mistakes and blunders which passion, prejudice, pride, and ignorance produce in the conduct of all the courts in the world, even ours at Rome not being quite exempt from them, though the freest of all others. As for this of Vienna, it is at present a scene where every absurd, every destructive passion rules. Among these must you seek for the sources of the present war that lays all Germany waste. Female pride,¹ piqued by some slighting expressions from one esteemed inferior in rank, and stimulated by a desire of recovering by surprise what had been yielded, or rather extorted, by treaty, influenced this sagacious court in conjunction with that of Saxony, to form designs against the King of Bulgaria. But the vigilance of that monarch prevented their designs, of which he had timely notice, and, before their schemes were ripe for execution, he boldly attacked them, and so anticipated the blow meditated against him.

‘So daring a step surprised all Europe, and influenced many who were unacquainted with the motives of it to take part against him, while more did for private advantage. Of these, France was the first who, concluding a league with her ancient enemy, in despite of family animosity, has entered into a war that seems not to concern her at all, nor, indeed, does it in the obvious consequences of it. But she has further designs in view, and in return for the assistance she gives to crush this prince, is to receive from the house of Austria those dominions in the Netherlands, which have cost the greatest part of Europe such deluges of blood for above a century to keep out of her hands, while this court, inattentive to the consequences that must attend France’s getting possession of these long-contested places has blindly, basely, entered into a league with a family that has been labouring her ruin for so many ages, and betrayed the confidence of all the states who supported her in them. The other nations who have acceded to this alliance have acted from motives merely mercenary in the first view, fighting for the pay promised them by the Imperial and French Courts, the latter

¹ The allies of the Empress Maria Theresa against Frederick of Prussia were, Louis XV of France, the Czarina Elizabeth, and the King of Poland (Elector of Saxony). The Czarina, like Madame de Pompadour, had been embittered against Frederick by the coarse jibes of that confirmed woman-hater.

of whom has stretched her generosity so far as to undertake supporting her new ally with money as well as men.

But it is not improbable that they may all be disappointed, and the King of Bulgaria not only escape the ruin meditated against him, but also retort it on the machinators, one of the principal of whom the Saxon¹ has already had abundant cause to repent of his undertaking. As for this court, it now fights *pro aris et focis*, as may be said; for if that hero is victorious, nothing less is to be expected here than the total loss of the imperial dignity, of whose authority there want not many instances of the most flagrant abuse, to vindicate such a revolution. But of all the effects of this unnatural combination, there is not one more base than the ingratitude with which this court has behaved to that of England, whose blood and treasure have often supported it against the very power of France, when every other human assistance has deserted it, and established it in its present grandeur, almost at the price of its own ruin. But now all those benefits are forgot; and because England will not tamely look on (if not, perhaps, assist) to see the fabric which she has erected at so vast an expense, overturned to gratify a blind caprice, and a prince, allied to her by blood and interest, sacrificed by avarice and pride, all her former services are held as cancelled, and herself treated with the rancour of the greatest enemy.

While England thus supports her character of generosity, and acts with prudence, the Dutch, as if infatuated, stand quietly to see the barrier² which cost themselves even so much in erecting for their defence, thus given away to the very power against whom it was erected, and who, they cannot be insensible, means nothing less than their ruin, as soon as it can strike the blow to effect. But such is the degeneracy of that people from every sentiment of virtue, public and private, that they will not give up the opportunity of present gain to save their state from so evident, so imminent ruin, vainly, perhaps, expecting that England will still pursue the schemes of knight-errantry which have so long made her fight the quarrels of her neighbours, while they themselves looked on almost as if unconcerned in the event, and will be moved by the cries of the distressed states to remedy the mistakes, and repair the losses of their High-Mightinesses.

While every other state in Europe is thus employed, Spain and Portugal enjoy all the advantages of peace, prudently taking no part in a war which does not in the least concern them. Of these, the former, like the old lion in the fable, is only terrible to ignorant apprehension on account of what it has been, and is now pacific and harmless, because it no longer has the power of doing harm.

¹ In the first campaign, Frederick overran Saxony, and forced the Saxon army to capitulate; and this unfortunate country was occupied alternately by both parties throughout the Seven Years' War, suffering frightful calamities.

² By the Barrier Treaty [1709], Holland was secured by England in the possession of certain Flemish fortresses, as a protection against France.

'Sensible of this weakness, it sleeps in the shadow of a mighty name, and mixes not in disputes which must only draw it into difficulties, without any prospect of advantage to engage in the attempt. But it must not be let to enjoy this state of tranquility, so contrary to our designs, any longer; and, as the present government there is determined to persist in the measures that support it, it must be overturned to make way for those who will be more obedient to our advice. A method which we must also pursue with Portugal; for, though its strength is almost beneath the rank of an independent, much less a royal state, yet, upon the account of its wealth, which might hire forces to oppress us, it must be worked up to take the same step, and break with England, as I have said before, to which it has already made large advances, by several most unjust and injudicious encroachments, on the trade of that nation.

'As for the war between France and England, it arises solely from the contradictions between the interest of the two nations, which Nature has set in an opposition impossible to be reconciled. But the seat of this war is so remote from hence, that it would have no influence on the affairs of Europe, did not the successes of the English prevent France from giving the assistance that was expected, and might be effectual to the designs of this court, for they have so absolutely ruined her trade, that she is no longer able to fulfil her engagements with Russia particularly, and the several courts of Germany, whom she undertook to pay, for fighting the quarrel of her ally; so that the former, who had no other motive but the money for entering into the war at first, will, of course, and the latter must of necessity desert that cause, not having any internal support of their own, since this has failed them. Indeed, the Russians, finding all the mighty promises which were made them vanish into air, begin to be sick of their bargain already, and long again for the solid advantages of their alliance with England. As for this court, it is now making its last effort, and, if this is eluded or defeated, it has no other resource than shamefully to receive the law from a prince upon whom it made so unjust an attempt'.

CHAPTER XXVIII

CONCLUSION OF THE JESUIT'S DISCOURSE—HIS SYSTEM OF MORALITY AND RELIGION—HIS BROTHER YIELDS TO HIS ARGUMENTS WITH SOME PARTICULAR EXCEPTIONS—CHRYSLAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE

'THIS short but distinct view of the present situation of the affairs of Europe must convince you that a general peace must soon be concluded, the parties that would not being able to continue the war much longer; and therefore we must be speedy in the execution of our designs, or the opportunity will be lost, for it would be impossible to make even the pride of Spain, or the avarice of Portugal take the measures we want at a time when England is disengaged from other enemies. I have drawn this sketch to show you that

our designs are not rashly undertaken, but the result of the deepest knowledge and insight into things. This must remove every scruple that may arise from doubts of success. But there is one thing more which must be explained to remove prejudices of another nature, which may perhaps represent our undertaking in a wrong light to you, and this is to evince the justice of it, and the means designed to accomplish its success. Of this matter you must not pretend to judge by the vulgar rules obtruded by design upon the ignorance of the world, and which no wise man observes, who has it in his power to break them with impunity. Man is thrown into this world by nature to obtain his own happiness by every means within his power. This is too sublime a truth for vulgar knowledge, as it would put an end to the delusion by which the wise few keep the herd of mankind in ignorance and subjection.

‘But that it is really the truth, and as such made the rule of action by all the states and princes in the world, will not be denied, nor even doubted by anyone who has considered the systems of policy and government which are, and ever have been, established by them.

‘For if it was not an undoubted maxim that power constitutes the rule of justice, how inconsistent would be the actions of all mankind! How could a state devise laws to punish the man with death, who goes into his neighbour’s field and steals his ox, and, at the same time, sends armies to invade, spoil, and depopulate the territories of their neighbours? How could a poor pirate be hanged for robbing a single ship, and fleets immediately after sent avowedly to destroy the whole trade of the same nation? If a state of war is alleged, that is the very imposition of which I spoke. Every man has as good a natural right to declare war with his neighbour as the state he lives in has with another state, and every right that is not natural is a usurpation, and void. This is the true philosophy of life, stripped of the idle dreams of enthusiasm, and selfish misrepresentations of design.

‘As for religion, look over the whole race of mankind, and try if you can find one who practises what he professes. This is an incontestible proof, that none believe it, as it is also, that there is no necessity they should, else would the want of faith and obedience be punished by that power which is thought to enjoin them; whereas on the contrary, it is always most successful, as it affords means which those restraints forbid. I observed that in the beginning of our conversation on this subject you seemed shocked at my mentioning the necessity of removing the persons who oppose our designs, and particularly when I said the Spaniard had swallowed his death. But this is all prejudice, and want of extending your view beyond the surface of things. For how much better is the method we take of striking the single person against whom our design is levelled, than that pursued, not only without reproach, but even encouraged by applause, of involving the innocent with the guilty (innocent, I mean, with respect to us), and laying waste whole nations to bring a prince to death? How much better would it have been for this court to have removed the King of Bulgaria by poison or a dagger, than to have destroyed millions, as they have

done, in the pursuit of his death, by this destructive war? This is demonstration; this is conviction to him who dares open his eyes to see it! Judge now of our undertaking by this invariable system, and show me one objection to it'.

This long dissertation was not delivered at one time; it was the substance of many conversations, by which the Jesuit so wrought upon his brother, that he resigned himself wholly to his disposal, and entered sincerely into his designs. The only objection he made (and that was not urged against him) was, to being any way concerned in the compendious warfare of the society, the prejudice of education being still so strong with him, that he could not yet abstract things so nicely as to consider assassination in any other light than as a crime.

I had been in this state of speculation about a week, for my master never stirred out, as he made sickness his excuse for quitting the service, when his brother, having occasion for some money to send to Lisbon on the grand design, the bag in which I was, was ordered for that service, the brothers having joined their fortunes, as well as their endeavours, in the promotion of it. I now changed my master again, and set out for Lisbon in the possession of one of the society, who was to deliver us to a particular person there.

CHAPTER XXIX

CHRYSLAL PROPOSES A POLITICAL SCHEME THAT WILL NEVER TAKE PLACE, TO SETTLE THE PEACE OF GERMANY—A SHORT VIEW OF THE WAR BETWEEN THE FRENCH AND ENGLISH, WITH THE MOTIVES OF THE FORMER FOR TRANSFERRING THE SEAT OF IT INTO GERMANY—INSIDIOUS AMBITION MEETS A JUST DISAPPOINTMENT

IN so complicated an undertaking, there necessarily must be a great number of engines at work, and in many different places, upon the regularity and agreement of whose motions depends the success of the whole. The person by whom I was sent to Lisbon was not to go directly thither, but to take a large circuit, and call at several places on his way, to see that all moved in concert, and everything was properly prepared for the main action, that precipitancy should not defeat the design a second time.

It is not necessary to recount all the circumstances of this tour, which, for the most part, were no more than the common occurrences upon such occasions. I shall therefore take notice only of such few, as, for their singularity and importance, may deserve attention. As to the secret motive of the journey (for that alleged was only to inspect, as usual, into the private concerns of the order), it has been already so well explained, that it is sufficient to say everything exceeded expectation, and gave the strongest assurance of success.

As the war had overspread all Germany, it was impossible for my master to avoid falling in with some of the armies, which were then in the field; but this gave him no concern; he was blessed with one of those ready geniuses that can put on any appearance so naturally

as to deceive suspicion itself ; besides, that he had passports, under one character or another, from every power engaged in the war. The first event worth remark that occurred to us (for the nature of war and its operations in general have been sufficiently explained before) was in the army of the allies of the King of Bulgaria, into which my master entered, in the character of a Jewish agent. This army was composed of the forces of several of the smaller German states, who were hired by the English to defend their own liberties, a small number of Bulgarians, and a considerable body of English troops.

You are surprised to hear that people should require to be paid to fight for themselves in so interesting a cause ; but so it is, and so it will continue to be, while a number of little sovereigns assume the state, and live in the luxury of the greatest kings ; for, as their own revenues are insufficient to support the expense, they will be ready to sell themselves to the first that offers, for an immediate supply, without looking forward to, or regarding the consequences of such inconsiderate, such wretched venality. They have, indeed, this excuse, which the general depravity of mankind seems to justify their alleging, that, as their ruin would involve greater states in some inconveniences, they find these will rather submit to this gross imposition, than suffer them to be swallowed up by others, who would grow too powerful by this accretion.

Base as such a prostitution of principle must appear, it has been so successfully practised (and this not by those poor princes alone, the Austrians and Spaniards occasionally, and the Dutch constantly availing themselves of it), that England in particular has been drawn in to bear a part, from which, by her situation, she seemed exempted by Heaven in every war that has distracted Europe for some ages, to an expense of blood and treasure, which is already severely felt, and must, if pursued much further, involve it in the very ruin it thus strives to avert.

There is one, and one only remedy for this ; but this is attended with difficulties, which will prevent its being applied, till the evil itself shall work its own redress, a period that, to human foresight, seems not far distant at present. This is taking away the power of these petty tyrants, who disgrace the name of sovereign, and uniting their territories into one state, of strength sufficient to support itself. For, while those princes have any power left, they will, consistently with their present systems of policy, oppose this ; but the manner in which they have conducted themselves in this war, if not speedily altered, will so effectually reduce that power, that they will be no longer able to resist, but must passively submit to the dominion of whoever will undertake their support, an event as much to be desired by their own immediate subjects, as by the other states, which thus suffer by their absurd and iniquitous conduct, as the severest form of one government is preferable to the capricious rule of several tyrants, whose poverty and pride put them upon every method of making the most of their wretched people, without any regard to the established rules of justice, or even the common rights of humanity. The usual objection to this expedient, of its overturning the liberty of Germany, which they make so great a noise about, is of no weight, that boasted

liberty being, at present, no more than the power of those sovereigns to treat their subjects as they please, with impunity, the restraining of which within just bounds would really be establishing, not overturning, the liberty of mankind.

As to the war in which the English were at this time engaged, it was not to be ascribed solely to this cause. The insatiable ambition of the French had prompted them to strive for the enlargement of their territories in America, where they already possessed a hundred times more than they were able to make any use of. The possessions of the English in that part of the globe were also uselessly extensive. However, the boundaries having been settled between them, usurpations were not to be tolerated, consistently with the honour of the state ; besides, if they were taken no notice of in the beginning, they might, in time, possibly be extended to the profitable and inhabited parts of their dominions. On this account a war was kindled between those powerful and jealous neighbours, the seat of which was properly transferred by the English to the place in which the attack had been made upon them, where the superiority of their naval force gave them such advantages, that they not only recovered the places which had been taken from them, but also absolutely overturned the French power in those boundless regions, and pursued their conquests in every other part of the world where the French had made settlements, to the utter ruin of their naval power and trade.¹

As it was impossible for the French to recover these losses directly, and the ambition and avarice which first gave occasion to the war was strengthened by pride, to prevent their making the concessions on which they might have obtained peace, they removed the seat of the war into Germany, and attacked certain powers there, with whom England was so inseparably connected, that it could not avoid flying to their assistance, in expectation of having all their own losses restored, in return for those territories, if they could get possession of them, which the number of their own land-forces, and the alliances they knew they could make among the venal Germans, gave them hopes of accomplishing, a scheme not ill founded, as every motive of honour and justice obliged the English to protect and indemnify an innocent people, attacked thus solely upon their account. As the French, at the same time that they made this attack, had also entered into the confederacy against the King of Bulgaria, as has been already mentioned, this necessarily cemented the alliance between him and England still closer, and made him join as many of his troops as he could possibly spare to the army raised by the English, upon this indispensable occasion, from which conduct he received this immediate advantage, that his army engaged the attention of the French, and prevented their joining their forces to the number of his enemies, besides a considerable assistance in money, to enable him to support his own troops. It was necessary for me to give you this short explanation of the nature

¹ Great Britain took but a secondary part in the war in Europe ; but at sea won the victories of Lagos and Quiberon ; in India, those of Plassey and Wandebash ; and in America, Quebec.

of this war, though such digressions are contrary to my design and inclination, that you may be able to form a proper judgment of the extraordinary occurrences I am going to relate to you.

The army through which my master was obliged to pass, as I have said, though paid by England, and the flower of it composed of Britons, was commanded by a German general,¹ in disgraceful acknowledgment of the want of military merit equal to such a charge in the natives, though to palliate the disgrace, and satisfy the jealousy of the English, they had the imaginary privilege of being immediately under a commander of their own,² and subject only to their own laws, in all things, except the operations of the war, when they were of necessity to obey the German commander-in-chief. Such distinctions create animosities, often more prejudicial than the inconveniences they were meant to prevent. Accustomed to live in the most luxurious plenty and ease, and valuing themselves upon the riches of their country, which supported the whole army, the English found fault with the victuals and accommodations provided for them, and treated the German troops, with whom they were joined, with contempt, who in return affected to despise their delicacy, and took the advantage of their want of knowledge of the language of the country, to give such impressions of them as prevented the people from bringing them in provisions with that care and cheerfulness which their prompt and generous payment deserved, by which means they suffered the inconveniences of scarcity and dearth, while the others abounded. Though such feuds among the men threatened the most dangerous consequences, those whose authority ought to put a stop to them were far from striving to restore that harmony, which alone could give success to their designs. The commander-in-chief either overlooked, as beneath his notice, or was prevented by his attention to the military operations of the campaign, from taking notice of those misunderstandings; and the English commander, ambitious probably of the supreme command which he imagined he might easily obtain, if he could make the other sufficiently obnoxious to the English, inflamed them by every artifice he could use.

Nor did he stop here. Whenever he was summoned in consequence of his high station—for he was second in command of the whole army—to attend councils for concerting the operations of the war, he made it his constant practice to contradict whatever was proposed by the commander, and to treat all his schemes with contempt, without ever attempting to offer anything himself in their place; and thus he did the more effectually, as he was a ready and powerful speaker, and perfectly versed in the theory of war; whereas the commander was a thoughtful reserved man of few words, whose whole life had been spent in action, and who could more easily have executed than explained his designs. The consequences of this disagreement were very detrimental while it lasted, and must in the end have proved fatal to the army, had not the German, without ever attempting to discuss the affair with his wordy antagonist, written directly to the British sovereign, to

¹ Prince Ferdinand of Brunswick.

² The late Duke of Marlborough.

inform him that he was so constantly opposed in all his designs by the English general, that it was impossible for him to do anything of moment; wherefore he desired either that he might have leave to resign his command, or have his authority freed from this vexatious and dangerous opposition, concluding his letter with these remarkable words:—

‘ Though in a multitude of counsellors there is said to be much safety, yet, in the operations of war, if many are privy to the counsels which direct them, there never can be that secrecy, agreement, and dispatch, which are indispensably necessary to success’.

The monarch, who was no stranger to the captious and unquiet disposition of the English general, was sensible of the justice of the German’s complaint, and immediately removed the cause of it, by giving him an unlimited power to carry on the war as it should appear best to his own private judgment, without consulting with, or being liable to be opposed by any other person. It may be thought that the entire removal of the English general would have been a readier and more effectual method; but the nature of the English government made this not quite so proper, as he was descended from one of the most illustrious and powerful families in the kingdom, and a member of the senate, in which his talent for speaking gave him such weight that it was judged best to avoid giving him cause for exerting his abilities in opposition to the measures of the government, by removing him from an employment which he had solicited with all his power and interest, especially as the immense expense of this army began to make the people uneasy, and ready to receive any impression against it. But the event showed that this caution was ineffectual, and productive of greater evils than that which it was made use of to avoid.

Accordingly, from the time the German general received this enlargement of his authority, he planned his schemes without ever consulting any person, or even communicating the least hint of them, till the very moment of their being put in execution, when he sent his orders with the peremptory precision of an absolute sovereign. This was a severe stroke upon the English general, who had been accustomed to canvass the very commands of his king, and, therefore, could badly brook such subordination to a person whom he affected to hold in contempt, for the inferiority of his understanding. However, as it was in vain to dispute, he obeyed in sullen silence, resolving to seize the first opportunity of defeating his measures, since he could no longer disconcert his councils, and to take hold of the least miscarriage to attack him in the British senate at the end of the campaign, where he doubted not but he should be able to represent things in such a light as to get him removed from the command, which must, of course, devolve upon himself.

This account my master received from a Jesuit the very night he arrived at the camp, who, to ingratiate the society the more effectually with the French king, and secure his interest and protection, should any unforeseen accident defeat their design, had entered into the service of the English general as his *valet de chambre*, for the better opportunity of discovering the schemes of the allies, which he gave constant intelligence of to their enemies.

CHAPTER XXX

A DEEP-LAID SCHEME DISCONCERTED BY AN ACCIDENTAL VICTORY—TREACHERY FALLS INTO THE PIT IT HAD DUG FOR ANOTHER—THE TRUE WAY TO SATISFY ENGLISH SOLDIERS—THE DISGRACED COMMANDER'S MOTIVES FOR APPEALING FROM THE WILL OF HIS SOVEREIGN TO A PUBLIC TRIAL—HIS HOPES ARE AGAIN DISAPPOINTED, AND HE CONFIRMS HIS OWN RUIN

THE very next morning after my master's arrival in the camp, an event happened that astonished all Europe.¹ The French army was so greatly superior to that of the allies, that the general was obliged to be entirely on the defensive; nor had his consummate experience and indefatigable assiduity been able to prevent their taking several advantages by their numbers, and forcing him to a retreat that seemed to threaten the loss of the country he was to defend. But, through all these difficulties, he persisted steadily in his own plan, and preserved his attention, cool and ready to take any advantage that might offer.

Accordingly, that morning, upon notice of some motions of the enemy that indicated a design of attacking him, he ordered a small but select body of forces, almost all of them English, to advance towards them, and receive their charge, while he should make a proper disposition of the rest of his army to give the enemy battle, or make a secure retreat, as he should see expedient. But the unexampled behaviour of those few brave troops soon changed the face of the affair, for, not satisfied with repelling the attack of the main body of the enemy's army, they intrepidly advanced to charge them in their turn, which they did with such irresistible valour, that the French were thrown into confusion, and obliged to abandon the field of battle.

I have said before that the transactions in a battle are so complicated and so confounded with each other that it is impossible to reduce them into the regularity of a satisfactory description. I shall, therefore, enter no farther into the account of this, than just as it concerns the conduct of the English general, which I had a sufficient opportunity of observing, my master having placed himself near his person, in company with his friend.

The moment the commander-in-chief received an account of the unexpected effects of the valour of the troops which he had ordered to march towards the enemy, he sent to the English general,² who

¹ The battle of Minden [1759], in which the French under Broglie and Contades were defeated by the allies under Ferdinand of Brunswick.

² Lord George Sackville [1716-85], afterwards Viscount Sackville, son of the Duke of Dorset. He was commander of the British contingent at Minden, and his nervousness or jealousy, as related, saved the French army from complete destruction. He was found guilty of disobedience, declared unfit to serve the Crown in any military capacity, and in spite of great family influence was thoroughly disgraced. One of the grievances against Bute in the following reign was the cordial reception given at court to his friend Sackville.

commanded all the horse in that wing to advance and sustain them. It is impossible to describe his situation when a messenger from the general informed him that a part of the army was engaged in the plain that lay before him, and ordered him to march the cavalry under his command to their assistance. Surprise and resentment at such a measure's being taken, without his having the least previous notice of it, almost deprived him of his reason ; but he recovered himself in a moment, and drawing his sword with an air of indignation and discontent, was just preparing to obey the orders he had received, when another messenger arrived, and delivered them, but with some variation. This the general instantly perceived, and resolved to take advantage of, to justify his obeying neither, in hopes, by that means, to accomplish his scheme of defeating the measures of his commander, without any regard to the consequences that must attend such a conduct. Accordingly, instead of advancing, as he had before prepared to do, he entered into a debate with the messengers about this difference in their orders, and, finding each positive in those he delivered, he coolly determined to go himself to the general for an explanation of them ; by trifling away the critical moment in which manner he expected that the part of the allied army which was engaged would be beaten for want of proper and timely support, when he might have the glory of covering their retreat, and saving the whole army from a defeat, and the pleasure of effectually ruining the character of the general, by attributing the whole misfortune to his not taking the advice of his council, or even communicating his designs to them in proper time.

Such a scheme was but too likely to succeed, had not the unparalleled bravery of the troops, whom he thus designed to have sacrificed to his ambition and resentment, disappointed it beyond all human probability, as I have observed before, and actually beaten the whole army of the enemy, though ten times their number, out of the field, while he was taking advantage of a pretext to abandon them to ruin.¹

The situation of his mind when, upon his coming up to the general, he heard the victory was won, may be better conceived than described. The cool, distant reception he met with gave him notice of the storm which was ready to burst over his head, and he saw that the scheme he had laid so deeply to perpetrate the ruin of another had inevitably worked his own, as the very accusations which he had intended to bring against his general would now recoil upon himself with tenfold force. According to his fears, the general next morning publicly passed an implicit censure on his conduct, which he saw received with such universal approbation, that he thought it proper to resign his command, for fear of personal insult from the incensed soldiers, and return home, where he did not doubt but the interest of his family and his own eloquence and address would vindicate his character, at least, if not still accomplish his

¹ The second line of cavalry, under the Marquis of Granby, made a vigorous charge, though too late to complete the rout of the French, who were, however, afterwards cut up by 10,000 men sent by Ferdinand against their communications.

designs against the general. Though I lost sight of him at this time, yet, as I had an opportunity afterwards of coming to the knowledge of the whole affair, I think it better, and less trouble to us both, to continue the account here, than break my narrative with it in another place.

The first construction which was put upon his conduct was that it proceeded from cowardice, an opinion which the cruelty of his temper to those under his command gave no small weight to, from this generally just maxim, that the cruel are always cowards, and which many insignificant parts of his former conduct were alleged to confirm. But I have shown that it sprang from another much less justifiable cause; I say less justifiable, as cowardice is a natural infirmity, which a man is no more accountable for than for his being born blind or lame; but such a scheme as his was a premeditated crime, and aggravated with the blackest circumstances.

The first consequence of his quitting the army was a perfect harmony between the English and Germans, the glory they had acquired upon this occasion raising the spirits of the former so high that they thought no more of the inconveniences they had complained of before, but readily followed the example of their new commander,¹ whom they all loved, and entered into friendship with their fellow-soldiers, as if there had never been any jealousy between them, who, on the other hand, were so struck with their gallant behaviour, and so sensible of the advantages gained by it, that they no longer accused them of improper delicacy, or strove to do them ill offices with the natives of the country as before. But what completed the happiness of the English, was the commander-in-chief's indulging their natural thirst for glory under their present commander, by giving them the post of honour upon all occasions, and taking public notice of their valour, the honour of which they esteemed a sufficient recompense for the severest fatigues and dangers, an indulgence which it was not in his power to give before, as their late commander had always opposed their being exposed to danger, out of an affected regard to them, as if they were of greater consequence than the rest of the army, or joined it only to make a figure, and not to do any service.

As soon as the late general arrived in England, his sovereign, who had been informed of the whole affair, immediately deprived him of his many very lucrative and honourable employments, and dismissed him his service, an instance of clemency which few other princes would have shown, and which regard to the merits of his illustrious ancestors alone procured for him. But so far was he from having a proper sense of this lenity, or acquiescing in the sentence of his sovereign, that he loudly asserted his being wronged, and demanded a trial to vindicate his character, with all the assurance of conscious innocence.

This was the highest insult that could be offered to a prince, as it impeached his justice, and questioned his power in the tenderest

¹ The Marquis of Granby, who also led the British troops at the battle of Wellinghausen, where they greatly distinguished themselves.

point. However, he scorned to take any advantage of it, but, waiving every personal resentment, condescended to grant the trial demanded; but with this express declaration that, as it was at the instance of the party, and without any legal necessity, he should abide by the sentence of his judges, be it what it would, as he would never interfere further. But this declaration was of little weight, for the general was well advised before he solicited the trial, that, according to the laws of the country, he was exempted from the danger of it, by his being deprived of all his military employments, as they only made a Briton subject to military law, by which he must be tried; and this exemption was the real reason of his being so eager for a trial. But, though his life might be out of danger by this subterfuge, the trial completed the ruin of his character beyond all possibility of recovery, as, upon the most impartial examination, his neglect of the orders of his commander, and the pernicious consequences of it, by the loss of so favourable an opportunity of entirely ruining the army of the enemy, and, perhaps, putting an end to the war, by that means appeared so plainly, that the justice of his being dismissed the service was not only asserted, but he was also declared incapable of ever being admitted into it again; and thus he fell, a second time, a victim to his own schemes. As to the victory which had been the immediate cause of his ruin, as soon as the circumstances of it, as related here, came to be known to the world, the general lost the glory which, in the first emotions of joy and admiration, had been so lavishly heaped upon him for it; and it was justly ascribed to accident, as human foresight could not possibly have formed any plan for such an improbable instance of bravery as that which obtained it.

CHAPTER XXXI

CHRYSLAL ARRIVES AT BRUSSELS—THE GREAT SOURCE OF JESUITICAL INFLUENCE—ANECDOTES OF A MAN OF PLEASURE AND A LADY OF FASHION—THEIR HISTORY CONCLUDED IN CHARACTER

As soon as the confusion of such an event was a little over, and my master thought he could travel in safety, he quitted the camp of the conquerors, and, throwing off the character of a Jew, which, as I said, he had borne there, pursued his journey to Brussels in his own, where he was to receive further instructions; for, though the great design was carried on by every member of the society, yet the real secret of it was known only to a few of the heads, whose orders the rest obeyed with an implicit exactness, fidelity, and zeal, never equalled by the subjects of any sovereign upon earth, since the days of the old man of the mountain.

It was some time before these instructions arrived, which gave me an opportunity of learning the intrigues of that debauched, gaudy, insignificant court, by my master's intimacy with the confessor of the governor, who, besides the advantage of that character to gain information, was himself a man of pleasure in the most

extensive sense of the phrase, and utterly free from every restraint of principle that could oppose its gratification, though he had the address to maintain the dignity of his station, by his secrecy and regard to propriety of appearance.

There is nothing that contributes so much to the influence which the Jesuits possess over the minds of the people, as their knowledge of the secret history of their lives. To acquire this, they stop at nothing; they assume all characters, mix in all companies, and enter into every scene of vicious pleasure, where reserve is thrown off, and the whole heart appears without disguise. Such an opportunity of information, therefore, was not to be missed. Accordingly, the evening after my master's arrival, he went with his friend to court, where they had a liberty of placing themselves in a convenient situation to see all the company, and make their remarks without danger of being overheard. Such as were merely political I shall omit, as I am sick of such a stupid subject, and only take notice of those which may extend your knowledge of the human heart.

'Observe that little, mean-looking, ill-favoured person', said the confessor, continuing a conversation, the beginning of which I need not repeat, 'who acts as master of the ceremonies. You see his feeble frame is quite worn out with debauchery, and he nods over the grave in anticipated old age; yet still he affects an air of levity and youth, and strives to inflame others by his discourse, to vices which he is no longer able to participate of himself; but this is all grimace, and he assumes this appearance of gaiety, to hide the gloomy discontent and remorse that prey upon his heart.

'There is something so particular in the story of this man, that it may be worth while to give you a short sketch of it. He is a native of a neighbouring country, where his father, from the lowest state of poverty, amassed such wealth in trade, that his vanity prompted him to get his family ennobled, to hide the meanness of his original. There is something so absurdly wrong in purchased nobility, that it always turns the heads of the purchasers, perhaps in just retribution for so flagrant an abuse of an institution meant as a reward for merit. The ennobled man lived not to show the truth of this observation; but his sons abundantly made up for that, the elder lavishing his wealth on every kind of expensive vanity, and the younger the person you see, glorying in every kind of debauchery, as if vice and folly were the prerogatives of their honour.

'In the course of a life of pleasure, he contracted an acquaintance with that lady whom you see at the upper end of the room. Though nature had never meant him for a man of intrigue, and debauchery had exhausted even the little powers she gave, he thought it would have been inconsistent with his character of a man of pleasure not to commence an affair of gallantry with so deplorable a person. Accordingly, as she happened to be married, he directly cultivated an intimacy with her husband, into whose unguarded confidence he so far insinuated himself, as to receive many acts of friendship from him. To a man who had any sense of honour or honesty, this would have been an irresistible reason for desisting from his

base design ; but he was above such vulgar restraints, and genteelly took the opportunity of the husband's friendship to debauch the virtue of the wife.

' Nothing but the most abandoned profligacy in the woman could have given success to such an attempt, as the husband exceeded the paramour in every natural endowment of mind and person, beyond every degree of comparison ; but the caprice of vicious inclination is not to be accounted for ; it will loath the most exquisite delicacies, and sate itself on garbage.

' They had not continued their commerce long, when their indiscretion betrayed them. It is impossible to describe the astonishment and rage of the injured husband at the discovery. Had it been possible, he would have doubted his senses, which were witnesses to his disgrace. In the first emotions of his rage, he was going to break in upon them, and take the revenge which his superior strength amply put in his power ; but a moment's reflection showed him the folly of such an action, and determined him to take the safer and more severe revenge of the law.

' Accordingly, he withdrew without being perceived by them, and bringing some of his servants to testify their crimes, as soon as he had secured the proof necessary to obtain his satisfaction, entered the room in the height of their dalliance, and coolly telling them that it would be proper for them to choose another scene for their pleasure beside his house, retired, and left them to their meditations.

' This conduct convinced them of his design, and that they had not a moment to lose to avoid some of the most disagreeable consequences of it. As soon, therefore, as they recovered from the first impressions of their astonishment, they directly departed together, and concealing the place of their retirement, for fear of a pursuit, quitted the territories of the state as soon as they possibly could.

' But they might have spared themselves that trouble. The revenge which the husband sought was of another nature ; he directly instituted a suit at law against them, by which, as he had sufficient proof of their guilt, he obtained a divorce from his wife, and such damages against the violater of his bed, as made it impossible for him ever to return to his country, without he designed to languish out the rest of his days in a prison.

' The lovers, in the meantime, were very far from being happy in the uninterrupted enjoyment of each other. Variety and the mystery of intrigue were all that tempted them to the correspondence at first ; and now that these were lost, reflection opened their eyes to the consequences of their folly, and made them look on each other as the authors of their mutual ruin. Such thoughts soon cool the most ardent love ; what effect, then, must they have upon persons in their situation ? However, necessity obliged them to conceal their sentiments, and, as soon as the divorce gave them liberty, they married, to preserve the appearance of a passion they never felt, and obtain a support from their families, which they could not have expected on any other terms.

' When this was done, and that necessity removed, the aversion which they had long entertained broke out in the most violent

manner. They lived in a state of perpetual warfare, in which the wife threw off all regard to decency, even so far as to take advantage of her superior strength, and frequently beat her feeble husband. Observe that scar on his upper lip; the third day of their happy marriage he received that mark of her rage from the heel of her slipper, with which she also beat out two of his teeth, whose place he now supplies with artificial ones.

‘But the viciousness of her inclination, which first brought him into this wretched situation, released him from it sooner than he deserved.’ They had fixed their residence here, where the prince soon happened to take a liking to her, the first overture of which she eagerly embraced, and completed the infamy of her character by quitting her second husband to become his mistress, in which station you behold her at present.

‘Though such a disgrace seemed to be a judicial retaliation upon the husband for his own base crime, he was insensible of it, and instead of taking advantage of his deliverance, and retiring to some place where his shame was not known, meanly accepted of the employment in which you see him, and submitted to be the slave of her vice and insolence.

‘But though his hatred for her, and passion for the pomp and dissipation of a court make him brave, the infamy of such a situation, sickness, the constant consequence of debauchery, the faithful monitor of guilt, has awoken his conscience to a sense of the crime that has sunk him so low and raised a remorse that wastes his life, though he thus absurdly strives to drown its voice in the noise and vanity of vice.’

CHAPTER XXXII

THE CONFESSOR ENTERTAINS CHRYSAL’S MASTER WITH ANOTHER NOT UNCOMMON CHARACTER—THE MODERN METHOD OF REPAIRING A BROKEN FORTUNE—THE GENERAL CONSEQUENCE OF FEMALE AMBITION—A CURIOUS AMOUR COMMENCED IN AN ODD MANNER, AND CARRIED ON IN AS ODD A PLACE

My master was beginning to make some obvious reflections on this account, but his friend soon diverted his attention to another object.

‘Observe’, said he, pointing to a person who bore all the external marks of nobility in his habit and appearance, ‘a striking proof of the insignificance of being born to wealth and honours. Who that sees the despicable figure which this man makes here, a voluntary exile from his own country, where his rank and fortune placed him in the most exalted and advantageous light, can ever throw away a moment’s thought on heaping up riches, or obtaining honours to perpetuate his name and aggrandize his family, the folly and profusion of a single member of which may thus disappoint his hopes, and make his very virtues an aggravation of his own degeneracy and reproach?’

'In a rank scarce inferior to that of a sovereign, and possessed of a fortune sufficient to support it with dignity to himself and benefit to the community, did this man enter into life; but a few years of the dissipation of what is falsely called a life of pleasure distressed his fortune and debased his principles to such a degree, that he was obliged, and not ashamed, to have recourse to the method of a mercenary marriage, to retrieve his affairs, and enable him to support the external appearance of his character. The constant consequences of these marriages might be sufficient to open the eyes of the unhappy victims of them to such a dangerous folly; but vanity possesses so absolute an empire over the female heart, that nothing can prevent the gratification of it.

'The female whom this person pitched upon, as proper for his purpose, on account of her immense wealth, was destitute of every charm of mind and person to attract or preserve love or esteem. But few are sensible of their own deficiencies, or can bear to be informed of them. On his making the first overture to her, all her real friends took the alarm; they drew his character in proper colours; they showed her that necessity, not inclination, was the motive of his addresses, and they laid the inevitable consequences of a connection with such a person before her in the strongest light; but all was in vain. Her heart was fixed upon rank and precedence, and, so she could obtain them, she left the rest to chance. Accordingly, as she was absolutely her own mistress, the match was soon made, to the present satisfaction of both parties. He got her fortune to pay his debts and pursue his pleasures, and she rode in a coach with coronets, and was called her grace.

'But this mutual happiness did not last long. The moment he got possession of her fortune, all his wishes were fulfilled, and, as he had nothing further to expect, he did not think it necessary for him to continue any appearances of love, or even complaisance, for an object really disagreeable to him. Accordingly, the very morning after his marriage, he set out upon a party of pleasure, with some of his former companions, and left the bride by herself to receive the compliments, and go through the farce usual on such occasions. Though such behaviour must appear base and ungenerous to the last degree, yet she had no right to complain of it, as she could not expect any other from his known character and motives for marriage. She therefore put the best face on the matter, and whether from intoxication at her elevation, or indifference to him, seemed to be insensible of the slight, and went through the ceremony and parade with all the appearance of pleasure and content, leaving him to pursue his own inclination, without molestation or complaint.

'But this calm did not hold long. As soon as new dignity lost the charms of novelty, nature awoke, as from a dream, and convinced her that something more than empty show was necessary to human happiness. But, alas! this conviction came too late, and all her expostulations were as ineffectual to induce the tenderness or esteem of her husband, as those of her friends had been with her, to prevent her marrying him. On the contrary, they turned his indifference into aversion, and made him treat her with indignity and contempt, insulting her deformity, and ridiculing the vanity that had prompted

her to sacrifice her fortune for a bare title. Hard as such treatment was to be submitted to, she had no redress, but was obliged to bear it in silence, without even the poor consolation of compassion to mitigate her sufferings. At length a further aggravation of her wrongs gave her the pleasure of revenge, by driving him again into the distresses from which her folly had relieved him.

‘In the pursuit of pleasure, to which he had sacrificed his character and fortune, he never had even the excuse of a refined taste or particular passion to palliate his folly, but blindly followed the example of his companions, or was a slave to every gross impulse of his own caprice, without the least notion of delicacy, or even decency to direct him. As he was strolling alone about his house one unhappy evening when he had no company to divert his thoughts, he happened, just as it grew dark, to overhear two persons, a male and a female, in earnest conversation. Curiosity prompting him to listen, he soon discovered that love was the subject of their discourse, in which the man, whom, by his voice, he knew to be one of his huntsman’s helpers, was so successful, that he persuaded the fair one to promise him a meeting half an hour after in the dog-kennel.

‘Though the place of assignation might have deterred any person whose senses, as well as his inclinations, were not totally debauched, from attempting to supplant the happy lover, the novelty of such an adventure made his lordship overlook that, and resolve to supply his dog-boy’s place. Accordingly, he retired, unperceived, and going to the stables, ordered him to be called, and sent him directly on a message some miles off, without giving him an opportunity of letting his mistress know anything of the matter. As soon as the time appointed drew near, his lordship went to the agreeable scene, where the punctual fair one did not let him wait long. As he was about the dog-boy’s size, and the place was quite dark, she never perceived the change put upon her, but lavished her caresses upon him with the greatest tenderness, vowing never more to have any correspondence with the pantry-boy or scullion, who, it seems, were the dog-boy’s formidable rivals, but to be always constant to him alone, and took her leave of him, with a promise to meet him there at the same time next evening.

‘Disgusting as every circumstance of this affair should have been, the oddity of it, with the pleasure of supplanting another, even so mean a person, and in so unworthy an object, made him determine to be punctual to her appointment. But then the difficulty was how to prevent his rival’s traversing his design, for his delicacy was not in the least alarmed at the thoughts of his participating in her favours. He was also at a loss to know who the obliging female might be, for the darkness that concealed him was equally favourable to her, and he was a stranger to her voice; nor did he care to ask any questions, as that would betray his own imposture, and bring on an explanation that he did not desire, both as his greatest pleasure was in the cheat, and the discovery might be attended with circumstances he should choose to avoid, in case the female was disagreeable to him.

‘To obviate all these inconveniences, he ordered his rival to attend him the moment he returned, when he gave him a letter to

carry that instant to a gentleman who lived about twenty miles off, with directions to be back early the next day with an answer. This he said aloud, in hearing of all his servants, that, if his mistress should happen to hear of her lover's being sent from home, she might also have reason to expect his return time enough to keep the appointment; but to prevent this he had desired the person to whom he wrote to keep the messenger, as if for an answer for the letter, two or three days, in which time he concluded he himself should be tired of his amour.

CHAPTER XXXIII

CONTINUED: HIS LORDSHIP'S SCHEME TO FLING HIS RIVAL UNLUCKILY DISAPPOINTED—A DISAGREEABLE MEETING OCCASIONS STRANGE DISCOVERIES—WOMEN NEVER AT A LOSS—LAW OFTEN SPOILS SPORT

'PLEASED with the sagacity of this scheme, he waited for the next evening with an impatience that he did not often feel on such occasions; but an unlucky accident disappointed his designs. The gentleman to whom he wrote the letter happened not to be at home, nor was expected for a day or two, wherefore, as his lord had ordered him to make haste back, he left the letter, and returned without any delay, perhaps not more in obedience to his orders than from his impatience to retrieve the disappointment his desires had met by his absence the evening before. As soon as he alighted, therefore, his first care was to find out his mistress, to tell her the reason of his disappointing her the evening before, and to make a new assignation for that; but what was their mutual surprise when they came to compare notes! As he insisted on his not having attended the appointment, she flew into a rage, and accused him of having betrayed her basely to some of his companions, and, as she positively asserted her having met some person there, he accused her with equal warmth of inconstancy, and sacrificing him to some of his rivals, on whom he vowed the severest vengeance, if he could ever find him out.

'As this altercation was not carried on with much delicacy on either side, it soon produced an absolute rupture between the lovers, who separated with sentiments for each other very different from those with which they met. The dog-boy, in an hour or two, when his resentment cooled a little, recollected that it might be proper to let his lord know the success of his message, who sent for him into his presence directly, and being freed from his apprehensions by hearing that he was but that moment returned, ordered him to set out again instantly, and deliver the letter to the gentleman, wherever he was, and not return without an answer.

'His orders were so urgent that the fellow did not dare to make the least delay; but fortune, that seemed resolved to cross his lordship's designs, contrived it so, that he met the gentleman on his road, without having called at home, or received the letter that

had been left for him. Upon the dog-boy's informing him of it, he concluded, as he was much nearer to his lordship's than to his own house, that it was the readiest way for him to wait upon him directly without minding to send the man for the letter. Accordingly, he bade him turn back and ride on before him, to acquaint his lordship of his coming.

'Though it was late when he had set out the second time, he made such haste that he reached home just at the time of his lordship's appointment, when it unluckily coming into his head that his perfidious mistress might possibly have taken the advantage of his absence to make another assignation in his dog-kennel, the first thing he did the moment he dismounted from his horse was to go there to see if anyone had invaded his territories. Nor was his suspicion disappointed; for the fair one was so uneasy to unravel the mystery of the adventure of the evening before, that she punctually attended her appointment, where she had not waited many minutes before her unknown lover arrived. The scene of their meeting was so dark, that it was impossible for either of them to know the other. However, she soon thought of a method to remedy this, which was to purloin something out of his pockets, by which she might discover who he was, without betraying herself; for she soon found that he knew no more of her than she did of him.

'She had just executed her design, and was taking her leave of her lover, when his jealous rival came upon them unawares, and overhearing their expressions of fondness, was so enraged that he resolved to take immediate revenge. Accordingly, he approached them without any noise, and turning the butt-end of his whip, aimed a stroke so unluckily, though at a venture, that it felled his lordship to the ground. The female, who instantly guessed what was the matter, took advantage of the darkness to make her escape, which she happily effected without any disaster, the dog-boy stumbling over his fallen adversary the first step he advanced to pursue her. His lordship, half recovered from the blow, laid hold of his antagonist, who, grappling with him directly, a battle ensued, in which nobility was so rudely handled that his lordship was obliged to declare himself, and cry out for quarter. It is easy to conceive the confusion of the conqueror upon this discovery. He instantly strove to disengage himself and make his escape, but his lordship held him fast, promising to forgive him, though, if he would have the discretion never to mention a syllable of the affair, and inform him who the female was with whom he had made the assignation to meet in this place the evening before.

'These conditions were too easy not to be immediately complied with. He accordingly swore eternal secrecy, and readily told his lordship that the girl was no other than the kitchen-maid's daughter, who served as a scullion-wench under her mother. This discovery of his mistress's quality was almost as disagreeable to his lordship as the dog-boy's jealousy. However, he smothered his vexation, and stealing secretly into the house, that he might not be seen in such a condition, retired to his own apartment by himself, to change his clothes, and wash off the blood and dirt with which he was all over plentifully daubed.

‘As soon as he had set himself somewhat to rights, he rang for his *valet de chambre*, who was his usual agent upon such occasions, and ordered him to bring the kitchen-maid’s daughter up to him. The valet, who was sufficiently acquainted with the capriciousness of his master’s taste, was not in the least surprised at his choice of such an object, but obeyed him directly. The fortunate female, who had found out the quality of her new lover by his snuff-box, which she had picked out of his pocket, was almost afraid to obey the glad summons, for fear she might be suspected of having designedly occasioned the outrage his lordship had lately met. However, her ambition getting the better of her fear, she suffered herself to be prevailed on, and went, trembling and blushing in all the bashfulness of virgin innocence, to know his lordship’s commands.

‘If he had been surprised at the discovery of her condition, he was much more agreeably so at the sight of her; for, though she was far from being handsome, there was something in her face which, with her extreme youth, and a glow of health that her confusion heightened not a little, struck his fancy in an uncommon manner. He therefore, without giving her the least hint of what had happened, as he imagined she knew nothing of him, made no ceremony of proposing love to her. But, young as she was, she had too much woman in her soul to comply so easily, though there was nothing she desired more ardently. Accordingly, she refused his lordship with the most respectful modesty, and, on urging his request further, threw herself at his feet in a flood of tears, and begged him to have compassion upon her friendless youth and innocence. Such behaviour would have made him doubt the dog-boy’s information, did not the sound of her voice convince him she was the person. He therefore laughed at her artifice, and told her that, as soon as the farce was ended, he should expect another answer, as he knew she had granted to others the favour he asked of her. This convinced her that he had discovered her, and that it was necessary for her to enlarge her scheme to accomplish the design she had formed, of establishing a lasting interest in his affections. Accordingly, upon his saying this, she embraced his knees in a seeming agony of distress, and conjuring him to have mercy on her folly, owned she had transgressed with one, and one only, who had made such an impression upon her heart, that though she had taken him for another, and knew not even who he was, she had made a vow never to repeat her folly with any other.

‘The candour of this confession, the greatest part of which he thought he knew to be true, completed her conquest over him. He raised her from the ground, and, embracing her tenderly, discovered himself to her. The consequence is obvious. She immediately appeared in public as his mistress, and had the address to accommodate herself so entirely to his caprices, that she soon gained the absolute mastery of his heart. As for the poor dog-boy, he was turned off, of course, as an offence to her sight, though not without a considerable gratuity to purchase his silence. But that was impossible. The moment he left the house, he looked upon himself as freed from the necessity of concealing it any longer, and made

it the common subject of his discourse, till it became as publicly known as his lordship's name.

'This happened just as his affairs became again so distressed, that he was forced to withhold the support he had allowed his wife. She therefore directly took advantage of it, to sue him for a separate maintenance, on the plea of his thus living in avowed adultery. The fact was too flagrant to be denied, and his infatuation was such, that he would not remove the cause to avoid the consequence of the suit, but chose to quit his native country, and come here with his mistress to live in the disesteem and contempt you see him treated with, on the poor pittance of his fortune, which the law allows him for his support, the rest, much the greater part of it, being assigned for the maintenance of his wife and payment of his debts'.

CHAPTER XXXIV

CHRYSAI'S MASTER MEETS AN OLD ACQUAINTANCE, WHO RELATES
THE HISTORY OF HIS LIFE—CURIOUS ANECDOTES OF A GREAT
MAN

My master's friend proceeded to give him an account of several other persons who were present; but as his remarks were confined to their political characters, I shall omit them, as I said before. On these I have dwelt so long, because they display a just, however disagreeable, picture of human nature.

The day after my master's being with his friend at court, he went to see an old acquaintance of his. The principles of the soul are sometimes so strong as to baffle hypocrisy, and mark the character of a man, in the lineaments of his visage, to every common eye. The first view of my master's old friend and acquaintance struck me with horror; every vice that can deform the human soul appeared triumphant, and unallayed with any the least tincture of virtue in his face. Though I was no stranger to the latitude of my master's principles, the intimacy of such a person blackened my worst opinion of him. They flew to each other's arms, and, embracing with the tenderness of long-parted friends, asked each other a thousand questions, almost in a breath, concerning their mutual welfare, and the adventures they had met with since they had seen each other last. In the account given by my master, there was none but common occurrences; but the history of his friend had something so strikingly singular in it, that for the curiosity of such a character, I will give you a short sketch of it, as drawn by himself, with this difference only, that I shall omit several facts too gross for repetition, and soften the colouring of the whole, as the glaringness of it would overpower human sight, and strike imagination with horror too strong to bear.

'You have often expressed a curiosity, my friend', said the stranger to my master, 'to learn the particulars of my life. That I did not gratify it, was not owing to any diffidence or disinclination to oblige you, but because I had not arrived at any fixed period, to

make a proper pause at, and therefore an imperfect account could give but little satisfaction. But that objection is now removed. I am here settled in a situation which, though far below my former hopes, I shall strive to be contented in, and not launch out any more into the fatigues and perils of the world at this late season of my life. One caution only I must hint to you, which is, that in the account I am going to give, I shall throw aside all prejudice, and represent everything in the unadorned simplicity of its first principles, without any regard to the received notions of self-deluded man.

‘I was born in France of poor parents, who were scarcely able to give me the first rudiments of a liberal education. To avoid a life of labour, I rashly entered into the monastic, before I had experience enough to see the folly of such a step. But my stay here was not long. To a man of sense, the obligation of a vow ceases with the motive that induced him to take it. I made my escape from the convent, and as I was destitute of money to support me, and as yet too ignorant of the ways of the world to be able to live without it, was driven by necessity to enlist myself for a soldier. But I soon found that I had not gained by the change, the slavery of a soldier’s life being still more intolerable than that of a monk. I therefore had recourse to my former expedient for relief, and deserted the very first opportunity. I then threw myself at random upon the world, without any particular point to direct my course to; but this did not discourage me. I had boldly thrown off the shackles which foolish man had forged for himself, to prevent his rising in life, and regulated my conduct solely by my convenience. This gave me a superiority over the rest of mankind, which I never failed to avail myself of. I looked upon their follies as my inheritance, and soon found abundant opportunities of turning them to my advantage. For some years I lived a life of ramble, in the course of which I met with many adventures. At length I thought my own country too narrow a sphere to confine my activity to, and so I went to Spain, where I expected an ample harvest from the ignorance and superstition of the people; but their poverty disappointed my hopes, and almost starved me into repentance of my expedition. However, I proceeded to Madrid, where the credulity of a countryman of my own made me amends for the reserve of the natives. He not only relieved my immediate wants, which were too pressing to be borne, but also entrusted into my hands some valuable materials for a literary work, from which he expected both reputation and profit. But I disappointed his hopes, for, being tired of Spain, I took the first opportunity of going to try my fortune in some other country, and carried all his papers with me. Nor was this all he suffered by his confidence. I had before experienced the inconveniency of depending upon charity, in a country where there is scarce sufficient for the necessities of nature. I therefore thought it proper to take all the money and valuable effects in his possession, to defray the expenses of my journey. As to the distress this might throw him into, I never regarded that a moment, no more than I did his being my countryman. I despised the narrowness of thought that made such accidental circumstances of

any weight, when they clashed with my own particular designs, and I esteemed the lesson I had taught him, to be more cautious whom he placed his confidence in, a sufficient recompense for his loss. From Spain, I directed my course to Germany, where the political knowledge I acquired from my late friend's papers made me so much taken notice of, that after some time, not disagreeably spent among the great, I was recommended to the prime minister and favourite of the King of Poland, as a proper person to be entrusted with the education of his only son. Not to disgrace this character, I assumed a fictitious name and title, and gave out that I had been obliged to leave my own country for an affair of honour. My employment gave me frequent opportunities of conversing with the father of my pupil, in which I displayed my skill in politics to such advantage, that I soon was admitted into his esteem and confidence. In this intercourse I had the honour of starting the first hint of that project, which afterwards kindled a late war in Germany, and will immortalize his name (for he has had the ungenerous meanness to assume it to himself) to all ages.

'Such a situation was sufficient to satisfy the desires of any other man; but my ambition knew no bounds. I thought my patron did not reward my merit as it deserved, and, in revenge, I resolved to work his ruin. For this purpose, I entered into a correspondence with several noblemen, who were his enemies, and, taking advantage of the opportunities his confidence gave me of seeing his papers, copied some, and counterfeited others that I thought necessary to my design, which was no less than to raise a civil war, in which the minister should be sacrificed, and the master dethroned. But, just as my plot was ripe for execution, it was discovered, and I hurried from a palace to a prison, where I was condemned to languish out the rest of my days, my life being spared in compliance with a delicacy of my patron, who thought it would be a disgrace to him to have his son's tutor hanged. When I had lain here some time, a happy thought procured me my liberty. I wrote a most penitential letter to the Pope's nuncio, in which I discovered my true name, and my having fled from my vows, and pretending a thorough sense of my guilt, and desire of returning to my order, begged his intercession in my favour. My scheme succeeded. He claimed me as an ecclesiastic, and the king, whose mind was too intent on greater matters to think of me, readily complied. I was accordingly released from my prison, but instead of being set absolutely at liberty, as I had hoped, was sent under a guard of ecclesiastics to Rome, where all the favour I could obtain was to be ordered back to my convent. This was a great disappointment to me; but I was obliged to submit. I accordingly set out, guarded as before, but determined to take the first opportunity of making my escape, which I at length effected, after many vain attempts.

'To frustrate the pursuits of my guards, I fled into Switzerland, where the name of liberty flattered my hopes of doing whatever I pleased. The first thing I did there, was to abjure my religion and profess theirs, to conciliate their good opinion. This was no difficulty upon me, as I had long looked upon all religions with equal indifference. As I had no money, I immediately commenced

author. But, though I gained reputation, my profits were so inconsiderable that I was obliged to have recourse to other methods for my support, some of which, happening to contradict their prejudices, I was obliged to leave their dominions with circumstances of disgrace. You will laugh at the narrow notions of mankind, when I tell you that the affair they made so great a noise about was only my denying a debt which I was unable to pay, and the creditor did not even want.

‘There were some other particulars, indeed, of my conduct, which would have met with a severe fate, had I not taken prudent care to obviate it. I had entered into an intimacy with a person of some fortune, who had an agreeable wife. The connections of the wise are always made with a view to some particular end. I had more than one in this acquaintance; the supply of my necessities, by the generosity of the husband, and the gratification of my pleasure, by the enjoyment of the wife. I succeeded in both, but was prevented by an accident from enjoying my success long. The husband surprised us one day in a situation that did not admit of doubt. He drew his sword, to have revenged his wrongs with my death; but I disappointed his design by presenting a pistol at his head, which I always carried about with me, for fear of accidents. Upon this, he ran out of the house in a kind of frenzy. I saw the delicacy of my situation, and that my safety depended upon the proper use of that moment. The wife had swooned away at the first sight of her husband. I ran and fetched a glass of water, as if to recover her, but conveyed a few drops into it, which I never went without, for any such emergency, that delivered her for ever from all fear of her husband’s resentment. It was in her power to make discoveries to her husband, which I did not choose; beside, as the suspicion of her death would inevitably fall upon him, I thought that a good way to escape his revenge. I then quitted the house without being perceived. All things happened as I could wish. The husband was obliged to fly from his country, to avoid an ignominious death for the murder of his wife, and all his effects were confiscated to the state. It is true, I did not entirely escape suspicion. He had laid open all he knew of the affair by letter to his friends, but, though they believed him, he had no evidence to support his charge, so that I despised his impotent accusations.

‘From Switzerland I once more turned my face to Germany, where my name was so famous for my political knowledge that a war being just ready to break out, I received considerable offers from most of the parties concerned to engage me in their service. But though I refused none, I resolved not to engage myself absolutely to any, till I could know which might prove most advantageous to me’.

CHAPTER XXXV

CONTINUED : HE COMES TO ENGLAND, WHERE HIS SERVICES ARE REJECTED BY THE STATE, AND HE IS OBLIGED TO EXERT HIS ABILITIES IN A LOWER SPHERE—HE GAINS THE CONFIDENCE OF HIS LANDLORD, FROM WHOM HE BORROWS ALL HE IS WORTH, AND THEN STRIVES TO PAY THE DEBT WITH A HALTER—A GOOD RETREAT IS BETTER THAN A BAD STAND

‘As England was likely to bear a considerable part in the war, I thought it proper to go over and sound the inclinations of the ministry there also. The riches and credulity of the inhabitants of that country have long made it esteemed the inheritance of needy adventurers. The thought of displaying my abilities in so fertile a soil inspired me with an ardour I had never felt before. I already grasped all the wealth of the nation, and looked upon myself as the oracle of the people and the terror of the ministry, who would not fail to purchase my silence with a pension that should enable me to spend the rest of my days wherever I liked with dignity and ease’.

‘Full of these flattering hopes, I arrived in London, where I soon found that just as the notion I had formed of the people in general might be, the government would not take the bait I had prepared for them, and treated me and my proposals with equal contempt. This threw me into the necessity of prostituting the abilities which I fondly hoped would have been employed in embroiling nations, to the deception of individuals for the support of life ; for all the wealth I was master of consisted solely in the projects of my brain. My success in this under-plot made me some amends for the miscarriage of the other. I no sooner fixed my habitation, than I was crowded to by tradesmen of all kinds, to solicit my custom for things which I had not the least probability of being ever able to pay for. But that gave me no concern. I accepted their offers to such an amount, that I was immediately able to procure considerable sums of money for other occasions, by the sale of commodities which, so far from having occasion for, I scarcely knew the use of.

‘Flushed with this good fortune, I threw off all reserve, and gave a loose to every passion which luxury could raise in a temper naturally warm, never reflecting that the day would soon come when my inability to pay my present debts would not only put a stop to these artificial resources, but also probably plunge me in the horrors of a gaol for life. I professed myself a man of pleasure ; I dressed, gamed, and intrigued with people of the first rank, and for some time was so intoxicated as to forget my purpose in coming over, and think I could support this life for ever. Not that I was ever so intent upon my pleasures as to miss any opportunity of procuring the means immediately necessary to obtain them. On the contrary, the moment I threw off my designs upon the government, I doubled my application to turn the follies of particulars to my own advantage, stopping at nothing, however iniquitous in the opinion of the world, to accomplish my designs. Such a life must

necessarily involve me in a variety of adventures, many of which, it is true, I got not so smoothly over as I could wish ; but I had learned philosophy enough to take the bad with the good, without repining at what it was not in my power to redress. It would be endless to enter into a particular detail of everything I did and suffered in the course of this life ; I shall, therefore, only just mention one or two affairs, which may serve to give you some notion of the rest. As I particularly valued myself upon my literary character, there was no kind of acquaintance I was fonder of cultivating than with men of letters, for which I had also a further motive that, as their attention to books generally made them strangers to the ways of men, they were most easy to be made the property of any mercenary designs.

‘ On both these accounts I had taken lodgings in the house of a clergyman, who, besides the character of a man of learning, was also reputed to be in good circumstances. I soon found that he was a person exactly fitted for my designs, and therefore lost no time in making a proper impression on him. The first step towards acquiring confidence is to place it yourself. I immediately made him my banker, lodging every sum of money I won at play, or raised by the means I mentioned before, in his hands. As my success made these sums very considerable at first, he conceived an opinion of my being a person of consequence and fortune above my appearance. This inspired him with such respect for me, that if at any time I even hinted an occasion for more than I had in his hands, he not only offered to supply me, but even looked upon my acceptance as an honour. To confirm him in this way of thinking, I frequently accepted of his offers when I had no occasion, only that the punctuality of my payment might make him still the readier whenever I should. Nor was it long before I was obliged to avail myself of this scheme. A bad run at play stripped me of all my money, and my tradesmen brought in their bills, so that my former resources were at an end. In this difficulty I applied to my landlord, who readily supplied me with all the money in his possession, and, that not being sufficient, borrowed as much more as he could, till my remittances should arrive from my estate.

‘ This supply might have extricated me from the difficulties of the present moment. But I was awoke from my golden dreams, and saw that this was the last money I could anyways expect to raise, as my practices began to be suspected, and everybody had taken the alarm against me ; so that, if I parted with it, I should only gain a momentary relief, as my landlord would soon expect to be paid also. I therefore resolved to serve all my creditors alike, and go back to Germany with the money in my possession, leaving them to curse their credulity, and be more cautious for the future. As I had still a considerable quantity of valuable effects in my possession, I knew it would be impossible to remove them without giving the alarm to my landlord, and I could not think of leaving them in his hands, though they were far short of the debt I owed him. In this dilemma my ready genius prompted a scheme that would not only secure me from him, but also give me time to prepare for my decampment with more convenience. Upon my first coming

to his house, I had contrived, by taking the impressions in wax, to get false keys to all his locks. This is a piece of precaution which no man of prudence will ever neglect. In pursuance of my scheme, the morning after I received the money from him, and before I was to pay it away by appointment, I took the opportunity while he was at church to convey into his closet several things of value, my property in which I could clearly prove, taking away, at the same time, the obligations which I had given him for the money he had lent me, which his confidence in my honour had prevented his taking the precaution of having witnesses to. As soon as I had done this, I went directly to a magistrate, before whom I made oath of my being robbed of a large sum of money and many of my most valuable effects, among which I particularly named the things I had left in his closet, and required an authority to apprehend my landlord and search his house, as I had reason to suspect that he had stolen them, having caught him often coming out of my apartments in evident confusion, and at times when my being absent deprived him of every honest reason of going into them; and this charge I had confirmed by the testimony of my *valet de chambre* and another person, whom I had prepared properly.

Though the execution of sentence is not quite so sudden in England as in Turkey, an accusation of this kind, however groundless, is in many respects not much less dreadful, the harpies of the law never losing their hold of the accused till they have devoured everything in his possession. The warrant I demanded was readily granted for this reason, and away I resolutely went, in company with the officers, to execute it. We found my landlord, in the security of innocence in his parlour, waiting for my coming in to dinner. It is impossible to express his astonishment when they laid hold of him like a thief, and told him it was on my accusation. All the resolution and presence of mind I was master of were requisite to bear me through the scene. At first he was unable to speak a word, which the candour of his accusers did not fail to construe into a silent acknowledgment of his guilt; but, recovering himself in a few moments, he first raised his eyes to heaven, and then, turning them upon me, gave me a look that almost froze the blood in my veins, but never deigned to speak a word to me. He then addressed himself to the officers, and mildly desired that they would execute their duty with lenity, nor offer any indignity to the sacred character he bore, till a proof of his guilt should make him appear unworthy of the sanction of it. Such behaviour had an effect not to be described upon all that were present. The very officers forgot their hardened nature for a moment, and the tear of pity fell from eyes that never wept before at human misery. Even I began to feel the foolish infection, and was obliged to charm up other passions to prevent my betraying myself, though my ruin was at stake. Accordingly, I raised my voice, and, with a stern accent, commanded the officers to do their duty, and search the house before his accomplices should have time to convey away the things we came in quest of. This word put an end to a compassion that was contrary to their nature, and they proceeded to their business with their usual keenness, though still with respect, till they came to search his

closet, where the sight of things which I had sworn to have been stolen from me appeared so plain a proof of his guilt, that they treated him with all the indignity of the vilest malefactor.

‘Secure in his innocence, he had hitherto preserved a steadiness of temper that seemed superior to the power of fortune; but at this sight his resolution failed him. He fell upon his knees, and raising his hands and eyes to heaven—“Just God”, said he, “Thy will be done. Thou knowest my innocence, and art able to defend me, and wilt defend me”, said he, rising, and recovering his former spirits.

‘In the meantime, I seemed encouraged by this success, to hope for the recovery of the money which I pretended to have lost also, and ceased not to urge the officers to make the strictest search. But this was not necessary; they ransacked every place, and tossed about everything that was too large for them to convey away, till they made his whole house one scene of desolation. They then dragged him before the magistrate, where the finding of the things gave such weight to the charge which I positively swore against him, that he was on the verge of being hurried to prison, and would certainly have suffered an ignominious death, had it not been for some unlucky prevarication in my *valet de chambre’s* evidence. This, with some suspicions that were suggested against my own character by the pawnbroker to whom I had sold the goods I took up from my tradesmen, and who unfortunately happened to be present, gave the affair such a turn in his favour, that he was admitted to bail, till his innocence or guilt should be proved by a public trial. But it was far from my intention to wait for this. The moment I left the magistrate, I went to the house of an acquaintance, whither I had ordered my effects to be removed before, where I resolved to prepare for my departure with the utmost expedition. As to my creditors, when they called upon me next morning, as I had appointed, for their money, I told them the story of my having been robbed the day before by my landlord, and therefore that they must wait till I should receive another remittance from my own country; and though I saw that few of them believed me, or were inclined to grant me that indulgence, I was under no concern, as the habitation of my friend was in a place privileged from the immediate power of the law. However, it was impossible to be easy in such a situation, where every eye that saw me reproached me with what I had done. I therefore took the opportunity of going off, in which I was so successful as to elude the vigilance of my pursuers, and escape to Holland, where I had the vexation to learn that half of my scheme was disappointed, my landlord being discharged without trial, for want of my appearing to prosecute him. But though he escaped death, his affairs were so effectually ruined by the loss of the money he lent and had procured for me, and the expense and damage he suffered by my accusation, that he was obliged to fly for refuge to the savages of America, from the power of his more savage creditors’

CHAPTER XXXVI

CONTINUED : HE LAUNCHES AGAIN INTO THE TROUBLED OCEAN OF POLITICS, AND SUFFERS A SECOND SHIPWRECK IN ENGLAND—‘HE THAT WILL NOT WHEN HE MAY’, ETC.—IT IS OFTEN BETTER TO PLAY A POOR GAME THAN STAND OUT—CHRYSLAL ARRIVES AT LISBON

‘I no sooner arrived in Holland, the general rendezvous of politicians, than I reassumed that character once more, and that with such success, that the minister of a power in alliance with England conceived such an opinion of my abilities, as made him offer to recommend me to that court for an employment of the highest consequence in one of the principal courts of Germany. Though I was sensible that my return to England must be attended with disagreeable, if not dangerous circumstances, from the general prejudices that were entertained there against me, I boldly resolved to accept of his offer. The former, which could consist only in impotent marks of dislike, I disregarded, and the latter I judged my recommendation would enable me to defeat. Accordingly, I set out with the utmost privacy, and was safe in London before my leaving Holland was even suspected by those who would have lain in wait for me.

‘The very morning after my arrival, I waited upon the minister to whom I was recommended, with my letters, who received me very politely, and, upon the credit of the character given to him of me, entered into a familiar conversation on several subjects of intricacy and importance, in which I supported the character he had received of me so well, that he dismissed me with an assurance of his protection and favour. I now thought myself secure of my hopes, but the pleasure of this thought was of a very short continuance. The very next morning I received a message from the minister to attend him directly, which you may think I obeyed in the highest spirits. Instead of the affability with which I expected to be received, upon my advancing to him, he darted a look at me, that seemed designed to search my very soul. After viewing me steadily thus for some moments—“You are recommended to me”, said he, “as a man of abilities, and such I have found you to be; but you have imposed upon the person who recommended you, and concealed your real character from him, or he would never have entertained so favourable an opinion of such an abandoned wretch. But I have unravelled the mystery of your iniquities, and am guarded against your wiles. Your crimes call loud for vengeance, and the stroke of fate hangs over your head. But, in hopes you may repent and amend your life, and in respect to the recommendation you brought, of which I cannot give you a stronger testimony than this, I will give you an opportunity to escape, for this time, the ruin that threatens you. Fly this country directly. If you are found in this city an hour hence, or make the least delay in any part of the kingdom (and all your steps are watched), you are to expect no favour or protection. And that you should not

plead inability to obey this injunction, take this purse of gold, and let me never see your face more ”.

‘I need not tell you the effect this speech had upon me. I took the purse, and retired without making any reply ; nor did I close my eyes in sleep, till I had bade adieu to that inhospitable shore. On my return, I went to wait upon my former patron, but was denied admission, and ordered never to go there any more, the account of my disgrace in England having, as I learned afterwards, been transmitted to him in the very ship that brought me over.

‘Though these miscarriages mortified my pride, they did not deject my spirits. The gold given me by the English minister enabled me to support myself in a state of independence for some time, during which I successively offered to accept every proposal that I had formerly rejected ; but I had missed my opportunity, and was now rejected myself in my turn. At length, when I was almost reduced to despair, the employment I hold here was offered to me, which, though far beneath my former hopes, I thought it not prudent to refuse, especially as it opened me an opportunity of venting my rage with impunity upon all who had ever offended me. I am literally hired to wage open war with truth, honour, and justice, by inventing false news to support the exhausted spirits of the people ; by defaming the enemies of my employers, to give a colour to the iniquitous designs of the latter, and by varnishing over the most flagrant acts of oppression, cruelty, and deceit, with the specious colours of authority, justice, and religion. To a man who retained any of the prejudices of the world, and did not examine things in the simplicity of nature, such a task must be most disagreeable. But to me all things are indifferent, as I know all things are alike’.

Here my master’s friend concluded his history, the enormity of which would prevent its obtaining credit, had it been related by anybody but himself, though, as I told you before, I have omitted the blackest particulars, and softened the colours of the rest.

In a few days after this interview my master left Brussels, and proceeded on his journey to Lisbon, during the remainder of which nothing occurred worth relating.

CHAPTER XXXVII

CHRYSALE COMES, AT LISBON, INTO THE POSSESSION OF A FORMER ACQUAINTANCE—HIS MASTER MAKES THE GREAT ATTEMPT WITHOUT SUCCESS—SEVERAL OF THE NOBILITY ARE SACRIFICED TO OTHER MOTIVES, ON PRETENCE OF BEING GUILTY OF THIS FACT—CHRYSALE’S MASTER IS AT LENGTH TAKEN UP, AND HE CHANGES HIS SERVICE

IF I was formerly surprised at meeting a Peruvian acquaintance at Vienna, I was no less so when I found that the person to whom he sent me in Lisbon was the very captain, of whose miraculous conversion, after the rape and murder of his brother’s wife, I gave you an account in the beginning of this relation, whom I found to

be a man chosen for the great attempt, the proof which he had given of his capacity in that affair having raised their opinion of him so high, as to make them think him the only proper person for this.

I did not remain long in a state of speculation in the possession of this master; the orders, which were brought along with me, were all that were waited for, to accelerate the execution of the design. Accordingly, the blow was struck a few nights after, but in the confusion inseparable from such attempts, without effect.

The king¹ was shot in his coach as he returned one night from a love assignation, at some distance from his palace, by my master, who had waylaid him at a proper place, and fired a blunderbuss, loaded with small balls, at him, through the back of the coach. By an instantaneous stupefaction of fear, which is often taken for resolution and presence of mind, the king fell down in the coach, and spoke not a word, which made my master conclude the work done, and so prevented a repetition of the blow. But what was his confusion the next morning, when he found that the king, though severely wounded, was likely to recover! The opportunity was lost, nor was it probable that another would offer, till it would be too late. However, he attended the event, so far safe, that no one could endanger his safety by betraying him, there being no person there, not even of the order, privy to the action, for secrets of this importance are always entrusted to as few as possible.

While he thus calmly looked on as an unconcerned spectator, it is impossible to describe the distraction that reigned all over the city, where every person suspected his neighbour, and was almost afraid to converse with his brother, for fear of being suspected of a participation in a crime of which he knew not the person guilty.

At court, in the meantime, the most mysterious silence was observed, and all conversation on the subject discouraged. This was thought to be the most probable way of coming to the knowledge of so dark an affair, as their spies could thereby mix with the people with less suspicion, and make their observations with the greater certainty, when they should be off their guard. Not that they were at a loss to think from whence the blow had come, but by whom it was struck was the difficulty to find out, that so they might found their proceedings on an evidence of justice, for the Jesuits were too mighty a body to be attacked upon an uncertainty.

The reason for suspecting them of this fact was, that upon the miscarriage of their premature attempt in America, the king was so incensed against the whole society, that he dismissed them from the direction of his conscience, and every other place and employment about his person and court. Such an indignity he was sensible

¹ Pombal, the prime minister of Joseph I of Portugal, charged the Jesuits collectively with complicity in the Tavora Plot (Sept. 3, 1758), in which the king was fired at and wounded. The evidence as to their guilt cannot be substantiated. At any rate, all Jesuits were ordered to be deported from Portugal and its dependencies.

must alarm the resentment of a set of men not remarkable for patience, or forgiving affronts; he had, therefore, taken every precaution to guard against them, as far as human prudence could direct his fears, which was only against disturbances in the state, for of such an attempt as this he could not suspect them. While things hung in this suspense, I had an opportunity of seeing into the character of the people I was among; but human language wants force to describe them. I have already given you the genuine character of the Dutch; to that, let us add poverty, pride, superstition, bigotry, and its inseparable attendant, cruelty, and they will give you some idea of the present Portuguese. A people of whom it is hard to say whether to abstracted speculation they are more ridiculous or execrable, the struggle between their follies and vices is so unremitted and so strong.

A little before I arrived there, the city had been reduced to ashes by lightning, and, before they had recovered from the consternation which such a misfortune threw them into, they received an account of the capital of their American dominions being swallowed by an earthquake. Such signal instances of the wrath of Heaven might have been expected to alarm their consciences to look for the causes of it in their vices, and to try to avert it by repentance and amendment. But, instead of that, the first proof they gave of coming to their reason (or, I should rather say, of coming to themselves, for reason it was not) after their fright, was to attribute these misfortunes to a relaxation in superstitious severity, and to demand, as victims to it, the only people under heaven whose good nature had given effectual relief to their distress. At length, after a calm so long that people began to think the storm was quite allayed, it broke out with a fury that amazed not only the unhappy heads on which it burst, but also the whole nation beside. I told you that the attempt had been made upon the king, as he was returning from a love-meeting. The person with whom he had been was descended from the first, and related or allied to all the greatest families in his kingdom.

In a country whose characteristics are pride and revenge, such an intercourse must be dangerous even to royalty, as the honour of all those families seemed to be wounded through her. Accordingly, a rumour of her being with child having extorted some inadvertent, illative general menaces from some of her relations, as the fact was really so, the conscious apprehensions of the king were alarmed, and, as he could not declare the true reason of them, he made a pretence of the assassination, the charge of which received some appearance of probability, from the very circumstance which now occasioned its being brought against them, it being known that he was returning from that lady, at the very time when the attempt was made upon him.

Thus, to the fear of danger arising from a real crime, were the greatest subjects in the kingdom to be sacrificed, on a pretence of guilt, which their very accusers believed them innocent of. For, before they were apprehended, their ruin was resolved on, which was not a little forwarded by the opportunity which it gave the king of seizing all their vast possessions, and thereby repairing the

losses he had suffered in the late calamities. Accordingly, after suffering every torture which human ingenuity could invent, to make them confess a guilt of which they were not even suspected, they were publicly executed in the most ignominious and cruel manner, in the sight of an astonished people, without any proof being given of their guilt, beside the bare affirmations and strained inferences of those who were both accusers and judges, and also reaped the profits of their ruin. Such scenes as these are too horrid to be dwelt on; I shall therefore return to my master, with whom I had an opportunity of coming to the knowledge of every transaction relative to this mysterious affair, the miscarriage of his attempt having made it necessary for him to disburse the money among which I came to him, and by that means continued me so long in his possession. Could anything have heightened the opinion my first knowledge of him gave me, it must have been to see him an unconcerned spectator of the sufferings of those unhappy victims to his guilt, and to hear him argue for the justice of their punishment. But his triumph was not long. Secret and inscrutable as the Jesuits imagined they had laid their schemes, the king either received, or pretended to have received, such information of them as, confirmed by a multitude of facts not to be denied, gave an appearance of probability and justice to their being charged as accomplices with the unhappy nobles, and treated with the utmost severity, a step that could not have been taken on such grounds, while these nobles were alive and at liberty, or the people in spirits to exert the influence of their prejudices in their behalf. But the favourable minute was come to strike at the root of ecclesiastical tyranny, and deliver both king and people from a yoke under which they had so long blindly groaned, that at length they thought it just and natural. Accordingly, in the midst of his security, my master was seized, and hurried away to a prison with the rest of his brethren, and all his papers and effects secured for the government. Of the former they could make but little use, as it is an invariable rule with all the order never to keep any by them, whose discovery may endanger them or their designs; but the latter were turned to ready account.

In this dissipation I fell to the lot of one of the officers, who, in his search, took an opportunity to secrete the bag in which I was, and that very night lodged his acquisition with a banker, for fear of detection.

CHAPTER XXXVIII

CHRYSLAL MEETS ANOTHER ACQUAINTANCE AT HIS NEW MASTER'S—
CONCLUSION OF THE HISTORY OF HONEST AMINADAB—ADVENTURES OF HIS SON—HE ENTERS INTO BUSINESS AT LISBON, IN WHICH CHRYSLAL SUFFERS A GREAT MISFORTUNE—HIS INGRATITUDE TO HIS UNCLE JUSTLY REWARDED—CHRYSLAL ENTERS INTO A NEW SERVICE

I WAS scarce settled in the possession of my new master, whom I found to be a concealed Jew, when I saw a person enter his counting-

house, the sight of whom made me almost distrust my senses. Nor was the surprise of my master less.

'O God of Abraham', said he, 'is not this the son of my brother Aminadab? Where hast thou been? and where is thy father? He has been sought from Dan to Beersheba. His spoiling that Gentile, that Egyptian woman, has been a joy to all the brethren. But I am amazed to see thee here. I hope he is safe out of the reach of every Christian power'.

'O brother of my father', replied the son of Aminadab, 'mention not that unhappy affair, if thou hast not a mind to kill thy wretched nephew with grief. My father is dead'.

'But where is the wealth, nephew?' interrupted my master hastily, 'where is the wealth'?

'All lost; all buried with him in the bottom of the ocean', replied the nephew.

'All lost! The wealth all lost! O my brother! O Aminadab, my brother! my brother! Since the destruction of Jerusalem, there fell not such a misfortune on our tribe. The wealth all lost! O Aminadab, my brother! my brother'!

'Alas, my father, I faint through weariness, weakness, and hunger; I have not eaten bread this day. Let us retire into the inner chamber, and when my soul is refreshed with a morsel of bread and a drop of water, I will put ashes on my head, and ungird my loins, and then unfold the whole unhappy story to thee'.

The repast was literally what he had asked, and, as soon as it was ended, and the young Aminadab and his uncle seated on the floor together, in the posture of mourning, the former proceeded thus:—

'By the letters which my father wrote to thee from England, in the sacred cypher of our family, thou wert informed of his intended return into his native land of Africa, and invited to meet him at Tetuna and share in his fortune. This he told me while we were upon our voyage, but thy better angel prevented thee, and saved thee the labour and loss of such a journey in vain.

'The ship, on board which we unfortunately embarked, was a Dutchman bound for the coast of Italy, but was to land us at Gibraltar, from whence we knew we could get an immediate passage over. But, behold, when we were just in view of the port, when the sight of his native land made the soul of my father rejoice, and we thought of nothing but safety and content, a Saltee rover gave chase to our ship. The Dutch captain immediately crowded all the sail he could to escape, but the wind dying away, and the pirate gaining upon us with oars, he came to my father with tears in his eyes, and told him that we were all ruined, for he had neglected to bring a pass. This news was like a clap of thunder to my father, who too well knew the consequence of their finding such a mass of wealth in his possession. "Wretch that I am"! exclaimed he, "why did I venture with one of thy sordid nation? slaves to Mammon, who would hazard liberty and fortune to save such a trifle". Then, turning about and going into his cabin, he stood some moments, as if lost in thought, when bursting into an ecstatic rage, he snatched up the coffer in which his gold and jewels were from under the head

of his bed, and embracing it eagerly—"I have gained thee", said he. "I have earned thee with anxiety and toil, and I will not lose thee now. O Jonas, send thy whale to receive me, and bear me to the land of my fathers. I will not be a laughing-stock to the Gentiles, nor a byeword in my father's house", saying which words, he rushed upon the deck, and before any person could possibly prevent him, he plunged into the sea with the coffer in his arms, and was never seen more. While we stood amazed at this rashness, the heavens, as if appeased with the sacrifice, immediately sent a wind that filled our fluttering sails, and soon bore the ship, delivered thus of its Jonas, out of the reach of the enemies. You may better conceive than I can describe the situation I was in at this event. I prostrated myself on the shore, when we landed at Gibraltar, and bewailed my misfortunes with tears and lamentations. But this afforded no relief to my distress, and something I must do to earn a morsel of bread. I therefore sold all my superfluous raiment for four ducats, for all our money was in the coffer, and with these did I purchase some eggs and fruits, which I sold again in the garrison, to support my life, till I should have an opportunity of coming to thee, my father, for advice and assistance in this distress. And now behold these four ducats are become twelve ducats in my hands, and that is all my worldly wealth'.

The uncle covered his face with his hands, and remained silent some time. At length he spoke to his nephew in these words:—

'It is in vain, O son of my brother, to mourn for what is not to be remedied; holy David wept no longer for his child after he was dead. Let us therefore arise, and think of something that may, if not retrieve thy mighty loss, at least administer relief to thy distress. Thou hast been initiated in the mysterious art of lessening the weight, without defacing the image, on the golden coins of these idolaters. This was the first rise of thy father, who began the world as poor as thou art now, till his unwearied industry in this practice raised him from want. Follow thou, therefore, his example, and may the God of thy fathers give thee the same success, but with a happier blessing than he found. And lo! fortunately it has happened that I have this very hour received a large quantity of the coin of Britain, all new from the mint. On that, therefore, thou mayest begin thine endeavours, and the fourth part of the produce of this labour shall be thine. I was just going to have sent for another, who always works for me, for a fifth, but I am willing to give thee a profit extraordinary, to encourage thee.

'Thine earnings in this business will soon produce thee a considerable sum, with which thou mayest go privately to London, and purchase old clothes, which will bring great profit in Germany, as soon as this war shall be at an end. Till thou art able to provide for thyself, thou mayest eat bread here, and sleep under the shadow of my roof. Be not dejected; honest industry never fails of success'.

The young Aminadab was no sooner introduced thus into a way of honesty industry, than he seemed to forget his loss, and settled himself most intently to work. I fell one of the first sacrifices to his arts, which deprived me of a fourth part of my weight, and of

all my beauty. Nor did my companions fare much better ; so that from a thousand of us who were in the bag, his share of the spoil was a treasure on which he immediately commenced merchant, stocking a box with all the gaudy trinkets that could allure the ignorant, and give him an opportunity of exerting his talents of imposition.

You have often heard me mention the beauty of my figure with pleasure ; but, alas ! vain boasts, it was now no more. I came from this fiery trial with all the marks of age and infirmity so strong upon me, that I could not forbear comparing myself and my companions to a number of British soldiers, just come from *soup-maigre* and straw, in a French prison. In this mutilated condition I was made up in a parcel to be sent to England, against whom this trade was mostly carried on, there being no other nation who would receive their own coin under the disgrace of such diminishing. But before I could be sent off, an accident happened in the family of my master, the banker, which gave me a longer delay in Lisbon. I have told you that in secret he was a Jew, though the prospect of gain made him profess Christianity, in despite of the horrors of the Inquisition. But, happy had it been for him that he had not made such profession, or that his nephew had been drowned with his father ; for no sooner had his gains, in his art of diminishing, restored him a little to his spirits, than, thinking his portion of that profit too little, and insufficient, besides, to raise him to opulence so suddenly as he desired, he cast about how to acquire the whole, or at least a great part of his uncle's wealth, at once. He therefore took a proper place to work in, for his merchandise did not interrupt him in his main business, at some distance from his uncle's house, and, having conveyed a large sum of money thither to work upon, he directly informed the Holy Office of his uncle's Judaism, with directions how to detect him in it, concluding that, when he should be seized, there would be no inquiry made after the money that was in his own hands, as he knew it was impossible he should ever escape from thence. And though this was but a poor pittance in comparison of the sums which he knew would be forfeited yet he comforted himself with the thought that it was more than he could any other way hope to obtain from him. But he was deceived by his avarice, and justly involved in the ruin which he drew upon his benefactor, for when the officers of the Inquisition took possession of his uncle's effects, finding an entry in his books of the money in his hands, they went directly in quest of it, and that so unexpectedly, that they caught him at his work, beyond a possibility of evasion or escape.

This is a crime never forgiven in any state. He was therefore immediately delivered up to the civil power, from which he received a death not less cruel than that of his uncle from the Inquisition. Of all the human sufferings I had yet seen, except in the case of the sacrifices, this gave me the greatest pleasure, as there is no crime that can deform the heart of man more than ingratitude.

I here changed my service, of course, and entered into that of the Holy Office, to the judge of which I was delivered the day I was taken out of the possession of the unfortunate Jew. I have before

given you my sentiments on the absurdity of thinking to please the Deity by cruelty to His creatures, in the instance of the human Passover of the Jews. The same arguments will hold here, and with this additional force, that cruelty of every kind is, if possible, more absurd under the Christian dispensation than any other, as, beside the general laws of nature and reason, the particular laws of Christianity do everywhere clearly and expressly command brotherly love, tenderness, and compassion, forbidding every appearance of cruelty under the severest denunciations of wrath.

But there has been so much, and that so well said, on this subject already, and the nature of the sufferings of those unhappy wretches who are brought before this tribunal are so well known, that I shall spare myself the pain of the repetition, and only mention one affair, the circumstances of which appeared singularly affecting to me.

CHAPTER XXXIX

AN UNCOMMON CRIMINAL APPEARS AT THE TRIBUNAL OF THE HOLY OFFICE—A LOVE-SCENE IN A STRANGE PLACE—THE HISTORY OF PHERON AND ILISSA

THE next day after I came into the possession of the Inquisitor, there appeared at his tribunal a person of a most august presence, though overcast with all the melancholy which his unhappy situation could inspire. He seemed to be advanced in years, but not past the vigour of life, and was distinguished from the national look of the Portuguese by an uncommon turn of feature, which showed him of another people.

As soon as he was brought to the place appointed for him, the Inquisitor, with an awful solemnity in his voice and manner, addressed him thus:—

‘Thou art once more brought to this tribunal, to try if the stubbornness of thine heart has yet relented, and thou wilt confess thy guilt’.

‘I told thee before, O judge of the faith of Christians’, replied the prisoner, with a composed look and determined voice, ‘I told thee before, and I repeat it again, that I am not conscious of anything that should incur the censure of this tribunal; nor shall all the tortures which the inventive cruelty of man can inflict upon this wretched body make me lie against mine immortal soul, or acknowledge guilt to which I am a stranger. But tell me of what I am accused, and my conscience shall direct my lips to answer thee the truth. Perhaps I may unwittingly have erred; thou knowest that I have not always professed the Christian faith, according to the laws established here. Pardon, then, the errors of mine ignorance, and instruct me to avoid the like for the future. And oh, I adjure thee, by thy Christian faith, to relieve my heart from the anxiety that tears it, for the fate of my daughter. Oh, let me know——’.

His adjuration was broken off at these words by the officers of

the court, and his answer, not being satisfactory, he was remanded back to prison, without any further questions, with the strongest menaces of severity, though, in secret, the judge ordered him to be treated with tenderness and respect, and supplied with every comfort and convenience of life that could mitigate the horrors of a prison.

My master then withdrew, and, changing his judicial robes for a more convenient and splendid dress, retired to his own apartments, where, after the respectful ceremony of sending to desire admission, he went into a particular chamber, in which was a young female, whom he approached with all the timid tenderness of love.

'I have seen thy father, my dearest Ilissa', said he, 'and he is well; nor shall any human means be wanting to preserve him so'.

'Why, then, may I not see him'? replied the lady. 'How can I trust thy words, who hast already deceived me'?

'Thou knowest, my love', returned he, 'that thy request is impossible; and if I have deceived thee by promising compliance with it, it was only to calm the transports of thy passion, that in a cooler moment thou mightest hearken to the voice of love and happiness'.

'Mention not happiness to me in this place. Can happiness be without liberty? Is a prison the proper scene for love? But I will be deceived no longer; I will see my father, or I will not live. Grant me this request, and expect my gratitude. Thou knowest that for myself I fear not thy power. Thou knowest that immediate death is ever in my reach; trifle not, therefore, with me any longer. Restore me to my father; restore us both to liberty, and then, then only, speak to me of love'.

'Thou hast conquered, my Ilissa, thou hast conquered. Your father shall be restored to you, and we will all fly together to thy native land, where we shall live in happiness. But this cannot be compassed on a sudden; it will require both time and address to secure our retreat. But when I have done this for my Ilissa, can I be sure of her love? Will her heart return the sacrifice I make'?

'I have told thee that my heart is grateful; I tell thee now it is not insensible to softer passions. Urge me no further. When I am freed from this prison, and my father is present to give the sanction of his authority to my actions, I promise thee to become thy wife, and my inclination, which has never yet contradicted my duty, will not find it difficult to pay the love I promise at the altar'.

These words raised my master's heart into an ecstasy; he prostrated himself at her feet, he kissed her hand, and swore eternal love. The rest of the day was spent in forming schemes for their escape, and planning scenes of future happiness, in the prospect of which their unequal years seemed to raise no cloud. The lady appeared to be about eighteen; her beauty, though very great, was rather majestic than soft, different from the Bohemian lady I mentioned before. An air of grandeur kept everyone around her at an awful distance, and the flash of her eye, like lightning, terrified the heart it warmed. Her lover was just past his meridian, but still in all the vigour of his life, and far from disagreeable in his appearance or conversation.

There was something so extraordinary in this affair, that it raised

my strongest curiosity to know the circumstances of it ; nor was I long at a loss. In the happiness of his heart that evening, my master presented a jewel of immense value to the lady, from whom, in the way of gallantry, he asked a tablet, cased with gold, as a return. The lady refused not his request, but, at giving it, desired that he would be careful of it, as she esteemed it much beyond its apparent value, it having been given her by her father.

The moment I heard her say this, and saw him put the tablet in his pocket, I knew my curiosity would be gratified by the spirit of the golden case. As soon, therefore, as my master retired to rest, I entered directly into his heart, and summoning, by our sympathetic impulse, the spirit I wanted, I showed him my curiosity, which he complied with, by a look which signified these words.

‘ There is something so extraordinary in the whole history of the persons who have raised your curiosity, that it will be necessary to trace it from the beginning, to give you the satisfaction you desire. The father of the young lady who gave me to our master, is the person whom you saw this morning at his tribunal. His name, in his own country, was Pheron. He is a native of Abyssinia, where his ancestors have possessed ample territories for many ages, being descended from the race of their kings.

‘ From the first dawn of reason in the mind of Pheron, he showed the strongest desire for knowledge, and the steadiest attachment to virtue. The advances of human knowledge have not been so great in those countries as here ; yet natural reason has been able to discover the sublime truths of morality, the practice of which is called wisdom, and the time consumed here in fruitless speculation devoted to it, by which means, if men are not so knowing, they are certainly more wise. In this happy employment passed the first years of the youth of Pheron, till riper manhood, calling him to the service of his country, he went, at the head of his father’s vassals, to repel the invasions of the Ethiopians. His success was so great in this first essay of his arms, that he not only repelled the invaders, but also carried the war into their own country, where, after many victories, he compelled them to sue for peace.

‘ The fame of his actions soon reached the ear of his sovereign, who sent for him to his court, and rewarded his services by giving him his sister in marriage. Dignities, in those countries, are not prostituted to the support of luxury and idleness. Pheron returned home with his bride, to govern and protect his people, who, safe in his care, pursued their usual occupations, war not being there made a constant profession, nor the gratification of the worst passions of human nature reduced into a science, and practised by rule. The peace which Pheron had made was not injurious to his enemies, and therefore was preserved by them, which gave him leisure to attend to the improvement of his country, and instruction of his people.

He had lived in this happy state some years, when there arrived a person in his country who gave an unexpected turn to his affairs. The situation of those nations is such that the inhabitants themselves rarely ever travel, nor is the face of a stranger seen in an age

among them. This made the arrival of this man the more taken notice of. He was immediately introduced to Pheron, to whose friendship his knowledge in several branches of science soon recommended him. When the stranger had thus established an interest with him, he at length disclosed to him the motive of his coming into a country so remote from his own; he told him that he had undertaken this hazardous and painful journey in pure obedience to the divine command of instructing the ignorant in the knowledge of salvation. He explained to him the mysteries of the Christian religion, the hierarchy of Rome, the Divine foundation of its power, and the several orders in its government in so forcible a manner, that he soon made a convert of him.

‘Pheron had always adored the name of Christ, but never till now knew what it was to be a Christian. One only book of His gospel had he ever seen, and from that he could understand no more than that faith in the death of Christ for the redemption of mankind, in obedience to the self-evident laws of morality, with the pious worship of the one God alone, was the whole religion taught by him. It is not strange, therefore, if the glorious fabric of the Church, as represented by this Jesuit, for such he was, had all the effect he could desire upon him, the natural inquisitive turn of his mind making him listen with eagerness to everything which seemed to open a new prospect to it. Nor was he content with his own knowing these sublime doctrines; he also instructed his wife, whom he tenderly loved, and their example converted the greatest part of his people, for nothing could prevail upon him to attempt forcing their assent. But this did not satisfy him. The descriptions which he had heard of the learning, piety, and glory of Rome had filled his soul with an ardent desire to see that metropolis of the world, that he might learn its virtues, and transplant them into his own country. He communicated this thought to his instructor, who, fired with the glory of such a proselyte, encouraged him in it by every argument he could use. This determined his resolution to make an attempt, the hazards of which would be rewarded with such happy consequences. He therefore prepared all things for his journey, in which his wife would bear him company, and also bring her only child, the lady whom you saw to-day, to receive the benediction of his holiness; and, committing the government of his people to his brother, and taking jewels and gold of an immense value, to defray the expenses of his journey, he set out with a company sufficient to protect him from the dangers of travelling through such inhospitable countries, and arrived without any accident at the Red Sea, where he embarked on board a ship for Alexandria.

‘While he waited here for a ship bound to Italy, the plague deprived him of his instructor and his wife. He was at first inconsolable for his loss; but virtue soon awoke reason to his guard, and his care for his daughter made him careful of himself. His attendants would have persuaded him to return directly home, as he had lost his guide, but the loss of his wife made the thought of home a torture to him. He therefore sent them back, and resolved to settle his daughter in a convent, and enter into the monastic life himself at Rome.

'With this design, he embarked in the first ship that sailed for Europe, not being able to bear the sight of a place which had been so fatal to him. The ship was bound to this place, but, for a large sum of money, the commander engaged to land him at Leghorn; but happening to come to the knowledge of his wealth on the passage, he brought him directly hither, where he was no sooner landed, than he informed the Inquisitor, who is his brother, who immediately seized both Pheron and his daughter, for errors in their opinions, and confined them in the prisons of the Holy Office, where they have now been above a year. The first motive of this outrage was the stranger's wealth, an unpardonable crime in that court, and which would soon have brought them to an unhappy death. But the beauty of the daughter has hitherto deferred their fate, and, by what you have overheard to-day, may probably prevent it entirely'.

CHAPTER XL

THE LOVE ADVENTURE CONTINUED—THE INQUISITOR VISITS PHERON, AND OBTAINS HIS CONSENT—HE EMPLOYS AN ENGLISH SAILOR, WHOM HE SETS AT LIBERTY, TO ASSIST HIM IN HIS DESIGNS

THE Inquisitor's heart was too full of love to let him sleep long; he arose about midnight, and taking the keys of the prison, which were every night deposited with him, he went directly to visit the father of Ilissa.

He found him wrapped in so profound a sleep, that his approach did not awake him; a sight so unusual in those mansions of despair astonished him. He paused a moment in admiration, gazing at him, to try if he could trace that virtue in his face which made his heart superior to such terrors. Just then a smile of indignation flashed over the face of Pheron, and, in the allusion of imagination, he cried out, 'It is in vain! My conscience is secure, and I despise your tortures'.

As he said these words, the working of his mind awoke him, when, seeing my master standing at the side of his bed, the scene seemed to him, in his surprise, to be continued, and he proceeded thus—'I have told thee that thy tortures should not bend my soul to falsehood, and now thou shalt find it so'.

'Oh, father of Ilissa', returned my master, melted into tenderness at such a sight, 'I come not to give thee torture. I bring the balm of comfort to thy soul'.

'Art thou not the Inquisitor'?

'I am, O Pheron, and thy friend'.

'Am I awake? Is this, or was the former, but a dream? Guard me, good Heaven; let me not fall from virtue'.

'Such virtue ever is the care of Heaven. Pheron, behold thy friend! the proselyte of thy virtues. The time admits not many words; I come to offer thee liberty, and concert with thee the methods of our obtaining happiness. Thy Ilissa——'.

'Heaven guard my child'!

'Thy Ilissa is well, and happy in her father's welfare'.

'Oh, my child! my child! But shall I ever see her again'?

'You shall; she shall be restored to your bosom, and never torn from it more'.

'Good, gracious judge! Oh when? oh how—my child! my child'!

'Suppress your joy a moment. The beauties of Ilissa have triumphed over the malice of her fate. She has found a lover, who offers happiness to her and you'.

'Does my child love him? Is he an honest man'?

'His life will prove him such. He offers to restore you and your Ilissa to liberty, and to accompany you both to your native country, for there cannot be any safety in Europe for you, after you leave this place, your escape from whence, and every circumstance relating to your return, shall be his care. Nor will he demand the reward his heart pants for, till your safety shall remove every fear, every doubt of his sincerity'.

'Oh, name the generous man'!

'Behold him at your feet. Receive me for your son'.

'Thee, the Inquisitor, who threatened me with torture'?

'But treated thee with tenderness—treated Ilissa with respect'.

'Make me know that'.

'I ask no favour but on that condition. If I procure liberty for you and your Ilissa, if I restore you to your native land, and accompany you thither, if your Ilissa acknowledges the services of my love, and asks your consent to reward them, will you confirm my bliss, and own me for your son'?

'I will, and thank kind Heaven that gave me such a son'.

Saying this, he embraced my master, who, in a few words, let him know the scheme he had formed for their escape, and then left him to his happy reflections while he went to prosecute it. In one of the cells of the Inquisition there was confined an English seaman, who had been seized and secretly conveyed thither for some disrespectful expressions against the divinity of Saint Dominic. The manly, modest resolution with which he had refused to own the authority of their tribunal, and his firmness under the first tortures, marked him out to the Inquisitor as the person proper for his design, for he would not trust any one of his own country, not even his brother, whose treachery to Pheron he now abhorred.

As soon as he opened the door of his cell, the sailor, whose soreness prevented his sleeping very sound, perceived him, and, imagining it was a summons to a repetition of the torture, he sprang up as far as his chains would admit him, and cried, 'Hullo, who comes there'?

The Inquisitor, advancing, answered, 'A friend'.

'Ay, damn all such friends', replied the sailor. 'I suppose you've come to give me another toasting; but if my hands were out of the bilboes, I'd send you off with a salt eel for your supper'.

'Moderate your rage a moment, my friend; I come to set you free, if you desire, and will deserve it'.

'Avast hauling, brother; I do not understand you'.

'Why, do you not desire to be free'?

'Desire? Ay, that I do; but I may whistle for that wind long enough before it will blow'.

'Perhaps not. Perhaps that wind, as you say, is nearer blowing than you imagine. What would you do to be free'?

'Do? I'd burn the Inquisition, and cut the Inquisitor's throat. I'd do anything but turn papist or fight against Old England'.

'Honest Briton! But suppose I should set you free, would you serve me faithfully in one thing that is neither against your country nor your religion'?

'Belay that, and I'll warrant you if I say it, I'll do it, without more words. I am no landsman nor Portuguese'.

'Well, then, I'll take your word; and so come with me'.

The sailor was so surprised, he scarce knew whether he was asleep or awake. However, as soon as the Inquisitor had unlocked his chains, he shrugged his shoulders, and followed him, without more questions.

When they were come into my master's apartment, he made the sailor sit down, and giving him some wine to cheer his spirits—'You are now at liberty, my friend,' said he, 'without any further condition, and may go where you please; but, if you will serve me in an affair I shall mention to you, you shall have reason to think of this night with pleasure as long as you live'.

'Serve you, master'? replied the sailor, 'that I will. Name but what you would have me do, that is, as I said before—you understand me—and I'll do it, though it was to hand the main-top-gallant sail in a storm at midnight, when the yard was broke in the slings, and it was not my watch; for if it was a man's watch, do you see, it would be but his duty, and there is no merit in a man's doing his duty. I am no flincher. I never say "Ay" when I mean "No"'. Though I say it, I am a gentleman. My father was a lieutenant of a man-of-war, and I have been at sea these five and thirty years, man and boy, and never was once brought to the gangway in all that time. If the noble captain that rated me a midshipman twenty years ago had lived to be an admiral, I should have been an officer before now.'

The honest openness of heart that appeared in the sailor's giving his own character made my master hear him with pleasure, and place an entire confidence in him. As soon as he had finished, therefore, he opened his scheme to him, and the sailor undertook to go to London, buy a good ship, and freight her for Alexandria, and to call at Lisbon on his way, and to take my master and his friends on board; to do which he gave him money and jewels to a great amount; the latter he was to dispose of in London, and account with the Inquisitor for the surplus, after the purchase of the ship and cargo, which were to be his own, in reward for his trouble, as soon as he had made his voyage.

All things being thus settled, the sailor was just departing, when on a sudden thought, he turned short on the Inquisitor.

'Steady', said he, 'steady; so far go right before the wind, and all's well. But whom do you mean to clap aboard me when I come? If it is the Pretender or the French king, here, take back

your trinkums ; I'll be damned before I'll help either of them to make his escape'.

'Never fear, my friend', replied the Inquisitor, scarce able to contain his laughter at the strangeness of such a thought. 'I promise you it is neither of these ; I promise you not to do anything against your king or your religion'.

'But shall we not have one dash at this damned place' ? added the sailor. 'Shall we not set it on fire, and cut the Inquisitor's throat ? I'll bring a gang of jolly boys that would shoot the gulf of hell to have a stroke at Devil Dominic. Shall not we see the Inquisition on fire, and cut the Inquisitor's throat' ?

'We will consider about those things ; but you had better lose no time. And let me once more caution you not to be seen in Lisbon at present, and to be as expeditious as possible in your return'.

'Never fear, master, never fear', replied the sailor, and shaking him heartily by the hand, away he went.

I here quitted the service of the Inquisitor, being among the money which he gave to the sailor.

CHAPTER XLI

THE SAILOR GOES TO LONDON, BUYS A SHIP, AND RETURNS TO LISBON, WHERE HE TAKES HIS PASSENGERS ON BOARD—HIS BEHAVIOUR ON MEETING A FRENCH SHIP—HE LANDS HIS PASSENGERS AT ALEXANDRIA, RETURNS HOME, AND MARRIES

My new master no sooner found himself at liberty, than he hasted away to the seaside, without ever stopping to look behind him, and, luckily finding the packet just ready to sail, he was out of sight of Lisbon before morning.

Never was a heart so intent upon executing a commission faithfully as his ; he thought of nothing else all the passage, and the moment he arrived in London, he sold the jewels, bought a ship, manned her well, and having laid in a proper cargo, set sail for Lisbon, and was there before his employer imagined he was arrived in London.

I had been an idle spectator of these transactions, for it so happened that, in all my master's dealings, he never offered me in payment, at which I was greatly delighted, as I was very desirous of witnessing the completion of the Inquisitor's enterprise.

The moment he arrived in Lisbon, he gave notice to his friend, whose joy at his fidelity and expedition is not to be expressed. He immediately had the treasures, which he designed to take with him, conveyed secretly on board, and, as soon as the wind served, embarked himself with his friends in the night, and obliged my master to sail directly, though greatly to his dissatisfaction, because he would not consent to his firing the prison of the Inquisition, and cutting the Inquisitor's throat.

Heaven seemed to approve of the undertaking, sending a fair

wind, which soon carried us out of the fear of our enemies. It is impossible to conceive a happier company than were now together ; nor did the blunt festivity of my master add a little to the pleasure of the voyage, which met but one cloud, that seemed first to threaten a good deal, but soon blew over.

When we were about half our voyage, my master entered the cabin hastily one morning, and, with a kind of fierce delight flashing in his eyes, says to the Inquisitor, whom he always called owner : ' Well, owner, you shall now see what English boys can do. There is a large Frenchman bearing down upon us, but if you do not see him sheer off as short as if he had got foul of a lee shore, I will never take the helm again, if he is not even obliged to drop anchor to bring him up alongside of us ; and, as I expected some such thing, I took a letter of marque, so that you need not fear of being hanged for a pirate if the worst should happen '.

But, delighted as my master was, his passengers did not seem so well pleased with the news, especially his owner, who was not used to fighting, and beside was too anxious for his escape with his fair prize to think of anything with pleasure which could possibly deprive him of her.

They all went directly, therefore, upon the deck, and seeing the ship really coming towards them, the Inquisitor went into the cabin, that he should not be observed by the men, and, sending for my master, accosted him thus :—

' Surely, my friend, you cannot mean to wait for that ship ' ? (for we were lying to). ' She certainly means to attack you '.

' And so let her, owner ', replied my master ; ' I'll warrant she gets as good as she brings '.

' But consider, my friend ', returned the Inquisitor, ' consider we are on board you '.

' Well, owner, and what then ? You are not afraid ? The lady may be stowed safe below, and you will stand as good a chance as another. You are not afraid ' ?

' My good friend, I have not time now to explain my reasons to you ; but if you have any regard for me, you will instantly crowd all the sail you can, and get clear of this affair. I desire it—I beg it '.

' Why, look you, owner, what needs all these words ? If so be you order us, we must put about, to be sure, for the ship is yours. But then the honour of Old England ; consider that, the honour of Old England '.

' Oh, my friend, I can consider nothing but my desire to avoid this danger ; so once more I beg '.

' Enough said, enough said ' ! Then going upon the deck—' Well, my lads, our owner does not choose this brush while the lady is on board ; so we must about ship, but, as we come back, *soup-maigre* shall pay for it ' . And, saying this, he obeyed the desire of his owner as faithfully as if it had been his own, only not with the same appearance of pleasure, not being able to avoid ejaculating ' Damn fear ! ' at every turn of the tune he whistled, as he walked the deck the rest of the day.

He had so punctually observed his owner's instructions in getting

a good ship, that we were soon out of sight of the Frenchman ; nor did we meet with anything disagreeable during the remainder of the voyage.

The day after this affair, when they had all recovered their good-humour, my master addressed his owner thus : ' Now, owner, while the sky is clear, and we have nothing else to do, I had better give you an account of your money. Here is the log-book, which you may overhaul at your leisure, though the sooner the better. This is the time. There is no taking a good observation in a storm, as may happen by-and-by ; you will find all as fair as a new cable. But I must give you one point to direct your reckoning by, and that is this : You bade me buy a ship and freight her, and so forth, and she and the cargo should be my own after I had done your job this trip. Now, owner, it is very true that a less vessel than this might have made the run, but then you seemed so desirous to be safe that I thought it best to make a bargain in this stout ship, which I knew to be as good a sea-boat as ever turned to windward, and able to go, hank for hank, with anything that swims the sea, as we showed when we run the Frenchman out of sight yesterday, though it went against my heart to do it. But no matter for that now ; the ship is yours, and you have a right to be obeyed. However, there is the account, and here is the rest of your money, of which I did not lay out a shilling that I could avoid, but one guinea, which I gave Will Crosstree to repair his rigging, and one I gave Black Moll of Wapping to heave down ; and I could not well avoid those neither, for Will was an old messmate, and I owed Moll for many a good turn in her way. But all this signifies nothing to you ; they can be stopped in the account. And now, owner, as you may think this ship cost too much, and that the cargo is too good, I will not keep you to your bargain ; she is your own, and all that is in her, only pay the men. As for me, I am satisfied with having got out of that damned Inquisition, and leave the rest to yourself. If you think that I have deserved anything, well and good, if not, I do not fear bread while the sea flows round Old England ; all that grieves me is that you would not let us set fire to the Inquisition, and cut the Inquisitor's throat'.

If my master's bluntness in the affair of the French ship gave offence to his owner, the honesty of his speech restored him to his warmest esteem, and made Pheron, who was present, cry out in a rapture—' Thank Heaven there is still some honesty among mankind'.

'Honesty ? Ay', replied my master, ' a little among the tars of Old England ; a little' !

The Inquisitor having recovered from the astonishment into which such nobleness of soul threw him, returned the account unopened, with these words : ' I am convinced your account must be just, and I freely make you a gift, not of this ship and cargo, for they are justly your own already, but of the rest of the money which is in your hands'.

'What ! All, owner, all' ?

'All, my friend ; if it were many times so much, you justly merit it'.

'But then, owner, had you not better sign the account, if you please, for fear of after-reckonings with your executors; for I hate the law damnably, ever since I lost a year's pay for hindering our boatswain's mate's brother from beating his wife; the brimstone swore I beat her husband, and so I paid for meddling; but it was the lawyer's fault that set her on. Damn all lawyers, say I'.

'Well, then, my honest worthy friend, there is a receipt, and I wish you success equal to your merit; and you cannot have more'.

'Enough said, owner, enough said; I thank you, I thank you'.

The remainder of our voyage was one continued scene of happiness. My master landed his passengers at Alexandria, from whence they soon set out for Pheron's country, and, at his taking leave of them, advised them to be careful how they ventured in any of the ships of those countries, which, he assured them, were not better than bum-boats, nor did their mariners know any more of the sea than a Thames waterman.

Having finished this, his first business, he proceeded to dispose of his cargo, for which he met so good a market, and made so profitable a return from thence home, that as soon as he arrived, his landlady's daughter at Gosport, whom he had been in love with many years, but never dared to speak to till now, readily consented to marry him. One thing, however, I must not omit, and that was that he kept a constant lookout all the voyage home for that Frenchman he had fled from so much against his will, and was greatly concerned that he could not meet him, to have one brush for the honour of Old England.

CHAPTER XLII

CHRYSLAL ENTERS INTO A NEW SERVICE, AND SAILS FOR THE COAST OF MEXICO—HE AGAIN CHANGES HIS SERVICE, AND COMES INTO THE POSSESSION OF THE CAPTAIN OF AN ENGLISH MAN-OF-WAR—HIS MASTER FINDS AN INGENIOUS EXCUSE FOR RETURNING HOME, BUT IS UNEXPECTEDLY STOPPED SHORT BY THE WAY—IN THE COMMON COURSE OF BUSINESS, CHRYSLAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE—CHARACTER OF HIS NEW MASTER

I DID not remain with my master to be witness of his happiness, for, on the morning of his marriage, he paid me to the master of a vessel who was immediately about to sail to the coast of Mexico, in hopes of falling in with some rich Spanish merchant ships that were expected in those seas. The first vessel we saw, however, proving an English man-of-war, I passed, in the way of business, to the purser thereof, and from him to the captain,¹ who, not unlike

¹ Captain Lord Harry Powlett (afterwards sixth Duke of Bolton). He is identified in Davis's *Olio* with the captain mentioned in chapter x (see note, page 27), but can hardly be the same man. Whilst cruising with Hawke in 1755, Powlett, in the *Barfleur*,¹ was sent after a sail. He separated from the fleet, and on the report of the carpenter that the

the officer to whom I was presented by the Spanish commander in the shape of a doubloon, had been so well satisfied by the Spaniards for not doing his duty, that he was very desirous of returning home. However impatient he might be to accomplish this wish, it was necessary for him to find some pretence to justify a conduct so contrary to his duty, the time appointed for his continuing on that station not being near expired.

But a proper knowledge of the world is never at a loss for expedients. He immediately came to a right understanding into that the master of the ship, who, alarming him suddenly at midnight with an account that her stern-post was loose, and the rest of the officers between sleeping and waking formally signing his report without examining, he bore away directly for home with a happy heart, anticipating in imagination the enjoyment of all those pleasures which he had hitherto looked at with a longing eye from a distance.

When a man, confiding in his own wisdom, quits the straight path to strike out a nearer to his wishes, he generally blunders into that which leads directly to their disappointment. My master had not proceeded many days on his voyage, when he fell in one morning, just at the dawn, with a mighty fleet,¹ from which it was impossible for him to escape. His anxiety made him instantly conclude them enemies. He cursed his fate in the bitterness of his soul, and leaving the care of the ship to his officers, pretended to be sick, and threw himself on his bed, in agonies little short of despair.

‘Was it for this’? exclaimed he, wringing his hands and gnashing his teeth, ‘was it for this I betrayed my trust, and favoured the enemies whom I was sent to distress? For this did I put my honour in the power of a venal wretch, and desert my station in direct disobedience to my orders? But I am justly rewarded. I have stopped at nothing to gather wealth, and now I lose that and my liberty together. May every villain meet the same fate!’

But the severity of his distress lasted not long. As soon as it was clear day, the fleet which caused his fears was found to be English, the moment he was informed of which he recovered from his sickness, and, putting the best face he could upon the matter, went to wait upon the admiral.

Though the fleet which the admiral commanded was irresistibly superior to any that could possibly be opposed to it, he was so desirous of every addition of strength that he received my master with evident pleasure, and never inquiring what had been the cause of his quitting his station, informed him whither they were

stern-post was loose, he returned to Spithead. In the court-martial that followed, he was admonished, but the carpenter was dismissed the service. Public opinion held that Powlett was responsible for the carpenter’s report, and he was known henceforth as ‘Captain Sternpost’.

¹The expedition against Havana. The fleet, under Pocock, was carrying 10,000 men under the command of the Earl of Albemarle. Setting sail in March, it passed through the Bahama channel in June, 1762.

going, and congratulated him on the opportunity he would have of making his fortune. But this opportunity, promising as it might appear, had no temptations for my master, whose thoughts were turned another way. However, to carry off the chagrin which he could not conceal, he expressed his concern in the strongest terms at not being able to bear a part in so glorious an enterprise, and produced the report of the condition of his ship, by which she was represented to be incapable of service, the reason, he alleged, for his having quitted his proper station. This instantly changed the whole scene. The admiral, assuming all the consequence of his unbounded authority, answered, with a supercilious look, that he would order the ship to be surveyed by the proper officers, and then turned away, without deigning to take any further notice of him. As this was no more than my master had expected, his knowledge of the world, which brought him into the scrape, soon suggested the proper means for preventing any disagreeable consequences from it. Accordingly, when the survey was regularly made next morning, he was honourably acquitted; but the master of the ship was broke for his error, and the other officers severely rebuked for not having examined his report before they signed it.

In the course of these transactions, I changed my service for that of the admiral's secretary, who directly gave me to the admiral in some dealings between them.

When I entered into the possession of my new master,¹ he was lolling in a listless manner on a sofa in his state-room, where every art was exerted to counteract nature, and elude the mid-day heat, in one of the fiercest climates of the torrid zone. A gown of thinnest silk hung loosely over his large limbs; the radiance of the sun was softened by shades of linen drawn before the open windows, and kept constantly wet, to cool the air as it entered through them, and every disagreeable savour was drowned in the most delicate perfumes. The contrast between such magnificent luxury, and the condition of those whose numbers made his strength, showed in the most glaring light the infatuation of vanity, in displaying such temptations to its own destruction, as the most implicit obedience to the laws could hardly be supposed proof to. The awkwardness with which my master bore his state showing that it was not natural to him, I looked back to his past life, to see by what illustrious actions he had risen to such an exalted station, but, to my surprise, discovered that the foundation of his fortune had been no more than a phlegmatic indolence and servility of soul, which induced his superiors to entrust power in his hands, without apprehension of its raising him to a consequence that might clash with their designs on any future occasion.

I see you are astonished that a person of such a turn should ever engage in active scenes, or be entrusted with the conduct of an

¹ Admiral Sir George Pocock [1706-92]. He served in the Navy from 1718-1766, and was present in many engagements. He never showed initiative, but acting strictly according to the 'Fighting Instructions', was out-manœuvred by the French in several actions, the results of which were indecisive.

enterprise so opposite to his disposition as to make success improbable. To unexperienced reason, such things must seem unaccountable, but the least acquaintance with the ways of man would soon reconcile you to greater absurdities. The convenience of the parent, not the genius of the child, is in general the only thing considered in the choice of a profession on which the success of life depends, and this is the reason why so few are eminent in things so easy to be eminent in; and when at length a person may have it in his power to quit a profession which he did not choose, it is too late for him to choose another, and therefore he plods on with habitual indifference, not knowing what else to do with himself.

This may remove your surprise as far as it concerns my master's first entering into, and continuing in such a way of life. As to his fitness for so difficult and important a command, that was the thing least thought of when it was entrusted to him. The insignificancy of his character, and his servility to his superiors, pointed him out as the person proper for their purpose, as they not only made them secure that he would not go beyond their orders, but would also put it in their power to arrogate to themselves the merit of success, or lay the blame of miscarriage upon him; and for these great qualifications only did they choose him on this occasion to execute the design of another,¹ who had been guilty of the unpardonable crime of showing that he knew more than themselves, and whose penetration and activity of soul might too probably have made him see through their designs, and push matters farther than was consistent with them.

CHAPTER XLIII

MOTIVES OF THE ENTERPRISE IN WHICH CHRYSAL'S MASTER WAS ENGAGED—IN A PRIVATE CONFERENCE BETWEEN HIM AND HIS AGENT, SOME CURIOUS SECRETS, IN A BUSINESS NOT GENERALLY UNDERSTOOD, ARE LAID OPEN, AND A SEEMING CONTRADICTION NATURALLY RECONCILED

WHENEVER England is at war with any of her neighbours, the effects are felt to the extremities of the globe. The armament which my master now commanded was sent against one of the most important and wealthiest settlements of the Spaniards in that part of the world; not, indeed, with an ambitious design of annexing it to the state, or reimbursing any part of the expenses of the war, but merely to distress the enemy by its destruction, and enrich

¹ Admiral Sir Charles Knowles (d. 1777) [Davis's *Olio*]. Knowles, who had at an earlier date been reprimanded for the incompetent way in which he engaged a Spanish squadron, got into hot water again over the abortive expedition against Rochefort in 1787. He published a pamphlet justifying his conduct, but failed to exonerate himself either with the public or with the Government, who shortly after superseded him.

those immediately employed in the conquest, the prospect of which, and the consequent schemes to accomplish it so entirely engrossed the attention of them all, except my master, that they disregarded the difficulties, and ran so eagerly into the dangers of the attempt, though such and so many as were sufficient to have damped the ardour of any beings directed by reason, and not insensible to the first principle of human action, that his phlegmatic disposition was no impediment to their success, as it left them at liberty to pursue such measures as the instant occasion should show to be expedient, without the delay of consulting him. I say, except my master; for not all the cares of so extensive a command, all the hurry and bustle around him, could ever ruffle the characteristic stagnation of his mind.

He was just awoke from his noontide nap, when his clerk laid the bag in which I was upon the table along with some papers. The chink of the gold immediately attracted his attention.

‘Eh’, said he, rubbing his eyes and yawning, ‘what is o’clock’? and being told—‘Ay’, continued he, stretching and yawning again, ‘I thought I had overslept myself, I am so heavy. This climate is fit for nothing but sleeping’. Then rising languidly—‘What papers are those’? said he. ‘Did I not say I would not be troubled about business’?

‘The survey of that ship, and your own accounts for the outsets of this expedition’, answered the clerk, ‘which, if you please, you had better look over now, as we shall have others to attend to soon. I am sorry to say it does not answer your expectations, but the people alleged that they had been made to pay so extravagantly for their contracts, that it was impossible for them to sink the qualities of the stores so low as to be able to give you anything worth your acceptance’.

‘Not able to give me anything’? said the admiral, who had been roused from his lethargic indifference by the first mention of his own affairs. ‘They lie, the scoundrels, and I’ll make them know it. The sick-lists show that they have sunk them with a vengeance, and beyond every degree of reason, and if they think that I’ll connive at their murdering the men, without having any share in the profit, they shall find themselves damnably out in their reckonings. And therefore do you go directly to every purser in the fleet, and order them to have a survey privately made of their worst stores, to produce when I call for it. I’ll make them come down, and handsomely, too, or they shall repent it’.

‘But, sir, is there not danger of their being provoked by such an attack, to say something improper, and that they who made the contracts with them may do you an ill office on another occasion? There are wheels within wheels’.

‘Let them, if they can’, answered the admiral, clapping his hands akimbo; ‘I shall trouble them no more. If I mind my hits this trip, I shall be as rich as the best of them, and will stay at home and take my ease as well as they; and as to their speaking, whom are they to speak to? Tell my brother that I am a knave. No, no, we shall hardly hear tales of each other; things hang too close

together for that. Do you, therefore, mind your business, and leave these matters to me'.

'But may not they spread stories abroad, which may injure your character with the public'?

'My character? not in the least. Such stories affect only the clerks and such low people, whose perquisites these things are reputed to be, and who only appear in them. But that cannot be said to injure them neither, for what clerk ever had a character that could be injured? Ha! ha! ha! so that your care for character, forsooth, is quite unnecessary. Do what you will, you cannot suffer in that. All you have to do is to mind your business, and when you have got money, no one will inquire about your character'.

Saying this, he waved his hand to the clerk to withdraw, and then walking a turn or two about his great cabin, opened the money-bag, and telling the contents, put a few pieces, among which I was, into his pocket, and locked up the rest in his strong box, after which he threw himself again on the sofa, to rest after the fatigue of so much business.

You seem at a loss how to reconcile the sentiment which my master discovered in his conference with the luxury and magnificence of everything about him, but they contradict not each other in the least. In the transactions with his clerk, he showed the genuine motions of his heart, but with the other, he has nothing to do. They are entirely at the expense of the public, though in a manner not obvious to every eye, being a kind of tax established by custom on the pursers of men-of-war, under the appearance, indeed, of a present to their commanders, but in reality as a bribe for conniving at their impositions, and this tax it is that enables those commanders to live up to their rank, which their just pay would never do—a striking instance of that wise economy which, to save a penny, lays a man under the necessity of stealing a pound.

CHAPTER XLIV

THE BEHAVIOUR OF CHRYSAL'S MASTER ON HEARING AN INTERESTING PIECE OF NEWS, WITH HIS CONCISE METHOD OF CONDUCTING AN ENTERPRISE—CHRYSAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE FOR THAT OF A PERSON OF A VERY DIFFERENT CHARACTER—AN ELOQUENT SPEECH PRODUCES THE USUAL EFFECTS OF ELOQUENCE

My new master had not passed his time long in this agreeable manner, when the officer next to him in command¹ entered hastily, and told him, in a transport of joy, that the man at the masthead had made the land.

'What land?' said my master, unmoved at the news, or the

¹ Commodore the Hon. Augustus Keppel [1725-86]. He was made admiral this year, [1762] and created Viscount Keppel in 1782.

manner in which it was delivered by the other, whose eyes flashed fire as he spoke. 'What land does he make'?

'The place of our destination', replied the officer. 'I had just then taken an observation myself, and am convinced I am right'.

'Well, then', returned my master, 'if you are sure it is the place, here are your instructions. You are to lead the van and cover the landing, about which proper directions will be given by the general'; when that is done, you shall have further orders'. Then, swelling with the thought of his own consequence, and resolving to support his dignity by an uncommon effort of generosity—'Has the fellow' said he, 'been rewarded for his news'?

'Not yet', answered the officer. 'The moment I heard it, I ran up myself to the masthead, and, as I was convinced he was right, flew to acquaint you. But I shall remember him when I go back'.

'And, pray, when you do, give him this in my name', replied my master, putting his hand into his pocket, and reaching me to him; 'the men's spirits must be kept up. We shall have warm work of it—warm work'.

'Glorious work', added the officer; 'the trophies of your fame will now be established in the opposite extremities of the globe. Few attain to such happiness'.

'Ay', said the admiral, puffing and sweating with the sense of his great achievements, 'I have done something to be talked of in more places than one. I have endured the severities of various climates. But we must bear everything in the service of our country; we must bear everything without complaining'.

'Have you any further commands, sir', said the officer. 'It is proper I should be on board. I see several of the ships have now made the signal of seeing land'.

'Nothing more at this time', answered the admiral. 'You have your orders, and will take the best method to execute them. Only observe to keep as clear as possible of that other man's scheme. I had rather all should miscarry than appear in the least indebted to him for success'.

My new master on this withdrew, leaving the admiral to enjoy the contemplation of his own consequence, and keep himself cool till dinner. If the indolence of my late master was inconsistent with his station, the activity of my present seemed to exceed the abilities of a human being. The moment he got to his own ship, he made a signal for all the captains in his division, and the general, to come on board him, and then, ordering his ship's crew to be called aft, he went to the barricadoes, and waving his hat over his head—'Courage, my lads', said he, 'the day is ours. The admiral has given us leave to take yonder town, with all the treasure in it, so that we have nothing to do now but to make our fortunes as fast as we can, for the place can never hold out against us. The purser will give every brave fellow a can of punch to drink prosperity to Old England, and then we will go about our business with

¹ The general was Keppel's elder brother, the Earl of Albemarle [1724-72].

spirit. We shall all be as rich as Jews. The place is paved with gold, which the lubberly dons have gathered for us. Old England for ever, is the word, and the day is ours'.

This eloquent harangue had the effect that eloquence usually has; it transported his hearers out of their senses. They answered with three cheers, which made the welkin ring, and then went skipping and dancing with joy to get their punch, a foretaste of their good fortune, which many of them would not have given up for all their expectations. As they were going off, my master happened to see among the crowd the man who had first discovered the land, and calling to him—'Here, shipmate', said he, giving him a doubloon, 'here is something the admiral has sent you for your good lookout; and take this also from me'—giving him another—'and I hope to give you a hundred more for hoisting your colours on the top of yonder walls'.

'Ay, noble captain', said the sailor, shrugging his shoulders and making his best bow, 'and so I will, or it shall cost me a worse fall than from the main-top-gallant-masthead, that is, when the ship takes a heel. I'll pull down proud Spain, and clap Old England in its place'.

The spirit which my master showed in every word and action interested me so far in his favour that I was pleased at his not having parted with me on this occasion.

By this time the general and the captains were come on board, and being shown into the great cabin—'Good news, gentlemen', said my master in an ecstasy, shaking every one of them by the hand as they entered, 'I bring you good news. Yonder is the object of our hopes, the place that is to make our fortunes and crown us with glory, if it is not our own faults, for the admiral has given us general orders to proceed in the best manner we can, and without losing time or opportunity in waiting to consult him on every occasion'.

This news filled them all with the highest spirits. They congratulated each other on a success of which they made no doubt, and having concerted the measures proper to be taken, returned to their ships to carry them into instant execution.

CHAPTER XLV

THE GENERAL PROFESSES AN UNCOMMON MOTIVE FOR MILITARY ARDOUR—AN OFFICER DESIRES TO SPEAK WITH HIM, THE MENTION OF WHOSE NAME OPENS SOME SECRETS IN THE SERVICE—ACCOUNT OF THE OFFICER—AN EXTRAORDINARY INSTANCE OF IGNORANCE OF THE WORLD—HE SIGNALIZES HIMSELF AT THE EXPENSE OF HIS SUPERIORS, WHO REWARD HIM ACCORDINGLY—THE BEST QUALIFICATIONS FOR RISING IN THE ARMY, WITH REASONS WHY THINGS WERE OTHERWISE UNDER ANOTHER COMMANDER

As soon as the captains of the men-of-war were gone—'Now, my dearest friend', said my master to the general who stayed, 'you will have an opportunity not only of gaining such glory as will add

lustre to the dignity of your birth, but also of acquiring a fortune to support that dignity properly'.

'True', answered the general eagerly, 'but, powerful as these motives are, my heart is stimulated by one stronger on this happy occasion'.

'How? Can any motive be stronger than honour and independence?'

'Yes, gratitude; grateful anxiety to prove myself not unworthy of his favour who procured me this opportunity. He promoted my interest with the ardour of a friend; he supported it with his whole weight, and in a manner staked his honour for my abilities. Till I have acquitted him, therefore, by a signal discharge of my duty, I can have no thought for myself'.

'These sentiments prove you worthy of his favour: nor can you possibly serve yourself more than by paying this debt honourably to him, in which I shall think myself happy to give you every instance of that assistance which the nature of my command so fortunately puts in my power'.

'I doubt you not; and therefore, as our unanimity deprives us of the excuse of disagreement, which former commanders in the different services have made for their miscarriages, we must be doubly careful not to omit anything that can ensure success'.

The friends then embraced with ardour, and were just separating to attend the business of their different departments, when a subaltern officer desired to speak with the general. On hearing his name—'Did you not know that I am engaged?' said the general, with an embarrassed air. 'He must wait till I am at leisure'.

'Don't let me hinder you', said my master, 'I am just going'.

'You do not, in the least. He can have no business with me but what you may hear, and, indeed, what you must help me to extricate myself from, for I know he comes upon some scheme of distinguishing himself, that will only give me trouble'.

'How can that be? If you do not approve of what he proposes, surely you have it in your power to reject it, without fear of giving him offence: or if, on the other hand, you think it practicable and worth pursuing, I cannot suppose that any honour or advantage that can possibly accrue to him can make you unwilling to carry it into execution'.

'Most certainly not. The difficulty I am under is of a very different nature. The character of the man gives me reason to believe that he will not propose anything which is not both practicable and important; and, as it is not in my power to reward his success, his doing anything out of the common course of duty would involve me in the highest distress, both on account of the injustice to him, and the poor figure I must make myself on so flagrant a breach of my own public declaration that, in the disposal of all preferences, I would pay due respect to seniority, where superior merit did not give a stronger claim'.

'Well, and why should it not be in your power to fulfil that declaration?'

'My dearest friend, I blush to think of, much more to expose even to you, the mortifying hardships laid upon me. The truth is

I have, since I made that declaration, another officer, who was in his cradle since this has been in the army, and has never yet seen the face of an enemy, put upon me for the first preferment, by one whose directions I must not disobey, however detrimental to the service'.

'That is a disagreeable circumstance, I own. But who is this officer, your good opinion of whom gives you such apprehensions'?

'He is a military enthusiast, who knows so little of the world as to think of rising in the army by merit alone, and with that view, not satisfied with doing his duty in the most signal manner, is always a volunteer wherever he thinks any glory can be acquired, though his own particular experience, as well as general observation, might have long since convinced him of the folly of such a thought. You must know him. This is he who, in that unlucky affair upon the coast of France, made a stand with the single company to which he belonged, and which he had so attached to him, by giving, out of his own pocket to such as behaved well, a daily gratuity, in addition to their pay, that they would follow him anywhere, to cover the embarkation of the troops, while every officer was shifting for himself, as he actually did in a great measure, till most of his little party was cut off, as it was a thousand to one but they all must, unsupported as they were, though it appeared after, that if a proper force had been posted in that very place at first, or he reinforced in any time, the heavy loss and disgrace suffered on that occasion might have been prevented. But still that was reckoned no business of his, and therefore all the reward he got for his pains was to have two officers, who were not even in the action, put over his head, and the company's money, which he had lost along with all his own baggage, refused to be made good to him, because he was a volunteer on that attack. For, sorry I am to say it, that is not the way to rise in the army nowadays. Where a man has not interest to push him forward, being able to sing a good song, or pimp well, or having a handsome wife or sister, with a proper degree of humility and complaisance, will avail him more than all the courage and conduct in romance. In my patron's¹ time, indeed, things were not so. Brave himself, he expected that every man under him should be brave also, nor would let any recommendation compensate for the want of merit in those who sought his favour, as his own interest and honour were naturally and inseparably connected with those of his country; and he was not lifted up to power, only to be the tool of a party, nor obliged to support himself in it by intrigue, without any other view or motive than that of amassing its emoluments; and therefore it has been the great misfortune of this officer that he never served immediately under him.'

¹ The king's uncle, the Duke of Cumberland, victor of Culloden. He was less unpopular now than he had been for many years, his opposition to Bute winning him the good graces of the public.

CHAPTER XLVI

CHRYSLAL'S MASTER MAKES SOME REMARKS ON CERTAIN MATTERS—
THE METHOD WHICH THE GENERAL TOOK TO PARRY THE OFFICER
—CHRYSLAL'S MASTER MAKES UP THE AFFAIR—THE GENERAL GIVES
THE OFFICER AN OPPORTUNITY OF DISTINGUISHING HIMSELF,
WHICH HE DOES IN A SIGNAL MANNER

It is remarked that men seldom inquire into the causes of things continually before their eyes. Habitual acquaintance prevents that curiosity, which is one of the strongest incentives to knowledge. They have always seen such things, and therefore have never inquired how they came to be so.

My master, who had long observed the fact, but never thought of the cause, was struck with what his friend said. After some pause—'I am afraid what you say is too true', said he, 'and cannot help attributing it to a cause, not much to the credit of the commanders, who certainly would never discourage merit in others, were they not conscious they had not risen by it themselves, and therefore look upon it with an envious eye, as a reproach to them. Indeed, it can scarcely be expected that a general, who has spent his life in paying court to a minister or favourite, or who was preferred only for his interest in parliament, should act otherwise. But what will you do with this officer? It will have an odd look if you don't see him; at the same time, if he should propose anything of real consequence, I am absolutely at a loss how to advise you to act'.

'The only method I can think of, is this: his temper is warm, and his notions of honour punctiliously high. I will, therefore, receive him with a distance that I know will hurt his sensibility, and provoke him to say something, of which I may take advantage to break off the conference, without entering into the subject of his coming; for he speaks as boldly as he acts, and thinks it beneath him to soften his sentiments by any qualifying expression'.

Accordingly, the general ordered the officer to be admitted, and asking him slightly what was his business—

'I come, sir', answered he, 'to inform you that I have discovered a proper place for landing the troops, and formed a plan for that purpose'.

'You have discovered, sir'? interrupted the general, haughtily. 'Pray, when and how did you make this notable discovery'?

'Just now, sir', returned the officer, too intent upon the object he had in view to take notice of the manner of his reception. 'The transport in which I was, happening to stretch away ahead, I got out a boat, and have carefully reconnoitered a great part of the coast, in the thick of the enemy's fire'.

'And pray, sir', interrupted the general again, determined not to let him explain himself, 'who gave you orders to reconnoitre in this manner'?

'No one, sir', answered the officer warmly, and hurt at the manner in which the general spoke. 'I never wait for orders to

do anything in which my own safety is concerned, when I think it for the advantage of the service'.

'When you think' ? retorted the general sternly. 'I should be glad to know who has appointed you to judge of those things ? At this rate, the whole army will be generals by and by, and every one will be out reconnoitering, forsooth, when they should be at their posts. But I'll put a stop to such contempt of discipline, and make you know that it is your duty to wait for orders, not to go rambling thus, wherever you please'. Saying which, he called one of his aides-de-camp, and putting the officer in arrest, sent him away, bursting with indignation and resentment, to his ship.

When he was gone—'I am very sorry', said my master, 'that your engagement to that other man laid you under a necessity of treating this officer so harshly. I have conceived a very good opinion of him. He appeared to be actuated by true zeal, and spoke with a confidence that showed he was convinced of what he said, for which reason I am resolved to reconnoitre that place myself, and don't doubt but I shall find his account of it to be just'.

'Nor do I in the least. He has a head to plan, and a heart to execute the most important enterprises, and I am as sorry for what I have been forced to do as you. But, as soon as I have it in my power to reward his merit, I'll give him every opportunity of displaying it, till when this affair will keep him out of the way'.

I see you are anxious to know the sequel of this officer's story. To avoid breaking the thread of my narrative with it, therefore, at another time, I will conclude it here.

My master, as he said, went that very night, and reconnoitered the place pointed out by the officer, whose account of it proved so just, that he repaired to him directly, and inquiring into his plan for landing the troops, found it so judicious, that he immediately adopted the whole, and carried it into execution with success. After some days, when the officer's impatience of being idle thus in the midst of action had in a great measure got the better of his resentment, and the severe loss sustained in the siege made the worth of men more attended to, my master attacked him on his foible, his passion for glory and zeal for the service of his country, and prevailed on him to return to his duty, on the general's making an apology for what he had done, which he attributed to his anxiety, and apprehension of the enemy's being put on their guard by his reconnoitering in that daring manner ; and, to cancel the disgrace of the arrest, treated him with particular attention ; and as he was now at liberty to do justice to his merit (the other, who had been imposed upon him, being provided for), gave him the first opportunity he could of signalizing himself, which he did in a manner that amply justified the opinion my master had conceived of him. The affair was this. The general had resolved to make an attack upon the principal redoubt that defended the fortress, and gave the command of it to him. The plan laid down by the general was, that an officer, with a party of men, should go from another post, just before the dawn, to reconnoitre the redoubt, and if he found that the fire of the night had made the impression expected, a signal was to be given for this officer to advance and make the

attack. The other accordingly marched, but missed his way, and falling in with a lesser redoubt, mistook it for the object of his designation, and inconsiderately attacked it, upon which the signal was given for this officer to proceed. The alarm had set the soldiers in the principal redoubt upon their guard, which he perceived before he came within their shot, and being sensible that his attempt could succeed only by surprise, by one of those instantaneous efforts of genius which mark the true military character, he resolved, without a moment's hesitation that might discover his disappointment, to try a stratagem of his own, since that of his general had been frustrated by this mistake, and directed his march regularly towards the attack that was begun upon the lesser redoubt, as if he had been sent on purpose to support it.

Deceived by this feint, the officer who commanded in the principal redoubt, knowing the force there to be too weak to make resistance, sent the greater part of his own to their relief. This was what he had foreseen. He therefore continued his march slowly, till they had got beyond him, and then, facing suddenly about, pushed with all speed for the redoubt they had just abandoned. The moment they saw this motion, they turned back, but the narrowness of the entrenchment in which they were prevented their making such expedition, and coming up in a body, as his men did on the plain, so that he entered with the very foremost man of them, and made himself master of the place with inconsiderable loss.

The importance of this redoubt, the taking of which greatly facilitated the operations of the siege, enhanced the merit of the action. Nothing else was talked of in the army, where the fortune of this officer was looked upon to be made. But no opportunity offered for promoting him during the remainder of the expedition, so that the only reward in the general's power to give him, was thanking him publicly at the head of the army, which he did in the strongest terms. Resolved, however, to be the instrument of his promotion, though he could not promote him himself, he represented him, on his return, in so advantageous a light to one¹ whose inclination it was known to be, and who, from his office, should have had it in his power to reward merit, that he promised to do him justice.

But the delicacy of this officer's sense of honour defeated these generous intentions. He would not accept of the preferment offered him, without having, at the same time, reparation for the injustice he had suffered, by an honorary rank, superior to those who had been put over him; and, when this was refused, for reason of convenience, insisted on quitting the service, in the permission for which his patron did justice to his character in the most authentic manner, before he himself resigned an office, which he would hold no longer than it was in his power to fulfil the declaration he had made on accepting it—'that while he should be in that office, he would not only be a vigilant servant of the Crown, but also a faithful trustee for the honest claim of the brave and deserving officer'.

¹ Charles Townshend, then a member of the government; went into opposition for a short space, and afterwards succeeded Fox as Paymaster of the Forces.

CHAPTER XLVII

CHRYSLAL ACCOUNTS CURIOUSLY FOR SOME INTERESTING POINTS OF POLICY—HE SUPPORTS HIS REASON FOR NOT ENTERING INTO THE PARTICULARS OF THE SIEGE, BY SOME REMARKS ON WAR, MORE JUST, PERHAPS, THAN POPULAR, AND ASSIGNS A MOTIVE FOR COURAGE NOT LIKELY TO BE MEANT BY THOSE WHO GIVE IT

I HAVE been so particular in the story of this officer, in order to give you some notion of matters, with which your manner of life has made you unacquainted. In his fate you see the consequence of a subaltern's striving to distinguish himself, by doing anything more than his immediate duty.

This, however strange it may appear to you, who judge only from reason, is strictly consistent with the principles of modern policy, which is calculated entirely for private convenience, without the least regard to public good. Every attempt of the kind is taken for an affront by his superiors, as implying a design of enforcing them to promote him, and putting himself in competition with them for the good opinion of the public, and therefore discountenanced. Indeed, if it were otherwise, few men of fortune or interest would, according to the present way of thinking, go into the army at all, as they could not expect to enjoy their ease, or show a prudent regard to their safety, without being subject to disgraceful comparisons from the officious assiduity or rashness of every man desperate in disposition or circumstances, who disregarded life and all its pleasures, or had no way of being able to live, but hazarding the loss of them.

In former times, men entered into the profession of arms with a certain prospect of honour and advantage, if they could merit them, and therefore exerted all their abilities of mind and body in emulation for so tempting a prize; but now, every idler who is unfit for any other business, purchases a commission, in order to live upon the pay, and as he is sensible that no efforts of his own can procure an addition to that pay, by raising him to a higher rank, he is satisfied to enjoy his bargain as easily as he can, and do no more than he needs must to avoid losing it. And this will account to you for the difference between the English forces now and in those days. Nor is the case otherwise with those who get into the army by interest. They depend solely upon the same interest to push them forward, and therefore give themselves no trouble to deserve promotion, which they are convinced no desert could procure them. But, to quit reflections not likely to be regarded, and return to my story. You must not expect a minute detail of the progress of this enterprise. The operations of war are too confused to give pleasure to reason in the representation, too horrid not to give pain to humanity.

I see you think this too severe, but such thoughts are the effect of prejudice. When the victories which have been blazoned highest, and which reflected the greatest honour on those who gained them, are stripped of the false colouring laid on only to dazzle and deceive,

and examined coolly, most of them will be found owing to some unforeseen accident—some lucky improvement of a blunder of the enemy, or else an obstinate perseverance in their own, after every boasted rule of art had been broke through, every resource of judgment exhausted in vain, and to have been attended by circumstances of such misery and loss to victors as well as vanquished, as tarnished all their glory, and infinitely overbalanced every advantage possible to be gained by them. I shall therefore mention only such particulars as may contribute to illustrate this picture of the heart of man.

The ardour shown by the subaltern officers and private men in carrying on the siege, in which they suffered more from the inclemencies of a climate unnatural to them, and against which no proper provision had been made, though they had been delayed to meet its fiercest fury, as well as from the diseases caused by the badness of every necessary of life, than from all the efforts of the enemy, all the arts which the ingenuity of man has devised for the destruction of his own unhappy species, was impossible to be accounted for from any other principles than disregard to a life destitute of every comfort and convenience that could endear it—a remark which, to the humane wisdom of some, may seem to justify the deficiency and badness of every kind of provision, too generally made for them on such occasions, while those whose higher rank may be thought to animate them with a sense of honour and ambitious hope, and who therefore may be thought not to want such incitements to desperation, enjoy a luxury scarce to be reconciled with the confusion of such an unsettled state—that neither of these motives, though powerful as they may be in general, will always prevail over a foolish fondness for life, instances appear in every war.

CHAPTER XLVIII

ONE OF THE CAPTAINS UNDER CHRYSAL'S MASTER BEHAVES IN AN EXTRAORDINARY MANNER, AND VINDICATES HIMSELF AS EXTRAORDINARILY—HIS CRIME IS OVERLOOKED FOR PRUDENTIAL REASONS, WHICH HE MISTAKES, AND DEMANDS A TRIAL—HE MEETS HIS DESERTS

As my master was attending one morning to the success of an attack which he had ordered to be made by some of the men-of-war under his command, upon a fort which principally obstructed the progress of the siege, he was surprised to see one of them not only notoriously make the most shameful delay in bearing down, but also, the moment she came within reach of it, instead of joining in the attack begun by others, put about and quit her station without even attempting to do anything.

Though the captain of the ship¹ had drawn the general disesteem of the corps upon him by his arrogant behaviour, and, by his morose

¹ Captain Campbell [Davis's *Olio*], probably the commander, James Campbell, of the *Stirling Castle*, a 64-gun ship.

treatment of his men and officers, raised suspicions of his spirit, on this unerring maxim, that cowardice is the inseparable companion of cruelty, yet, as he had those powerful motives to courage, pride of family and poverty, and must know that the inevitable consequence of such a flagrant breach of duty must be a disgraceful death, if it could not be properly accounted for, my master concluded that some accident must have happened, which was the more probable, as the ship was the worst in the fleet, and therefore, as soon as the affair was over, made his signal to come on board, that he might learn what was the matter.

Though the first sight of him might have explained the whole, the fears of his heart being visible in every feature of his haggard face, my master disdained to aggravate his distress by an appearance of severity, and only asked him coolly the reason of his not having borne down to the attack with the same expedition as the other ships.

'Sir—sir—sir', faltered the trembling wretch, not sufficiently recovered from his fright to express the evasion he had prepared, 'I—I made all the expedition I possibly could'.

'How can you have the confidence to say so', returned my master, 'when there were several of your sails which you never set'?

'That was not my fault, sir', replied the captain, resuming his natural assurance. 'How could I set them, when I had sent the booms ashore yesterday by your orders'?

'The booms'? interrupted my master, with a look of the most contemptuous astonishment. 'Can such ignorance be possible? Surely you must have known that the booms meant in my orders were those the boats are stowed on, which were to be sent ashore, that the men might not be hurt by the splinters in the attack, not those of your sails'.

'Very likely, sir, it might have been so, to be sure. But, as the order was to send all my booms without any such exception, I did not think I could justify disobeying it on my own opinion'.

'And pray, sir, how can you justify your quitting your station in the manner you did, when you at length made a shift to come up? Was that in obedience to your orders, too'?

'No, sir, that was quite another thing. When I came up, I saw the other ships had suffered considerably, and, as I thought they were sufficient for the purpose, I judged it best to save his majesty's ship, entrusted to my care, for another occasion. That was my reason, sir'.

'A very prudential one, truly; but I believe you should add, too, to save the captain, for, if I mistake not greatly, that was not the least object of your care'.

'Very true, sir, and with good reason, too, let me tell you, as I know that the interest of my family, which has promoted me thus far, will not fail to raise me higher. Men of low birth, or whose relations will not serve them, may set no value on their lives; but that is not my case; I am akin to most of the nobility of my country, who always stand by their own blood, where any preferment or advantage is to be gotten. Hem! hem'!

'I know their interest full well', retorted my master, scarce able to suppress his indignation at such insolence, 'and the closeness with which they hang together, but take care that you do not depend upon them too far'.

Unabashed by the manner in which this was said, the captain asked if he had any further commands, and, being answered in the negative, marched off in triumph.

There are some crimes in the punishment of which all men are more than ordinarily severe, in order to prove their own exemption from them. One of the first of these is cowardice, which, though often an involuntary defect of constitution, is justly reckoned a crime in military men, from the consequences that may attend it, and as it makes them unable to perform the duties of a profession which they should not have entered into under a sense of such incapacity. All the captains present were for punishing the offender instantly, in the most exemplary manner, for so flagrant a breach of duty. But my master, much as he detested the crime, and was provoked at the insolence with which he strove to carry it off, thought it better to overlook it for the present, than by bringing him to justice, throw a disgrace upon the forces, that might encourage the enemy to exert themselves, in hopes of more instances of the kind. But this moderation was disappointed by a common cause. In a few days after, the captain, judging by himself that nothing but fear of giving offence to his great family could have prevented his being fallen upon directly (for, notwithstanding his evasions, he was conscious of his crime), instead of improving that precious respite to extenuate his guilt by some meritorious action, presumed, upon meeting some instances of contempt from the rest of his corps, to demand the justification of a public trial, in order to be formally acquitted of what he thought they dared not to convict him, and also to escape being involved in any further dangers during the expedition, as he knew the immediate consequence of such a demand must necessarily be suspending him from his command till he should be tried, which he knew could not be before the conclusion of the siege; and in this latter particular his expectation was not deceived.

This directly put an end to the prudential reasons that had hitherto saved him, and of which the successful progress of the siege had also greatly lessened the force. Accordingly, to end his story here in a few words, the trial he desired was granted, the result of which was that he was broke with infamy, in contempt of all his boasts and menaces of the power and resentment of his family and friends.

CHAPTER XLIX

CHRYSAI ACCOUNTS FOR THE PECULIAR ANIMOSITIES WHICH SOME NATIONS SHOW IN WAR—A NOBLE SPANIARD IS TAKEN PRISONER IN A SALLY—HE MAKES A PROPOSAL TO THE GENERAL, WHICH IS ACCEPTED, AND OPENS A PROSPECT OF PEACE—A BRUTAL OUTRAGE DISAPPOINTS HIS DESIGN, AND EMBROILS MATTERS MORE THAN EVER

THERE is nothing suggests so disadvantageous an idea of mankind as the more than brutal ferocity with which they destroy each other, when quarrels between nations set the animosity of individuals free from those restraints of law with which necessity has taught human prudence to enforce the observation of the general duties of social and moral life.

This animosity, though, is never seen in its most sanguine colours, but in wars between people of different modes of religion. In that revelation of the will of Heaven, which should be the rule of the religion of Christians, the first precept in respect to the mutual intercourse between man and man, is brotherly love to each other. Such a precept bears intrinsic evidence of its divine origin. But still, human perversion has dared to represent the breach of it as a duty of that revealed law, by confining the benefit of the obligation to the profession of some particular opinions, and not only excluding the rest of mankind from the circle of the general brotherhood, but also making it a merit to propagate those opinions, by the extirpation of all dissenting from them, who are held incapable of the favour of Heaven, and therefore not entitled to the common rights of humanity.

Of all the people who profess Christianity, the Spaniards are the most bigoted slaves to this narrow and gross prejudice. With them, therefore, the natural animosity of war is heightened by religious abhorrence, against all who differ in opinion from them, and the laws which more enlightened nations have mutually agreed in, to restrain its ravages, and facilitate the restitution of peace, are often broken through, with a cruelty disgraceful to the name of man.

In a sally made one night by the besieged, a noble Spaniard, who had penetrated so far into the trenches that it was impossible for him to get back, fell wounded into the hands of the English. The gallantry with which he had defended himself gained him respect from his enemies, and he was treated with that generous tenderness which brave men feel for each other.

Struck with a behaviour so different from what he expected, for he had been taught to look upon the English as enemies to mankind, and delighting in the most savage cruelty, he desired to be led to the commander, to whom, he said, he had something of consequence to propose. Accordingly, as soon as his wounds were dressed, he was conducted to the general, with whom my master happened to be, and advancing to him with an air of dignity—‘I am’come, illustrious chief’, said he ‘to thank you for the humane

and generous treatment I have received from your brave soldiers, which, if known to my countrymen, would facilitate an accommodation between them and you, as dread of your power, raised, I am now convinced, by injurious misrepresentations, has hitherto principally prevented their listening to any terms from you. I speak not this from ignorance. My father is governor of the city. If you will let him know that I am your captive, he will directly pay for me whatever ransom you desire, and, on my return, I will faithfully remove the prejudices which keep up their animosity against you, and by that means open the way to a reconciliation, till the pleasure of our sovereigns shall restore peace to their subjects'.

Such an offer required no arguments to enforce it.

'The English', answered the general, 'never abuse the advantages they obtain in war. I desire no ransom for your liberty; you are free to return to your father when you please; and if you can be the means of preventing the effusion of more blood, as you must be convinced that resistance is in vain, I shall think myself happy in having an opportunity to show respect to all whom you shall recommend as your friends, and deserving of it'.

These words filled the benevolent heart of the Spaniard with joy.

'I fly', replied he eagerly, 'to execute a commission, in which there can be no difficulty. As you are brave and faithful to your sovereign, you will require no terms which brave men and good subjects ought not to comply with'.

The general then prevailed upon him to take some refreshment, after which he and my master went with him to the head of the lines, where he dismissed him with every mark of respect, attended by an officer with a flag of truce to bring back the governor's answer. But this pleasing prospect was soon overcast. The officer and he had not advanced half the way between the trenches and the town, when they were fired upon by a party of Spaniards, who lay in ambush among the ruins of some old buildings. At the first sound of their fire, the Spaniard rushed forward, in order to put a stop to it, and the officer waved his flag of truce over his head, but that sacred ensign afforded him no protection. They repeated their shot, and, seeing him fall, ran up, and in despite of all the Spaniard could do, who received a mortal wound as he covered his body with his own, butchered him in the most barbarous manner, replying to his appeal to the law of nations, violated thus in him, that heretics were excluded from the benefit of all laws.

The indignation with which such an outrage fired the English forces is not to be described. They vowed to exterminate a people who were unworthy to live; and, in the first madness of their rage, were with difficulty restrained from attempting to storm the walls, before a breach should give them even a possibility of success.

The leaders did not fail to improve such a spirit. Everything was pushed on with redoubled vigour; and war became more horrible when blackened with a passion for revenge, which had taken possession of the men, that it was some time before all the endeavours of their officers could put a stop to their indulging it, and bring them back to that generous valour which is their peculiar glory.

CHAPTER L

CHRYSAI'S ATTENTION IS AGREEABLY DIVERTED BY THE APPEARANCE OF A YOUNG SPANIARD, WHO THROWS HIMSELF AT THE FEET OF HIS MASTER TO PREFER AN EXTRAORDINARY REQUEST—THE HISTORY OF DON ALPHONSO GUZMAN, THE YOUNG SPANIARD

I WAS relieved from the pain of attending to such scenes of horror, by an affair that showed, in a striking light, the force of passions more natural to the heart of man.

As my master, who, active as light, was everywhere, and joined in everything, was standing one night to see the effect of a battery that commanded a particular quarter of the town, a youth, who had made his escape from the garrison, and advanced in the face of all their fire, though sufficient to terrify any being capable of terror, threw himself at his feet, in agonies of distress. My master, whose heart was warmed with that generous compassion which is inseparable from true courage, was struck at the sight, and, raising him from the ground, bade him declare the nature of his distress, and expect every assistance to which he was entitled by the sacred duties of humanity.

Encouraged by these words, the youth raised his head, and fixing his eyes upon my master, with a look inexpressibly supplicating, 'Oh, stop your fire, gracious chief'! said he, pressing his lips passionately to the hand that had raised him, and on which he still hung; 'stop your fire in that fatal direction, where it can hurt only innocence and virtue. That building against which it is levelled is not a part of the fortifications, the destruction of which can be of any service to you. It is a convent dedicated to the Virgin Mother of God, and at this time contains all that my soul holds dear, all that is beautiful and virtuous under heaven'.

Though his youth, beauty, and distress, interested every one present in the suppliant's favour, the nature of his suit must necessarily have prevented its success. But an accident saved him from the pain of being refused, the powder which was to serve the guns somehow catching fire, and destroying the greatest part of the battery, in the very instant he spoke. Not all the horrors of such a scene could suppress the joy he felt at an event so favourable to his hopes.

'Heaven has interfered'! exclaimed he, in an ecstasy. 'Heaven has interfered to save her; and man will not presume to oppose its pleasure'.

The enthusiastic manner in which he said this struck my master.

'Restrain your passions for a few moments', said he, 'till I have leisure to attend more particularly to you, and then, if you can convince me of the truth of what you say, your request shall be complied with. Far be it from me to hurt those helpless votaries of religion. Britons seek other objects for their valour'.

He then gave the necessary orders for repairing the battery, and, desiring the youth to follow him, went on board his ship, where

he treated him with every mark of politeness and compassion. As soon as they had taken some refreshment, my master made a sign to every one else to retire, and then, addressing himself to the youth in the most humane manner, desired to know who he was, and what motives could have induced him to run into such imminent danger, in order to prefer a suit, of the success of which there was so little probability.

The youth for some moments hung down his head abashed, then with a sigh that seemed to burst his heart, 'It is my duty, most generous chief', said he, to give you the information you require, however painful the task may be to me; especially as your condescending to listen to the story of my misfortunes awakes a hope that you will be moved by them to grant a request on which depends my life. My name is Alphonso. My father, Don Pedro, bears an honourable command in the forces which defend yonder city against your arms; but glories more in the honour of being descended from the noble family of Guzman, which has preserved its blood pure from every debasing mixture, since the beginning of time, in the mountains of Castile, and produced a race of heroes whose fame has filled the world. When my father arrived at an age fit to bear arms, as none of the powers of Europe dared to provoke the wrath of Spain, disdaining a life of inglorious peace, he entered into the forces sent hither to reduce such of the rebellious natives as still presumed to refuse submission to the monarch of the Spanish worlds, where he signalized himself so eminently that at the end of seven years his merits were rewarded with a commission, signed by the viceroy himself, in the name of the king. Such a distinguished honour gave weight to the addresses which he had for some time paid to the only daughter of Don Alonzo Garzias, who was a native of Arragon, and had been sent over by the king to fill the important office of secretary to the receiver of his revenues. From this marriage, so honourable to both parties, I have the happiness to derive my birth, if it can be called a happiness to be born only to misfortunes.

'As I was the sole hope of two such illustrious houses, no pains were spared to give me an education suitable to my birth; the great exploits of my ancestors, the antiquity and untainted nobility of my blood, were continually repeated to me to excite emulation, and inspire me with proper sentiments of honour. Such care seemed the surest means to procure happiness, but the wisdom of man strives in vain against the decrees of fate.

'In the neighbourhood of my father's house there lived a merchant named Don Antonio, between whose family and ours there was the closest intimacy—an intimacy mutually advantageous, the countenance of a person of my father's consequence being an honour to his friend, who never omitted those returns of gratitude which his wealth often gave him an opportunity of making. Don Antonio had an only daughter, whose being heiress to his great fortune was the least blessing Heaven had bestowed upon her. Oh, my Olivia, shall I ever behold you more? May I yet raise my hopes so high as to think of calling you mine?'

At these words, a flood of tears choking his utterance, my master

took the opportunity to go out, and give some orders to his officers ; and on his return the youth proceeded :—

‘ Don Antonio’s daughter and I being nearly of the same age, the tender connection of infant fondness grew up between us, and improved with our ripening years. The attention of my father was too much engrossed by his military cares to take notice of our attachment, and my mother was so sensible of the many perfections of Olivia, that far from discouraging, she promoted it by every means in her power, dwelling continually on her praises, and suggesting to me such little offices of affection and respect as were suited to our ages, and most likely to make an impression on her tender heart. Nor did the father of Olivia (she had lost her mother in her infancy) show any dissatisfaction at a passion which could not escape his notice, influenced, most probably, by a sense of the honour which he should derive from such an alliance.

‘ In this happy state we lived till I entered on my fifteenth year, when my father thought it proper for me to learn the art of war in order to qualify me for such military promotions as I was entitled to by my birth, and for that purpose gave me notice to prepare myself to march with some troops, which were going to reinforce a garrison in the most distant part of the kingdom. Though my heart glowed with all the ambition and desire of glory which my noble blood must naturally inspire, the thought of being separated from Olivia overbalanced every other consideration. In the first emotions of my soul, therefore, I threw myself at my father’s feet, and rashly owned my passion, imploring him as he regarded my life, to make me happy in the possession of my love, before he attempted parting us, even for a moment. It is impossible to describe his rage on this unhappy discovery. Spurning me from him with his foot, “ Degenerate wretch ” ! said he, when his wrath permitted him to speak ; “ degenerate wretch ! to stain the honour of your blood by thinking of an alliance with the daughter of a person of whose family you have no knowledge ” !—for in all the intercourse of intimacy, the father of Olivia had never discovered in what part of Spain he had been born ; nor could the recital of illustrious pedigrees, the constant topic of discourse among the nobles, ever incite him to an emulative mention of his own. “ Hence ! fly my sight this moment ; nor ever presume to appear before me again till you have conquered this disgraceful passion ”.

‘ I knew the inflexibility of my father’s temper too well to attempt making any reply, even would the fulness of my heart have permitted me. I retired, therefore, without speaking a word, and going to my mother, informed her of my distress, which she strove to alleviate by every expression of tenderness and consolation, promising to exert all her influence, as soon as the first heat of his wrath should be allayed, to prevail upon him to consent to my suit’.

CHAPTER LI

CONTINUED : OLIVIA'S FATHER IS TAKEN UP BY THE INQUISITION, AND HERSELF PUT INTO A CONVENT, ON AN ENGLISH BATTERY'S FIRING UPON WHICH, DON ALPHONSO COMES IN DESPAIR TO CHRYSAL'S MASTER TO MAKE A VERY ODD REQUEST, WHICH HE GRANTS AT LENGTH, AND ALSO PROMISES HIM HIS ASSISTANCE TO OBTAIN HIS MISTRESS

'THOUGH I received some encouragement from these assurances I could not forbear going, in the boding of my heart, to acquaint Olivia with what had happened, but in the most delicate terms. Her affliction was not less than mine. She saw the sincerity of my love, and in the tenderness of such a scene, yielded to my entreaties, and plighted her faith to me by the most sacred vows. Comforted by the thought that she could not now be torn from me, I returned home, where I found my mother fulfilling her promise, and pleading with my father in my behalf. As their earnestness made them speak aloud, I could not resist the natural desire of listening to a debate of such importance to my hopes. She urged, with all the strength of reason, the absurdity of thinking a family dishonoured by the admission of a female, and enforced her arguments with the examples even of sovereigns ; she insisted on the beauty, virtues, and fortune of Olivia, which made her worthy of the most honourable alliance ; and concluded with saying how much better it would be for us all to have me married to a person whose wealth would enable us to spend the remainder of our lives in plenty and happiness than to continue struggling with every misery of poverty, merely to indulge a false, ill-grounded pride.

'My father had listened to the former part of what she said with an appearance of attention ; but the moment she mentioned his poverty he lost all patience. "Forbear, mean, mercenary woman"! said he, stamping his foot upon the ground with a violence that shook the house ; "forbear to tempt my wrath by such base insinuations. Did ever a Castilian think poverty a hardship, or put riches in competition with his honour ? Such sentiments may suit an Arragonian, but are beneath me. I see the source of the wretch's degeneracy ! My blood never could have stooped to such meanness, had it not been mixed with yours". Saying this he flung out of the room, and finding me at the door, "Mark me, thou disgrace to my blood"! said he, with a look that appalled my soul ; "if ever I hear more of this affair, I swear by the offended honour of all my ancestors to sacrifice every one concerned in my being offered such an affront".

'What I felt on hearing this dreadful denunciation may be easily conceived. I swooned away, nor recovered my senses till several hours after, when I found my mother weeping over me, in the bitterness of resentment and grief. As soon as she perceived that I was come to myself, she strove to comfort me by repeating her former promises, to the accomplishment of which she was now further impelled by her resentment of the reflections which my father had

thrown upon her country. But an unforeseen misfortune blasted all our hopes before she had time to make another effort. The father of Olivia having had occasion to go to England on some affairs in the course of his extensive dealings, was so taken with the people of that country, that, after his return, he never omitted any opportunity of vindicating them from the injurious aspersions of those who spoke only from prejudice, and without proper information. This attachment naturally raised the jealousy of the clergy ; but as he confined his approbation merely to their moral and social virtues, without ever saying a word in vindication of their religious tenets, they contented themselves with cautioning him against misplacing his praise, and telling him that there could be no virtue where the true faith was not ; and, therefore, those actions with which he was dazzled, were no more than shining sins ; and they were thus mild in their reprehension, as he was remarkably punctual in the professions and practice of all the rites and doctrines prescribed by the Holy Church. But this lenity lasted not long. On the breaking out of the present war with England, some persons, who envied the success with which his honest industry had been rewarded, raised a suspicion in the governor of his holding an improper correspondence with the enemy, to which his former regard for them seemed to give an appearance of probability.

‘ Bold in conscious innocence, he denied the charge, nor could the strictest inquiry procure the least proof of it ; but in the course of their search, a discovery was unhappily made that involved him in ruin, if possible, more dreadful ; a number of books containing opinions contrary to the Catholic faith, being found in his possession, concealed among some of his goods. In vain did he allege that they belonged not to, nor could possibly have been known of by him, the goods among which they had been concealed having been landed but a few day before out of an English ship, which had been taken by a Spanish man-of-war, in her passage to one of their own colonies, where such books were openly allowed of, and sold to him unopened, as they still remained. But evident as the truth of this was, the Holy Office, to whose jurisdiction the affair belonged, would not admit of any such excuse. They instantly seized the unhappy man, and, hurrying him away to their own prison, took possession of all his wealth, and forced his helpless daughter into yonder convent. This misfortune, which deprived me of the wretch’s poorest consolation, the liberty of complaining, drove me to despair. I pined in silence ; and was beginning to meditate on laying down a life that was become a burden to me, when my father, calling me to him one morning, “ The time is come ”, said he, smiling fiercely, “ that will prove the blood of Guzman. The evil genius of the English has prompted them to come, and seek their deaths here. The most noble governor has not only promoted me this day to the command of a company in the forces destined for the defence of this city, but also, in respect to my family, has appointed you to be my lieutenant. Let this arouse you to a sense of yourself ; consider what you owe to your country, and to your name. Every feeble passion flies at the manly voice of war ”.

‘ Languid as my soul was, I could not hear this news without

joy, especially as it opened me a prospect of meeting honourably that death which was now my only hope. Accordingly, as soon as the enemy appeared, I courted danger with such eagerness, that my father, in spite of all his magnanimity, more than once desired me to restrain a courage that arose to an excess. But even death itself is deaf to the wretch's call. Nothing material happened to me till the battery, to which I came to you, opened upon the convent, when the thought of my Olivia's danger of being buried in its ruins drove me to madness. I instantly flew thither, and, imagining that such circumstances bore down all regard to rules calculated for times of peace, demanded entrance to convey the inhabitants to some place of safety; but what was my astonishment to hear the governor had given the strictest orders that not a soul should be admitted to stir, committing to the immediate hand of Heaven the protection of its peculiar votaries.

'Such inhumanity, for I can call it by no milder name, broke every bond of duty and allegiance. I abjured all further connection with so cruelly insensible a monster; and recollecting the many exalted instances of generosity which the unhappy father of Olivia had told me of the English, I resolved to apply myself to them, and try whether I could not obtain that safety for the beloved of my soul, which I could not hope from him whose duty it was to protect her.

'This, most illustrious chief, is the story of my misfortunes, the cause of that conduct which appeared so strange to you. If you grant my suit, you will be amply rewarded by the conscious approbation of your own mind. You will merit the blessing of Heaven on your undertakings by sparing the most perfect of its works. And may I presume to add, you will attach to you a heart that is incapable of deceit. Through every vicissitude of life will I attend your steps, the faithful servant of your fate'.

The brightness of truth breaks through every cloud, and forces conviction.

'I grant your request', said my master with a smile of consolation and encouragement, 'the convent shall be spared. Nor is that all. If success crowns my hopes, I will also use every means in my power to restore your Olivia to your arms'.

CHAPTER LII

THE FORTUNATE EFFECTS OF CHRYSAL'S MASTER'S SPARING THE CONVENT—THE MUTUAL ADVANTAGE, TO VICTORS AND VANQUISHED, OF ARTICLES OF CAPITULATION—CHRYSAL'S MASTER PERFORMS HIS PROMISE TO ALPHONSO, INTO WHOSE SERVICE CHRYSAL ENTERS—ALPHONSO RECOVERS HIS MISTRESS, WHOSE FATHER IS SET AT LIBERTY BY A PIECE OF FUN OF SOME ENGLISH SAILORS—CONCLUSION OF THE STORY OF ALPHONSO—CHRYSAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE

ACCORDINGLY to his promise, the next night, when the battery was repaired, my master gave orders to direct the fire another way, where he soon found the reward of his generosity, one of the

first bombs which was thrown setting fire to the principal magazine in the whole city, the blowing up of which overturned a considerable part of the fortifications. Animated by this success to a degree of frenzy, the besiegers pushed on their attacks with such irresistible fury that, in spite of the accumulated havoc of war, disease, and want, they at length overcame the obstinacy of the besieged, and compelled them to capitulate on terms which were readily agreed to on both sides, as they saved the plunder from the soldiers for the victorious commanders, at the same time that they protected the persons of the vanquished from licentious outrage.

There is no instance in which the customs of mankind are more changed than this. Formerly, when nations waged war everything the victorious soldier could lay hold on was his own, the persons as well as the property of the vanquished; and this more especially at the taking of a town, which was the harvest of his hopes. The excesses committed on these occasions most certainly required a remedy; but it were well if that remedy, as in other cases, had not been abused, and the care of restraining the excess of the common soldiers made a pretext for depriving them of the reward of all their toils and dangers, to enrich their commanders. The injustice of making slaves of the people, for the ambition or avarice of their prince, is so flagrant, that the practice has been universally discontinued among civilized nations, who also affect to show moderation in stripping them of their property, particularly in this instance of towns taken by capitulation. But at whose expense is this moderation? Why, at that of the inferior officers and soldiers, who receive a pittance of their own earnings that only insults their necessities, while the bulk is shared between their superiors. The injustice of this is evident. Either all such composition should be abolished entirely, and the property as well as liberty of the vanquished be preserved to them, or the prize be more equitably divided with those from whom plunder is taken, who struggle with distress, and brave death for a morsel of bread, without any more hope of mending their condition even by success than the ox has of eating the corn for which he labours to plough the ground; and this loss of hope is the reason why soldiers are not animated with the same ardour now as in former days. But, grating as so flagrant a partiality must be to a generous mind, there is one circumstance, not obvious perhaps, to you, that aggravates the pain of it still higher; this is the necessity which the sufferers are under of submitting to the insolence and extortions of a set of clerks and agents who fatten on their spoils, without even pretending to any merit in the acquisition; a reflection that exasperates them against their commanders, by whose favour those wretches are introduced and supported, and on whom they father all their villanies.

Much as the cares of his situation engrossed the attention of my master he did not forget his promise to the Spanish youth; but, ordering him a guard of soldiers, bade him go, as soon as the gates should be delivered up, and secure the convent where his Olivia was confined from any accident which might happen on such an occasion in spite of all their care, giving him, at the same

time, a purse of gold, in which I was, to answer any present necessities, with directions to apply to him again if he should have any further need of his assistance.

My new master did not want to have such a commission repeated. He kissed the hand of his benefactor in a rapture of gratitude, and encouraging the guard, assigned him the most liberal promises, flew, the moment the gates of the city were opened, to the convent, and demanded his Olivia with the peremptory voice of a conqueror, where the sight of the guard removed every objection, and she was instantly delivered to him. The meeting of these young lovers was most affecting. They flew into each other's arms, and embracing in ecstasy too big for utterance, gave vent to the fulness of their hearts by a flood of tears. Recovering himself at length, 'Come, my Olivia', said Alphonso, taking her hand, 'let us leave this place. Let us go'.

'Oh, whither', interrupted she, starting wildly, 'whither shall I go? I have no home—no father to receive me'.

'My home is yours', answered Alphonso, embracing her most tenderly; 'we will go to the house of my father, who cannot persist in his cruelty, when he is informed how signally Heaven has interfered in our favour, and there we will consult on the means proper for procuring the deliverance of Antonio. I have a protector among the conquerors, the most generous of mankind, who will not refuse his assistance on such an occasion'.

These words comforted Olivia with a hope, for the accomplishment of which though she was indebted to another cause. The way from the convent to the house of Alphonso's father leading them by the prison of the Inquisition, Olivia was so affected at the sight of it, that she swooned away in the arms of Alphonso. Such an accident naturally threw the whole company into an embarrassment; while they were in the midst of which, a body of English seamen, who had slipped away from their officers, and were roving about merely from curiosity, and without intention of doing mischief, but ready to join in any that should fall in their way, happening to come by, no sooner understood from the guard what was the matter, than looking at each other for some moments, as if waiting for the word of command. At length one of them cried out, 'Hullo, boys! What say you? Shall we bail the gentlewoman's father? Mayhap there may be some of our countrymen in the bilboes along with him. Damn my eyes and limbs, but it would be good fun to set them all free. I fancy the Inquisitors will not refuse our bail; if they do, I should be glad to pick a quarrel with them; I hate them mortally ever since I saw them roast some poor Smouches at Lisbon because they would not eat pork. Come! cheer away, my hearts of oak! All hands aloft, and to work'.

These words were like fire given to a mine. He had scarce finished, when the thoughtless creatures without more ado ran to the prison, and, while some of them were forcing in the gates, the rest, mounting on each other's shoulders, climbed over the walls. The moment Olivia, now recovered from her swoon, saw the prison open, 'Now is the time, Alphonso,' said she, 'now is the time to set my father free'.

The hint was sufficient. Alphonso turned directly to the guard, and perceiving by their looks that they were willing to assist him, 'I go, my love!' said he; 'but where shall I leave you in safety till I return? Such a place cannot be fit for your delicacy'.

'Speak not of leaving me!' interrupted she eagerly. 'I will go with you! No delicacy shall interfere with such a duty'.

On her saying this, they all entered the prison, where the seamen were shouting and skipping about like so many wild creatures, and setting all the prisoners at liberty wherever they went. The secrets of this prison-house are too horrid for description. I shall, therefore draw a veil over them at this time, especially as another occasion will lead me into the same scenes again, when the representation will be more interesting.

No words can convey an idea of the tenderness of the meeting between Olivia and her father, whom Alphonso and she readily found out. As soon as they had indulged the first transports of their joy, she informed him briefly how much they were both indebted to Alphonso for their present happiness. Though her father was not at a loss for the motive of such generosity, he thought it not proper to take notice of it at that time. He embraced him tenderly, and besought Heaven to reward his virtues.

'The happiness of serving those most dear to us', said Alphonso, who had not the same command of his temper, 'is its own reward. Olivia and her father have a right to everything in my power. Let us leave this place, the sight of which appals my soul. Let us go to the house of my father'.

'Lead on, my children', answered Olivia's father, 'I follow willingly; and not without hope of reconciling my friend to our general happiness'.

When they went out of the prison they found the sailors employed in executing a piece of justice exactly in their character. They had rambled all through the prison, without doing or designing mischief, till they came to the chamber in which were kept the instruments of torture, the sight of which incensed them to such a degree, that they resolved instantly to make the Inquisitors themselves feel the force of them in their turn; but they, apprehensive of what might happen, had prudently made their escape by a secret passage as soon as the prison had been forced. Disappointed thus in their design, the sailors took all the horrid apparatus, with all the habits, ensigns, books, etc. of the office, and piling them up in the court, set fire to the heap, concluding the exploit with three cheers for the honour of Old England; after which they marched off in quest of more fun, as unconcerned as if nothing had happened.

When Alphonso arrived at his father's house, he found his mother just sinking under the weight of affliction. On hearing his voice, she started up, and running to him, 'Oh, my son! my son!' exclaimed she, clasping him in her arms, and leaning her head upon his bosom; 'Heaven has heard my prayers! I am not childless, though I am a widow'!

'A widow'! exclaimed Alphonso. 'Forbid it Heaven! Oh, my father'!

'Yes, Alphonso'! continued she, raising her head from his bosom.

which she had bedewed with tears. 'Your father died, as he lived, with honour, fighting valiantly by the side of his general, in defence of his country. But what do I see?' casting her eyes upon Olivia, her father, and the guard, whom her surprise had prevented her taking notice of before. 'Olivia! Antonio! And who are these strange men? But, alas, I know too well! Oh! my son, art thou then a prisoner to the enemies who slew thy father! Am I to lose thee again, the moment thou art returned'?

'No, my mother', answered he, 'I am no prisoner. They are our protectors, given by the most generous of men, who has thus restored us to each other. Oh that my father were alive to make our happiness complete'!

'Since Heaven has appointed otherwise', said Antonio, going up to Alphonso's mother, who was weeping with Olivia, on whose neck she had fallen, 'it is our duty to submit to its pleasure. The circumstances of our lives make it improper for us to think of living any longer here. But that should not discourage us. The virtuous find a home everywhere. We will remove to the dominions of the English, where I have lodged in honest hands fortune sufficient to make our retreat happy. Under the protection of their laws, a man's mind is at liberty, and his wealth is secure. Mine was my only crime here; but I was aware of such an attack, and had removed it beyond the reach of those who impiously made religion the pretext for depriving me of it. Were my friend, Don Pedro, living, I would have removed the objections which his high notions of honour made to an alliance with my family, and prevailed upon him to accompany us'.

These words comforted the mother of Alphonso, and made the lovers happy.

Everything being thus settled, the guard was dismissed with professions of the highest gratitude to the generous chief, which Antonio and Alphonso proposed waiting on him to pay in person as soon as he should be more at leisure; and to reward the soldiers for their attendance. Alphonso gave them the purse of gold he had received from his benefactor, and in which I was, in the division of which I fell to the lot of the sergeant who commanded them, who, looking upon me as an earnest of the vast treasures he was to receive as his share of the spoil, went away with a happy heart to join his fellows, who were now in full possession of the city.

CHAPTER LIII

CHRYSAI MAKES SOME STRIKING REMARKS ON A STATE OF ABSOLUTE LIBERTY—DISAPPOINTMENT OF THE HOPES OF THE CONQUERORS, WITH THE NATURAL CONSEQUENCES—CHRYSAI'S MASTER GOING TO TAKE A TASTE OF THE PLEASURES OF AFFLUENCE, IS FLAMMED OUT OF HIS TREASURE BY A SUTLER, INTO WHOSE SERVICE CHRYSAI ENTERS

THE conduct of man in such scenes as this, where he thinks himself at liberty to follow the instantaneous impulse of his own will,

without apprehension of immediate punishment, shows the groundless vanity of those who boast so loudly of the excellency of his nature, and deny the necessity of coercive laws. It is true, no people ever abused this liberty less than the English, who scorn to inflict upon others that oppression from which their laws protect themselves; as, on the other hand, slaves, on a change of fortune, always prove the most imperious tyrants; but still the circumstances attending even the most moderate exertion of it are too shocking for dispassionate description, wherefore I shall waive the painful task.

As soon as some degree of order was established in the city, the victorious commanders proceeded to divide the spoil,¹ a work for which they all showed their capacity in the most remarkable manner, the pittance which they thought proper to appoint for the share of each of the private men, who had literally borne the heat and burthen of the day, being a trifle beneath the acceptance of any but a beggar who wanted a morsel of bread, and not the fifty-thousandth part of what the chief commanders, who comparatively had lived in luxury,² and issued their orders from places of safety, modestly owned to have reserved for each of themselves. Nor was the case of the inferior officers, who executed those orders, any better, their shares not being sufficient to defray the extraordinary expenses which they had been at, to provide for the enterprise, much less the extraordinary expense of living, where the indispensable necessities of life were subject to the most exorbitant impositions of an avaricious and arbitrary will, so that all they gained by their conquest was to exchange the dangers of war for the miseries of want.

This disappointment of the hopes which alone had supported their spirits through hardships almost beyond the power of nature to support, filled up the black list of the calamities which attended this enterprise, aggravating by despair the diseases to which the climate subjected the victors to such a degree, that their loss, after their conquest, exceeded many times that which they had suffered in the siege from so many combined causes.

To the truth of this representation, which to unexperienced speculation may appear too severely drawn, the wretched remains of the conquering army which returned to their exhausted country bore a melancholy testimony. But to quit these disagreeable reflections!

Such a treasure as I was (greater much than he had ever been possessed of before), raised the spirits of my master, the serjeant, so high, that he went directly to a sutler's tent, to take a taste of

¹ 'An immense booty was secured, £3,000,000 in money, besides merchandise'—Hunt, *Political History of England*, x. The troops and seamen fared even worse at Manila, where the inhabitants were allowed to ransom their property for 4,000,000 dollars, which, through the peace that immediately followed, was never paid, and the men, at any rate, got nothing.

² The admiral and the general received £122,697, 10s. 6d. apiece, each captain the sum of £1600, 10s. 10d., each petty officer, £17, 5s. 3d., and each seaman and mariner £3, 14s. 9½d.

the good living which he thought himself secure of for the remainder of his days. On his entering the tent, and asking what entertainment he could have, the sutler, ignorant of his wealth, answered with a curse that he had none for such shabby fellows as he, and took him by the shoulders to thrust him out. Provoked at such an indignity to a person of his present consequence, my master turned upon him, and pulling me out of his pocket, demanded haughtily why he might not have what he would pay for, as well as another. The sight of the gold instantly changed the sutler's whole behaviour.

'My worthy friend', said he, shaking the serjeant by the hand, 'I beg your pardon. I actually did not perceive whom I spoke to, I am so hurried about. But, come along with me, and I'll make you amends. I have a nice leg of a fowl, which was bespoke for your colonel; but first come, first served, as the saying is, so here it is for you; and here is a bottle of wine, as cool as if it came but this minute from Iceland.'

My master was not proof against such an invitation. He fell to, without more ceremony, and when he had finished his feast, calling to know what was to pay, the sutler answered—'Two guineas'.

'Two guineas? Two devils', said the serjeant staring at such a demand, 'for a leg of an old hen, as black as hell, and lean as Beelzebub, and a bottle of rot-gut sour cider. No, no, friend, no such tricks for me; I am not to be flammed so neither'.

'Why, there it is now', answered the sutler, not much pleased with my master's looks. 'The moment a man grows rich, he grows covetous. I received the same for the other leg of that fowl this moment, from an ensign who, by the same token, left his laced waistcoat in pawn for half the money. But I will not fall out with you for such a trifle, as I expect more of your custom, so even give me what you please. You cannot think one guinea too much, I am sure, but you shall make it up another time'.

Such an argument could not be resisted. The serjeant threw me down upon the table with an air of grandeur, and went to consider how he should lay out to the best advantage the treasures which he expected immediately to receive.

CHAPTER LIV

CHARACTER OF CHRYSAL'S NEW MASTER—THE RIGHT WAY NOT TO SUFFER BY MAKING MISTAKES—A CURIOUS CONVERSATION BETWEEN CHRYSAL'S MASTER AND TWO PERSONS OF CONSEQUENCE LAYS OPEN THE SECRETS OF SOME INTERESTING AFFAIRS—HE MAKES UP A FOOLISH DISPUTE BY A SENSIBLE TOAST

I WAS now entered into a service, which opened to me so many various views of human folly, vice, and wretchedness, as made the prospect painful. The manner in which my new master got me into his possession, showed his character in a light sufficiently strong. But I soon had the satisfaction of seeing that, with all his address

at imposition, he was himself no more than the tool of the impositions of his superiors, who scarce left him the poorest gleanings to pick up, after all the plenteous harvest, the just and constant fate of all such wretches. The continual hurry in which he was engaged, though he had falsely alleged it as an excuse for the treatment of my late master, the serjeant, was really sufficient to excuse any inadvertency or blunder, and must have caused many in any one, whose ideas were not settled in one certain course, out of which it was impossible to divert them. But I soon found that he was in no danger of that kind, all his thoughts having such an invariable bias to his own interest, that every mistake naturally fell to that side, for which, upon detection, his hurry was a ready and probable excuse.

The serjeant had scarce left him, when two persons entered, whom he received with every mark of the most obsequious ceremony and respect. One of them I directly knew to be my old master, the admiral's clerk, as I soon found the other to be in the same important station with the general. My master, who was not a loss for the occasion of their visit, led them into the most private place in the tent, and setting before them a bottle of his best, proceeded to business.

'Mr Admiral, to your good health! Mr General, my very hearty service to you'! said he, filling a brimmer, and addressing each by the title of his master, as he shook them by the hand. 'Here is a good conclusion to the campaign to us. I was impatient for your coming, to know how I should go on. Here have been several officers with me already, for credit on the score of their prize-money for the length of the siege, and the dearness of everything, has not left them a penny, nor anything to pawn for one. I have got as many clothes and things of all kinds, as would serve to set up a Monmouth Street merchant. If the place had held out but a few days longer, the poor devils must have done duty in their buff. Ha! ha! ha!'

'And the properest dress for them', returned the admiral. 'Who wants any clothes in such a climate as this? I am sure I go naked half my time, though I keep under cover. and have nothing to do to heat me'.

'Very true', answered my master. 'But naked and hungry both are not quite so well; and when their moveables were all gone after their money, I don't know who would have supplied them'.

'Then let them live on their allowance', said the general. 'They who can't afford to pay for better should be content with that'.

'To die upon it, you should say', interrupted my master. 'I am sure the stores laid in are such as no one can live upon, that has ever known what living was. For my part, I wonder the contractors were not ashamed to supply such wretched stuff of all kinds. They must have no conscience at all who can do such things'.

'Conscience? Ha! ha! ha! Who ever heard a sutler speak of conscience before?' said the admiral. 'And pray, my conscientious friend, what do you charge a bottle for this most excellent wine of yours?'

'For this wine' ? answered my master, palating it two or three times. 'I charge for this wine only a pistole ; and, let me tell you that it is not so much, considering everything. This Burgundy cost me five shillings a bottle, prime cost, and, when you compute every expense, you'll find that my profit is nothing at all in comparison of what others get'.

'No, to be sure', replied the general. 'Your conscience won't suffer you to do as they do ; you are too good a man'.

'Too good a Christian, you should say', interrupted the admiral, 'as appears by your baptising your wine so piously. Ha ! ha ! ha ! Pray, what did the water cost that is mixed with this same Burgundy ? I hope that did not stand you in five shillings a bottle too. Ha ! ha ! ha !'

'It is very well, gentlemen', returned my master, with a sneer. 'You are pleased to be merry. But if I had not some way to make out matters, I could never pay the exorbitant taxes which are squeezed from me by some people whom I shan't name. And so, here's my service to you both once more. When you lower your composition, I'll lessen the quantity of water, and mend mine. Ha ! ha ! ha !'

'And so you had need', said the general, 'to make it drinkable ; as it is, I wonder it does not poison every one that tastes it. When I lived at the Shakespeare, we did not give worse than this to our company after they were dead drunk'.

'Worse than this' ? added the admiral. 'If you had given me half so bad, I should have broken your head with the bottle'.

'Broken my head' ? returned the general, 'fine words, truly. When you were a blue-nosed journeyman barber, and used to come to me to beg broken victuals and bottoms of bottles, you spoke in another tone'.

'And when I was, sir', replied the admiral, 'I had a good trade, and never looked upon myself as upon a level with the pimp of a tavern'.

'And yet that pimping made you what you are now', retorted the general, rising up in a passion. 'You forget, perhaps, how you begged of me to introduce your sister to the admiral, by which means you got into his service ; this is a fine return, indeed'.

'And you forget, too', said the admiral, starting from his seat, and catching at the bottle, 'that it was that same sister of mine who got you into the general's service, if you go to that, so that I think the obligation is equal'.

'Gentlemen, dear gentlemen', interrupted my master, clapping a hand to each of their collars. 'Consider what you are doing. What will the world say of such a quarrel between gentlemen who ought to agree like brothers ? For shame ; everybody will laugh at you. Come, sit down, and be good friends, and I'll try if I have not one bottle of better wine, over which we'll make up all matters'. Then bringing it, and filling his glass—'Come, gentlemen', continued he, shaking each of them by the hand, 'I'll give you a toast that shall drown all animosity ; here is prosperity to pimping ! It is the best trade going, and has made us all. Ay, and is practised, too, by people in every station, however they may

affect to turn up their noses at it. So let us attend to our business, and not fall together by the ears for nothing, like a parcel of dogs about a bare bone. It signifies nothing, what we have been ; if we mind our hits now, we shall all be gentlemen, as good as the best of them, and as well respected, too'.

The admiral and general saw the force of what he said, and, pledging his toast, shook hands, and were as good friends as ever.

CHAPTER LV

CONTINUED : THE MYSTERIES OF AGENCY, AND CONVENIENCE OF A MILITARY GOVERNMENT, WITH SOME CURIOUS MOTIONS OF THE GENTEELEST WAYS OF RISING IN LIFE

' WELL, gentlemen ', said my master, who was not pleased at their jests upon his liquor, because he could not deny the truth of them, ' I hope that wine pleases you '.

' Ay ', answered the admiral, ' this is the right sort ; this is the thing. Give us this, and keep the other for officers, and such as are not used to better '.

' And if it poisons them ', added the admiral, ' the public will have the fewer to pay. Now they have done the business, let them live or die as they can ; we care not. That's nothing to us '.

' Very true ', said my master. ' All we have to do is to make the most of them while they do live ; and therefore I should be glad to know, as I said before, how far I may venture to go with them, on the credit of their prize-money ; for, as the place was saved from being plundered by the articles of capitulation, they must all get money on their shares, whether they will or not, their necessities are such '.

' So much the better for us, who can buy their shares ', answered the admiral. ' Their necessity is our gain '.

' Ay ', replied my master. ' But I don't find they intend selling. All they propose is, to mortgage '.

' Then, let them see who'll give them money ', said the general. ' No, no ; no mortgages for us. An absolute sale or nothing. We'll have no after-reckonings, no overhauling accounts. As to their being unwilling to sell, we'll manage that matter with them. When you have got them sufficiently in your books, call for your money, and, as it will be impossible for them to pay, apply to the commander-in-chief, who will oblige them to do you justice '.

' Why, to be sure, that must do ', answered my master. ' But how far am I to trust them ' ?

' This will show you ', replied the general. ' Here is the rate of all their shares. Look at the sum total. What noble fortunes that would have made for half a dozen reasonable men. It went to my heart to fritter it away among so many '.

' This ? This the rate of their shares ' ? said my master, not able to conceal his astonishment when he looked at the paper which the other gave him. ' It is possible that this should be all ' ?

'Yes', returned the admiral, 'and too much for them, too. More than most of them ever had before, or will make a good use of now'.

'Why, they'll mutiny, and cut all our throats', returned my master. 'There are several of them who owe me almost as much as this already. I thought they would have had ten times this sum at least. They'll certainly mutiny, and cut all our throats'.

'Don't you give yourself any trouble about their mutinying', said the general. 'Do you mind your business, and leave us to take care of that; their spirits will hardly be so high. If you have gone hand over head, and trusted them so far, you must abide by the loss. I thought I gave you a friendly caution about that before'.

'And so', returned my master, 'I am not to go beyond this rate, you say'?

'Not a penny', answered the admiral. 'That is your rule. Whatever you can beat down of that shall be your own'.

'That is deducting five per cent. agency', interposed the general, 'and five or ten per cent., as you can make your bargain, for prompt payment; for we will not appear to have any hand in the affair, further than paying you the money. It must not be known that we are concerned in the least'.

'You concerned'? replied my master. 'I don't understand you. Are you to be concerned with me in what I buy'?

'Not in the least', returned the admiral, 'any further than by employing you to act for us. You seem to mistake the matter entirely. You are to buy the shares for us, according to this rate, for which we will allow you a proper agency, and that is all the concern you are to have in the affair'.

'But I suppose', said my master, 'I may buy on my own account, if I please'?

'Buy on your own account'? interrupted the general. 'Such another word, and you shall neither sell nor buy anything here. Are not we the commander's agents? and do you think they will suffer us to be interloped upon? You may be very well content with the profits of your own business, without thinking to interfere in ours'.

'I ask your pardon, gentlemen', said my master, who knew their power too well to dispute with them, 'it was only a mistake. I by no means presume to interfere with you, and shall be proud to execute your orders, on whatever terms you think proper. I suppose, though, our former composition is to end. Provisions will now come in from every part, so that we can never think of keeping them up at their former prices'.

'Can't you, so'? answered the general. 'That shall be your own fault, then, and your own loss, too, I can tell you. Let provisions come in as they will, no one shall sell an ounce here without our permission, and that shall be on our own terms, you may be assured. Our hands are not tied up by laws. Ours is a military government, in which we can do what we please, without being accountable to anyone. So you may go on as before'.

'But, gentlemen', replied my master, 'you should consider that

the whole odium of this will fall upon me, as you do not appear in it, so that I shall lose my character for ever'.

'Your character? Ha! ha! ha!' interrupted the general, 'a sutler's character! I shall never be able to bear the word again. Pray, my good friend, what character had a sutler ever to lose, that would not be a greater loss to the finder? Come, here's my service to you. Go on with your business, and make money, and never fear suffering by the loss of your character. It is time for us to go and settle what taxes we shall lay upon the different kinds of merchandise that shall be brought here. Our duties shall be paid, as well as those of any king of them all. This is our reign, and if we do not make the most of it, we have no one to blame but ourselves'.

'And as rich as so many kings you will be', said my master, 'if you can carry off things in the manner you say'.

'As to our being rich', returned the admiral, 'that depends entirely upon our own management. Our principals, indeed, will be rich enough, which is all they care for; not what becomes of us, whom they would have do their business for nothing, or next to it. But they shall find themselves mistaken. Everything must go through our hands, and gold in handling will stick to the fingers, as the song says. We shall feather our nests in spite of them. They cannot do without us, and will hardly be fond of calling us to too strict an account, for fear of our telling tales. To be sure, the great harvest will be their's; but we will take toll'.

'I don't doubt but you will', said my master, 'twice over, for fear of mistake, as the miller does. Why, you'll make such fortunes that you won't know what to do with yourselves'.

'Never fear that', answered the general. 'We shall not be at a loss. For my part, I design to buy a borough, and push my fortune in parliament. That's the genteel business a gentleman can follow now, and the readiest way of advancing in life and making a family'.

'Now, I think otherwise', said the admiral, 'and that it is the most ungentee way; such dirty jobs are required for everything a man gets, that it is beneath a gentleman to do them. My scheme is to buy an Irish peerage at once, and then live splendidly, without troubling myself about anything. Or, if I should grow tired of idleness, go into parliament there, and turn patriot, and make speeches for the good of my country'.

'Both your schemes may be very good', said my master, 'but my ambition is not so high as either, at least as yet. I will try to get a contract, and then I shall not fear making a fortune sufficient to do what you propose, or more if I choose it, without being sneered at for my folly. You may say what you will, but there is more, to be got by a contract than by every other way, and, therefore, it is the genteel in my opinion. How many contractors have I seen buy noblemen's fine houses, and members of parliament's estates, with the profits of a single campaign? And so, my lord, and you, most honourable Mr Member, I am your humble servant'.

'Honest Mr Contractor', replied both at the same time, 'yours'!

CHAPTER LVI

AFFECTING CONSEQUENCES OF CARRYING THE FOREGOING SCHEMES INTO EXECUTION, WITH THE CONCLUSION OF THE CHARACTER AND HISTORY OF CHRYSAL'S MASTER—CHRYSAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE

As soon as this worthy pair had left my master, he set about his business of preying upon the necessities of every one who came near him, with as much keenness as a vulture tears a carrion, and with as little feeling, or he could never have gone through with it.

The transactions I now saw are a pain to memory. For the first few days after their success, the officers, under the same intoxication with my late master, the serjeant, gave a loose to every kind of extravagance, to compensate to themselves for the wants and hardships they had suffered. But no sooner had they advanced near the limits prescribed to their credit than the whole scene changed. The first mention of the amount of their respective shares was like a clap of thunder bursting over their heads. Their astonishment for some time deprived them of their senses. But when they were able to make a proper inquiry, and found the case to be but too true, their rage broke through all bounds, and rose almost to desperation. The horrors of a jail, the cries of a starving family, every aggravation of human misery stared them in the face, and made the very thought of returning to their native country too terrible to be endured. But there was no other remedy. Those from whom alone it could proceed, were too much interested to listen to their complaints, and, instead of preventing, permitted their authority to be prostituted to complete their ruin, in the manner proposed by their agents, so that the unhappy victims were forced to submit to the terms imposed upon them. The consequence of this, as I have said before, was that, to drown reflection, they spent whatever trifle remained to them on concluding the bargains which sealed their ruin in still greater excesses, and so precipitated the distress they feared. As for the private men, the impositions they suffered were, if possible, still severer (though from their insensibility, perhaps, not so severely felt), as the management of their affairs went through many more hands, every one of whom had a pull at them, down to the very lowest class of the harpies which prey upon an army, so that what remained to them was too trifling to be of any service, even to the very few who struggled with their necessities in order to save it.

I have not entered minutely into the particulars of this horrid scene. This slight sketch will give you a general notion of it, and that is as much as a humane heart can bear. Indeed, no description could reach the truth. I shall, therefore, only just finish the outlines of my master's character, and then pass on to the occurrences in my next service. The extortions to which he was himself forced to submit from those in authority, took off every shadow of shame (to conscience he had long been a stranger) and added double keenness to his natural propensity to extortion, by giving

it what he thought the appearance of justice, and provoking him to wreak his resentment upon others, for what he suffered himself from those above his reach. The opportunities for exerting his talents this way were infinite in a profession that is a mystery of iniquity too complicated to be unravelled, too black to be conceived, but upon experience, which he had acquired to the most consummate degree, in the gradual progression of his life. A natural sharpness of genius, which ought to have been curbed, not encouraged, had influenced his parents to bind him, when very young, to an attorney, under whom he learned, besides other valuable qualifications, the nice distinctions between law and justice, so as to know critically how far he could infringe upon the latter, without danger of getting within the reach of the former; but, encouraged by much success, he had at length unluckily happened to go too near those boundaries, and been obliged to quit that profession, after some common steps of descent from which, such as bailiff's follower, knight of the post, and bully to a bawdy-house, he stopped in that of footman to a beau, from which the necessary arts of prevaricating, lying, and evading disagreeable demands, the qualifications of his former character, soon raised him to be his gentleman. In this station, he added to his stock of accomplishments, natural and acquired, pimping, servility, adulation, and an absolute command of countenance, on the strength of all which, together with some little money, the fruits of his honest industry, on his master's fixing his habitation in jail, he set up a tavern, where his second-hand politeness and cringing behaviour soon brought him into business that enabled him to live better than he could have any right to have expected, and would in time have procured him an independence.

This success, which would have satisfied a reasonable person, only raised his ambition, and made him despise his business. Accordingly, he commenced wine-merchant, as more suitable to a gentleman, in which profession he went on, till his one-horse chaise, his country-house, and kept mistress would have brought him back to his primitive poverty, had not his knowledge of the world taught him how to secrete from his creditors something to try his hand upon in some other way, when he pitched upon his present occupation of a sutler, in which this account of his life shows he was most eminently fitted to make a figure. Thus qualified in himself, and supported by his employers, he proceeded making his bargains, with a success to which it may be thought no regard to honesty, no sense of compassion, was the least impediment. He flattered, professed the highest respect and attachment, and pressed his goods upon his destined victims with every insinuating art, till he got them into his snare, when he directly put on all the insolence of power, and made even ruin still more wretched by the cruelty with which he drove them to it, the insensibility with which he treated them after. How often have I seen him refuse to trust for a glass of what he called wine, to cool his raging thirst and comfort his fainting heart, the man whom, but a day or two before, he had cajoled into the excesses which drew him into that distress. After some days of painful attention to such shocking scenes, I

had the pleasure of being paid away to the captain of a merchant ship for some liquors, of which he had the address to deceive the vigilance of the ruling powers and all their emissaries, and convey impost free to my master.

CHAPTER LVII

CHRYSAI'S MASTER SWALLOWS A PILL, AND PLEADS AN IMPORTANT CAUSE WITHOUT SUCCESS—A CURIOUS METHOD OF PARRYING ONE FALSE OATH BY ANOTHER, WITH THE FIRST OATH TAKEN BY THE MASTER OF A MERCHANTMAN—HE SHOWS ANOTHER INSTANCE OF HIS SKILL IN STEERING CLEAR OF PERJURY, BUT WITHOUT HIS FORMER SUCCESS—CHRYSAI CHANGES HIS SERVICE

THE care which I knew to be taken to detect and punish this kind of illicit trade made me wonder at first that it should even be attempted; but I soon found that the danger of such detection, when it depends solely on the confession of those concerned, however forceful the means made use of to extort that confession, is held at naught by a set of people, bred in the grossest ignorance of every principle of moral virtue or religious obligation, and hardened by long habit into contempt of whatever clashes with their interest. When I came into the possession of my new master, he was going to attend two great men, whose conversation with the sutler I have just now related, in obedience to a summons sent him the moment he entered the harbour. The reception he met with was suited to their importance. He was obliged to wait a considerable time before they were at leisure to see him, when, being admitted to their presence, and having delivered in his bill of lading, and taken his oath that he had no private trade on board, nor anything which was not contained in that account, they informed him what duties he must pay on every article before he should be permitted to land them.

My master, though he was sufficiently apprised of this before, affected surprise, and attempted to expostulate with them on the illegality and injustice of such a demand, alleging that the goods had been purchased at the highest prices, in order to send a speedy and effectual supply to the troops, who were known to want them, so that there could be no advance made upon them which could defray such additional duties; that his owners, not in the least suspecting any such, had given him no power to pay them, and that many of the commodities, being of a perishable nature, must be damaged, if not permitted to be landed directly, by which means not only the merchants would be great losers, but also the troops suffer severely for the want of common necessaries, which they could not otherwise be supplied with. But all he could say had no effect; they did not even deign to make him any answer, further than that they had authority for what they did, and expected obedience, not arguments, which they had not leisure to listen to.

Such a repulse, however unjust in itself, and personally offensive-

in the manner of it, was far from giving my master any concern. On the contrary, the difficulties which it threw upon the business of his owners afforded him an opportunity of carrying on his own private trade to advantage, which no oaths they could devise were able to put a stop to, as an instance or two of his conduct will show.

Some suspicion having arisen of his commerce with the sutler, of which no direct proof could be obtained, he was summoned to appear before the tax-gatherers, to acquit himself by his oath of so heinous an offence. The sutler, who knew the consequence of being convicted, and with all his knowledge of the world saw no possibility of avoiding it, gave himself up as ruined. But my master soon showed him the convenience of a conscience trained to swearing, for, calling upon him the morning they were to appear at the dread tribunal, and seeing him so cast down — 'Cheer up, brother', said he, 'I'll bring you safe through the strait. By the virtue and contents of this book', pulling one out of his pocket, and kissing it in form, 'I will never swear that you have bought anything from me; so throw off that sneaking, Tyburn look, and come along'.

Such an assurance naturally gave the sutler some spirits, though he could not conceive how he meant to make it good; but a little time cleared up the mystery, and showed him the force of a custom-house oath. As soon as the two culprits appeared before their judges, the latter, assuming all the dignity of their office, exaggerated the charge in the strongest colours, and administering the oath to my master, demanded, in an authoritative tone, whether he had not sold uncustomed goods to the sutler, and to what amount, who, not in the least disconcerted either by the question or the manner in which it was put — 'Why, look you, gentlemen', answered he, turning the quid in his cheek, and pulling up his breeches at the hips with both his hands, 'as to that affair, by the virtue of my oath, if I should swear that I sold him any, I should be forsworn, and I'll always try to weather that point if I can'.

As there was no more than a general suspicion against the criminals, this answer satisfied the sagacity of their judges, and they were dismissed with flying colours.

When they were alone — 'Well', said my master, shaking his friend by the hand, 'I told you I would bring you off. Let that be an example to you for the future. None but fools convict themselves, and none but greater fools expect it. I should have little business in the merchant's service if I scrupled to swallow such a pill as that every day of my life. No, no; they must be cunning if they can make an oath that will stick in the throat of the captain of a merchantman, even if he can't find an opening to steer through, as was the case here. We have a salvo for such things. The first oath we take, as soon as we get into employment is, never to swear the truth to a custom-house officer while we live, so that all the oaths they give us go for nothing'.

But with all this cleverness, he sometimes failed of success. A lieutenant of a man-of-war happening, as he was rowing guard one night, to see a boat put off from our ship, pursued it, as he knew it must be a smuggler. The crew, observing the lieutenant's

boat gain fast upon them, and knowing it was impossible to escape, threw their cargo overboard, and ran the boat ashore, to save themselves from being taken, leaving her to the captors, who towed her away in triumph.

The chief of the smugglers was my master's son, who, in the account he gave him of the affair on his return, was proceeding to tell him the names of those that were with him, but the father, stopping him, cried, 'Avast! coil up your tongue; I desire to hear no more of them. Have you a mind to make me forswear myself when I go to recover my boat? for have her again you know I must, as I cannot get another here, nor carry on any business without one'.

Accordingly, next morning he made public inquiry after his boat, which he pretended had been stolen from his ship's side, and finding her in the possession of the lieutenant, demanded to have her restored directly, and, on his refusal, had him summoned before the officers of the customs, who were judges in such affairs. As he grounded his claim on her having been taken away without his privity, and by persons unknown to him, he was put to the common test of an oath, whether he knew who was in her when she was pursued by the captors.

'By the virtue of my oath, gentlemen', answered he, without the least hesitation, 'I do not know one of them'.

So direct an answer satisfied the judges, who were noways concerned in the affair, but that was not the case with the lieutenant.

'Hold, sir', said he to my master, who was sheering off, laughing in his sleeve. 'What is that you say'?

'I say', answered my master, nothing disconcerted, 'that I don't know one of them'.

'One of them'? returned the lieutenant, who instantly saw through the evasion. 'But do you know any of them? Take care what you say. Perhaps I know more than you think I do'.

'Why, as to that', replied my master, laughing, 'I cannot say so much. Perhaps I may know some of them'.

'How'? interposed the judge, offended at an answer which he thought showed a slight of his authority. 'Did not you swear this moment that you did not know one of them'?

'Nor do I', answered my master. 'There were twelve in the boat, of whom I know only eleven, and sure, in that case, I can safely swear I do not know one, that is, the twelfth of them. Ha! ha! ha!'

'Take care, sir', replied the judge, 'how you trifle before us again. You know the punishment of perjury if you should be caught tripping'.

'Never fear', said my master, 'I know the compass of my conscience too well for that. Thus, thus, and no nearer, is my trim. I'll never break an oath; but if I can give it the go-by at the leeside thus by a double meaning, I hope that's no offence'. Then, turning to the lieutenant—'Well, sir,' continued he, 'it seems you have carried too much sail for me this trip, but if I meet you upon a wind again, mind your helm, or I may chance to fall aboard you. However, since I cannot have my boat cheaper, I must e'en come to your terms, so what do you ask for it'?

To this proposal the lieutenant made no objection. Setting, therefore, his price, my master paid him for the boat, and then walked off without concern or shame. I here quitted his service, of which I was heartily tired, and entered into that of the lieutenant.

CHAPTER LVIII

CHRYSAI MAKES SOME REFLECTIONS ON THE POLICY OF IMPOSING OATHS OF EXCULPATION—THE PROPER METHOD OF PRESERVING THE VALIDITY OF OATHS, WITH THE CONSEQUENCES OF THEIR BEING ADMINISTERED INDISCRIMINATELY TO ALL PERSONS, AND ON ALL OCCASIONS—AN UNCOMMON LECTURE FROM A CAPTAIN OF A MAN-OF-WAR TO HIS OFFICERS REPRESENTS SOME POLITE AMUSEMENTS IN AN ODD LIGHT

I SEE you are shocked at such flagrant instances of profligacy, of barefaced contempt of everything most sacred and important. They certainly are a reproach to human nature, but that reproach must not be confined to those alone who obviously incur it. They who, from false principles of policy, gave the occasion against the conviction of reason and experience, are at least equally guilty.

The impotency of man to resist temptation is such, that he is taught to pray against it. Why, then, should those who are entrusted with the care of directing his actions in the common intercourse of life, lay snares to lead him into it, which there is no probability of his avoiding? Appealing to the attestation of the Deity is most certainly the highest assurance possible to be given by any being, who has a sense of his dependence on that Deity, nor should ever be given, but on the most important occasions, and in the most solemn manner, nor accepted but from such as may be presumed to understand the nature of it. In such circumstances, it would never be violated. Man is not so desperately abandoned as to run with his eyes open into inexplicable perdition. But when that attestation is given lightly for every trifle, when it is placed in opposition to interest, and demanded from such as cannot be supposed to know its consequence, the reverence which should be its guard is taken off, the violation becomes familiar, and, of course, the end, for which it is thus impiously and injudiciously prostituted, disappointed, and by that means the most sacred assurance of life rendered void, the bond of social confidence and safety broken.

The effects of this absurd policy of making the obligations of religion the common test of truth on trivial occasions, and where interest is concerned, are more extensive than is generally imagined. The immediate wants of nature engross the attention of the greater part of mankind too much to let them see the congruity of moral virtue, however evident to exerted reason; wherefore, the threats and promises of religion were found necessary to enforce the practice of it; but as the accomplishment of those is placed at a distance, when they interfere with present enjoyments, their force

wears off, the threats lose their terrors, and the promises are slighted by those who look no farther than the instant moment. And this is the great source of that immorality and irreligion so prevalent in life, and which will never be corrected till legislators make oaths less common, prevent their interfering with the swearer's own interest, as in the instances which gave occasion to these reflections, explain their nature before they are administered, and inflict instant punishment on their violation.

My new master had but just returned on board, when the captain received orders to go and assist the operations of the war in another part of the world. The news raised everyone's spirits. The sight of a place in which most of them had been guilty of excesses which drew them into distress, and where all had been so wretchedly disappointed, was necessarily disagreeable, and consequently a removal to another, where a new object attracted their attention from such reflections, and awoke new hopes, however likely to end in the same manner as the former, gave them pleasure.

There was a decency in the behaviour of both men and officers in this ship so very different from what I had seen in others, as to strike me with an agreeable surprise. But I was not long at a loss for the reason. As soon as the ship was under sail, the captain summoned all his officers into the great cabin, and after some general instructions about their duty—'Gentlemen', said he, addressing himself to my master and another, who had been but lately appointed to his ship, 'as we have never sailed together before, I must desire your attention to a few hints, which I always take the liberty to give in such circumstances. We are now shut up together in a prison, where the unavoidable inconveniences of our situation make all our care necessary to prevent its becoming insupportable to us. For this reason, the first thing I recommend to you is, not to game. Beside the danger of disagreement when the passions are agitated by the vicissitudes of play, our pay is scarce sufficient for our support, so that the least loss must be distressing, the consequence of which must be general unhappiness, for who can see his companion miserable, without sharing in his misery? There is another thing, against which, though not commonly considered in this light, I must earnestly caution you, as inevitably throwing a gloom over that cheerfulness of mind, which is the greatest happiness of life, and to us must supply the place of every other happiness, and this is the vice of profane cursing and swearing, to the reproach of our service, too prevalent among us'.

'There is no man, however hardened in this detestable habit, but knows it to be a crime, and feels a check from within every time he is guilty of it, the repetition of which self-accusation sours his temper, and makes him dissatisfied with himself, and every person and thing about him. For the truth of this, I appeal to unvaried experience. Who ever saw a man serenely cheerful, that was addicted to this vice (I might say indeed, to any vice, but as our situation precludes us from the practice of most others, I mention these only into which we may fall) ; for occasional mirth is a very different thing, and too often leads into consequences

destructive of serenity of mind, especially when it is raised by means inconsistent with virtue.

‘I do not speak of the effect which the practice of virtue has upon our resolution. The courage of a Briton can never be doubted ; but still there is as much difference between that of a virtuous and a vicious man, as of the same person when sober, or intoxicated with liquor. The former is uniform, steady, and attentive to improve every advantage or remedy any misfortune, the other, boisterous, headlong, and blinded with passion ; for passion only can make a man face death, who, in the cool moment of reflection, is afraid to die. In a word, one is the courage of a man, the other, the rashness of a brute. Against these two things, therefore gaming and swearing, I take the liberty to caution you, as a friend, who is sincerely desirous of your welfare. But there is another vice, in respect to which I do not think myself obliged to observe the same delicacy, and this is drunkenness, which is liable to be attended with such dangerous consequences in our situation in particular—for I think it unnecessary to mention any other—that I shall ever exert all the authority entrusted to me to suppress it, and therefore it is but just for me to declare that no officer, who is once guilty of it under my command, shall ever do duty under me more.

‘This, gentlemen, is what I had to say to you. The observation of these few hints will make us happy among ourselves, and respected by our men, without which it is impossible for us to be well obeyed by them ; for, heedless and profligate as they may appear, they are the severest critics on the conduct of their officers, and not only like people in higher stations revere the virtues which they have not resolution to imitate, but also actually do imitate them in a great degree’.

VOLUME III

CHAPTER I

THE FOLLY OF A PERSON PROSTITUTING HIS CHARACTER TO PLEASE HIS COMPANY AGGRAVATED BY THE DANGEROUS MISTAKE OF RIDICULE FOR APPLAUSE—CHRYSLAL'S MASTER CHANGES PLACE WITH THE CHAPLAIN, AND PREACHES HIM AN INTERESTING SERMON, IN WHICH, AMONG REMARKS MORE JUST THAN POLITE, HE GIVES AN UNCOMMON REASON FOR THE PARTICULAR DEFORMITY OF VICE IN WOMEN

I HAVE already taken notice of the effect which the advice and example of the captain had upon every one in the ship. The officers lived like a family of brothers, and the men did their duty with regularity and pleasure; but, though all paid due respect to what he said, it was impossible to work such an instantaneous reformation; but that some of them would now and then jest among themselves upon his conduct, as, from comparison with that of others of his rank, inconsistent with his character; and in other respects indulge in the levities of discourse and behaviour too general among persons not much accustomed to the rules of rational conversation.

But, whatever allowances the circumstances of their education might claim for such sallies in the officers, the person who transgressed most was certainly entitled to none. This was the chaplain, who, to avoid the imputation of being hypocritically sanctified, ran into the opposite extreme. The selfish vanity of man always takes pleasure in seeing any person debase himself by acting beneath his character, especially if that character is such as appears to be placed in a more respectable point of view than their own. The officers, who in general look upon a chaplain as no better than lumber in a ship, and think he is placed as a kind of check upon them, were pleased with his prostitution, which he, by a common mistake of ridicule for applause, gave still further into, imagining they laughed with him, when, in reality, they laughed at him.

But my master beheld the matter in another light, and, taking an opportunity one day, when the chaplain and he were by themselves in the ward-room, 'I have observed with much concern, sir', said he, 'that you are falling into an error, which I have known prove fatal to many gentlemen of your profession. This is departing from your character in order to accommodate yourself to what you think the humour of your company. Believe me, sir, no man ever did so who did not immediately fall into contempt with the very people whose approbation he strove to purchase at so dear a rate. The greatest libertine despises a clergyman who is a libertine; and the reason is plain. You are set apart from the rest of

mankind to perform the rites of religion, and inculcate virtue by your precepts and example; and for this you are paid by the public, who expect that you should earn your wages, by doing your duty; and look upon those who do not as no better than cheats. This may appear an odd way of speaking, but it is true nevertheless. On the other hand, where a clergyman fulfils his duty, and enforces his preaching by his practice, though he may not absolutely reform all those with whom he converses, yet he will certainly work this good effect, that he will keep them in awe, and prevent their running into outrageous lengths of wickedness, at least in his presence. For, whatever people may inconsiderately imagine, no man ever acted in character, who was not respected; no man ever acted out of character who was not despised.

‘Do but reflect a moment in what light you yourself would look upon a lady who should speak obscenely, swear, drink, and talk of fighting, and it will show you the justice of this remark. For what makes these vices so particularly hateful in a woman, is not anything in their nature particularly contradictory to the sex more than ours, but because they are contrary to her character. I beg your pardon, sir, for talking to you in this free manner, in respect to your conduct, which I am sensible concerns only yourself; but as the errors you too have fallen into appear to have arisen merely from inadvertency and mistake, I think it my duty to caution you against the danger of them, particularly in your present situation, with which I have had the opportunity of being much better acquainted than you possibly can be. I was in the service long, very long, before you were born, and have been intimate with many chaplains, but never one who prostituted his character to humour his company, who was not neglected by them when they had it in their power to have served him; as, on the contrary, I have known many instances of those who have reaped the happy fruits of a regular and virtuous conduct, by which they acquired an esteem that proved the foundation of their fortune; and if all have not been equally successful, their disappointment must be attributed to some other cause. I would not by this be understood to advise you to a morose distance and stiffness of behaviour, or asperity of reproof upon every occasion. They seldom, if ever, do good in any situation; in yours they will certainly do hurt, by piquing false pride to act in opposition to them, without regard to the consequences. An obliging temper, and a uniformly decent conduct, lead insensibly to imitation, where contradiction or direct admonition would be held impertinent. These hints are so obvious that they may seem unnecessary; but it is want of attention to them which has made so many chaplains miscarry in life, and indeed has brought the very character into disrepute’.

¶ The chaplain, who wanted neither natural good sense, nor virtuous inclination, was struck with the justice and force of this rebuke. He thanked my master in the most ingenuous manner, and promised to regulate his future conduct by his advice. Such a change at first naturally exposed him to the merriment of his companions; but as my master took his part, and showed them the injustice of such

behaviour, it soon wore off, and he had the heartfelt satisfaction to find himself treated with friendly respect and confidence by those whose gross familiarity had before often given him pain, as it evidently implied contempt.

CHAPTER II

CHRYSAI DESCRIBES TRUE COMPASSION ; AND SHOWS THE GENERAL CONSEQUENCE OF A MAN'S ACKNOWLEDGING DISTRESS, WITH THE REASONS OF IT—CHRYSAI'S MASTER IS PREVAILED UPON BY HIS CAPTAIN TO TELL HIM THE CAUSE OF HIS MELANCHOLY, WHICH IS REMOVED BY AN ACT OF UNCOMMON GENEROSITY—CHRYSAI ENTERS INTO A NEW SERVICE

As the captain maintained the most friendly intercourse with his officers, he soon observed that my master laboured under some heavy distress of mind. This naturally raised his compassion ; and as real compassion never sees distress which it is not desirous of alleviating, he frequently took occasion, when they were by themselves, to turn his discourse upon such subjects as he thought might lead him to open himself ; but finding that modesty or reserve, contracted from long acquaintance with misfortune, and observation that the knowledge of a man's being in distress always sinks him in the esteem of his companions, by cutting off their hopes of service from him, and alarming their apprehensions of his expecting assistance from them, prevented his taking the hint, he resolved to break through forms and ask him directly.

Seeing him, therefore, one day walking the quarter-deck in a mood of deepest melancholy, he called him into the great cabin, and desiring him to sit down, after a little general chat, 'I fear, sir', said he, 'that something hangs upon your spirits. If it is proper to be communicated, let me know what it is, and depend upon every assistance in my power to make you easy. I ask not from idle or impertinent curiosity.'

'Sir', answered my master, struck with the manner in which he spoke, 'I believe you above the influence of such motives, and shall therefore obey your kind commands without scruple. It is too true that I am unhappy ; and I fear my unhappiness is too common. I have devoted my life to a profession in which I have served my country above forty years with fidelity ; and I will take the liberty to say with some success. And now when my constitution is broken with wounds, fatigue, and change of climates, when nature calls for rest and refreshment, the only reward I have to expect is poverty, and its inseparable attendant, contempt. This, sir, is the cause of my unhappiness ; and such a cause as I believe you will think to be a just one'.

'Very true, sir', replied the captain, 'it is a just one ; and what must affect every man of spirit, and a generous way of thinking. But you should not yield to it too far. You are still in the vigour

of life; and, while the war continues, should look forward with hope. Though you have been unsuccessful hitherto, fortune may prove more kind'.

'Alas, sir', returned my master, 'I have been so long cheated by hope, that I now detest it. When I came out upon this last expedition, our force made me so confident of success, and I was so well acquainted with the wealth in the place, that I, unhappily, gave way to hope, and ran into expenses, which, though far from being unnecessary, were imprudent, and threaten now to involve me in ruin on my return home, as it had been thought proper by our superiors to rate our service in the conquest at so low a price'.

'If that is the case, then', said the captain, 'do not return till matters mend. Whenever I am ordered home, I'll take care to get you removed into another ship. Your staying abroad on such an account is not inconsistent with the strictest honour, as you do it with an intention truly honest'.

'Dear sir', answered my master, 'that is very true. But I am precluded even from the wretched relief of a voluntary exile. I have a wife and children at home, the apprehension of whose distresses drives me to despair. It was to clothe and settle them in a little habitation, where they might enjoy the indispensable necessities of life with some degree of comfort, that I anticipated my success in the manner I mentioned; and now, as the success has fallen so far short of what I thought just expectation, all the former savings of my life—savings from the very necessities of nature—will be torn away by the rapacious hands of merciless creditors, to make up the deficiency in the articles bought of themselves to discharge their demands, and my wretched family thrown upon the unfriendly world, without its being in my power to assist them. I must, therefore, return, and go into jail to prevent their starving in the streets. What affected myself only, honest indignation enabled me to support. I have seen boys whose ignorance I despised, and men whose principles I detested, preferred to command, while my services were overlooked; but, as I had not the interest of the former, nor the modish merit of the latter, I bore my fate with patience. But to have those dearer to me than life exposed to misery, is more than I can bear'.

'Nor shall you bear it'! replied the captain, who had feigned to cough to hide the sympathetic tear that glistened in his eye. 'Nor shall you bear it! How much is the debt that alarms you? I will advance it for you directly; and not that only, I will take upon me to make your merit—to which I am no stranger—known to your superiors, in such a light as shall not fail of just reward'.

'Oh, sir'! returned my master, as soon as the fulness of his heart gave him utterance, 'how can I submit to obligations to which it is impossible I should ever make any return'.

'All the return I desire', answered the captain, 'is your friendship. Speak! how much do you want? The packet is yet in sight. I will order a signal to be made for her, and give you a draft upon my agent'.

'Good Heaven!' exclaimed my master, 'can there be such virtue in man'.

'Come! what is the sum?' interrupted the captain, who wanted to shorten a conversation that began to be too affecting to him. 'I shall think you doubt my sincerity if you hesitate to accept my friendship'.

'Such a doubt', returned my master, whose heart a gush of tears had lightened, 'would be a blacker crime than ever stained my soul. No; I receive your beneficence with humble gratitude, as from the hand of Heaven, nor will mention any other return but what must be made to that, till it shall be pleased to bless me with better ability'. Then pulling out his pocket-book, 'Here is the account of what I owe', continued he, giving him some papers and a purse containing little more than his share of the price of the smuggler's boat; 'and here is all my worldly wealth, which is no more than an assignment of my miserable prize-money, and these few pieces of gold, thrown by fortune in my way, mostly since our hands were tied up by the capitulation. For the balance I must be your debtor'.

'For the balance', answered the captain, returning the purse and the assignment. 'No, you shall be my debtor, if you will call it so, for the whole. It would be strange friendship to strip you of everything. You may want yourself'.

'Excuse me, sir', interrupted my master, unable to suppress the delicacy, the dignity of honour; 'I am not so low a wretch as to accept of more than I indispensably want; and that for persons dearer to me than myself. If you will not permit me to make the debt as light as I can, it is impossible for me to receive your friendship, however essential to the happiness of my heart. I am sorry you should have entertained so mean an opinion of me'.

'I have the highest opinion of you', replied the captain, who saw what pain he had given him; 'and spoke in the warmth of my regard, without the most distant design of giving you offence. But you shall make your own terms, on this condition, though, that if you have any occasion for money, you will apply to me with the freedom of a friend'.

To such a proposal it was impossible to refuse assenting. My master complied, and the captain taking the money, etc., from him, desired that he would order a signal to be made for the packet, and write his letters, while he himself should draw a bill upon his agent. The sentiments expressed by the captain made it a pleasure to me to pass into his service on this occasion. As soon as the lieutenant went out, my new master walked a turn or two about his cabin, in the exalted happiness of conscious virtue; and then drawing a bill for considerably more than the lieutenant was to pay, he desired that he should be called, and when he entered, 'I beg your pardon', said he, 'for interrupting you, but it is to desire that you will present my compliments to your wife, and tell her I beg she will accept of a trifling present from me, which I have taken the liberty to include in the bill. Come! no words! In this I will not be contradicted'.

'Oh, sir!' answered the lieutenant, catching his hand, as he

reached him the bill, and kissing it eagerly, 'this is too much! my heart will burst'. Saying which he went out of the cabin in a silence more expressive of his soul than all the flights of eloquence.

CHAPTER III

HISTORY OF A LIEUTENANT OF A MAN-OF-WAR—A COMPARISON BETWEEN THE REWARDS OF MERIT IN THE LAND AND SEA SERVICES; WITH A REMARKABLE INSTANCE OF A GREAT MAN'S REMEMBERING AN OLD FRIEND—THE CONSEQUENCE OF ATTEMPTING TO SET UP FOR A MENDER OF MANNERS, AND OF A MAN'S NOT MEETING AN OPPORTUNITY OF MAKING HIMSELF REMARKABLE

WHEN everything was settled, and the packet sailed, the lieutenant desired leave to wait upon my master; and as soon as he entered, 'I come, sir', said he, 'to pay you the thanks which the fulness of my heart would not let me utter before. You have raised me to happiness from the lowest state of despair'.

'Hold, my friend'! answered my master, taking his hand, and squeezing it tenderly. 'Speak no more of it, I conjure you. I am abundantly overpaid for what I have done, by the pleasure of having served a man of merit; and shall think you repine at my happiness in being able to purchase that pleasure, if I ever hear the affair mentioned more.'

To relieve the lieutenant, whom he saw oppressed with gratitude, he then changed the conversation to another subject, when the lieutenant showed so much good sense, and solid judgment, that my master could not forbear expressing his astonishment that such a man should have been so long unpromoted in the service.

'If you can have patience to hear the story of my life', answered the lieutenant, 'it will soon explain that difficulty to you. My father was an officer in the army, who was rewarded for the loss of a leg and thirty years' service with the half-pay of a captain of foot. As he had a wife and children to maintain and provide for, he retired to a cheap country, where he lived in the most rigid economy, in the hopes of saving, for he could not make anything, being precluded from every kind of industry by the profession to which he had devoted his youth. The first acquaintance a stranger gets in a country place is the parson of the parish. It was my father's happiness to fix his habitation where there was a clergyman¹ who would have been a valuable acquaintance in any place, and who was equally happy in the acquisition of a rational acquaintance in him. The common intercourse of neighbourhood was, therefore, soon improved between them into the strongest friendship, in the intimacy of which, as my father would often naturally mention his anxiety for his children, his friend persuaded him to breed me, the eldest, to the sea service, in which he thought he himself might be able to serve me, by his interest with several commanders,

¹ Bishop of Derry [Davis's *Olio*].

with whom he had been acquainted formerly, when chaplain to a man-of-war. "That is the service"! would the good man say, with pleasure sparkling in his eyes. "That is the service in which merit is never disregarded. You would not have been laid aside after thirty years to pine upon five shillings a day, if you had been bred to the sea. No! no! merit is all that is necessary there".

'Such an argument was too flattering to my father's hopes to be resisted. Though he felt the evil of not having been bred to a business himself, he was charmed at the thought of his son's being placed in the way of rising to a higher sphere; and readily assented to the advice of his friend, who, not content with mere advice, insisted on taking me home with him, and giving me such an education as should qualify me to make a figure in the profession to which he had directed me. "If ever a man of merit in the sea service", would he often say, "fails of rising, it is for want of having had a good education to found his hopes upon. A mere seaman may work a ship, but an admiral should be a scholar".

'How well this reasoning was founded experience daily shows; though it would be ingratitude in me to arraign it, as the little taste for letters which I acquired from his care, if it has not contributed to my advancement, has at least, enabled me to support the shock of disappointment, as well as to avoid many evils, into which I have seen others, who had not the same advantage, fall. At sixteen—for he insisted that it was most wretched policy to turn a boy loose upon the world before he had come to the use of reason, and as well instructed in the principles of morality and religion, for the sake of gaining a couple of years advance—at sixteen, I say, I was sent to sea, provided with a chest of books, and mathematical instruments, and a good suit of clothes, not to discredit the recommendation which my best friend gave me to an admiral¹, with whom he had been most intimate when a lieutenant; and whose readiness to serve him in anything he would not admit a doubt of. On my presenting my letter, the admiral at first had forgot the name, but recollecting himself at length on my mentioning some circumstances which I had often heard my friend dwell upon with pleasure, "Very true", said he; "I remember him now. He made the best bowl of punch of any man in the navy".

'This was all the notice the great man took of him, or of me on his account, except, I should add, that on his captain's observing I should make a good figure on the quarter-deck, I was directly rated a midshipman—a favour for which I soon found I was indebted to his caution of sending me well dressed, much more than to his interest. Though I felt this disappointment of my first hopes very

¹ Admiral Thomas Mathews [1676-1751], described by Mr J. K. Laughton as a choleric old man of the traditional John Bull type. He virtually retired from the service in 1724, but in 1742 was sent as commander-in-chief to the Mediterranean, to watch the Spanish and French fleets. Through his long absence from the navy, he was out of touch with any of his officers, and the result was disastrous. The enemy got away after inflicting damage on the British fleet, and Mathews was court-martialed and disgraced.

severely, on my friend's account as well as my own, I could not think of shocking him with the news, but saying in general terms that I had been well received, resolved to apply myself to my business, and try whether I could not deserve that favour which he had failed to procure me. As I had been accustomed to conversation very different from that of those with whom alone I could now converse, I took every opportunity, when off duty, of running to my books. But the relief I found from this was for the present over-balanced by the general ridicule into which it drew me; especially as I not only avoided obscenity, swearing, and drinking myself, but had also been so imprudent as to rebuke others for them, I was immediately nicknamed the parson, and avoided by everyone in the ship. I need not describe to you the situation of a *petit* officer, insulted by those below him, ridiculed by his equals, and looked down upon with contempt by his superiors, who forgot they ever were in his station themselves. I bore it for fifteen years, at the end of which time, having the good fortune to be sent to London with a press-gang, on purpose to mortify me—for I always disliked that particular duty more than any other in the service—on seeing an advertisement in the newspapers, that all who were qualified by their standing to be lieutenants in the navy, should attend to pass their examination, I offered myself without any other introduction, or interest, and was appointed to a ship. In this station I have now done my duty for five and twenty years, without reprehension; but as I have no corporation interest to push me at home; none of the modern polite accomplishments to recommend me to the favourites of fortune, whom I occasionally meet in the service, nor have ever had the good luck to find an opportunity of making myself remarkable, by any action of *éclat*, though in itself no more than a successful blunder, my uniform conduct and care have passed unnoticed, and I remain a lieutenant still'.

The circumstances of this story affected my master in the strongest manner. He took the lieutenant by the hand, and desiring him not to despair, repeated his promise of using all his interest to serve him, of the success of which he had no reason to doubt.

Nothing particular happened during our voyage. One instance, though, of my master's conduct in his military capacity I cannot forbear mentioning, as it shows his character in the strongest light, which was, that he never interfered in the business of his officers; but if he happened to see anything which he disapproved, instead of interposing his own authority publicly, and giving contrary orders, he always spoke privately to the officer on duty and giving him directions under the appearance of advice, let the alteration proceed as immediately from him, by which means he spared him the pain of being found fault with before the men, and consequently lessened in their opinion. This delicacy not only endeared him to them all, but also contributed greatly to advance the service. For as every officer knew that he should have the credit or bear the blame of his own actions, they all exerted themselves with the utmost ardour; whereas, on the contrary, where a captain is continually interfering, and leaving nothing for his officers to do, they grow careless, of course, and do nothing, as they know he will arrogate

to himself the merit of success ; if they do not even take a malignant pleasure in any miscarriage, the blame of which they have so just an opportunity of throwing upon him.

CHAPTER IV

AN UNCOMMON METHOD OF CARRYING ON A WAR, WITH THE DANGER OF SPEAKING THE TRUTH TOO PLAINLY AT AN IMPROPER TIME—CHRYSLAL'S MASTER MEETS HIS BROTHER—SOME ACCOUNT OF HIM—HE REPRESENTS CERTAIN MATTERS IN AN ODD LIGHT—CHRYSLAL ENTERS INTO HIS SERVICE—CONCLUSION OF HIS CHARACTER—CHRYSLAL QUITS HIS SERVICE ON AN UNCOMMON OCCASION, FOR ONE FROM WHICH HE PASSES, IN THE USUAL COURSE OF BUSINESS, INTO THAT OF THE GENERAL

WHEN we arrived at the place of our destination¹, we found the shore covered with an extensive encampment, and everything wearing the appearance of the most active war. The first thing my master² did was of course to wait upon the general³, whose operations he was sent to assist. He met him viewing an occasional fortification, which he had caused to be raised to train his army to the method of making regular sieges and attacks, and marking out a piece of ground to be sowed with vegetables, to correct the bad effects of the salt provisions which his men had lived upon in their passage thither, and preserve them in health. The account he received from my master of the heavy loss sustained in the expedition from which he had just come, gave him visible pleasure, as it seemed to set his own conduct, which was diametrically the reverse of that observed there, in the most advantageous light.

'I wonder', said he, looking around him with an air of conscious exultation, 'how officers can reconcile it to themselves to throw away the lives of their men in such a manner. For my part, I act upon very different principles. I take care not only to give my troops an insight into all the various branches of the military art, but also to keep them in such health as may enable them to reap the advantage of their experience. There is nothing so bad in war as precipitation ; it was the sole cause of the late general's defeat and death'.

¹ Nova Scotia, where forces were gathering under Lord Loudoun against the French. The date is the early part of 1757.

² The character is now changed to William Howe (afterwards Viscount Howe), brother of the third Viscount, who fell at Ticonderoga, and of Earl Howe, the admiral. He was a brilliant officer, and a personal friend of Wolfe. At Quebec, he led the forlorn hope that seized the path to the heights of Abraham.

³ The fourth Earl of Loudoun [1705-82]. His dilatoriness in preparing to attack the French, and the embargo he laid on all outward-bound vessels, in order to keep his plans secret, led to his recall. General Amherst succeeded him.

'Yes', interrupted an officer¹ who stood near, and had hearkened to him with evident impatience. 'Delay is full as bad. Your troops want neither health nor experience to conquer every opposition they can possibly meet, and will accomplish the end they were sent upon before your cabbages are fit for them to eat, if you will but lead them against their enemies, and not give them time to retire with their effects into places whither it is impossible for an army to pursue them, while your men waste their time and spirits in the foolish parade of mock battles and sieges, till they lose their ardour with delays which can answer no end but that of protracting the war, and thereby lengthening a lucrative command'.

Such an attack was quite unexpected, and struck the general with equal surprise and indignation, as it touched him in the tenderest part; however, dissembling his passion, of which he had an absolute command—'I would have you to know, sir', said he, 'that I think it the highest assurance in you to attempt censuring my conduct, who are sent merely to execute my orders. When I ask your opinion, it will be time enough for you to give it, till then, obedience, not advice, is what I expect from you. If I did not hold it beneath me to show resentment to one so absolutely subject to my power, you should instantly find the effect of this insolence. But presume not on that protection any further, as you regard your safety. No man provokes me with impunity'.

'N—n—nor me', sputtered the officer, whose temper, hot as that of the general was cool, caught fire at the faintest shadow of offence, and inflamed almost to madness, as soon as rage permitted him to articulate a word. 'Nor m—m—me. I seek no p—p—protection but my sword, with which I will v—v—vindicate my own honour, and make good what I say. Talk to m—m—me of safety and im—p—p—punity'!

The affair now became serious, these words striking at the general's safety as well as his honour, and convincing him that he must support his dignity by a vigorous effort.

'What'? retorted he, therefore, with a tone and air of offended authority. 'Do you menace me, too? I suppose you design to raise a mutiny in the army, but I'll prevent that'. Then, turning to an officer who attended—'Take that madman away', continued he, 'and put him under a guard till he recovers his reason. Such behaviour must not go unpunished'. Then addressing himself to my master with an affected unconcern, as above being moved by what had happened, while the other was led away speechless and convulsed with rage, he politely invited him to dinner, an honour, however, which my master declined accepting that day, as he was most impatient to see his brother², who bore a principal

¹ Lord Charles Hay, the gallant officer who at Fontenoy came unexpectedly face to face with the French Guards, and politely invited them to fire first. He was sent home from Nova Scotia, and court-martialed for declaring his opinion, as quoted above.

² His eldest brother, George Augustus, third Viscount Howe, killed at Ticonderoga in 1758.

command in the army under the general. The meeting of these brothers was truly affecting. The instinctive connection of nature had been indissolubly cemented between them by the sacred bond of friendship, founded on a sense of mutual virtue.

Actuated by the same principles, they had both devoted themselves to the profession of arms, in the different services of the land and sea, as if to avoid the jealousy of rivalry, each being determined to let no competitor take the lead of him in the road to honour. Undebauched by affluence, and disdaining to waste his youth at home in luxury, when the cause of his country called for his assistance, the elder bravely came to seek for glory in these inhospitable wilds, with as much ardour as my master pursued it on his proper element, in order to earn honours, which he might transmit to his own posterity, equal to those which his brother inherited from his illustrious ancestors. When the tender inquiries of affection were reciprocally answered, my master gratified the curiosity of his brother with a particular account of his late dearly-bought success, closing the black detail with some remarks on the different conduct of the general of this army, which were much to his advantage.

'Your reflections, my dearest brother', answered the officer, 'are most just, as things appear to you. But when you have had an opportunity of seeing further, I fear you will find reason to change your sentiments, and that the delay here proceeds at bottom from the same principle with the precipitation which produced such terrible effects with you, and Heaven grant it produces not as bad'. Interest is the object everywhere, and whether that is pursued by sacrificing the forces in rash and ill-conducted attempts to gain an immediate prize, or by letting them melt away in inaction, to accumulate the profits of command, makes no difference in the end. I would not be understood from this to justify the officer for arraigning the general's conduct in so public and personal a manner. Such ungoverned warmth is inexcusable. Proper respect must be paid to those who bear that authority, or the effect of that authority ceases; indeed, it is not to them, but to him who delegates the authority, the respect is paid. A general at the head of an army represents his sovereign in the plenitude of his power, and to suffer any slight to be shown to his delegated character were to betray the trust of that delegation. For this reason, I think his punishment was necessary, and therefore just; I wish I could add that it was equally so from the injustice as from the circumstances of the accusation which occasioned it; but to anyone who will not shut his eyes, it must appear beyond a doubt that his great crime was speaking too much, and too plain truth, for, with all our boasted care for the preservation of the men, their distresses are such as have not left me a penny in my pocket, for I cannot shut my hand where my heart is opened. In short, I am so sick of the whole scene, that I have solicited the command of a detached party, with which I hope to show that the native bravery of Britons, when led with spirit, requires but little experience to enable them to conquer more formidable foes than naked savages, led by a few wretched Frenchmen, in a condition not much better. I set out to-morrow

morning, and think it a particular happiness that you have arrived time enough for me to have this interview with you'.

The rest of their conversation is not necessary to be repeated, as it turned upon their own domestic concerns. This much only it is but just for me to observe, that it showed their conduct in the intercourse and relations of private life to be as amiable as that in their public capacities was exalted, and proved that moral virtue is the best foundation for true heroism. My master's brother having, in the course of their conversation, intimated his having some present occasion for money, I here entered into his service. You may judge I remained not long in the possession of my new master. His brother had no sooner left him, than he paid me away, among a large number of my fellows, to a merchant, for some additions which he thought it necessary to make, at his own expense, to the provisions made by the public for the support and comfort of his men, through the fatigues and inconveniences of a campaign in an uninhabited country. The sentiments expressed by my master in the effusion of his soul to his brother, showed his character in the justest light; I shall, therefore, only add, that as he acted from principles firmly established on the invariable basis of reason, there was no danger of his deviating from the path in which he set out.

So bright a prospect made it a pain for me to quit his service so suddenly; but I have since met many mortifications of the same kind, my stay being always shortest in the best hands. My continuance, though from another motive, was not much longer with my next master, the merchant, who, in the common course of soliciting permission for a ship of his to sail with a cargo that must be ruined by delay, an embargo having been laid on all the shipping in the place, in the unfathomable wisdom of the ruling powers, to promote some unintelligible plan of service, gave me to the general's clerk, from whom, in the same course of business, I came into the service of the general.

CHAPTER V

CHRYSLAL'S MASTER MAKES SOME CHARACTERISTIC REFLECTIONS—HE IS SURPRISED AT THE OFFICER'S REFUSING TO MAKE UP MATTERS, AND GIVES A PARTICULAR REASON FOR SOME PEOPLE'S RISING IN THE WORLD—AN EXTRAORDINARY PERSONAGE ENTERS TO HIM—DESCRIPTION OF HIM—HE GIVES A CHARACTER OF THE NATIVE AMERICANS, AND OFFERS SOME INTERESTING REMARKS ON THE RETURN THEY MAKE TO THE TREATMENT THEY MEET WITH, AND ON THE PRACTICE OF FORMING IN THE CLOSET PLANS OF OPERATIONS FOR ARMIES IN THE FIELD—ODD REASONS WHY THE AMERICANS ARE DESIROUS OF GOLD—CHRYSLAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE

WHEN I entered into the possession of my new master, he was waiting in his tent, with the most anxious impatience, for the return of a person whom he had employed to mediate, as of himself, between him and the officer, whose presumption, in daring to

find fault with his measures, he had thought proper to punish in the manner I just now mentioned.

His reflections on an affair that struck so dangerously at his pride and avarice, the ruling passions of his heart, could not be very agreeable, but the sight of the money gave them a pleasing turn. Having asked the clerk a few questions in the way of business, and dismissed him, he took the purse, and weighing it in his hand—'Ay', said he, with delight glistening in his eyes, 'this will do. This embargo was a lucky thought. Let who will complain of the hindrance it is to the business of the public, it advances mine, and that is all I care for. I came here to serve myself, and not the public, and as there is neither plunder nor contributions to be got by activity, I must try what I can do another way. I showed my dexterity at hunting savages in the mountains of my own country, and have no desire to renew the chase here. It was necessary for me then to do something that should make me remarkable, and gain favour with those who I saw must prevail in the end, and therefore I spared no trouble or fatigue, neither friend nor foe, to convince them of my attachment; and in reward, they have now given me this command, in conducting which, I must use delay to reap the advantages of my former activity. Fabius saved Rome by delay; let me but make my fortune by it, and I envy not his fame. I prefer this sound', chinking the purse, 'to the empty noise of public acclamation, the shouts of a giddy mob, who bless and curse with the same breath, and without knowing why they do either. No, no, this is music that charms my ear'.

His meditations were broken off here by the gentleman he waited for, who informed him that the officer would come to no terms of accommodation, nor even accept of his liberty till he should be acquitted by a court-martial, and have justice done him for the affront offered to his honour. Such an account was far from being agreeable to my master, who, for obvious reasons, wished to have everything to go as quietly as possible. After some pause—'This is a damned affair', said he, 'but we must now e'en make the best we can of it. Who could have thought that a countryman of my own would have proved so refractory? We have always been remarkable for hanging well together. One and all, was the word, or we could never have done such great matters. If it is once found out that we can be divided, we shall soon lose our consequence, and every man be reduced to the poor prospect of depending on his own merit. However, since he will not accept of his liberty here, he shall e'en go home a prisoner, and recover it there as well as he can. I am on the right side, and don't fear but my friends will bring me through more than this, especially as it is a national concern to us all alike. In the meantime, we must double our diligence to make hay while the sun shines'.

The gentleman, who was in all his secrets, acknowledged the force of his reasoning, and was going to communicate to him some new strokes of management, when word was brought my master that a person, to whom he could not properly be denied,¹ desired

¹ This remarkable person was Sir William Johnson [1715-74], who

to see him. There was something in the whole appearance of this person that struck me with the strongest curiosity the moment I saw him. His stature, above the common size of man, was formed with the justest proportion, and denoted ability to execute the most difficult attempts, which the determined and enterprising spirit that animated his looks could urge him to. His open countenance, in which humanity and reason attempered resolution, showed the genuine workings of his soul, and his whole deportment was in the unaffected ease of natural liberty, above the hypocritical formality of studied rules of behaviour, devised only to deceive.

As soon as he entered—‘I am come, sir’, said he, throwing himself carelessly into a chair, and cutting short all that parade of ceremony, on the punctilious observation of which my master prided himself not a little, ‘to receive your orders. It is time I should join my people, who grow impatient, as the enemy have begun to stir, and I never choose to baulk their first ardour. There is nothing like taking men in the humour to fight, and before they have time to consider too much about it’.

‘I design, sir’, answered my master, with a solemnity and affectation of politeness, which made the strongest contrast to the blunt freedom of the other, ‘to call a council of war very soon, at which I shall be glad of your assistance, to form a plan of operations for the campaign. When that is done, and all proper measures concerted, you shall set out. Precipitation is very dangerous, and directly contrary to the principles of the regular art of war, by which I mean to proceed. The savages shall find some difference between my conduct and that of my predecessors. They shan’t surprise me on my march, nor draw me into an ambush among woods and mountains’.

‘As to the art of war, sir’, replied the other, ‘I know no more of it than what Heaven and common sense have taught me, which is, to find out the enemy, and beat them as soon as I can, my plan for which is always directed by present circumstances; nor do I know how one can be formed to effect any other way’.

‘Your exploits have always been well executed’, returned my master, with an air and tone of importance, as designing to say something that should raise him in the opinion of the other; ‘but you have hitherto acted rather in the low sphere of a partisan, than as a general. The duty of a general comprehends much more than what you mention, as you shall have an opportunity of learning before we take the field. I intend to go through a regular course of military operations, to instruct my officers, and discipline the men. Your Heaven-taught generals may beat the enemy, but that is the least part of the care and duty of a general nowadays, the very least part’.

had been living in the Mohawk Valley since 1738, and had acquired such an ascendancy over the Indians that they chose him for their sachem, and he was employed by both the colonial and the home government to manage all affairs with them. At this time he had been appointed colonel, agent, and sole superintendent of the affairs of the six united nations, and was in command of the Indians who assisted the English expedition to relieve Oswego and Fort William Henry.

'And pray, sir, how much time will this course of operations take up'?

'I cannot exactly say; but not above a month or two, I imagine'.

'A month or two? Why, sir, I hope we shall have done the most troublesome part of our work by that time, or else I do not know what may be the consequence. For to be plain with you, these delays will never do with the uncivilized Americans, who judge of things only by common sense, and cannot be made to comprehend this way of carrying on a war, by lying still in a camp, and doing nothing. They have formed very disadvantageous notions of the delays already made, and think a man who does not advance to fight his enemy is afraid of him; and, therefore, if they are not led to action directly, they will desert; so that, if I stay a month or two here at school, to learn a lesson I may never have occasion for, I must find other forces to put it in practice with'.

'Cannot you devise any reason that may account for your staying, to their satisfaction'?

'Really, sir, not I. I never was good at devising reasons destitute of truth, in my life, and have entirely forgot the practice since I have conversed with the Americans, who are far from being such fools as they are too generally thought to be. Though they have not the advantages of learning, they see, by the light of natural reason, through all the boasted wiles of policy, and, as they never mean deceit themselves, detest it in others, however speciously disguised, nor ever place confidence a second time where it has been once abused'.

'How? The Americans never mean deceit? Surely you must know better. They are the most perfidious, deceitful savages that burthen the earth, and it would be an advantage to the world if the whole race of them was exterminated'.

'Such as them as converse much with civilized Europeans, it is too true, learn many things from them, which are a disgrace to their own savage nature, as you call it. But I speak of the general disposition of the people. Treat them with candour, probity, and tenderness, and they will return them tenfold, in all their intercourse with you, as, on the other hand, they seldom fail to retort the contrary treatment with severe usury. Nor are they to be blamed. In all their dealings with the Europeans, they find themselves imposed upon in the grossest manner, in a manner not fit to be practised, even with brutes. Their sensibility is quick, and their passions ungoverned, perhaps ungovernable; how, then, can it be wondered at that they make returns in kind, whenever they find opportunity, and become the most dangerous enemies? Whereas, if those passions were attached by good treatment, they would be the most affectionate, steady, and careful friends. I speak from experience. I treat them as rational creatures, and they behave as such to me. I never deceive them, and they never deceive me. I do them all the good offices in my power, and they return them manifold. In short, I practice to them the behaviour which I wish to meet from them, and am never disappointed.

All the evils which have been suffered from them have proceeded from the unhappy error of thinking ourselves possessed of a superiority over them, which Nature, that is, Heaven, has not given us. They are our fellow-creatures, and, in general, above our level in the virtues which give real pre-eminence, however despicably we think of, and injuriously we treat them'.

'They are much obliged to your character of them, at least, whatever others may do. And pray, sir, what is it you would have me do to preserve the good opinion of these most virtuous people'?

'I presume not, sir, to say what is proper for you to do. All my desire is, that you will dismiss me directly, in a capacity of making good my promises to my friends, and, by the time you say you shall be ready to move with your army, I hope to give a good account of the enemy'.

'That, sir, I have no thought of. However, as you are so desirous of going, I shall not delay you. I'll form a plan of operations for you this very day'.

'For me, sir? I do not understand you. How can you know what will be proper or possible for me to do, at the distance of many hundred miles, in a country you are an utter stranger to. In Europe, where war, like a game of chess, is played, as I may say, entirely by art, that method of planning in the closet the operations of the field may do, perhaps; but then it is necessary that each side should play the game by the same rules. A body of Americans, who know nothing of the art of war but fighting, might be apt to move so irregularly as to disconcert the whole scheme of the game. Indeed, by what I can judge of the matter, that very method of planning the operations of a campaign is advantageous only to the general, as it prolongs the war, and consequently the emoluments of command, by tying up his hand from availing himself of any unforeseen circumstances in his favour. Whereas, if armies were sent out only to fight, as formerly, before the improvements in the art of war, the dispute would soon be decided, and even the vanquished better off than the victors are at present, whose riches and strength are so exhausted by this dilatory way of proceeding, that they are not the better for their success. I hope, sir, you do not take offence at the plainness of my speech. I have so long been accustomed to converse with savages, who speak just what they think, that I am become quite a stranger to that dissimulation which is called politeness among civilized nations, and must make use of words in their original intention of conveying my thoughts'.

'Not in the least, sir. I like your free manner much; it is in the character of a soldier. I will order everything to be got ready for you directly, and you shall go as soon as you please, at full liberty to act as you shall see proper'.

'I hope, sir, I shall not make a bad use of that liberty. And pray, among the other things, do not forget to order me some money'.

'Money, sir? What occasion can you possibly have for money among savages, who do not know the value of it'?

'Why, really, sir, that question is natural. But the matter is, the savages, who come among Europeans, see everything governed by gold, in such a manner that they have taken it into their heads we worship it, and therefore are become as eager for it as ourselves, in hopes of gaining an ascendancy over us, when they have got our gold in their possession'.

A conscious heart takes to itself more than was ever meant. The dry manner in which this was said touched my master to the quick, and made him not desire to pursue the conversation any further with such a free speaker, nor have so nice an observer longer about him, to pry into the motives of his actions. Giving him, therefore, the money he required, he wished him success, with a forced politeness, and dismissed him to prepare for his departure.

It was a pleasure to me to change my service on this occasion, as the idea I had conceived of my new master, both from his appearance and conversation, promised me some variety, and my curiosity was heartily surfeited with the regular art of war.

CHAPTER VI

THE MANNER IN WHICH CHRYSAL'S MASTER WAS RECEIVED BY HIS SUBJECTS—ANTIQUATED PRINCIPLES ON WHICH HIS AUTHORITY WAS FOUNDED—HIS ODD OPINIONS AND CONDUCT IN SOME IMPORTANT MATTERS, WITH THE CONSEQUENCES

As soon as everything was ready, my master set out for home, where he arrived without meeting anything remarkable in his journey, as you may suppose, through uninhabited deserts. The reception he met with from his people was the very reverse of what sovereigns usually meet. They welcomed him with sincere joy and respect, which they expressed in the overflowing of their hearts, without ceremony or parade. I say 'sovereigns', as he really enjoyed that power in its most rational sense, his will being a law to all around him, because they always found it just and advantageous to them. Though the account which he gave my late master of his manner of treating his people showed a just foundation for his power over them, I found that it depended not on that alone. His authority, like that of the first rulers of the earth, was founded also on the relations of nature, and supported by its strongest ties, he being literally the father of his subjects, the king of his own family. To explain this, it is necessary to inform you, that on his fixing his residence among these uncivilized nations in order to gain an influence over them the more readily, he had laid aside all such rules of conduct as seemed to him to be contradictory to natural reason and the public good, however forcibly enjoined for particular convenience. Among these, the chief was the custom of restraining the commerce between the sexes, and confining individuals to each other, after the desire which first brought them together had ceased. As he saw that the strongest passion which governs the human heart is that desire (for his philo-

sophy was not refined enough to suggest one thought of governing the passions), and as the continuation of the species depends entirely on the gratification of it, he held every opposition to it to be most criminal in itself, and detrimental to the public good (properly the first object of every civil institution, and which can be promoted no way so effectually as by promoting population), and therefore exerted all his influence to encourage that commerce, under such restrictions only as were evidently necessary to procure the great end of it, the propagation of the species. He gave liberty to every man to converse with as many females as he pleased, and to quit them whenever he thought proper, provided they were not pregnant. To the women the former liberty could not be extended, as the use of it would defeat the design; or, where it had not immediately that effect, cause confusion, and prevent both paternal care and filial duty, by the uncertainty of descent. But the latter instance they enjoyed equally with the men, being allowed to choose whom they liked, and if not pregnant, quit them at pleasure, for others, without reproach or shame, the offspring of all which connections were to remain with the fathers.

I shall not say whether reason originally suggested this system to him, or, as is often the case, whether he sought for reasons to support the dictates of inclination. Be it which it would, the effect was the same. His subjects increased in an uncommon degree, and he founded, like the patriarchs of old, an authority on the justest of all principles, voluntary consent, over a people inseparably linked to him and to each other, by the strongest ties of nature, as being, by this complicated commerce, in the strictest sense of one family; for, disdaining to make laws for others which he would not observe himself (like too many of his brother legislators), he had enforced his precepts so powerfully by his example, that there was scarce a house in any of the tribes around him from which he had not taken a temporary mate, and added a child of his to their number. That his reception, as I observed, should be most cordial from such subjects, is not to be wondered at. They flocked about him on his arrival, and hailed him with one voice by every tender relation of nature; brother, father, son, husband, showed an affection too sublime to be expressed by formal rules, and impossible to be seen without sympathizing in it. When this tribute was paid to nature, he called the elders of the people together, and distributing among them the presents which he had received for that purpose, gave them an account of the mighty army sent by his sovereign against the enemy, and proposed to them to assist its operations.

There required not many arguments to confirm their confidence in one who had never deceived them. They readily and sincerely assented to his proposal, and sending to invite all their neighbours to join them, separated to make the very little preparations necessary for persons who were strangers to luxury, and knew no wants but those of nature.

CHAPTER VII

CHRYSALE DESCRIBES HIS MASTER'S HABITATION AND FAMILY—HE MAKES AN UNCOMMON PROGRESS—THE MANNER IN WHICH HE FOUND THE FEMALES OF HIS HOUSEHOLD ENGAGED—REMARKS ON FINERY—ACCOUNT OF THEIR AMUSEMENTS, WITH THE MANNER IN WHICH THEY USUALLY ENDED—THE METHOD BY WHICH CHRYSALE'S MASTER KEPT PEACE IN HIS FAMILY

As soon as my master had thus concluded the business of his public character he retired to devote a few minutes to his domestic concerns.

His habitation was built on an eminence by the side of a rivulet, the banks of which were covered with a number of neat little cottages, inhabited by the females of his present family; for, instead of attempting to prevent their quitting him for other men, as inclination led them, he not only always dismissed them with presents in the most friendly manner, but also kept up an intercourse of regard with them and their successive husbands, every one of whom he attached to himself in the strongest manner, being particularly ready, on all occasions, to do them every good office in his power. In these cottages they bred up their children, and enjoyed from his care all the necessities of life with more convenience and comfort than they could possibly have experienced among their own people, unembittered by any of those jealousies and feuds which such a situation might seem to threaten, so equally did he dispense his favours among them. When he had given some orders in his house, he walked out to visit his family, and enjoy the sublimest instance of the happiness of power, in making all who were subject to it happy, by the unaffected tenderness with which he inquired after their welfare, and returned their caresses on his entering every cottage.

The appearance of these females was most different from the delicate sensibility that softened the beauties of Amelia¹, the fire which animated the charms of Olivia²; but custom, that reconciles all things, had made them agreeable to him, especially as no comparison could there be made to their disadvantage, and the honest readiness with which they met his addresses, the warmth with which they shared his joy, amply overbalanced any imaginary defect in feature or complexion, any ignorance of those affected arts of coyness, which, overacted, often pall the taste for long-expected pleasure.

As his women did not expect his visit so soon he found them engaged according to their different inclinations, either in the management of their domestic economy or in such amusements as custom had made pleasing to them. The occupations of the former kind were necessarily confined within a narrow circle from the circumstances of their lives; but in the latter, fancy, sole sovereign of the scene, asserted her unbounded rule, and sported

¹ See Page 10.

² Page 313.

in variety of forms, many of which I soon had the opportunity of seeing. As my master proceeded in his patriarchal progress, he met a considerable number of the females of his family, with such of the neighbouring men, as from age or idleness were unfit for more useful employments, assembled together under a spreading tree that grew before the door of one of their cottages, dressed out in their gayest apparel, and engaged in different kinds of diversions. At the sight of him they all arose, and would have desisted, but he prevented them, and not only made them resume their sports, but also sat down himself in the midst of the company, to be a spectator of them.

It seems it was a custom among them to meet frequently thus, at each other's cottages, for the pleasure of enjoying their favourite amusements to more advantage together, and displaying their finery, to set off which, no art nor care was neglected on these occasions. They dressed themselves in their best blankets, which were covered all over with patches of various colours, to make them look more gaudy. Their heads were adorned with plumes of feathers; strings of glass beads were rolled round their arms and legs. Their toes were loaded with rings of pewter and brass, and their necks and faces were carved with figures of birds and flowers, and painted of various hues. I see your laughter moved at this description, but that proceeds from narrow prejudice and want of rational reflection, on which it would appear that all useless ornaments are equally just objects of ridicule, whether made of silks and laces, or parti-coloured rags, whether bits of glass, or pearls and diamonds. Think, I say, but for a moment, and you will see that in reality there is nothing more absurd in wearing one kind of metal, or upon one part of the body than another; rings of brass, for instance on the toes, than golden on the fingers; in carving the skin, than boring the ears, or in painting the face blue and green, than white and red. The same vanity is the motive of all, and all produce the same effect of admiration; as, in things equally unsupported by reason, custom and caprice bear equal sway. The difference in the means, therefore, makes none in the end, at least, none to the disadvantage of the persons of whom I speak, as it certainly is more absurd to lavish treasures, that might be so much better employed, to a worthless purpose, while cheaper baubles would answer as well.

The amusements in which they were engaged were as whimsical as their dresses. Some skipped about, describing various figures in their motions, till want of breath and weariness obliged them to sit down. Others, and these the greatest number, were employed in chucking shells or pebbles from the brook into holes dug in the sand, for prizes of bits of tin or brass, which game they applied themselves to with the greatest eagerness and anxiety, and many were so expert at it as to strip their antagonists of all their hoards, often, indeed, not without the assistance of chicanery and deceit. And a few of the eldest, and those who had nothing to stake at play, gathered up and down into little sets, and entertained themselves with making remarks upon the rest, not always dictated by good nature or truth, while the mistress of the cottage busied herself in

adjusting ceremonials, settling her company at their several amusements, and serving them with milk, or broth and tobacco, the fatigue of which office she never repined at, as her consequence was established by the number of her guests. Though mere amusement was the obvious end of these meetings, other objects were generally pursued, and other consequences produced by them. Intrigues were commenced, and often completed, and, trifling as the prizes were for which they contended, emulation and avarice agitated the passions, and set the competitors together by the ears, till they almost clawed out each other's eyes.

Their sports were at length beginning to take their usual turn. The tempers of the losers became soured, and the detection of some deep strokes of play gave rise to altercations, which would soon have been followed by blows; but my master interposed his authority, and put an end to their disputes, when the party broke up, some retiring to keep the assignations they had made in the warmth of their inclinations, and the rest to calculate their winnings, and devise schemes for retrieving their losses at their next meeting; and my master, having singled out the happy favourite of that night, repaired with her to his own habitation, without any of the rest taking offence or even particular notice of the preference, as they had it in their power to supply their loss elsewhere.

I have observed your astonishment at this whole scene, especially at my master's hardness in expecting to be happy among a number of women, and attempting to keep them in order together, when one, in your opinion, is more than any man can manage; but what will it be when I tell you that that number often amounted to hundreds, and that he had never recourse to any kind of severity in his conduct to them? To comprehend this it is necessary for you to consider that most of, if not all, the uneasinesses which embitter the life of man, arise from an officious intrusion into the uneasinesses of others, or an overweening partiality to himself that makes him expect treatment which he does not give, and take offence where none is meant him, for matter not worth his being offended at, an observation that will hold in every state, public and private, among governors as well as governed. His rule, then, was never to take part in their disputes among themselves, nor offence at their infidelity to his bed, of which he himself set the example. This disarmed them of that perverseness which is the sex's most offensive weapon. They remained constant to him, because they were not restrained from being otherwise, whenever they pleased, nor did they trouble him with their disputes, because they saw he would not be troubled at them.

CHAPTER VIII

CHRYSAI'S MASTER IS HONOURABLY REWARDED FOR HIS SERVICES—
AN UNEXPECTED MEETING WITH ONE OF HIS COUNTRYWOMEN
INTRODUCES AN UNCOMMON REMARK ON A COMMON MATTER—
THE LADY GIVES AN ODD INSTANCE OF CONJUGAL LOVE, AND
REFUSES THE CIVIL OFFER OF CHRYSAI'S MASTER FOR A NATURAL
REASON—CHRYSAI CHANGES HIS SERVICE

THE very next morning his people assembled before his door, in readiness to obey his commands, when he led them directly in quest of the enemy, sharing himself in all their fatigues, and teaching them to despise danger by his example, so little did he know of the duty of a general. It would be tiresome to enter into a particular description of an expedition carried on among wildernesses and deserts, and consisting chiefly of ambuscades and surprises. It is sufficient to say that he was successful in all his enterprises, reason and presence of mind serving him instead of experience in the regular art of war, and courage well supplying the place of discipline in his men. Such services could not miss of reward from a just and judicious sovereign. His power was enlarged, and he received those marks of favour and distinction which were originally instituted to excite virtuous emulation, and set the seal of honour on successful merit, though, like most other human institutions, they too often produce the contrary effect, and reflect only disgrace from being bestowed contrary to their intention, and on unworthy objects.

As he was preparing the way thus for the motions of the main army, whenever the general should think proper to let it move, some of his people brought before him a European lady, whom they found wandering in those unfrequented wilds, her guide having mistaken his way.

Such a situation necessarily entitled her to his compassion and assistance; but he soon found himself still further interested in her favour, when he found she was a native of his own country, and of a family not entirely unknown to him, before he came to fix his abode in this distant part of the world.

There is not a stronger instance of the force of that attachment, called, in a larger sense, patriotism, than the instinctive affection which persons of the same country, though utterly unacquainted before, feel for each other the moment they meet in a strange place. My master instantly called her his dear countrywoman, and embracing her with the tenderness of a brother, led her away to his own tent, which he resigned to her, as the best accommodation he could give her, and then went and ordered everything that had belonged to her, which his men, looking upon as a fair prize, had taken and divided among themselves, to be restored, promising to recompense the captors himself.

As soon as she had adjusted her appearance in some better manner, she sent to desire my master's company, for he had told her that he should not come without permission, for fear of intruding

improperly upon her; and on his expressing wonder what could have brought her thus into the midst of these deserts, so far away from every European settlement, she gratified his curiosity with the following account, which was often interrupted by sighs, tears, and every expression of the most poignant grief.

Her husband, she said, who had been an officer of distinguished rank in the English forces, and had fallen in one of the defeats they suffered in the beginning of the war, before England had exerted herself in such a manner as to entitle her to success, the news of whose death affected her so extraordinarily that she resolved to brave all the fatigues and dangers of so long a voyage by sea, and journey through uninhabited deserts in time of war, for the melancholy pleasure of one last view of his dear remains, which she had accordingly obtained, though not so much to her satisfaction as she could have wished, the body being in a state of putrefaction, not possible to be approached without disgust and abhorrence, nor to be distinguished from any other mass of corruption, when she had caused it to be dug out of the grave in which it had been buried, on the spot where he had been killed, among the other victims of the day, and was now returning home, when she had happily been found by his people.

Though my master was as much unversed in the regular rules of politeness as of war, good nature taught him the essentials of one, as reason had of the other. He heard out her story, though not without pity and contempt at the extravagance and folly of it, and, consoling her with some general remarks on the error of indulging immoderate grief for things not to be remedied, offered to send her, under a sufficient escort, to his own habitation, where she might remain in safety, and have the conversation and attendance of his women, till the conclusion of the campaign, when he would convey her himself to the next seaport, in order to her returning to her own country.

Though she would have looked upon any attempt to console her as the highest affront in another situation, her present circumstances made her think it not proper to show any resentment of it to him; besides, there was something in his appearance that somehow made it less disagreeable from him than it would have been from any other person, and would possibly have influenced her to accept of his offer, had not the mention of his women alarmed her delicacy, and set her virtue on its guard.

Resolving, therefore, to have this cleared up before she would give any direct answer to his offer, she expressed her high sense of his kindness in the politest terms, and entering into a general conversation, among other questions of mere curiosity, asked him, in a careless manner, whom he meant by his women, and in what capacity they served him.

Such a question was more than he desired, though he had inconsiderately laid himself open to it. However, as he thought no delicacy could justify deceit, he answered her directly, and without preface, that they served him in the natural capacity of women, while they pleased to continue with him, nor did he desire any other service from them.

Though she was a good deal disconcerted at this answer, she had the address not to seem to understand it, in hopes that he would take the hint, and explain himself into a meaning less offensive to her modesty, to give an opportunity for which—'I presume, sir', replied she, 'you mean that they wait upon your lady, or perform the other domestic offices of your family, in which women-servants only are employed'?

'No, really, madam', answered he, 'that was not my meaning. I have no lady for them to wait upon; nor do they live so immediately in my own family, as to have any domestic employment in it'.

'How, sir? Are you not married'?

'Not particularly to any one person, madam'.

'That's very strange', said she, pleased at having gained so material a piece of intelligence, and resolving to pursue the conversation. 'That is really very strange. And pray, sir, are these ladies Europeans? I suppose', sighing heavily and wiping her eyes, 'they are the unhappy widows of such officers as are fallen in the service, to whom you have shown the same politeness and humanity as I now experience from you'.

'I am sorry, madam', answered he, to satisfy her curiosity at once, and put a stop to questions which began to be troublesome, 'to be obliged to undeceive you in an opinion so favourable to me. They are all native Americans, by whom I have had children, and in whose unfeigned affection and easy complying tempers I find such satisfaction, that I never shall quit them to attach myself solely to any one woman, however superior to them in the advantages of beauty and education; not, indeed, that they want qualifications to raise both love and esteem, which you will find when you have been some time among them'.

This, which was too plain for her to affect not to understand, instantly put an end to the pleasure she had begun to find in his conversation, and determined her as to his proposal.

'I am much obliged to you for your civil offer, sir', said she, bridling up her chin, and making him a formal courtesy, 'but I cannot accept of it. I have not the least desire for the conversation of squaws, and am in haste to leave this savage place, for which reason I shall take it as a favour if you will send some of your people to guard me to the next English settlement to-morrow morning. At present, I am quite exhausted with fatigue, and want some rest, if the distress of my heart will permit me to take any'.

This thought recalled the remembrance of her loss. She burst into a flood of tears, and my master withdrew, after finding that his attempts to console her only aggravated her grief, and gave offence to her delicacy.

Unversed as he was in the arts of the polite world, he was too well acquainted with the ruling principles of the sex, which in every state are the same, not to see through this change in her behaviour; but the discovery had no other effect than to confirm him in his contempt for such hypocritical levity. Accordingly, finding she continued in the same mind the next morning, he made the best provision he could for her journey, and sent her away with a

sufficient guard, forcing upon her a purse of gold, in which I was, to defray any accidental expense, for which she might be unprovided, in case she should not directly meet a ship, ready to carry her to Europe.

CHAPTER IX

CHRYSALE'S MISTRESS GIVES SOME STRIKING INSTANCES OF FEMALE CONSISTENCY—SHE IS CURED OF HER GRIEF BY A PERSON OF ACCOMPLISHMENTS AS EXTRAORDINARY AS HER OWN—THE ADVANTAGES OF COMPARATIVE EXCELLENCE—CHRYSALE'S MISTRESS MARRIES, AND HE CHANGES HIS SERVICE FOR THAT OF AN OLD MASTER

As soon as my mistress found herself out of the sight of my late master, she gave vent to that indignation and rage of disappointment which she had thought proper to suppress while in his presence.

'Insensible brute', said she. 'Not quit his odious squaws for any woman, and to have the rudeness to tell me so to my face? It shows his gross, low taste, for which such animals are fittest'. Then, pausing for some moments—'What a charming figure', continued she, sighing softly. 'Such a size; such strength and ease in every motion. And then the manly beauty in his looks. Had I but the polishing of him! I was too hasty; I should have waited to insinuate myself into his heart by degrees. I could not have failed of success. My husband was as strongly attached to another when first I undertook him. Oh, dearest, best of men, never shall I meet your fellow! Never shall another possess your place in this faithful, wretched heart'.

A flood of tears here interrupted her meditations, which were often renewed in the same strain during her journey, and always ended the same way. On her arrival at the seaport, she had the mortification to find that she must wait some time for a passage home, all the ships which were there having sailed a few days before. But her vexation at this disappointment was considerably lightened by the conversation of several companions in it, particularly that of a chaplain of a regiment, who had taken such offence at the immorality of the army, and the uncomfortable way of living in those savage countries, that he had hired a substitute, at a cheap rate, to do his duty, and was returning home to enjoy a life more agreeable to the delicacy of his character and inclinations, and exert his talents to more advantage in paying court to his patrons, than in reforming soldiers or converting savages. Extremes are never lasting. The violence of my mistress's grief had been too much for nature to support, and was beginning to abate of itself, when my late master awoke another passion, that would soon have supplanted it; and though he did not pursue his advantage as far as he might have done, he had opened her heart, and inspired a warmth ready to receive any other impression. As the chaplain's function and her rank, not to omit the accomplishments of both,

seemed to point them to each other as the most proper companions, it was not strange that they should soon grow intimate, nor that their intimacy should be insensibly improved into a tenderer passion. They made *tête-à-tête* parties at games which no one else in the place knew how to play with them. They talked of all the places of pleasurable resort in England, and of the amusements pursued at them, and they raised their own consequence in the eyes of each other, by boasting of acquaintances with persons they knew only by name.

Such uncommon accomplishments were not without effect. Each took the tales of the other upon credit, because their own met the same complaisance, and found a pleasure in being deceived by one whom it was an equal pleasure to deceive. But this was not the only thing that advanced their mutual influence upon each other. All human excellence is but comparative. Though far from being beautiful, they were the nearest to being so; though far from being well-bred, they knew most of the common ceremonies in which good-breeding is by many thought to consist, but which really are the encumbrances of it, of any persons there, and consequently appeared to enjoy those advantages in the highest degree. They regulated the assemblies, they laid down the rules of play, they made fashions; in a word, their opinion was the law in every matter of polite amusement and concern.

Thus cut out for each other, it was impossible for this accomplished pair not to come together. They were accordingly married, not more to the grief of their respective admirers than the joy of their rivals, the bride forgetting her grief for a dead, in the arms of a living husband, and the happy bridegroom pleasing himself with the thought that the high accomplishments of his lady would increase his interest with his noble patrons. To crown their happiness, a few days after they were married, an English man-of-war put in there, on its way home, the captain of which politely offered them their passage. Such an opportunity was not to be missed; they accepted his offer with the greatest joy, and in return, made a party and entertainment for him, when he won me from my mistress at a game of brag, the only game, indeed, at which he thought himself a match for her.

Though I had no reason to regret leaving her service, my present change gave me no great pleasure, as it wanted even the recommendation of novelty, my new master being the captain with whom I had the last time left the Spanish coast, and who had at length been made so happy as to be ordered home.

CHAPTER X

CHRYSLAL AGAIN ARRIVES IN ENGLAND—HIS MASTER IS SALUTED BY A SIGHT NOT VERY PLEASING—THE HISTORY OF THE UNFORTUNATE HERO OF THE DAY OPENS SOME MYSTERIOUS SCENES—THE OBVIOUS USE OF COUNCILS OF WAR

THE arrival of my master in England presented him with a scene that made him wish he had not been in such haste to return. On

his entering the harbour, he found the boats of all the men-of-war there drawn up around one ship, in which was displayed the dreadful signal of the execution of the commander¹. The sight appalled his soul, conscience anticipating the stroke of justice, and taking this as an omen of his own fate. He had not time to brood over these gloomy reflections long, when an officer came on board him, with an order to attend the execution in his boat, along with the other captains; which he obeyed in a state of mind scarce less unhappy than that of the criminal. As soon as the bloody work was done, he waited on the chief commander, where the melancholy in every face he met was far from relieving the anxiety of his mind. He could have no pleasure in such company. When he had answered a few general questions, of course, he went away to the ship of a captain of his intimate acquaintance to learn some account of this shocking scene, for he had not had resolution to make an inquiry about it; nor even to attend to the conversation of everyone around him, which would have explained the whole.

After mutual congratulations on their meeting, my master signified his curiosity, which his friend promised to gratify over their bottle, as soon as they should be alone after dinner. Accordingly, when the coast was clear, 'You desire information in an affair', said he, 'that has given our corps the deepest wound we have ever received. The circumstances are many, and mysterious; but I will strive to give you a notion of it in as few words as possible, for it can be no pleasure to either of us to dwell upon such a subject. In the beginning of the war, soon after you went to America, the unfortunate man who has this day fallen a sacrifice to the humour of the times, was sent out with a fleet to counteract the schemes of the enemy, and relieve a fortress of ours² which they were then besieging. This was the purport of his public orders; but it will appear to you presently, that he must have received private ones, of a very different nature, from those, who, at that time, had the conduct of affairs. Instead of making the expedition necessary to have carried his orders into execution with effect, he trifled away the time here in such a shameful manner, using every frivolous excuse he could devise to delay his departure, that the voice of the public was raised against him; and it was found necessary to appoint another to the command in his place, in order to silence their clamours; but, unfortunately for him, he sailed the very day before his appointed successor was to have set out to supersede him. The same dilatory conduct threw a damp upon everything he attempted to do. He seemed resolved upon nothing; but though he was invested with the fullest powers to act as he saw

¹ Admiral Byng, executed January 27, 1757, at Portsmouth, for neglect of duty.

² Byng was sent in 1756 to relieve Minorca, a French attack being anticipated. His squadron was hastily fitted out, wretchedly manned, and inferior in every way to the French. He had been ordered to take troops on board at Gibraltar, but General Fowke was unable to spare a man without endangering the fortress. After an indecisive action, a council was held and the decision arrived at unanimously to leave Minorca to its fate.

proper himself, called councils of war to deliberate upon every the most trifling occasion, that he might have the sanction of their advice to excuse his neglect, and often direct disobedience of his orders; for you well know that a council of war always speaks the sense of the commander.

‘One instance of his proceeding in this manner will be sufficient to justify this remark. He had been ordered to call at another fortress¹ in his way, and take from thence a reinforcement for the garrison of that which he was sent to relieve. On his arrival there, instead of demanding that reinforcement peremptorily, as his orders empowered him, and making the expedition which the urgency of the occasion required, he showed such indifference to the enterprise by his delays, and expressed such diffidence of his success, that the commanding officer² took the alarm; and, following his example, called a council of war, to consider whether he should send it; which, on mature deliberation, he absolutely refused, on account of the danger of weakening his own garrison, in case it should be attacked; whereas, it was notorious, that could never happen, if this unhappy man did his duty, as the force he had was sufficient to keep the command of the sea, and prevent any such attempt. But, far from urging this, he quietly acquiesced in the officer’s excuse, and sailed away without the reinforcement, for which alone he had been ordered to stop there. On the same principles, when at length he came in sight of the place—the siege of which was pushed with the greatest vigour—he excused his sending any relief to it, on a pretence of the danger of entering the harbour—as if any military operations could be free from danger—and sailed away to seek a fleet of the enemy’s, which was coming to assist the siege, and which he came up with sooner than he wished.

‘An engagement now was unavoidable; but still he had it in his power to prevent any effect from it, which he notoriously did, by trifling away his time in vain unnecessary manœuvres, and pretending to come to action at a distance too great for him to do anything³. The enemy, whose interest it was to avoid an engagement, in which their most sanguine hopes could not promise them success, availed themselves of this conduct, and made their escape, after having, from the superiority which his keeping aloof in this manner gave them, treated very roughly a part of his fleet that had advanced with caution, and come really to action. This served him as a pretence for calling a council of war next day, by the advice of which, instead of pursuing the enemy, who had evidently fled from him, or making any attempt to relieve the fortress which was besieged, obviously the first object of his being sent out, he

¹ Gibraltar.

² General Fowke. He was broken for his failure to supply the reinforcement demanded, and for other mistakes in the government of the fortress, having taken on his own shoulders the blame properly due to the Secretary of War and the Ministry.

³ Byng failed to get to close quarters with the French, but cautiously held aloof, although Rear-Admiral West attacked them vigorously with considerable success.

returned directly to the other, from which he was to have taken the reinforcement, as I mentioned before, to defend that from the danger brought upon it solely by his own conduct, leaving the former, deprived thus of every prospect of relief, to take its fate; and giving up the honour of his country, by flying from an enemy whom he might have vanquished, and who had fled from him before'.

CHAPTER XI

CONTINUED: CONSEQUENCE OF THE FOREGOING CONDUCT—AN EXTRAORDINARY SENTENCE ATTEMPTED TO BE REVERSED IN AN EXTRAORDINARY MANNER, AND BY AS EXTRAORDINARY PERSONS.—THE REASON OF THIS AND WHY IT MISCARRIED—MORE MYSTERIES—JUST FATE OF THE BUNGLERS, WHO LEFT THEIR POOR TOOL IN THE LURCH; WITH THE CONSEQUENCE OF THIS AFFAIR TO A CERTAIN CORPS

'THE consequence of so strange a conduct was—the nation took fire; and with one voice demanded satisfaction for such a sacrifice of their interest and honour. He was, therefore, not only deprived of his command, but also sent home a prisoner; and after suffering every indignity and abuse which the rage of a licentious populace, broken loose from all bounds, could suggest, brought to his trial, found guilty of neglecting to do all in his power to destroy the enemy, and for that crime has this day suffered the sentence of the law—a sentence not more unexpected by him, and extraordinary in itself, than in the manner it was passed; and afterwards attempted to be reversed by those who had passed it, when they reflected on the danger of establishing a precedent, that might one day come home to themselves. For, persuaded, perhaps, by their knowledge of the true motives of his conduct, that nothing more was meant by the trial than to amuse the public, they resolved to act their parts in the farce, and found him guilty, as I have said, of such a part only of the charge against him, as common sense could never conceive punishable with death¹; it being impossible to acquit him absolutely of the whole, without involving themselves in his guilt, by which means they expected to save both his life and their own credit. But such trimming seldom answers; the tables were now turned; and it was resolved to carry even this lame sentence into execution with the utmost severity.

'Alarmed at a measure so contrary to their expectations, his judges were driven to their wit's end; and, from a provident regard to themselves, left nothing unattempted to save him. They retracted, as far as was in their power, their own judgment. They

¹Byng was acquitted of every charge save that of neglect of duty, which brought him under the Twelfth Article of War. Three years earlier, the Articles had been revised, and, instead of leaving the penalty to the discretion of the judges, this Article prescribed the punishment of death, without alternative.

petitioned the ministry. They applied to the whole body of the legislature. They prayed. They expostulated. They wept, but all was in vain. His fate was determined; and they only drew upon themselves that contempt which such inconsistency deserved. From this general account of his conduct it must have appeared to you that he acted by secret orders, directly opposite to his public ones; as no man, however prostituted in principle, however infatuated by fear—neither of which, it was well known, was his case—could otherwise possibly have acted in such a manner, the inevitable consequences of which were disgrace and death. But if any doubt should remain in your mind, from the inconsistency of man's actions at different times, the least attention to the following circumstances will effectually remove it. Repeated informations of the enemy's design upon that place had been sent to those in power, for a considerable time before; but no notice was taken of them to reinforce the garrison nor even order the officers, regularly belonging to it, to attend their duty, till the siege was actually begun; when this unfortunate man was sent, but so late, that the common impediments of contrary winds might very possibly have delayed him so long as to defeat the design of his going even had he exerted himself with the greatest ardour. Had it also been really intended that he should reinforce the garrison, a force proper for that purpose would have been sent directly from home, without subjecting him to the further delay of stopping for it at another place, where it might not be to be spared, as proved to be the case. And, lastly, had he not secret reasons, which he thought sufficient to justify his conduct, it is not to be imagined that he would have wasted the time before he sailed; that he would have accepted the refusal of the commanding officer of the fortress, from which he was to have taken the reinforcement; that he would not have attempted at least to throw some relief into the place; and that he would not have fought the enemy's fleet, when he had the fairest prospect of defeating it; for the tenour of his former life acquitted him, as I have observed, of all suspicion of cowardice, or traitorous correspondence with the foes of his country.

‘His conduct at and after his trial confirmed these remarks. Depending on support from those in power¹, he neglected the only measure prudence could have suggested for his defence, which was to have retorted the charge of his miscarriage upon his very accusers, and perplexed the cause with such a variety of matter about disobedience to signals, and breach of discipline, as to blind the world, and bewilder his judges, so that they should be glad to have acquitted him, if only to get rid of the plague of the inquiry; a method which experience had shown to be effectual in as flagrant a case as

¹ The Duke of Newcastle had been premier at the time of Byng's expedition; Fox, Secretary of State; Anson, First Lord of the Admiralty; but Pitt was now in power. The old administration was scared to death by the popular clamour, and the King was averse from remitting the death penalty, which was duly carried out, in spite of the opposition of Pitt, Temple, and other sensible men.

his¹. And, even after he was condemned, his behaviour proved that he expected a pardon to the last moment, for a crime which he had committed in obedience to their orders. Why he did not produce those orders in his vindication must have been that they were only verbal ones; which, in the blind lust of ministerial confidence and favour, he had been weak enough to take. The reason of his being so basely deserted is too obvious. The administration of those who had employed him had been such a series of blunders—not to call it by a severer name!—that they had not only been supplanted by another set², who promised better things, but were also obliged to give him up as a sin-offering to the rage of the people; as protecting or pardoning him would have implied a participation of his guilt. And in this light the other party viewed it so strongly, that they exerted all their strength to have saved him, in hopes of being able by his means to gain a clue to guide them through some of those labyrinths of iniquitous and false policy, which they suspected, but could not otherwise detect, to the entire overthrow of their rivals. This so absolutely reversed the whole scene, that they who should have supported, now found themselves obliged to crush him, in their own defence; which, as it was the most popular measure, they were still able to do.

‘There is but one thing more necessary for me to add, and that is, the motive for their giving him such secret orders; which, as far as reason can judge in such dark confused mysteries, must have been this: Provoked at the repeated insults and injustice of the French, the ministry here had precipitately plunged themselves into war³, without being prepared, or even determined to pursue it; and then, like a parcel of children who have exhausted all their strength and resolution in one spiteful assault, stood in a state of stupefaction, utterly at a loss how to proceed, or retreat; till, roused at length by the preparations and menaces of the enemy, they unluckily blundered in their fright upon the wretched expedient of letting them take this fortress, that, for the recovery of it, they might have a pretence for giving up to them those places about which the dispute began; and so botch up a peace anyway, to get rid of a war they found themselves unable to manage. The consequence of this notable stroke of policy was, the spirit of the people was inflamed to such a degree, by this disgrace upon their arms, that they pushed on the war with a resolution little short of madness; and the scheme, which the ministers had so wisely laid for their escape, only sealed their ruin.

‘This, my friend, is a short but just sketch of this unfortunate affair, to which I shall add one circumstance to prove what I said of his being sacrificed to the humour of the times. The officer who

¹ Alluding to the case of Admiral Lestock, who, in the battle of Toulon, 1744, failed to bring his part of the fleet into action, in spite of Admiral Mathews’ repeated signals. A court-martial was held, but Lestock was acquitted on a technical point.

² Pitt’s ministry, which came into power in December 1756.

³ Alludes to the large captures of French shipping made by the British before the declaration of war in 1757.

commanded in the fortress¹ which was besieged, and who in the defence of it had betrayed a want of every qualification necessary for such an office, but courage; and had even let that be overruled by the instances of his officers, who were tired of fatigues and dangers from which they saw no prospect of relief, to surrender it at last; without any absolute necessity, was loaded with honours of every kind, in reward of a merit merely negative at best; that is, for not having done the very worst in his power, and surrendered it at first, without making any defence.

'I have thus gratified your curiosity in the best manner in my power. If I have made any mistakes, they are not those of intention; but have proceeded from the inability of reason to trace such mysterious actions to their real motives. One observation, though, I know I cannot be mistaken in, which is, that this affair has given a wound to our corps—as I observed before—which it can never recover. For, after such an example, what officer of any rank can expect to escape, should he neglect to do his duty in the fullest manner, however powerful his private motives to the contrary may be! For my own part, I cannot say it yet affects me much. I am poor, and therefore must push. If I ever have the good luck to be otherwise, I know the consequence; and will rather quit the service, than hazard being shot, as I know must be any man's fate, who shall hereafter be found to fail in the performance of his duty, from a prudential regard to the preservation of his life or fortune, however great that fortune, or powerful his family. And so, here's to you, neck or nothing is now the word!'

The effect which this whole account had upon my master may be easily conceived. He pledged his friend, though without naming the toast; and assenting to his remarks by a heavy sigh, took his leave, without saying a word.

CHAPTER XII

CHRYSLAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE—HE GETS A VIEW OF A COURT OF CIVIL JUDICATURE, ON AN EXTRAORDINARY OCCASION—SOME REFLECTIONS OUT OF THE COMMON CANT ON THE DELAYS OF THE LAW—A WHIMSICAL APPLICATION OF AN OLD STORY PRODUCES THE STRANGE EFFECT OF PUTTING A COUNSELLOR OUT OF COUNTENANCE—THE NECESSITY OF ABSOLUTE POWER IN SOME GOVERNMENTS WITH A COMMON DECISION BY WHICH NOTHING IS DECIDED

I NEXT passed from the hands of my old master into the possession of the purser, who, travelling through a city where a matter of great

¹ A very unjust attack on General Blakeney, the gallant veteran who defended an 'almost indefensible fortress' for seventy days, and surrendered on the most honourable terms only when resistance was no longer possible. Blakeney was a signal example of the difficulty of rising in the service by simple merit, so often animadverted upon in these pages. He was not made a colonel until he was sixty-five.

moment was under judicial determination, he waited for the event, to gratify a natural curiosity.

The affair was this: A foremast-man in a guardship, lying in one of the neighbouring harbours, had by repeated misbehaviour, in going clandestinely on shore, contrary to the express orders of his captain¹, provoked him at length to give him a dozen at the gangway, in order to terrify others from following his example. Instead of being reclaimed by this punishment, the fellow persisted to misbehave in such a manner, that the captain, who was remarkably humane in his disposition, discharged him from the ship, to avoid the pain of punishing him any more. This was just what the wretch wanted. Accordingly, he went directly to a prostituted, pettifogging attorney, who had before set him on the scheme, and employed him to sue the captain at law for an assault, in punishing him in the harbour, where he had no power so to do.

In a country governed by laws, they must regularly take their course in every instance, however flagrant in its particular circumstances. After all the preliminary delays of practice, which, grievous as they may in some circumstances be to an individual, are yet the safety of the public, the affair was now brought to a legal decision. You are too well acquainted with the forms of law to require a minute account of all which were observed in this case. But there was one incident which I cannot pass over. As this was a matter that importantly concerned the interest of the navy, the rulers of it had ordered all the captains of the guardships, in the harbour where it had happened, to attend the trial, in order to inform the court, in the usages of their service. One of those², who had never seen a court of civil judicature before, but was a man of natural good sense, and some reading, having listened to the unintelligible pleadings, and gross exaggerations of the counsel on both sides of the question, especially those hired in the prosecution, till his patience was quite exhausted, at length arose, and having obtained permission from the judge to speak, addressed himself to the court in these words:—

‘I am sent here by those to whom the king has entrusted the conduct of his navy, to explain the nature and rules of our service to this court, in case I see any danger of their forming a wrong judgment of it from inexperience in a matter so much out of their way. The little gentleman³ yonder has spent so much breath, and shown so much great reading on the subject, that I imagine it is proper for me to make some answer, which I shall do in as few words as possible, being not half so long-winded as he. But first I must beg leave to tell him a story, to conform to rule.

‘I have read in a book—for I perceive that common sense signifies nothing here, if not supported by a quotation, it matters not whether to the purpose or not—that a certain philosopher having declaimed one day for a considerable length of time before Alexander the Great, at the head of his army, on the duties of a general, the

¹ Captain Hamilton [Davis's *Olio*].

² Lord Colville of Culross [Davis's *Olio*].

³ Mr Pratt, afterwards Lord Camden, Lord Chief Justice of England.

emperor turned about to Parmenio, one of his generals who stood near him, and asked him what he thought of his speech ? "Sire", answered Parmenio, "my opinion is, that I never heard a fool talk so learnedly".

'I make no applications. All that I say on this occasion is, that I am sure that gentleman has never been at sea ; and consequently knows nothing of the service, on which he has been haranguing with such vehemence and elocution. He has expatiated most pathetically on the injustice of inflicting corporal punishment, without a legal trial and condemnation ; and flourished on the danger of such an invasion of liberty. These, to be sure, are fine words ; but I much doubt whether they are properly applied on this occasion. The most perfect form of government is allowed to be absolute despotism, as best calculated to work its effects without delay. In all the communities in this world, I doubt if there is one where immediate obedience to the command of the governor is so indispensably necessary to the safety of the whole, or where individuals are so insensible to every other motive to obedience but fear, as in a man-of-war. I have myself the honour to command a ship, in which I have five hundred men under me, the greatest part of whom, I am sorry to say it, are the outcasts of human nature, as from some unhappy circumstances is, and perhaps must always be, the universal case in our service. Now, as instances daily occur, in which a moment's delay or hesitation to execute my orders, though attended with the greatest difficulty, or most imminent danger, must evidently hazard the loss of the ship, and every life in her, I desire that gentleman to inform me how I am to act, should one of the men, whom I order, suppose, to cut away a yard that is broken in the slings, refuse to go aloft, and tell me I have no right to punish him, till he is regularly tried and found guilty ! Shall I admit of such an answer to be an example to the rest ? Or shall I punish him with such severity on the spot, by my own mere authority, as to terrify any other from imitating him ? The answer to this plain question will determine the affair under consideration. If it is said that in the present case the ship's being in the harbour makes a difference ; let us suppose her on fire there, and the difference will vanish. In a word, if the absolute authority indispensably necessary for carrying on our service in some instances is attempted to be abridged in any, it will of course be at length disputed in all, and the service ruined. All that can be done is to be cautious not to trust it in improper hands'.

This method of reasoning changed the face of the affair. The counsellor hung down his head, and slunk out of the court. The fears which had been entertained for the public liberty vanished ; and the jury simply found the fact, but left the point of law to be determined by the judges ; so that after all this expense and trouble, matters remained in the same state of uncertainty as before, to the great joy of the lawyers.

CHAPTER XIII

CHRYSAI CHANGES HIS SERVICE, AND GETS INTO THE POSSESSION OF A PHYSICIAN AND AUTHOR—HIS MASTER JOINS IN A REMARKABLE SET OF COMPANY—THEIR CHARACTERS—CHRYSAI CHANGES HIS SERVICE—ACCOUNT OF THE ENTERPRISE ON WHICH HIS LATE MASTER'S COMPANIONS WERE GOING, WITH THE CONVINCING ARGUMENTS THEY USED TO PROCURE OBEDIENCE TO THEIR COMMANDS

My master, on his arrival in London, paid me away at a coffee-house, from whence I got into the possession of a physician and author¹, who, having shown me many of the mysteries of the latter profession, proceeded to introduce me into new scenes. Happy in the contemplation of his own abilities, and the pleasing prospects they opened to him, he proceeded to figure as usual in his variegated sphere. Accordingly, he descended from his aerial citadel, and going out to visit his patients, repaired directly to a tavern, to join a set of critics and choice spirits—souls of sentiments and fire—who were going that evening upon an expedition that was to immortalize their names. This was no less than to assume the modest power of making laws that should affect the property of a number of their fellow-subjects, the execution of which they were resolved to enforce by the mild and equitable means which the respectable legislature of the mob always use to enforce obedience to their decrees.

Those who were honoured by being taken thus under their immediate command were the actors of plays and interludes, of which, as the works of genius, and calculated for the entertainment of the idle, they claimed the sole and absolute rule. You conclude from this that they must have been persons of learning and large fortune, whose affluence gave them leisure to attend to subjects which their education qualified them to judge of; but the contrary was the fact. They were either blanks in the creation, whom a superficial smattering of letters² had filled with such an opinion of themselves, as to make them look with contempt upon every exertion of industry, as beneath their dignity, though, at the same time, they were barely able to subsist without it, by all the little shifts of economy, or tradesmen³, almost absolutely illiterate, who, from a preposterous ambition of hiding an ignorance that was not

¹ Dr Hill, physician, journalist, and charlatan (*see* Introduction).

² An allusion, according to Davis's *Olio*, to Richard Fitzpatrick, the life-long friend of Charles James Fox. He was noted as much as Fox for his wit and scholarship, and his love of gambling and fashionable life. Two of his literary effusions, *vers de société*, were printed at Horace Walpole's press at Strawberry Hill. Later on he was one of the principal authors of the *Rolliad*.

³ Mr Bourke, says Davis's *Olio*. Possibly a silly reference to Edmund Burke, who had published his *Enquiry into the Sublime and the Beautiful*, in 1756, and added his *Discourse concerning Taste* to the second edition the next year.

any reproach to their station, set up for the arbiters of taste, on the strength of a set of phrases picked up at random, and of which they knew not even the meaning, and neglected the business by which they were to earn their bread, in order to make a show of knowledge, that could be of no use to them.

When this illustrious set had sufficiently conned their several parts in the great enterprise which they were going to undertake, and raised their resolutions to a proper pitch by wine, they prepared to adjourn to the scene of action, the theatre, and calling for a bill, I was changed by my master to pay his club, and directly borrowed from the landlord by one of the leaders of the party, who changed me again at the door of the theatre, to pay for his admission. These changes of my service, however, did not prevent my seeing the process of this extraordinary affair. On the contrary, as I now belonged to the whole theatrical community in general, I had an opportunity of getting a full insight into the nature and mysteries of every part of that profession. I see you desire to know my sentiments on a subject that has been canvassed by the ingenious of all ages. Such a curiosity is natural, and shall be gratified at a proper time, but at present I must not interrupt the account of this transaction. From the manner in which those self-made legislators had talked, when together, of every circumstance in the management of a theatre and profession of an actor, you would have concluded that they were going to overturn the whole present system of the stage, and institute another on principles directly opposite, according to their own ideas of perfection. But that was not the case. Among all the errors and abuses against which they declaimed with such vehemence, they thought proper to attack only one, which they thought most interesting to themselves in particular. This was the right which reason and law gave the performers to fix the price of their own labours.

In the infancy of the stage in London, before it had been brought, by much labour and expense, to such a degree of perfection as to attract the attention of the public, it had been the custom, after a certain part of the representation was over, to admit persons for less than was paid at the beginning. The obvious reason of this was to allure company of any kind thither, and take the most they could get, rather than keep the house empty. But when the passion for seeing plays arose to its present height, this expedient appeared no longer necessary, and therefore was disused, a change which those who conducted the entertainments of the theatre justified, by alleging the enhanced salaries of the actors, and the improvements made in the machinery and decorations of the stage since the time when that custom was introduced, which they said required reimbursement, by a method that could not justly be taken offence at, as none were obliged to go who did not approve of the terms.

Such a measure was most alarming to these men of taste, some of whom denied themselves the pleasure of going to the beginning of the performance, because they were not able to pay the full price, as the others could not get from behind their counters before it was half ended ; and for these good reasons both thought it the

highest grievance to have a custom abolished that had been so convenient to them. Accordingly, as soon as the performance began, they all arose, and without any respect to the rest of the audience, interrupted the players in the most outrageous manner, nor would desist till the managers¹ should promise to redress the grievance which affected them so severely, and take half-prices as before. This was too flagrant a violation of justice to be submitted to so suddenly. The managers, therefore, refused, upon which these redressers of grievances gave a loose to their resentment, at such an instance of disobedience to their authority, and tore the house to pieces, doing more damage to the proprietors than their own entire worldly substance could repair.

CHAPTER XIV

THE RUINOUS APPEARANCE OF THE SCENE OF ACTION SUPPLIES
MATTER FOR MIRTH TO THOSE WHOSE TRADE IS TO LAUGH AT
EVERYTHING—THE POINT CARRIED AGAINST LAW AND REASON—
INQUIRY INTO THE CAUSE OF THIS—THE RISE OF THE PREJUDICE
AGAINST THE PROFESSION OF AN ACTOR

WHEN these men of genius and public spirit had thus gallantly accomplished their enterprise, they marched off in triumph, denouncing a repetition of their resentment, should their orders not be obeyed. The appearance of the house after this ravage, and the looks of the actors when they ventured to creep out of their hiding-holes, seemed to realize the mimic scenes usually exhibited there. All was havoc, desolation, amazement, and affright. Crowns, sceptres, candlesticks, and broken benches were jumbled together. Sovereigns and sweepers, lords, link-boys, duchesses, and cinder-wenches joined in one common lamentation of their fate. This, however, lasted not long. Their hearts were not formed of stuff for grief to make a deep impression on, nor were they so unaccustomed to the rubs of life as to be dejected at any mischance. Their concern, therefore, wore off with their fright, and one of them, resuming his character of turning everything into ridicule, marched with solemn pace and rueful countenance up to the motley ruins now collected into a heap, and with some droll variations, apt to the occasion, spouted over them a tragic speech in all the emphasis and trick of woe. The humour instantly ran through them all. Mirth grinned on every face, and they vied in cracking villainous jests on each other's undoing. But the managers had suffered too

¹ Garrick, at Drury Lane, and Beard, at Covent Garden. The incident occurred in February 1763. A gang of rioters succeeded in forcing Garrick to grant admission at half-price after the third act of any performance. Beard resisted the demand, and some of the ringleaders were brought before the Lord Chief Justice. In the end, after having his property destroyed, and the theatre closed for some time, Beard had to submit.

severely in their property to be in so merry a mood. They consulted among themselves, and with the sages of the law, what was proper for them to do, to obtain redress for such injustice, and prevent the menaced repetition of it. But all was to no purpose. Law gave way to licentiousness, and they were obliged to submit to the most intolerable of all tyrannies, that of the mob.

You are surprised that such things should be, in a country, governed by equal and established laws. In speculation it must seem strange; but the least acquaintance with life would reconcile you to inconsistencies still grosser. There is something, however, in the circumstances of this case which deserves attention, and makes it not improper to trace to their origin the prejudices from which such injustice could proceed.

When the system of divine worship, which is now professed in these parts of the world, was first proposed to mankind the human mind was a slave to superstitions, which were a disgrace to that portion of reason given for its direction. By a perversion, of which man alone is capable, the celebration of those superstitions, though professedly designed in honour of the Deity, was attended with games and scenical interludes, in which the grossest immoralities received the sanction of religion, and were practised openly as pleasing to Him. This was done to attach the passions of the multitude, and satisfy their curiosity with sensible representations, in order to prevent their making rational inquiries into the grounds of those superstitions, the principles of which were subservient to the policy of the ruling powers. A religion instituted on purpose to reclaim man from immoralities and superstitions, and restore him to the dignity of his nature, necessarily struck at everything that conduced to their support; accordingly, the persons appointed to propagate it exerted all their endeavours against those games and interludes, both as a part of the superstitious worship which they wanted to abolish, and as in themselves subversive of moral virtue, by the vices which they exhibited to imitation, heightened and made still more alluring by every incentive of art and pomp of expense. For this purpose, reason, as well as religion, supplied ready and powerful arguments; but, not content to wait for the slow effect of these, they strove to prejudice those whom they could not persuade, and, to obviate the imitation of their example, raised an abhorrence to the persons of all concerned in such representations, casting them off from the rites of religion, and declaring them unworthy, both of the protection of the laws, and the common privileges of society, a method that, in one respect, defeated its own design, as it could never reclaim the offenders, however it might deter others from following their example. Nor did they stop here. By an error too common in the heat of argumentation, they concluded from the abuse, against the use of the stage, and branded with the mark of reprobation all future actors, for the faults of the present.

CHAPTER XV

CONTINUED : THE COMMON CONSEQUENCE OF EXCESS OF ZEAL—THE PROFESSED INTENT OF THE THEATRICAL REPRESENTATIONS DEFEATED BY THIS ABSURD PREJUDICE AGAINST ACTORS—THE VICES AGAINST WHICH THIS PREJUDICE IS LEVELLED, IN REALITY THE EFFECTS OF IT, WITH THE MEANS OF REMEDYING THIS AND OTHER ABUSES

HOWEVER the occasion might then seem to justify this excess of zeal, when the cause ceased, the effect should in reason have ceased also, and these general censures have been repealed. The superstitions which were the foundation of the first charge against the stage have been long abolished, nor are the absurdities and immoralities which gave offence to reason and virtue any longer practised there. On the contrary, the professed intent of theatrical representations at present is to insinuate instruction under the pleasing appearance of entertainment, to encourage virtue by example, and inculcate the practice of it, by showing the evils inseparably attendant on vice, to regulate the passions, by displaying the danger of indulging them too far, and to put folly out of countenance, by holding it up to ridicule. Now, as experience has proved the stage capable of answering these great ends, what can be more injudicious than to attempt to bring it into disrepute ; what more unjust than to consign to infamy those who exert the finest powers of the human mind and body to accomplish this end in the most pleasing manner ? Yet, such is the absurdity of man, that while persons of the most exalted rank and sacred characters not only frequent the theatre, but also compose works to be represented on it, and evidently value themselves more on possessing the abilities requisite to compose them, than on all their other distinctions in life, those from whose action such compositions receive their force and beauty are held in disrepute, and subject to the severest disadvantages only for acting them. If it is no disgrace to write a play, why should it be any to act it ? It is true, the consequences of this prejudice are not so severe here as in other countries, but still they are such as reason is ashamed of. If actors are not literally excluded from the protection of the laws, they want support to avail themselves of that protection, as in the case which gave rise to these reflections. If they are not actually (for literally they are) excluded from the rites of religion, they want encouragement to participate in them. I see you are ready to object to the utility of the stage, the faults in many of the performances exhibited upon it, and to justify the disrepute affixed to the character of an actor, from the general immorality of their conduct in private life, as if it arose solely from their profession. But a moment's reflection would suggest answers to both these objections.

If there is any improper exhibition upon the stage, surely the blame should fall on those who have a legal power to prevent such abuse of the institution of it. If the actors are immoral in their lives, should it not be considered that they are prejudiced from their profession,

and deprived of one of the strongest inducements of virtue, that is, reputation, before they are proved to be guilty of vice. The consequence of this is, that too few enter into the profession till after they have lost their reputation, or are driven by mere necessity, by which means they reflect that disgrace upon it, which they are thought to suffer from it; and as they are sensible that they are precluded by this prejudice from all possibility of recovering or preserving it by the most careful deportment, they become desperate, and proceed till they even lose the sense of unavailing shame. Whereas, if a different conduct was observed to them, if the brand of reputation was taken off, and the profession established in that credit which the abilities indispensably necessary to eminence in it deserves, genius would be no longer damped by apprehension of reproach; more persons of good character would not scruple going on the stage, as they could preserve it there, nor vice seem to receive encouragement from public favour, because from this circumstance unhappily too often entangled with merit; but the life of the actor would reflect the sentiments of the poet, and enforce them to imitation by example. Nor would it be difficult to work this important effect. All necessary would be to refuse admission on the stage to all notorious for vice of any kind, to banish from it such as should become so after, however eminent in their merits, and to support the profession by the civil power against the tyranny of the mob, so that the lives and properties of all concerned in it should be secure from suffering such licentious outrage and injustice as no other subjects are exposed to, and as are equally a reproach and insult to good government and common sense. Nor need it be apprehended that this would make them insolent, or slacken their endeavours to please. Their very being depends on public favour, the bare withholding of which is punishment sufficiently severe, as ambition to acquire it will make them exert their utmost abilities, and always observe proper humility to the arbiters of their fate. They know that if they are neglected they cannot live. On the contrary, it would enable them to rise to greater merit in their art, as they would no longer be under the wretched necessity of prostituting their own judgment to please the gross taste of their tyrants. Many other arguments might be alleged against this grievous and shameful abuse; but what I have said is sufficient to convince candid reason, and with prejudice it is in vain to argue.

CHAPTER. XVI

THE SYSTEM OF POLICY BY WHICH CHRYSAL'S MASTER GOVERNED HIS STATE—ACCOUNT OF HIS METHOD OF PARRYING POETS—THE REASON WHY SO FEW NEW PLAYS ARE ACTED—INQUIRY INTO THE PRESENT STATE OF GENIUS—THE GENERAL MOTIVES FOR WRITING PLAYS PRECLUDE THEM FROM SUCCESS—MANAGERS AND POETS EQUALLY IN FAULT IN THEIR DEALINGS WITH EACH OTHER

THE day after this great affair was thus equitably settled, on the treasurer's making up his week's account, I came into the possession

of the manager¹, who, having some occasion for money, put me into his pocket.

The measures of my new master's government in this little empire were the strongest burlesque on the policy of the world, the greatest sovereign in which had not more intrigues of state to manage, than were continually carrying on about him, from the ambition, envy, and jealousy of the several candidates for his royal favour. But all this bustle did not embarrass him in the least. He had the address to play off one party against another, and, by never engaging himself particularly to any, was able to manage all, a method, by the bye, that might suggest a hint not unuseful to politicians in a higher sphere. But the part of his conduct that was most curious, and gave me the greatest pleasure, was his manner of parrying the attacks of the authors who were continually bringing him their works for representation on the stage, of which I had an opportunity of seeing many striking instances.

As it is evidently the interest of the manager of a theatre to exhibit those performances whose merit is most likely to gain the approbation of the public, and as no man who is capable of writing a piece proper for exhibition can be supposed to want judgment to know whether it has that merit, you may naturally think that there could not be much difficulty in the intercourse between them ; but human actions are not always to be judged of from the strongest appearances of reason. The representation of a new piece necessarily puts the manager to some expense and much trouble. If you add to this the natural anxiety about success, for merit is often rejected by caprice or personal prejudice, you will not wonder that he should be cautious what he brings upon the stage, and prefer acting old ones, unattended with these inconveniences, while the public will bear the repetition, and does not peremptorily demand new.

This is the real reason why so few new pieces are performed, and not any decline of poetical genius to produce them, it being certain that there are as many good plays written now as at any former point of time. But the matter is this. All the good ones of those times lie together before you, and raise your opinion to the happy days which produced them ; but if you consider the long intervals between, and the innumerable bad ones which appeared along with them, but are now lost in the wreck of time, you will find that you have not so great reason to complain of the present decline of genius as you may have imagined. I do not, by this, mean that every one who pretends to write is possessed of that genius, or that all the pieces offered to the stage are proper for representation. On the

¹ Apparently this is intended for John Beard [1716 ?-91], actor and manager of Covent Garden, from 1761-1767. Beard was also a noted singer. Churchill says in the *Rosciad*—

‘ Let slavish minstrels pour the enervate lay ;
To Britons far more noble pleasures spring ;
In native notes, whilst Beard and Vincent sing ’.

Garrick may, however, be the individual referred to ; as already observed, he made common cause with Beard against the agitators.

contrary, many who want every qualification indispensable to success in such attempts make them every day in defiance of reason, and strive to obtrude upon the public works which are a reproach to common sense. The motives of this are obvious. Whenever a man is at a loss how to spend his time, or wants to raise a little money, down he sits and writes a play. The consequence of this is, that the very reasons which made him turn poet necessarily preclude him from success. Idleness prevents that care—that *limæ labor*—which alone can make a performance proper for public representation, and distress depresses the imagination, and hinders its rising to that happy boldness which is the essence of poetry.

It appears from hence, that if the managers of theatres from interested motives are often to blame for rejecting good pieces, poets (or those who would be thought such), are much oftener culpable for offering them bad ones. The difference of opinion unavoidable on this account occasions the difficulty in their intercourse. But in this the contest is not equal. The word of a manager is decisive, while the poet has nothing left but to vent his resentment in unavailing, and often unjust, complaints and abuse, in which those who have least right are always loudest, for, enamoured with the beauty of their own offspring, like the ape in the fable, they throw dirt at all who presume to find fault with it. But severe as it must be to suffer this, it is not the greatest difficulty the manager has to encounter with them. Not satisfied with the civil refusal of affected delays and excuses, they must have a direct answer, which they controvert with all their power, and oblige him to support by such arguments as must give him pain, if he has either politeness or good nature; though, after all, instead of convincing them, he only gets theirs and their friends' ill-will, and arms all their tongues against him.

It is not to be doubted but the evasions which managers use to shift off good pieces are as grossly offensive to moral propriety, truth, and candour, as the arguments of authors in defence of bad ones can possibly be to reason; but as I did not happen to be witness to any instances of them, I shall confine my account to the latter.

CHAPTER XVII

CHRYSLAL'S MASTER SITS IN JUDGMENT ON SOME PIECES OFFERED TO HIM—A POET OF FASHION ENTERS—THE ARGUMENTS BY WHICH HE SUPPORTS HIS WORK AGAINST THE OBJECTIONS OF CHRYSLAL'S MASTER, WHO MAKES SOME CURIOUS DRAMATICAL STRICTURES—THE POET, DRIVEN FROM HIS LAST RETREAT, THE INTEREST OF HIS GREAT FRIENDS, BY THE COMMON CANT OF THE HOUSE'S BEING FULL FOR THE SEASON, DEPARTS IN A RAGE, DENOUNCING THEIR RESENTMENT, WHICH CHRYSLAL'S MASTER SHOWS HIS REASON NOT TO FEAR THE EFFECTS OF

THE important morning after I came into the possession of the manager was big with the fate of many a poetical performance, the

authors of which were appointed to come there for his decisive answer. Accordingly, as soon as he had breakfasted, he repaired to his tribunal, where he had been waited for for some time, by one of those aspiring geniuses, who sacrifice the solid happiness of independence to the vain ambition of being well with the great, submitting to their capricious humours for the honour of a nod in public places, or an invitation to their tables, to enhance their welcome at which, and consume time they know not how to make better use of, they fall upon this wise expedient of turning poet.

When they had gone through all the formalities of polite address, and taken their seats with proper ceremony, the poet opened the business.

'Well, sir', said he, with a smile of self-complaisance, 'you have perused that trifle; what is your opinion? Heh! don't you think it will do'?

'Sir', answered my master, with the smooth simper of a courtier, 'you do it unjustly by calling it a trifle. The piece has a great deal of merit, and reads very prettily in many places; but I fear it is not quite so proper for the stage'.

'How, sir? Not proper for the stage? Pray, sir, where does the impropriety lie? Several persons of the first rank have read it, and found no such thing. His grace said it abounded with the *vis comica*; Lord Tastly was charmed with the Attic salt, and Sir Peter Courtly admired the elegance of the diction. Pray, sir, where then can the impropriety lie? They are allowed to be good judges'.

'Pardon me, sir, I did not presume to call their judgment in question in the least. But—a——'

'And why, then, should you hesitate to receive it? They will support it with all their interest'.

'That, sir, I do not doubt. But—still, sir—the town'.

'The town, sir? And pray, what of the town? Is the judgment of the town to be put in competition with theirs'?

'No, sir, by no means. But still the town is a very formidable and arbitrary judge, and will not admit its authority to be disputed in such matters as this'.

'And pray, good sir, what objections can the judicious town, or you, its learned advocate, make'?

'Sir, you impose a very disagreeable task upon me; I had much rather be excused'.

'I do not in the least doubt that, sir, but my friends insist upon a direct answer. Either receive the play, or say you will not'.

'Sir, I should be very sorry to give offence to any gentleman; but since you insist upon my opinion, do not you think, sir, the plot is too—too—too domestic? Are not the intrigues and tricks of servants too low a subject for polite entertainment'?

'How, sir? Have you any objection to servants? Do not they make a principal part in all our modern comedies? Are the Jeremy's and Scrub's and Phillis's, and a thousand others to be rejected because they are servants'?

'No, sir. But consider they are not the principal characters, nor does the plot return upon them. They come in, as it were,

by accident; and indeed, except in the instances you have mentioned, and perhaps a very few more, they had much better be left out. It shows a grossness of taste to stoop to them for entertainment'.

'And do I not introduce the masters and mistresses too, as well as the servants? Are there not country squires, and town fops and fine ladies?'

'Yes, sir, you do introduce them, but in a subordinate light, and merely to be the dupes of their servants, without any business or importance of their own'.

'And pray, sir, in what other light do most masters appear? Ha! ha! ha. Well, then, it seems all your objections are to the fable. You have nothing to say against the sentiments and diction?'

'The sentiments, sir, may be very proper, and the diction suited to them, but you must be sensible that the former objection affects them all equally. The characters are too low, and the sentiments and diction consequently too coarse'.

'Sir—sir—sir—I shall not enter into any further arguments with you. His grace bids me tell you he insists upon your receiving it, or giving him such reasons as he shall think satisfactory, which must be very different from those insignificant cavils'.

'His grace need not exert his authority to influence my obedience. The least hint of his pleasure were sufficient; but unluckily I am engaged for the whole season—quite full'.

'Full? Why did you not tell me so at first?'

'Because you insisted on having my opinion'.

'Very well, sir, I shall let his grace and all my friends know how you have behaved. Let me have the play! impertinent, insolent, ignorant puppy', muttered he, as he went out.

'So', said my master, as soon as he was gone, 'I have now made him my enemy for ever. As for his noble friends, they are above troubling themselves about anything of the kind, and give him leave to mention their names only to get rid of his importunity'.

CHAPTER XVIII

CONTINUATION: CHRYSAL'S MASTER REJECTS THE WORK OF A POET FOR HIS IGNORANCE OF THE LAWS OF THE DRAMA—MORE DRAMATICAL STRICTURES—THE POET MODESTLY INSISTS THAT HIS PLAY IS REFUSED ONLY BECAUSE IT WANTS THE INTEREST OF THE GREAT, AND GOES OFF IN A HUFF—ANOTHER POET REPULSED FOR HIS ATTACHMENT TO THE LAWS OF THE DRAMA—ARGUMENTS AGAINST THESE LAWS—THE POET REFUSES TO CONFORM TO THE PRESENT TASTE, AND MAKES AN APPEAL—ONE MORE POET REFUSED, ONLY FOR WANTING EVERY POETICAL TALENT—REMARKS ON SOMETHING THAT AFFECTS MORE THAN CARE TO OWN IT

THE last poet was scarce downstairs when a footman announced the entrance of another. My master did not think it necessary

to observe so much ceremony with him as he had done with the former, but told him directly that he could not receive his piece. Such a sentence struck the poet all of a heap. He was unable to speak for some moments, but recovering himself at length—'Not receive it, sir' ? said he. 'You surprise me. Pray, sir, why so' ?

'I am very loath to find fault, sir', answered my master, 'but you seem to be utterly unacquainted with all the laws of the drama'.

'The laws of the drama ? They are but art. I write from nature. These laws have been long laid aside. Shakespeare wrote without laws'.

'So much the worse. But he is a dangerous example to imitate. The local temporary laws of the ancient drama are laid aside, it is true, but not the immutable, general laws of propriety and reason. Your fable is unconnected, improbable, and unaffecting'.

'How, sir, unaffecting ? Can the fall of a mighty empire be said to be unaffecting' ?

'No, sir ; but the description of it most certainly may, if not drawn with judgment and force. And then your characters are ill-supported, and your sentiments and language lost in the clouds'.

'What, sir ? Can the sentiments of kings and princes be too sublime' ?

'There is a wide difference between being sublime and swollen out of nature'.

'But what objection can you make to the language ? Is it not raised with epithets and metaphors, and all the figures of poetry' ?

'Good sir, poetical figures in poor language look like embroidery on a blanket ; they only make its poverty ridiculous. Beside your stalking in their stilts betrays you into many a stumble in the dirt. Your figures frequently fly in the face of common sense, and break through every rule of grammar'.

'Well, sir, I shall consider of these particulars. The great objection I have heard made to modern plays is their want of business ; but this can never be charged to mine. There is a ghost and a battle, and a king dethroned. Business enough, and enough, I am sure'.

'Ghosts and battles, sir, it is true, are sometimes introduced with success ; but then it must be a master in the art, else they have a contrary effect'.

'I apprehend that the aim of tragedy is to work upon the passions. In this, I believe, you cannot say I have failed ; the distress is truly great'.

'Distress, when out of character, loses the appearance of reality, and becomes ridiculous. A king in an almshouse, and a queen begging from door to door, are images which sink into a burlesque'.

'It is very well, sir ; you may say what you please, but I am satisfied it is not want of merit in my play that makes you refuse it. You daily act much worse. If it had been recommended to you by some lord, you would have found none of these faults ; but merit may starve without interest to support it nowadays. This is fine encouragement to genius, truly, and the public is like to be well entertained while such men have it in their power to refuse everything that does not happen to please themselves'.

Saying this, he snatched up his play, leaving my master to please himself with the prospect of being criticised upon in a newspaper, and pulled to pieces in a scurrilous pamphlet. He had not time to indulge these reflections long, when another of his clients attended his levee. As soon as he was seated—‘I have read over your work with great care’, said my master, ‘and am sorry to say I think it improper for the stage’.

‘Pray, sir, why so?’ answered the poet with an air of importance. ‘It is written strictly according to the rules of the drama, and enriched with the sublimest sentiments of the ancients’.

‘Sir, I am sensible of its merits as well as of the great learning of the author, but the taste of the times requires entertainment of a different kind’.

‘Surely compliance with a vitiated taste will not justify the breach of rules, taken originally from nature, and established for so many ages’.

‘I neither dispute the original justice, nor the antiquity of them; but I apprehend that the latter, in a great measure, destroys the present force of the former. The customs of mankind—the part of nature which comes within the province of the drama—are so changed since the establishment of those rules, that it would be most absurd to exact obedience to them now. Besides, may it not be said, without violation to the respect due to antiquity, that experience, in a great length of time, may have made many improvements in those rules. The infancy of every art is weak’.

‘But whatever changes may have happened in the customs of the world, truth still remains the same, and the genuine sentiments of nature cannot displease’.

‘Very true. But still they may not always be received with equal pleasure in the same garb. Unimpassioned sentiment, however just and sublime, works not the effects designed by the drama, whose aim is to convey instruction and pleasure at the same time, by an immediate address to the passions’.

‘Is it possible that you can be an advocate for the irregular monsters which at present dishonour the stage’?

‘As for irregularity, I look upon it to be but an imaginary defect, though, even if it were otherwise, I am the servant of the public, and obliged to find entertainment for their taste, be it what it will. If you would but conform’.

‘No, sir, that I never will, against reason and the ancients. I see you are prejudiced, and, therefore, I shall not argue with you any longer. But I shall not acquiesce in silence. I will publish the performance, without being discouraged by your refusal, and appeal to the judgment of the learned’.

He then marched off, with a stately pace, and my master, looking after him—‘There again’, said he, shrugging his shoulders, ‘I shall now have the ghosts of Sophocles and Aristotle, and all the doughty ancients raised to haunt me’.

As he said this, a person entered, whose whole appearance spoke distress. He approached my master, bowing lowly, and trembling with anxiety as he spoke.

'I have made bold to wait upon you, sir', said he, 'but if you are not at leisure, will call another time'.

'Pray, sir, sit down', replied my master, with a smile of encouragement. 'I have looked over your work, and am concerned that it is not in my power to receive it, as I should be sincerely glad to serve you. But in this it is not possible. I must be plain with you; you seem to want every poetical talent'.

'I thought, sir', returned the poet, scarce able to collect spirits enough to speak to him, 'that the business of tragedy was to work upon the passions. I depended entirely on the distress'.

'Very true, sir; but there are other passions besides pity to be appealed to; nor is poverty a proper distress to work upon them. Severe as it is to be felt, it affects but little in representation. The upper ranks of life know not what it is, and those who do are desirous to keep the thought at a distance, and conceal a knowledge they are ashamed of. The mind must be properly prepared to feel for another. The description of a famine would affect but little after a feast'.

This came too home to the unhappy poet. He burst into tears, and was departing without being able to make a reply. My master felt his distress, though he could not receive his play, as he knew that an audience would pay no regard to his circumstances, nor give up an evening's entertainment to relieve an author's indigence, and waiting on him to the door, slipped a couple of guineas into his hand, when it fell to my lot to change my service. I had never experienced my own influence on the human heart so strongly as on this occasion. The poet kissed the hand of his benefactor in a rapture too big for utterance, and forgetting for a moment all his distresses, went to a coffee-house and changed me to pay for his breakfast.

CHAPTER XIX

CHRYSALE CHANGES HIS SERVICE—HIS MASTER GOES TO BE ADMITTED INTO AN EXTRAORDINARY SOCIETY—SOME REFLECTIONS NOT SUITED TO THE TASTE OF THE TIMES—RISE OF THIS SOCIETY—A DESCRIPTION OF A MONASTERY, WITH AN ACCOUNT OF ITS MEMBERS AND SOME OF ITS RULES

ON the same day that I entered into the service of the master of the coffee-house, he paid me away in cashing a bill for a man of fashion¹, who, the next morning, set out upon a party of pleasure of a most extraordinary nature. This was, to be admitted into a society, formed of a number of persons of the first distinction, in burlesque imitation of religious societies, which are instituted in other countries.

I have already told you that I shall not give any opinion in religious matters. But, whether the original institution of such societies was right or not, as the motive of them was the worship of the Deity, any attempt to turn them into ridicule most certainly must

¹ Lord Sandwich [*see* Introduction].

be wrong, the mind of man seldom being acute or attentive enough to distinguish between matters which to appearance are so intimately connected as the mode of worship, and the object of it, but generally involving either in the disregard affecting the other. In the present instance, indeed, the disregard was designedly levelled at both alike.

To give you a proper notion of the scene in which my master was going to act a capital part, it is necessary to trace the whole from the original. A person of a flighty imagination¹, and who possessed a fortune that enabled him to pursue those flights, cloyed with common pleasures, and ambitious of distinguishing himself among his companions, had resolved to try if he could not strike out something new, that should at the same time please his own taste, and do honour to his genius. The mere gratifications of sense, in their utmost extent, not answering his design, he had recourse to the assistance of imagination to enhance them. The great butt, against which men of pleasure play off all their wit, is religion; their reasons for a practice so gross are obvious. As the voice of conscience will sometimes intrude upon them so as to pall their highest pleasure in the very moment of enjoyment, their first endeavour is to silence it, which they find by experience cannot be done so effectually by any other method as by this of taking off the respect paid to religion, from which conscience borrows the terrors that make its admonitions so unwelcome. Besides, they think it shows their superiority over the rest of mankind to laugh at what they are afraid of, as it is also convenient for their character of wit to exert it on topics where it is safe from being rivalled by men of real understanding.

These weighty considerations determined him to season his scheme as high as he could with impiety, in order to make it the better relished. Accordingly, after due deliberation on a matter of such moment, he at length hit upon a plan that pleased him.

In the middle of a large lake upon his estate there was an island, the natural beauties of whose situation had been heightened by every improvement of art. On this island he erected a building², exactly on the model of the monasteries which he had seen in other countries, and, to make the resemblance complete, there was not a vice that he had ever heard imputed to the inhabitants of them, for practising which he did not make provision in his. The cellars were stored with the choicest wines, the larders with the delicacies of every climate, and the cells were fitted up for all the purposes of lasciviousness, for which proper objects were also provided. Thus far the ridicule, however criminal in itself, may seem to have been designed only against those societies of human institution; but it was beneath his genius and spirit to stop here. Nothing less would satisfy him than to attack the very essentials of the religion established by the laws of his country, and acknowledged by every serious person in it to be divine. For this pious purpose, when everything was prepared for their reception, his next care was to

¹ Sir Francis Dashwood [*see* Introduction].

² Medmenham Abbey [*see* Introduction].

find a fraternity proper for the place. But in this his rank and course of life made him not long at a loss. He selected from among his intimates a number equal to that of those who had been at the first chosen to inculcate the religion which he designed to ridicule, whose names they assumed, as he, with equal modesty and piety did that of the Divine Author of it; and, to supply any decrease in this number by death, or desertion from the terrors of reflection, he instituted an inferior order of as many more, chosen also with the greatest caution and regard to the latitude of their principles, their fortunes, and mirthful accomplishments. The probationary office of these latter was to attend upon their superiors in the celebration of their mysteries, which were all performed in the chapel of the monastery, where no other servants were ever permitted to enter, on the most common occasion, as the very decorations of it would, in a great measure, have betrayed their secrets, the ceiling being covered with the emblems and devices too gross to require explanation to the meanest capacity, and the walls painted with the portraits of those whose names and characters they assumed, represented in attitudes and actions horrible to imagination. Nor was their care to keep their mysteries impenetrably secret confined to this exclusion of common servants. The diffidence of conscious guilt made them even distrust each other, till bound to secrecy by oaths and imprecations, receiving their force from the religion thus abused by them, an absurdity common among men associated for the most flagitious purposes. But, strong as the power of superstition is over weak and wicked minds (for nothing but the grossest superstition could make them think oaths in such circumstances binding), their secrecy was secured by a still stronger motive, which was fear. They were sensible that even suspicion of such vices would for ever exclude them from the society of all those whom, in despite of themselves, they could not help holding in respect, and that so outrageous an insult upon the laws was liable to punishment from the secular power, though they might, by their interest, evade the direct effects of which; yet the imputation would make them so obnoxious to the people in general, that they could no longer hope to enjoy any of the lucrative employments of the state, if their resentment did not arise still higher, and make them take that punishment into their own hands. And these fears prevented their secrets being divulged even by such as had resolution enough to desert the society, as they imagined the stain could never be so effectually expunged as to secure them from those consequences.

The rites of the society, and the ceremonies observed upon the admission into it, will be best explained by the account of what I saw my master perform on this occasion, when he was a candidate for the higher order, having already served his noviciate in the lower.

CHAPTER XX

CHRYSAI'S MASTER ARRIVES AT THE MONASTERY—THE MANNER OF HIS BEING ADMITTED INTO THE SOCIETY—CHARACTER OF HIS COMPETITOR—THE METHOD HE TOOK TO REVENGE THE SOCIETY'S INJUSTICE IN PREFERRING CHRYSAI'S MASTER TO HIM—THE MIRTH OF THE COMPANY DISTURBED BY THE ENTRANCE OF THE DEVIL, JUST AS HE WAS INVOKED BY CHRYSAI'S MASTER—THE EFFECT OF SUCH A VISITOR UPON THE COMPANY—THE DEVIL FIXES UPON CHRYSAI'S MASTER IN PARTICULAR, AND MAKES HIM SQUEAK

It was about four o'clock in the afternoon when my master¹ arrived at the verge of the lake, where he no sooner made the concerted signal, than a boat was sent to ferry him over. On his landing on the island, he went to the monastery, where he found the society just sitting down to dinner, at which he took his place among them. When they had made a short meal, and drank their spirits up to a proper pitch, they retired to their respective cells, to prepare for the solemnity they were going to celebrate. My master, then clad in a milk-white robe of the finest linen, that flowed loosely round him, repaired, at the tolling of the bell, to the chapel, the scene of all their mysterious rites, and knocking gently thrice at the door, it was opened to him, to the sound of soft and solemn music. On his entrance he made a most profound obeisance ; and, advancing slowly towards a table that stood against the wall in the upper end of the chapel, as soon as he came to the rails by which it was surrounded, he fell upon his knees, and making a profession of his principles nearly in the words, but with the most gross perversion of the sense of the articles of faith of the religion established in the country, demanded admission within the rails, the peculiar station of the upper order, where the superior and eleven of the fraternity—the twelfth place was vacant, and now to be filled up—stood arrayed in the habits of those whose names and characters they profaned by their assumption.

When he had finished, another candidate² advanced in the like manner, and making his profession, also preferred the same claim ; as there were more who had a right to do, but, discouraged by the superior merit of these two, they had declined their pretensions for this time.

The brotherhood, having heard the competitors with attention, retired to the table, and kneeling around it, the superior repeated a prayer, in the same strain and manner with the profession of the candidates, to the Being whom they served, to direct their choice

¹ John Montagu, Lord Sandwich [1718–92], perhaps the most infamous and flagrantly immoral of all this infamous crew. At this time he held the office of treasurer and receiver of the revenues of Ireland. At a later period he distinguished himself as First Lord of the Admiralty by his wholesale embezzlements and criminal neglect of the navy.

² John Wilkes [see Introduction].

to him of the two most worthy of his service. The superior then proceeded to take the suffrages of the rest, with the same mimic solemnity; when my master being found to have the majority, his election was exultingly attributed to immediate inspiration; and he was accordingly admitted within the rails, where he received the name and character which he was to bear in the society, in a manner not proper to be described, every the most sacred rite and ceremony of religion being profaned; all the prayers and hymns of praise appointed for the worship of the Deity burlesqued by a perversion to the horrid occasion. In this manner the evening was wasted till supper-time, when they sat down to a banquet in the chapel, in honour of the occasion, at which nothing that the most refined luxury, the most lascivious imagination could suggest to kindle loose desire, and provoke and gratify appetite was wanting; both the superiors and inferiors—who were permitted to take their places at the lower end of the table, as soon as they had served in the banquet, vying with each other in loose songs, and dissertations of such gross lewdness and daring impiety, as despair may be supposed to dictate to the damned; in both which my master shone so unrivalled, as to bear down the superior sprightliness, wit, and humour, of all the rest; and compensate for the want of every companionable merit. But while they were in the height of their festivity, an affair happened that interrupted it for a time, and showed their resolution, particularly that of my master, in a proper light.

The person who had that day been his competitor¹ for the honour of admission into the higher order of society, possessed the qualifications which he wanted in the most eminent degree. He had such a flow of spirits that it was impossible ever to be a moment dull in his company. His wit gave charms to every subject he spoke upon; and his humour displayed the foibles of mankind in such colours, as to put folly even out of countenance. But the same vanity which had first made him ambitious of entering into this society, only because it was composed of persons of a rank superior to his own in life, and still kept him in it, though upon acquaintance he despised them, sullied all these advantages. His spirits were often stretched to extravagance, to overpower competition. His humour was debased into buffoonery; and his wit was so prostituted to the lust of applause, that he would sacrifice his best friend for a scurvy jest; and wound the heart of him whom he would at that very moment hazard his life and fortune to serve, only to raise a laugh; in which he was also assisted by a peculiar archness of disposition, and an unlucky expertness at carrying his jests into practice, as he proved upon this occasion. Though he disdained to decline the late competition, as the others did, he had been well aware that my master's higher rank in life would carry the point in dispute against him; for which injustice he resolved to revenge himself in the most signal manner. For this purpose, he had contrived the night before to bring into his cell a great baboon, which he had provided for the occasion. When the brotherhood retired to their

¹ i.e. Wilkes.

cells after dinner, as I have told you, to prepare for the ceremony, he availed himself of the office of keeper of the chapel, which he then filled, to convey this creature, dressed up in the fantastic garb, in which childish imagination clothes devils, into the chapel; where he shut him up in a large chest that stood there to hold the ornaments and utensils of the table, when the society was away. To the spring of the lock of this chest he fastened a cord, which he drew under the carpet that was on the floor to his own seat, and there brought the end of it through a hole made for that purpose, in such a manner that he could readily find it; and, by giving it a pull, open the chest, and let the baboon loose whenever he pleased, without being perceived by any of the rest of the company. Accordingly, when they were all in the height of their mirth, on my master's kneeling down, and with hands and eyes raised towards heaven, repeating an invocation, in the perverted phrase of Holy Writ, to the Being whom they served, to come among them, and receive their adorations in person, he pulled the cord, and let the animal loose, who, glad to be delivered from his confinement, gave a sudden spring upon the middle of the table.

The effect which the sight of such a visitor had upon them may be better conceived than expressed. Their attention had been so fixed upon what my master was saying, that they perceived not from whence he came; and his appearing so critically at the invocation, and in such a shape, made them conclude he was the Being invoked. Terrified out of their senses by this thought, they all roared out with one voice, 'The devil! the devil!' and starting from their seats, made directly towards the door, tumbling over one another, and oversetting everything in their way.

In the height of this uproar and confusion, the baboon, frightened at the effects of their fear, happened to leap upon my master's¹ shoulders, as he lay sprawling on the floor; who, turning about his head at feeling the shock, saw the animal grinning horribly at him, and concluded the devil had obeyed his summons in good earnest, and come to carry him bodily away. Driven as he was to despair by this thought, he strove, however, in the instinctive impulse of self-preservation, to shake off the invader; but he, instead of loosing his hold on his repeated efforts, only clung to him the closer, clasping his paws around his neck, and chattering with spite at his ear. This completed the caitiff's distress. Every shadow of spirit failed him, and conscious guilt suggesting to him the meaning of this unintelligible jargon, he attempted, in the blindness of fear, to move the very devil to pity, by his pathetic wailings and supplications.

'Spare me, gracious devil!' said he; 'spare a wretch who never was sincerely your servant! I sinned only from vanity of being in the fashion! Thou knowest I never have been half so wicked as I pretended; never have been able to commit the thousandth part of the vices which I have boasted of. Take not, then, the advantage of that vanity; but judge me only from my actions. I knew not that thou wouldst have come, or I should never have

¹ Lord Sandwich.

invoked thee ! leave me, therefore, and go to those who are more truly devoted to thy service. I am but half a sinner. My conscience always flew in my face when I committed any crime ! my heart gave the lie to my tongue, when I gloried in my vices ; and I trembled at the damnation I affected to brave ! Oh, spare me, therefore, at least for this time, till I have served thee better. I am as yet but half a sinner '.

CHAPTER XXI

THE DEVIL IS DEGRADED TO A BABOON, AND HIS APPEARANCE WELL ACCOUNTED FOR, WHICH RESTORES THE MIRTH AND COURAGE OF THE COMPANY, AND PARTICULARLY OF CHRYSAL'S MASTER, WHO EXERTS HIMSELF TO RECOVER HIS CHARACTER—THE APPEARANCE OF THE BE-DEVILLED BABOON IS TRACED NEXT DAY TO HIS INTRODUCER, WHO AT THE INSTANCE OF CHRYSAL'S MASTER IS EXPELLED THE SOCIETY, FOR PRESUMING TO RIDICULE THEIR RITES—FURTHER CONSEQUENCES OF THIS AFFAIR MAKE THE SUPERIOR BREAK UP HIS MONASTERY, AND BUILD A CHURCH

WHILE my master was making this essay of his eloquence upon the baboon, the person who had brought him there took the opportunity of the consternation the whole company was in, to open one of the windows, unperceived by them, for the animal to make his escape ; which he no sooner saw, than he made directly to it, giving my master a happy release.

Before he could get clear off, though, one of the company, who was bolder than the rest, having mustered resolution to raise his head, got a full view of him ; and perceiving what he was, just as my master concluded his supplications, ' Your prayers are heard ' ! said he, starting up, and speaking, as soon as a burst of laughter gave him utterance ; ' your prayers are heard for this time ; and that devil of a great he-baboon that's just gone out of the window, despising half a sinner, has spared you till you are fitter for his service '.

At hearing these words they all arose from the floor, where they had lain sprawling on top of one another, and looking in amazement at him who had spoke to them. ' Courage, my friends', said he, ' this is but a false alarm ; our master is not so ready to come for us when we call him, or we should none of us all be here now. How a baboon, though, should come here to scare us all out of our little wits in such a manner, the devil may tell you, if he will, for I cannot ; but I swear I saw one go out of that window '.

' And I'll swear, too, that I saw him come in at it,' replied the author of the mischief, who saw no way to escape detection but by preventing further inquiry by this bold lie ; ' as I just then happened to look about to see from whence the wind came that blew upon my poll '.

This *eclaircissement* satisfied them all ; they instantly set the room to rights, and plastering up their broken shins and noses,

sat down to conclude their carousal, resuming their former strain, in which they all exerted themselves in an uncommon manner, to wipe off the disgrace of their late squeaking, particularly my master, who outdid his usual outdoing in profaneness, blasphemy, and wickedness of every kind, to recover his character, and convince them he was more than half a sinner.

They held in this hand, till nature sunk under the fatigue, when they retired, to sleep off their debauch in their cells; where, as I said, proper provision had been made for them, to reduce the theory of the day into practice, in the intervals of rest. Though the affair of the baboon had passed off so cleverly while their spirits were in such a flurry, when they came to inquire more coolly into it next day, the whole trick came out. It had been impossible to convey him into the monastery without the privity of some of the servants, who had so often felt the jests of this gentleman, that they were glad of an opportunity of being revenged upon him now, by making the discovery. This account, confirmed by some circumstances in his behaviour, which they had not attended to at the time, plainly pointing out the guilty person¹, the superiors adjourned directly to the chapel to consult how they should proceed on so delicate an occasion. For, though they had always highly approved of such wit when practised upon others, they looked upon the application of it to themselves in the most heinous light; especially in such an instance as this, the consequences of which had exposed them to the contempt of each other, by detecting their weakness, and showing that the guilt in which they gloried was only feigned. Mortifying as this was to their vanity, the thought, however, that the case was general, afforded some consolation. However, to remedy the defect of this, and prevent a repetition of the like disgrace, it was proposed, after mature deliberation, and much learned argument on the question, to bury what was past, by a solemn act of amnesty, and make a special law, whose observation should be enforced by an oath, that no member should ever after presume to attempt exercising his wit upon the society, in any manner, or by any means whatsoever; on taking which oath, and asking pardon upon his knees, at the door of the chapel, the offender should be forgiven.

To this proposal they all assented, except my master, who, for private reasons, thought the latter part of it much too mild for so flagrant a crime. He had long cherished a secret grudge against the other, who not only often pointed his wit against him in a manner that he could not digest, nor knew how to resent, it being as polite as it was keen, but also put him constantly to the expense of double wickedness, the only qualification in which he could possibly shine, to avoid being totally eclipsed by him. His desire of revenge also was strongest on this occasion, as he had suffered the deepest disgrace.

¹ By this practical joke upon his aristocratic associates, Wilkes seems to have provoked the lasting enmity of Sandwich and Dashwood, who took an active part, in 1763, in the proceedings against him for printing the *Essay on Woman*.

Accordingly, he exerted all his eloquence to show the enormity of the crime of attempting to turn any of the rites and ceremonies established by the laws of the society into ridicule; the letting of which escape without adequate punishment, he said, would argue weakness, and want of spirit in them, and must end in the ruin of their authority; for which weighty reasons he proposed that the offender should be directly expelled the society in form, as the only effectual way to vindicate their dignity, and prevent others from offering it the like insult for the future. This gave the affair a new turn. They all took fire at the thought of their dignities being insulted, and expelled him that moment, without ever waiting to hear him in his own defence. But he soon had the satisfaction of seeing himself amply avenged. The care they took to keep everything they did secret had long awoken the curiosity of the neighbourhood, who were the more severe in their guesses the less able they were to guess aright. But the affair of the baboon, whom the servants got sight of, before he could be caught, and whether misled by his dress, or misrepresenting by design, gave out to be the devil, was no sooner known, than a formal story was propagated over the whole country that the end of their meeting was to worship the devil, to whom this chapel was dedicated, and who had often been seen among them in a variety of shapes.

Scandal always meets easy credit. The story was believed by many, and repeated by more, as if they believed it, never losing anything in the repetition; till such a universal alarm was raised among the people—who are content to infringe the precepts of religion, without denying its authority—that the superior, whose seat was in the neighbourhood, found it necessary to dissolve the society; and effacing every trace of it, convert the building to the better use of a pleasure house, in which he entertained all his neighbours in general, whenever he was in the country; beside which, he also built a church¹ on an eminence near his house, that answered the double purpose of convincing the populace of his regard to religion, and of making a beautiful termination to a vista which he had just cut through a wood in his park.

I have anticipated these circumstances to satisfy your curiosity; as I have also omitted many, and softened more particulars in this account, which were too horrid to have been represented in their proper colours.

¹ High Wycombe Church, built by Dashwood some time after the dissolution of the Medmenham confraternity. Wilkes said, 'I believe this is the first church which has been built for a prospect'. The village, for the convenience of which it was erected, lay at the foot of the hill.

CHAPTER XXII

A FURTHER ACCOUNT OF THE RULES OF THE CONVENT ; WITH SOME STRIKING INSTANCES OF ECONOMY—A SEEMING INCONSISTENCY ACCOUNTED FOR FROM A PRINCIPLE NOT SUFFICIENTLY UNDERSTOOD—SOME REMARKABLE EFFECTS OF VANITY—REASON OF THE ABUSE OF WEALTH

You are astonished how such scenes of debauchery and excess could be supported, either by the fortune of the entertainer, or the constitutions of his guests ; but this shall be explained.

To prevent satiety or fatigue, these meetings were never protracted beyond a week at a time, nor held oftener than twice a year ; by which frugality of pleasure, they were always returned to with the keenness of novelty. And as for the expense of them, that was defrayed jointly by the whole community—the superior contributing nothing more than any other member, except the first cost of building the convent, which he thought himself amply recompensed for by the honour of having struck out the plan—and regulated by the strictest economy ; the slaves of their lusts being sent back to the brothels from whence they had been brought ; and the servants of their luxury discharged at the end of every meeting ; and no more retained for the rest of the year than an old man and woman, who took care of the place. To you who have supported the dignity of your nature, by preferring the pleasures of that reason which was given to distinguish man from brutes, to those of sense, which they enjoy in common with him, the picture of this whole scene must appear overcharged and irreconcilable with the great principles of human action, which always propose some good, either present or future, however the judgment may err in the thing proposed. But more acquaintance with life would solve this difficulty to you. The general motive for attempting to turn religion into ridicule has been already explained. But as some are seen to give in to this practice who seem to cultivate their reason with most success, and whose actions, and even inclinations, appear not to have the remotest tendency contrary to moral virtue, it may be proper to account for such an exception.

The first principle of action, impressed by nature on everything that lives, is self-preservation. From this brute animals, which by necessity proceed regularly in the course prescribed for them, never swerve ; but the rational animal, man, bewildered in his own imaginations by the abuse of that liberty, which was given him to enhance the merit of his obedience to the dictates of reason, often substitutes another in its place, by whose impulse he acts in direct opposition to it. This is vanity ! the real source of that ambition which courts danger, and plunges with open eyes into destruction, however speciously it may be disguised under the pompous titles of love of glory, and regard to the public good ; as well as of most of the extravagances and absurdities which puzzle superficial observers, and make them presumptuously impeach,

as a defect in the work of nature, their own neglect and perversion of its laws.

A particular inquiry into the effects of this suppositious principle, many of which, as I said, are blazoned as the brightest virtues, while more are acknowledged to be the most atrocious crimes; or how nearly such virtues and crimes proceeding thus from the same source, may be allied, though curious and interesting in itself, is not necessary here. It is sufficient to observe that its power is able to break the force of habit, reconcile contradictions, and confound the essential differences of things; to cope with prejudice, and overrule the infirmities of nature.

This it is, for instance, that makes the constitutional coward, who trembles at the thought of danger, and would see his country ruined rather than draw his sword in its defence, fight duels for a doubtful punctilio of empty ceremony; the superstitious wretch, who finds omens in spilled salt and crossed straws, and sees goblins and devils in the dark, profess infidelity, ridicule Providence, and dare the wrath of Heaven by insults and bravadoes; and lastly, this it is that makes the hoary sage, whose life has been regulated by the strictest principles of morality and religion, while passion might have rebelled against them, commence libertine in the impotence of old age, and glory in vices he has lost the power to practise. Of the justice of these remarks, the members of this society, of which vanity was the cement, as it had been the origin, afforded the most glaring proofs.

You wonder what there could be to be vain of in such an association; but you do not reflect that vanity is never the result of real worth. The false glare of public estimation reflects it from the vilest and most reproachful objects. The institutor of this society was admired for every polite accomplishment, every power of pleasing in conversation; and the first set he chose were all of the same cast. This, with their rank and fortunes, and, above all, the mystery of the institution, which set curiosity on fire, and gave imagination room to form the most flattering ideas of it, made admission into it an object of universal ambition, as it seemed a proof of every member's meriting the same character; and when once admitted, a vicious fear of ridicule made too many ashamed to quit it; and even they who did, were precluded from discovering anything that might deter others, by the secrecy to which they were sworn.

There is one thing more which, from the particular circumstances of your own life, affects you more than any other in this account. This is the folly and ingratitude of lavishing the blessing of wealth to the dishonour of the Donor, and with so little regard to its real use. But this, as has been the case in other instances, proceeds from want of better acquaintance with life.

It has been remarked by travellers, that in those parts of the earth, where the blessings of nature are bestowed with the greatest liberality, the people seem least sensible of them, and are sunk in the grossest vice, as if reason and virtue were incompatible with the good things of this world. The reason of this remark holds with respect to wealth in other countries. Provided to profusion with

everything they want, the rich look no further than to the gratification of their appetites and passions, as the means to procure which are in their possession, they acknowledge no obligation to the Power which first gave, and still preserves the enjoyment of them ; but, on the contrary, affect to show their independence, by prostituting it to purposes directly contrary to His declared pleasure, and this causes that abuse of wealth, which generally mars the blessing, and makes the gift of it so dangerous.

CHAPTER XXIII

ACCOUNT OF THE MEMBERS OF THE SOCIETY—THE HISTORY OF THE SUPERIOR—THE PARTICULAR QUALIFICATIONS BY WHICH HE AROSE IN LIFE—SUCCESS IN A PRIVATE INSTANCE ENCOURAGES HIM TO TRY HIS TALENTS IN A HIGHER SPHERE, FROM WHICH HE SOON DESCENDS WITH DISGRACE—A STRIKING INCONSISTENCY OF HIS CHARACTER

I SEE you desire to have some account of the several members of so extraordinary a society. When the great lines which distinguish the characters of mankind are marked by virtues, or even by superior abilities that dazzle superficial observation by the splendour of their effects, and pass for such, however different in the tendency of their exertions, the delineation affords pleasure ; but, on the contrary, where those lines are all distorted by vice and folly, and distinguished from each other only by different modes and degrees of them, the contemplation is a pain, and to paint them a task so disagreeable, that nothing but an impartial regard to truth could make it be undertaken. However, your curiosity shall be gratified.

As the convent was dedicated to pleasure, you may imagine that play was made a part of their entertainment. Contrary, indeed, to the scheme of all other parties of pleasure, it was not the first object of their meeting, and only served to fill up the intervals between other pleasures, which nature, without some respite, could not support in such excess. The circulation, however, even in this piddling for mere amusement, gave me an opportunity of taking a view of all their characters, such of which as contained anything worthy of your notice, for you must not expect it from them all, I will give you some general sketches of. As the looks of a man are generally a comment on his heart, I will place the whole company in your view, as I have done on other occasions, to assist you in forming a proper notion of their characters. At the head of the table sits the superior¹. You see every eye is expressively fixed upon him in admiration, at the vivacity, humour, and wit in all he says, while, by an art peculiarly happy, he alone seems unconscious of his own pre-eminence. These talents which, from the intoxication of present applause, are much oftener of prejudice than advantage to the possessor, by diverting from more solid pursuits, proved

¹ Dashwood.

the foundation of his exalted rank and fortune, because always directed by the deepest and most delicate address. The first instance in which this address was displayed, was in his own family. He had a distant relation¹, who had spent his youth in such busy scenes as left not time for his imagination to wander in search of amusement. To a mind unaccustomed to be wound up to such a pitch, the charms of a conversation like his were a relaxation irresistibly engaging. He insinuated himself insensibly into his favour, and by seeming to have nothing in view but his pleasure, led him, as he pleased himself, not only into all the lengths of his own libertinism, so as to be a member of this society, when the decline of life, at least, should have suggested more serious thoughts, but also at his death to reward his complaisance with a much larger portion of his fortune than he had any claim to, from consanguinity, or the preference of reason.

Such success encouraged his ambition to higher attempts. Introduced by the same qualifications to the acquaintance of the great, he not only gained their favour by them, but also imposed them upon them for abilities of a higher class so far, that being secure of his subserviency to their designs, they admitted him to a share of their power². But in this he had deceived himself, as well as them; he found, to their disappointment and his own extreme confusion, upon the very first trial of his political talents, when he showed in the strongest light the difference between the abilities requisite to raise a laugh and rule a nation. He had sense enough, however, to see his mistake, before it had involved him in any consequences from which he could not recede without danger as well as disgrace, and prudently sacrificing his ambition to his safety, he turned off all with a laugh, and returned to the enjoyment of those pleasures, for which nature seemed to have so particularly designed him. Whether that enjoyment is as sincere and undisturbed, though, as should appear from his looks and conduct, is a point not so certain as you may be apt to imagine.

The principles on which this society was originally instituted, and from which it has never deviated, the professed ridicule of moral virtue and religion, should seem to have proceeded from an utter disbelief of a Deity, or, at least, a fearless defiance of His power; but, contrary to this, there starts not at his own shadow a more abject slave to superstition and all its foolish fears, than he was at the time of his instituting it, and still remains. Such an inconsistency requires explanation to you, whose notions of life are formed solely from rational speculation.

¹ The seventh Earl of Westmorland [d. 1762].

² Dashwood was Chancellor of the Exchequer in Lord Bute's ministry [1762-3].

CHAPTER XXIV

CONTINUATION OF THE HISTORY OF THE SUPERIOR—THE INCONSISTENCY IN HIS CHARACTER ACCOUNTED FOR—THE REASON OF HIS BEING SENT EARLY TO TRAVEL FOR EDUCATION—POLITICAL PRINCIPLES ALL NECESSARY TO BE ATTENDED TO IN A TUTOR—THE METHOD AND EFFECT OF HIS TUTOR'S CARE TO INSTRUCT HIM IN RELIGION—A FRIGHTFUL STORY GIVES RISE TO A FRIGHTFUL DREAM, WHICH IS INTERRUPTED STILL MORE FRIGHTFULLY—A TREMENDOUS APPARITION TERRIFIES HIM INTO A SWOON—ACCOUNT OF THE APPARITION

THE political principles of his family being in avowed opposition to their sovereign, the earliest care was taken to instil the same into him, and the ripeness of his parts and genius flattered them with a promise of his future consequence in the state. For this purpose, before reason should have time to be convinced by experience of the injustice and danger of such designs, he was sent abroad to be educated in a country where every object should concur to prejudice him against the laws and constitution of his own, and the opportunity of personal intercourse confirm his attachment to him whose interest he was intended to promote. The public conduct of his life has sufficiently shown the success of his scheme, as an incidental circumstance in the execution of it will also account for the inconsistencies in his private character.

The religious principles established in the country whither he was thus sent for education, and the political ones it was designed he should assist to establish at home, were so intimately and essentially connected, that it was impossible to find a tutor for him sufficiently attached to the latter to answer the purpose of his family, who was not also at least secretly inclined to, even if he did not openly profess, the former. But this made no difficulty. Religion is, in reality, the thing least thought of, however pompously it may be professed in political schemes. They scrupled not, therefore, to commit his tender mind to the influence of such an one, regardless what impressions he might make upon it, beside those they desired; an opportunity which he did not fail to take advantage of. Accordingly, as soon as the tutor and his pupil were settled in the place of their destination, the former began his designs by displaying on every occasion the excellence and importance of the ceremonies and rites of the religion professed there, as the objects most likely to strike the levity of youth, always complaining with a contemptuous concern of the want of such in that of his own country; not choosing to speak more directly at first, for fear of giving him any alarm. But, artful as this method was, he had the disappointment to see it did not succeed so well as he could wish. Though, from the manner of his pupil's earliest education, it was easy enough to sink his own religion in his opinion, yet some circumstances rendered the raising of any other in its place a matter of more difficulty than might have been obviously apprehended. His natural quickness and turn of ridicule made

him see everything in the most disadvantageous light at the first glance, at the same time that his dissipation and levity prevented his attending to the abstruser arguments, often necessary to establish the credit of matters of such importance beyond the reach of rational doubt; so that all the pains his tutor was piously taking to enlarge his faith, threatened to work the contrary effect, of making him an infidel. Alarmed at this, the tutor, whose bigoted credulity had swallowed every fiction of superstition, had always some miraculous story of a judgment or apparition ready to refute the scoffs of his pupil, and confirm the truth of whatever he himself advanced. The constant repetition of such tales, which he plainly showed his own belief of, insensibly made such an impression on his pupil's imagination, as persuaded him of their possibility at least, if he was not absolutely convinced of the truth of everything in proof of which they were alleged; and filled him with fears, for which a good foundation had before been laid in the nursery.

When his mind was thus prepared to catch at every terror, his tutor took him one day to see the exhibition of one of those miracles, which are said to be wrought at the shrine of a contested saint¹; and which really weaken the credit of the religion they were devised to support.

The absurdity was too striking to escape his observation. He turned it into the most poignant ridicule, in spite of all his tutor's pains to defend it; who, finding that his arguments had no effect, had recourse to his usual proof of an apparition, which he dressed up in every colour and circumstance of horror, to make it have the greater weight. His pupil took not more than usual notice of the matter while light and company diverted his thoughts; but when he went to bed, and found himself alone, and in the dark, the whole flashed upon him in all its terrors, heightened in every instance by the liveliness of his own imagination.

What he felt in such a situation may easier be conceived than expressed. He covered up his head with the clothes; and lay sweating and trembling, till his mind was wearied with dwelling on the same thoughts, and he sunk into a kind of slumber. But this was far from giving him relief. He was no sooner asleep, than imagination, now in her own empire, placed him in the midst of the scene which had just before been so elaborately described to him by his tutor; from the contemplation of which he was delivered only to suffer still more severely, being awakened by sounds uncouth enough to startle, at such a time, the most resolute mind unacquainted with them.

Such a continuation realised all the horrors of his dream. He started up; and turning in the instinctive curiosity of affright to that part of the room from whence the sounds still continued to come, saw four glaring eyeballs fixed upon him, at the same time that a voice distinctly articulated but in a tremendous tone, and language which he did not understand thundered directly in his ear.

The darkness, which prevented his seeing the bodies to which

¹ Abbé Paris [Davis's *Olio*].

those eyes belonged, and his ignorance of the imports of the sounds, only added to his fright, by giving room to imagination, not only to form the most horrible conceptions of them, but also to apprehend them still more horrible than he could conceive. He was not able to support such an attack; but giving one helpless shriek, sunk back in a swoon. His tutor, who lay in the next room, and had been awakened by the same sounds, but was not so much terrified at them, both because his mind was not so well prepared for terrors, and that he was acquainted with their cause, heard him shriek, and knowing his voice, ran to him, imagining he was engaged in a conflict, in which he might want assistance, with the cats which he heard in his room; for, from two of these animals, which, finding the window open, had chosen it for the scene of their amours, had those dreadful sounds proceeded.

CHAPTER XXV

CONTINUATION: BEHAVIOUR OF THE TUTOR ON FINDING HIS PUPIL IN A SWOON—HE RECOVERS; AND TERRIFIES HIS TUTOR BY MISTAKING HIM FOR A SAINT—CHARITY BEGINS AT HOME—THE TUTOR SAGACIOUSLY GUESSES AT THE MEANING OF THE MISTAKE; AND PIOUSLY RESOLVES TO IMPROVE IT—THE PUPIL'S FULL AND TRUE ACCOUNT OF THE APPARITION, WITH THE TUTOR'S HONEST ADDITION TO IT—HIS REPENTANCE AND CONVERSION—HIS TUTOR MODERATES HIS ZEAL FOR WEIGHTY REASONS—HE RELAPSES; AND HIS TUTOR, FOR PRIVATE REASONS, DIVULGES THE WHOLE AFFAIR—THE METHOD HE TOOK TO INVALIDATE THE STORY.

You may judge how he was affected at seeing the person upon whom all his hopes of wealth and preferment were founded, in such a situation. Awkward at the best, he now knew not how to attempt giving him any assistance, nor had even the presence of mind to call any one who could, so great was his embarrassment and confusion. Nature, however, soon delivered him from his distress, and restored his hopes, by the recovery of his pupil.

As soon as he came a little to himself, he stared wildly round him for some moments; and then, fixing his eyes upon his tutor, who still stood gaping in amazement at him, he mistook him, from his being in his shirt, for the saint that ran in his head—his imagination still continuing the former scene—and holding up his hands in a suppliant posture, as he lay trembling on his back, 'Oh, mercy, gracious saint!' said he. 'Have mercy on my youth! never will I again presume to ridicule any of the sacred rites of religion! never will I admit a doubt of anything it commands me to believe! Oh, mercy! mercy!'—Saying which words he fainted away again.

This address, one word of which the tutor did not understand, threw him into a fright almost as great as that of his pupil. He stood for some time stupefied by astonishment, till the cold reminding him that he was in his shirt, care for his own health conquered

every other concern, and made him go to put on his clothes, before he attempted to do anything for the other. While he was dressing himself, he considered what his pupil had said with rather more attention than his fear had permitted him before; and recollecting the subject of their conversation the preceding evening, concluded that Heaven had made use of some supernatural means to subdue his infidelity, the impression of which remaining still upon his mind, had occasioned his mistaking him, in the manner he did, for a saint—for that he should be terrified to that degree by the screaming of the cats never came into his head—and piously resolved to contribute his assistance to the deception, by taking no notice that he had been with him before, or even denying it, if he saw occasion. With this intention he returned to his pupil, determined, though, not to disclose his suspicion, till the other should make some discovery to direct him more certainly how to proceed.

His pupil, who was just come to himself, knew him directly, now he was dressed, and catching his hand eagerly, as soon as he came within his reach, 'Oh, my dearest, my best friend'! said he, pressing it to his lips; 'what have I suffered since I saw you? How dearly have I paid for that profaneness and infidelity for which you have so often reproved me, with pious and paternal care. But never will I be guilty of the like again. I resign myself implicitly to your direction; and will, from this hour, believe everything you require me'.

His tutor, after giving him some spiritual comfort, and encouraging his perseverance in this pious resolution, desired to know what had been the happy occasion of it; to which the other answered, that some little time after he went to bed, the room was suddenly enlightened in a manner not to be described, when the apparition of which he had given him an account the evening before, stood before him, wrapped in blue flames, and breathing smoke and sulphur; and calling to him in a voice that appalled his soul, denounced Heaven's vengeance against his infidelity, which he was just going to put in execution, when the holy saint, whose miracles he had so impiously turned into ridicule, appeared all robed in white, and circled round with glory; and interposing between him and the spectre, the latter gave a shriek that shook the room, and then vanished in a flame of fire; upon which the saint turned to him with a look ineffably benign, and exhorting him to repentance, gave him his benediction, and disappeared.

Ready as his tutor was to believe everything that exceeded belief, when alleged in the cause of religion, the circumstance of himself having been mistaken for a saint staggered his faith in all the rest, and made him for once justly conclude, that the whole miracle was no more than a fiction of that fear with which the screaming of the cats struck him in his sleep; for he now plainly traced the effect of their voices. However, far from undeceiving him, he improved upon the thought; and, as soon as his pupil concluded his tale, with a grave face and solemn air, added a sequel to it, of equal truth, but dictated by a very different degree of veracity; the former being deceived himself, and having eked out the illusions

of his fear, as distracted imagination suggested to him ; whereas the latter aggravated those illusions by untruths premeditatedly devised to confirm that deception. He said that, grieved at the danger with which an unhappy prejudice of education threatened the spiritual safety of one so dear to him, instead of lying down to rest, he had fallen upon his knees, and poured out his soul in prayer and supplication to Heaven, to enlighten his pupil's mind, and convince him of his errors ; in which holy exercise he had continued ever since till this moment, when, in the impulse of a persuasion, which he now perceived to have been divinely inspired, that his prayers were heard, he came to satisfy himself of the reality of so miraculous an event ; for which he begged him to join in returning immediate thanks to Heaven, and the blessed saint who had wrought it.

This completed the deception of his pupil, so far as to make him believe the truth of some parts of his own tale, which he was not altogether so certain of before. He arose, therefore, and reconciling himself to the faith of his tutor, by the strongest and most full professions, dedicated the remainder of the night with him to prayer and pious conversation.

In the first heat of his devotion, he was for making the whole affair public, and openly joining himself to that religion, whose truth was thus confirmed to him. But his tutor moderated the fervency of his zeal, sensible that such a step would not only defeat the political designs of his friends, which must be carried on under a mask, and in whose success his own wishes were most warmly interested ; but also overturn his own hopes of being well rewarded for the care of his education, by a church living of great revenue, that was in the gift of one of his pupil's relations, who had promised it to him, as soon as the incumbent, then sinking under all the infirmities of extreme old age, should die ; for his religious principles never interfered with his interest. For these most weighty reasons, though, as you may imagine, he communicated only the former, he prevailed upon his convert to be content with the private practice, without the profession of his new faith, till he should, in the fulness of time, be so happy as to contribute his assistance to the great event, which should establish it in his own country.

Such an argument could not fail of effect upon one who found the fervour of his devotion cool so fast, that in a few days the whole matter was entirely reversed, and his practice as libertine as ever ; though fear of seeing any more spectres restrained his professions within more decent bounds. For, so deeply was the dread of them imprinted on his mind, that to this day he dares not to sleep by himself, or be a moment alone in the dark ; though his tutor, soon after his return home, divulged the whole affair, as far as it affected not himself, with the addition of many circumstances, if possible, still more contemptibly ridiculous than the true, to revenge his procuring the living for one of his raking companions, and ingratiate himself with a particular enemy of his, from whom he expected a recompense for so pleasing a piece of scandal ; to invalidate which was one of his pupil's motives for instituting this society.

CHAPTER XXVI

ACCOUNT OF THE MEMBERS, CONTINUED: HISTORY OF ONE WHO TURNED LIBERTINE IN SPECULATION, AFTER HE HAD LOST THE POWER OF BEING SO IN PRACTICE—HOW THIS HAPPENED; THE FORCE OF LITERARY VANITY; AND THE REASON WHY IT IS STRONGER THAN ANY OTHER—INSTANCES OF THE ADVANTAGES REAPED FROM ENCOURAGING GENIUS—A NEW METHOD OF FLATTERY IS SUCCESSFUL WHERE ALL OTHERS HAD FAILED; AND BY A MASTER-STROKE MAKES VANITY GAIN A SIGNAL TRIUMPH OVER VIRTUE

At the right hand of the superior you see one¹, whose example should be a warning to mankind never to be off their guard against the allurements of vice, while there is any possibility, however remote and improbable, of their falling into it. While youth might have been pleaded in excuse of passion; and the busy application of manhood extenuated any speculative errors in opinion, his conduct had been regulated by the strictest regard to the principles of moral virtue, and the precepts of religion. But in the evening of his days, when all that heat and hurry gave place to cool reflection, and the serenity of the prospect more than compensates for its approaching close, the whole scene was wretchedly reversed, and his setting sun overcast with a cloud of vices most blameable in any stage of life, but aggravated ten thousandfold in his, to which they were unnatural.

I have told you before that vanity was the cause of a fall so reproachful to humanity; the manner, though, of its operating upon one who seemed to be removed so far beyond its reach is worthy of attention. In no instance is the power of vanity so tyrannically exerted over the human heart as when it arises from an opinion of literary merit. The reason is obvious. Real learning is the most effectual check to vanity, as it shows the instability of its foundation. When, therefore, anything that makes pretence, however falsely, to that name, seems to administer to its support, it instantly looks upon itself as above control. Though early engagement in the active scenes of his country's service had prevented his making any great proficiency in the more abstruse pursuits of speculation, his natural inclination to them, directed by a taste formed by the best education, made him embrace all opportunities of patronising every advance in science, and improvement in the finer arts. The liberality with which he indulged his inclination soon marked him out to the attacks of every needy

¹ George Bubb Dodington, Lord Melcombe, the most servile place-hunter of his day. Throughout the reigns of the first two Georges his sole ambition was to serve whichever party happened to be uppermost; and his continual shuffling disgusted all parties alike. He got a peerage from Bute in 1761, and died next year. He wrote verses and posed as a Mæcenas, Paul Whitehead being one of his hangers-on. Browning holds him up as one of the worst of the selfish statesmen of the eighteenth century, in *Parleyings with Certain People*.

adventurer in the trade of letters. Projectors consulted him on their schemes. Poets submitted their works to his correction. His virtues, among which munificence was never forgot, were the inexhausted theme of panegyric; and dedications declared to the world his abilities and knowledge. Adulation so gross was an affront to reason. He rejected, with just contempt, the praises to which he knew himself not entitled; and was superior to the flattery which compassion for the flatterer often made him seem to pay for. Happy had he always preserved the same delicacy.

Among the crowds of parasites who lay in wait thus for his favour, was a person¹ whom idleness seduced to prefer this abject state of dependence to the pursuit of a liberal profession, which he had been bred to: a baseness aggravated by his possessing every qualification necessary to have made him eminent in any state. This man, who had thoroughly studied the human heart, soon saw that any direct attack upon his patron would prove ineffectual. He, therefore, struck out a new scheme, the depth of which secured it from detection, though, at the same time, the difficulty of carrying it into execution would have discouraged anyone less anxious for success, and less confident of his own abilities. He disguised the strongest flattery under the mask of the most cynical bluntness and candour; and, instead of praising all he did, and echoing in assent every word he spoke, he missed no occasion of differing in opinion with him, declaring he thought that being, who could debase the dignity of his nature so far as to give up his judgment to another, from any other motive than rational conviction, unworthy of the name of man.

A behaviour so singular necessarily attracted the notice of his patron, as the manner in which it was carried on soon won his favour: for in all the debates of any moment, which this champion for liberty of thought held with him, he managed with such delicate art, as to lead him—his patron—to confute him, though frequently contrary to the opinion with which he had originally set out. In trifles indeed, where being foiled could reflect no disgrace, he proceeded not with that caution, but often gained a victory, for which he laughed at himself when it was won. But with others he observed not such moderation. Be the subject what it would, he exerted all his powers—and great as I have said they were—till he silenced, at least, if he could not convince, his adversary, over whom he then triumphed in all the insolence of superiority.

Such a method could not fail of success. His patron, sure of coming off with honour, sought every opportunity of entering into debate with him, and contracted an esteem for one who, as he thought, had thus discovered to him his own abilities, while every one else declined entering into a contest, which always involved

¹ Dr Thompson [Davis's *Olio*], the subject of Paul Whitehead's *Epistle to Dr Thompson*. 'A physician of dissolute habits, who had quarrelled with the treatment adopted by the prince's (*i.e.* Frederick Prince of Wales) physicians in his last illness, and whom Whitehead, from whatever motive, strives to justify by indiscriminate abuse of the "college"'. He was one of the 'monks' of Medmenham.

them in disgrace. Encouraged by this success, he boldly ventured upon a stroke, the event of which was to decide his hopes. In gratification to his own depraved taste, he had written a treatise, in which the grossest libertinism was set in so advantageous and alluring a light, and the arguments against it evaded with so much plausibility and true wit, as were almost sufficient to put virtue out of countenance, and debauch its sincerest votaries. The contradiction between such principles and the practice of his patron, through his whole life, would have deterred any one less enterprising and experienced in the weaknesses of human nature from disclosing them; but he had lately made some discoveries, which emboldened him even to push his designs much further than owning himself the author of that book.

While the vigour of life had enabled his patron to persist in busier pursuits, he had despised the flattery paid to his literary merits; but as soon as the infirmities of age rendered him unfit for such employment, he, with a natural partiality, gave the preference to that pre-eminence which he thought still within his reach, and affected to slight all fame that was not founded on the nobler labours of the mind. This was a sufficient direction to the parasite. He immediately showed his book, with a mysterious air, to several of his patron's friends, giving them broad hints at the same time, but under the seal of secrecy, that he was the author of it. There is no way so effectual as this to spread any story. One whispered it to another, till, in a few days, the whole town was in the secret.

The hints and allusions which were every hour thrown out to the patron on this occasion perplexed him not a little, as he knew not what they meant. A secret, though in the possession of so many, could not possibly remain long such to him. One of his acquaintances, provoked at the seeming affectation of his not understanding his hints, told him the whole affair.

Much as he was surprised at the account, vanity would not let him suppress it by a direct negative, as the book was mentioned in terms of the highest praise. He answered with the coy evasions of modesty, the most effectual affirmation, and shifted off any further discussion of the subject, till he should be better informed. Accordingly, the moment his friend left him, he sent for the author of the report, and charging him with it, desired to see the performance which he had done him the honour to father upon him. The parasite, who took his cue from the looks of his patron, was far from denying the charge. He presented him the book without hesitation, saying, with his usual bluntness, that if it was not actually written by him, it was literally written from him, being nothing but what he had frequently said on those subjects, and, therefore, might without any injustice be asserted to be his.

The advantageous manner in which the patron had heard the book spoken of prevented his making any reply, till he should have read it, when he was so struck with the various beauties of it, that vanity subdued all his virtue, and deprived him of the power of denying it.

'If the sentiments are mine', said he, blushing at his own baseness as he spoke, 'I am obliged to you for placing them in so

advantageous a light, and think I ought to decline sharing in an honour, so much of which belongs to another'.

Such a repulse was no way discouraging. The parasite repeated his assertion that the whole was genuinely his, both in words and sentiments, as indeed, he knew not any other whose they could be; and insisting that he had no more merit in the affair than barely that of writing them down, a liberty for which he begged pardon, appealed to his former conduct to acquit him of so mean a piece of flattery, as giving to another the honour of a work which had not its equal.

It is not difficult to persuade a willing mind. The patron could no longer deny what was so clearly proved, and what his own conscience bore testimony to, against his false modesty. All that remained was to act in such a manner that his practice should not contradict this declaration of his principles, and so raise a doubt of their authenticity. But after having made the first step, he found no difficulty in this. He directly changed the whole tenor of his life. He laughed at morality, ridiculed religion, and professed vices he was unable to practice, and lastly, to complete his character, procured admission into this society, which, as I said, was the proof of every polite accomplishment and qualification, where he nods, as you see, over the grave, as insensible to the mirth and pleasures enjoyed by his companions as of the despicableness and danger of his own situation.

As for his parasite, his end was gained. From that moment, he commanded him as he pleased, sharing in the enjoyment of his fortune while he lived, and sure of such a portion of it if he survived him as should sufficiently supply his appetites, the only use for which he desired a fortune.

CHAPTER XXVII

CHRYSLAL CONTINUES THE ACCOUNT OF THE MEMBERS—THE HISTORY OF A REMARKABLE PERSON IS GIVEN FOR A REMARKABLE REASON—HIS PLEASURES BRING HIM INTO DISTRESS, FROM WHICH HE EXTRICATES HIMSELF BY MAKING THEM SUBSERVIENT TO HIS INTEREST, AND GETS INTO A GOOD KEEPING—NOT CONTENT WITH THE MOTHER, HE CASTS HIS EYE UPON THE DAUGHTER ALSO, BUT IS DISAPPOINTED, AND FORCED TO TAKE UP WITH A SHARE OF HER FORTUNE, FOR PROCURING HER IN MARRIAGE FOR ANOTHER—HE RESOLVES TO BE A GREAT MAN, AND FOR THAT PURPOSE, BREAKS WITH HIS KEEPER

ONE of the most specious arguments alleged against the obligation to virtue, is the success that is often observed to attend the violation of it, in the general pursuits of the world. Of this you see the strongest instance which this age has afforded, in that man¹ who sits at the left hand of the superior, wrapped up in the conscious-

¹ Henry Fox (afterwards Lord Holland) [see Introduction].

ness of his own importance, and smiling contemptuously at the company around him, while they believe he is joining in their mirth.

A particular account of his life would lead into too great a length. It would seem a satire on mankind, rather than a detail of the actions of one man. However, as a short sketch of it may be of advantage, by unveiling this mystery in the conduct of Heaven, and proving the insufficiency of the highest prosperity to confer happiness, even in the hour of attainment, when that prosperity is not founded in and procured by virtue, I will just run over the great heads of his story, with that brevity which the disagreeableness of the subject naturally dictates.

The opening of his life gave no prospect of his exalted station. Pleasure in every licentious excess soon dissipated a small patrimony, and he was hardly entered into man's estate when want, of his own earning, began to stare him in the face. The peculiar cast of a man's mind is in nothing more strongly shown than in the expedients he has recourse to, in order to extricate himself from difficulties. Instead of quitting the vices which had brought him into this embarrassment, he resolved, on the first alarm, to build his hopes of fortune on them, by pursuing them in a different manner. Experienced in all the mysteries of intrigue, he knew that age and deformity will purchase pleasures, for which youth and beauty expect to be flattered, if not even paid. Unrestrained, therefore, by any scruples of honour or conscience, he directly determined to fix upon some wealthy female of the former class, and never doubted making her passion repay him manifold what he had expended on the gratification of his own. This hopeful scheme was no sooner formed than carried into execution. As his character gained him easy access to all such as were proper for his purpose, he immediately singled out an old dowager¹, in whose disposal the dotage of a dying husband had left the accumulated wealth of several ages of successful industry. Such a quarry engaged all his attention in the pursuit. He paid his addresses to her, though destitute of everything that could raise natural desire, with so much assiduity and warmth, that she readily received him into her good graces, and in return for the pleasure she found in his conversation, lavished her fortune upon him with a profusion that even exceeded his hopes.

From the principle on which he set out, it may be judged that he did not neglect to improve such an opportunity of repairing his broken fortune, and laying up a fund for a future day, out of the overflowings of her untimely fondness. But, unbounded as her generosity was, he was far from being content, while anything further remained possible to be got from her. Beside the great wealth which was directly in her power, a very large estate was by family settlements to descend to an only daughter, whom she had

¹ Mrs Horner. Fox met this woman on the continent whilst he was fleeing from his creditors, and got so much out of her that he was able to return in a year or two, and enter Parliament as member for Hindon in 1735.

by her husband. As soon, therefore, as her modest lover had got possession of the former, his heart yearned for the latter also, with as much greediness as if his wants were only increased by his acquisitions. But, though he was seldom long at a loss for means to accomplish anything he had in view, as he was under no restraint from principle in the choice of them, there was an obstacle in his way here, which all the fertility of his genius could not surmount. This was his connection with the mother, the nature of which he well knew would never let her consent to a scheme destructive of itself; for he had no fear of her making opposition, from motives of honour or virtue, to anything that did not clash with that, as he found none in his own conscience even to this, though contrary to the first principles of nature. Since he could not, therefore, get the daughter's whole fortune by marrying her, he resolved to exert his influence on her mother, to give her to some person of his choosing, who should divide it with him, as a recompense for making the match. For this purpose he pitched upon a near relation¹ of his own, who readily gave in to his scheme, though possessed himself of a fortune that placed him above the necessity of such meanness. The consent of the guardian mother, as he foresaw, was easily obtained. She was happy in having such an opportunity of proving her regard for him, as well as of removing her daughter out of his reach, his attention to whom, while his first project was in his head, had not escaped her jealous notice.

His share of the prize, added to his other gains, made him now a man of considerable fortune, and fired him with an ambition of making a considerable figure in the state. To accomplish this, the natural turn of his mind suggested it to him to marry into some family, the interest and splendour of which might drown the obscurity of his own original, and assist his hopes. Nor did he apprehend any opposition to this scheme from the same quarter that had defeated the former. He had now gotten from her all that she had to give, and the same principle that prompted him to be the hired drudge of her loose desires made him find no scruple to leave her service, when she was no longer able to pay the wages of it.

Nothing is easier than to make matter for dispute. On her expressing her resentment, with the haughtiness which she thought the circumstances of the connection between them gave her a right to assume, as she had on many occasions before, at something he had done with design to provoke her, his sensibility took fire, and, in just indignation at treatment so improper for a man of honour to submit to, he bound himself by the most dreadful imprecations to shake off so intolerable a yoke for ever, and so flung out of her presence.

Her surprise at a behaviour so different from what he had ever shown before suspended her resentment, and she waited with impatience for a repetition of the blandishments with which he had been accustomed to soothe her anger. But, what was her astonishment to find that, instead of making any advances of the kind, he had actually withdrawn himself from her house. This alarmed

¹ Fox's elder brother, Stephen Fox, Lord Ilchester.

her. In the arrogance of her former superiority, the loss of which she was not yet sensible of, she sent him a peremptory summons to attend her directly. But her commands had now lost their weight, and she received a refusal, the more cutting for being couched in cool equivocal politeness. This drew on him an epistolary torrent of upbraidings, expostulations, and at last of the most tender entreaties; but all were equally ineffectual. He pleaded his rash vow, lamented the cruel obligation of it, and, as she began to be softened by this address, hinted at a sense of religion, and even distantly recommended it to her, as the best consolation under the crosses and afflictions of life.

Such sentiments from him could mean nothing but sneering insult. In that light she took them. However, as the nature of the affair made it impossible for her to open her mind too explicitly, she resolved to play his own game back upon him, and affect to be convinced by arguments of which she hoped to take advantage at a proper time, though in a manner very different from his intention, in applying them.

CHAPTER XXVIII

CONTINUED: HE BEGINS HIS SCHEME SUCCESSFULLY BY STEALING A MARRIAGE—HIS LATE KEEPER MAKES AN ARTFUL DEMAND OF ALL THE PRESENTS SHE HAD GIVEN HIM, WHICH HE ANSWERS AS ARTFULLY—HE ADVANCES IN HIS SCHEME, BY STEPS EXACTLY IN HIS CHARACTER, AND GETS INTO FAVOUR WITH A GREAT PERSON—CHRYSALE MAKES SOME REMARKS ON THE ORIGIN OF THE AFFECTIONS OF THE HUMAN MIND, AND THE DIFFERENT MANNER OF BREEDING MEN AND HORSES, WITH THE CONSEQUENCE

WHILE she was pleasing herself with this thought, he had carried the most difficult part of his scheme into execution. The passion for play, which marks the character of the present age, though it really counteracts every social virtue, is yet the means of associating all kinds and ranks of people who have, or even appear to have, money to play for. At meetings for this purpose, he had found means to make an acquaintance with a nobleman¹, who was so pleased with his conversation, studied designedly to please him, that he admitted him to an intimacy in his family, which he knew so well how to improve with one of his daughters², that, in despite of the disparity of age and rank, he soon prevailed upon her to crown his hopes by a private marriage, as the consent of her family could not be expected. As the immediate fortune of the lady could not be thought an object of mercenary pursuit, when the first

¹ The Duke of Richmond.

² Lady Georgina Caroline Lennox. Fox was forty-one at this date (1744). The marriage, in spite of the scandal it created at the time, was a singularly happy one. Lady Holland survived her husband only a few weeks.

emotions of resentment gave place to reflection, his plea of passion was admitted as an excuse for this violation of the sacred laws of hospitality, and his wife's father unknowingly completed his design, by exerting all his interest, which was very great, to advance him in the state.

The secrecy with which it had been necessary for him to conduct this affair, and the rapidity of his success, prevented his late mistress from making any attempt to defeat it. As soon, however, as she recovered from the first stroke of her astonishment at the news of his marriage, she proceeded to put her scheme in execution. Accordingly, she sent him compliments of congratulation on this happy fruit of his conversion, exhorting him to persevere in it, and professed her resolution to imitate his example, and dedicate the remainder of her days to the duties of virtue and religion, as a proof of which she proposed to begin by restoring to her injured daughter as much as possible of the fortune which the confidence of her husband had left in her power, and she had unhappily lavished in pursuits to the criminal nature of which he had opened her eyes.

As all that was not dissipated beyond recovery was what she had given to him, and her restoring it, therefore, must depend on his making a restitution to her first, he was not a moment at a loss for the drift of this extraordinary instance of penitence, nor how to treat the account of it. He immediately returned her an answer, congratulating her in his turn, with sincerity equal to her own, on her pious resolutions, the intention of which, he said, would make amends for the impossibility of carrying them into execution any farther than by stinting herself to the indispensable necessities of life, and laying up the rest of her large income to supply the place of the sums she had expended.

Such an answer necessarily drew on an explanation, and of course a demand of the several presents she had made him in the course of their dalliance, and knew he had laid up, as he lived at her expense all the time. This was no more than he expected. He replied, therefore, without being in the least disconcerted, that he looked upon everything he had received from her not as presents, but payment for the time he had devoted to attending upon her, and for that reason thought it inconsistent with that regard for justice which is inseparable from true piety, for her to demand such a restitution, especially as she must be sensible that he could not now make it, without doing wrong to his wife, who had an undoubted property in everything that belonged to him, and concluded with desiring that a correspondence, which might be misunderstood, and so disturb his connubial happiness, might be dropped between them.

This sufficiently explained the motives of his conduct, and the despicable situation which she had brought herself to. However, she was obliged to acquiesce with the best grace she could, without even the poor satisfaction of revenge, for he had taken care to insert in every paragraph of his letters such anecdotes of the connection that had been between them, that it was impossible for her to show them, in order to expose him, without exposing herself

at the same time, to the contempt and detestation of the world. From this time, therefore, all intercourse beyond that of common civility was broken off between them, though some consequences of their former connection, which happened after her death, make one of the most striking parts of his story, as shall be observed in the proper place.

The first essays of a man's disposition indicate the rule by which his whole life will be conducted. The interest of the family into which he had thus stolen had no sooner raised him to some degree of power, than he aspired to the highest, to attain which he resolved to pursue a method exactly in his character. This was to ingratiate himself, he regarded not by what means, with one of the first personages¹ in the state, whose interest he meant to make use of, as long as it could serve him, and then fly in his face to show his independence. Nature had never endowed a man with qualifications fitter for such a purpose. He was everything to every man. The gay were struck with his wit, the grave with his solidity, while an appearance of candour and sincerity, that lulled suspicion to sleep, won the confidence of all with whom he conversed, all which powers of pleasing were, by a servility of disposition, derived, perhaps, from a servile birth, prostituted to the humour of those whom he desired to please, however contrary to his own.

I see your curiosity at my saying that the servility of his disposition might perhaps be derived from a servile birth. You want to have the origin of the affections of the human soul explained, whether they are imprinted on it, at its first emanation, from the source of all existence, or received by traduction from the immediate parents of the body, or only caused by the casual operation of external objects. But this, as I have said in other cases, is a difficulty that I am not at liberty to solve, as the question is not yet determined by the learned, though much ingenious reasoning has been displayed on every side of it. This only I shall say, that the practice of mankind seems to contradict the second of these opinions who show no regard to the dispositions of those on whom they propagate their own species, though they trace back the pedigree of a dog or a horse for many generations, for fear of any fault in the breed, the reason you may perhaps imagine why the brutes fed with such care are found so much seldomer to degenerate than the offspring of the greatest men.

¹ The Duke of Cumberland. During the debates on the Regency Bill in 1751, Fox made an indignant defence of his patron against an attack by Pitt, Fox's colleague in the government, and left the house without voting.

CHAPTER XXIX

CONTINUED : HE PRACTISES A SUCCESSFUL METHOD FOR GAINING THE CONFIDENCE OF HIS NEW PATRON, WHICH HE TURNS TO GOOD ACCOUNT—HISTORY OF THE LOVER WHO SUCCEEDED HIM IN THE GOOD GRACES OF HIS LATE KEEPER—HE STRIVES TO PREVENT HIS TAKING ADVANTAGE OF HIS INFLUENCE OVER HER, AND FINDING HE FAILS IN THAT, FOOLS HIM INTO DISTRESS, WHICH BRINGS HIS LIFE IN HIS POWER—HE SLIGHTS MANY MOTIVES, WHICH MIGHT HAVE HAD WEIGHT WITH OTHERS, AND TAKES ADVANTAGE OF THE OPPORTUNITY TO GET RID OF HIM AND ALL FURTHER TROUBLE ABOUT HIM—HE CONTINUES TO DUPE HIM TILL THE LAST MOMENT, WHEN HIS EYES ARE OPENED, AND ALL COMES OUT

As soon as he had insinuated himself into the pleasurable liking of his designed patron, by an unwearied exertion of all his powers of pleasing, he directly proceeded, with the nicest art, to improve that liking into an important confidence. He watched his every action, word, and look, till he discovered the peculiar turn of his mind, to which he accommodated his own so implicitly, that the very faculties of his soul seemed to move only by the other's will. They who are above deceit themselves, suspect it not in others. That self-love, which is inseparable from humanity, was easily imposed upon by such art. His patron liked himself in him, and insensibly came to think all reserve unnecessary with one whose soul appeared to be only the shadow of his own. This soon gave him real consequence, as the numbers whom interest or inclination attached to his patron found it necessary to take the lead from him, and enabled him to grasp at every opportunity of engrossing power, and acquiring wealth to supply those pleasures which he had quitted only from necessity, and returned to again the moment he had the means of obtaining them. But all this torrent of success was not able to divert his attention for a moment from the smallest matter in which his avarice was concerned, as he gave the strongest proof in the following affair, to explain which I must look back to the woman whose lavish fondness first raised his fortune, as it happened in consequence of his connection with her, though some considerable time after her death.

It is observed that habitual indulgence continues the passions proper to youth after the fire that first supplied them is exhausted, and the end for which they were implanted by nature become impossible. Old as this woman was when our hero deserted her, and to appearance as incapable of feeling as raising desire, she had so long accustomed herself to the gratification of every sensual appetite, that she could not bear to live without a lover. The difficulty was, how to fix upon a proper object, for as interest was her only attraction, the first glances must necessarily come from her, and then her prodigality to her last had put it out of her power to make it worth the while of such another as she might like to supply his place. Precluded thus from much delicacy in her choice,

necessity directed her to one of her domestics¹, something in whose circumstances pointed him out more particularly to her notice.

There is not a more despicable instance of vanity than being ashamed of the connections of nature, because of poverty, when that poverty is not the effect of vice. A far distant female relation had from this vanity bequeathed to her a very considerable fortune, to which this man should have been heir, had not the lowness of his condition, a motive sufficient to have influenced a generous heart in his favour, made her think it would be a disgrace to her to be succeeded by him, for which reason she wantonly deprived him of the inheritance of his ancestors, to give it to one who did not want it. Dispirited by such unnatural injustice, for which the law afforded no redress, he was no longer able to pursue the industry that had hitherto been his support, and sunk into such distress, that his despair made him at length throw himself at the feet of her who enjoyed his spoils, to beg relief.

This happened critically at the time when her inclinations for a new lover began to get the better of her grief for the loss of the last. Softened by what she herself so lately felt, she pitied his distress, and as all the tenderer passions are allied, that pity was soon warmed into such love as she was capable of feeling. Accordingly, as she had taken him into her family on his first application, she now entrusted him with the management of her affairs, to give colour for the further intimacy she had in view. The consequence was natural. He readily took hints too plain to be overlooked, and she kept up his assiduity in her service, by some presents in hand, and grants of more, charging most of them, indeed, on the inheritance of his ancestors, which she had settled upon his predecessor in her favour after her death, till when they were not to take place or be discovered, to avoid his reproaches, as well as those of her daughter and her husband for such a repetition of her former follies, and because she did not choose to straiten her own circumstances by the immediate payment of them. But these wages of vice, however welcome in his present indigence, proved fatal to him in the end.

The hero of my tale, who saw the rise of this new favourite, and knew from experience on what it must be founded, though she affected to attribute her notice of him to gratitude to his relations, and retributory justice to himself, gave him a genteel and profitable employment² under one of the many which he himself enjoyed in

¹ John Ayliffe, at one time steward in the Ilchester family. In his trial he made damaging insinuations against his patron, Lord Holland, who is said to have held out hopes of a pardon if he would not reveal certain transactions.

² Fox gave Ayliffe the office of commissary of the musters, which carried with it very considerable emoluments. But these could not satisfy his reckless extravagance, and he involved himself in a course of felonious practices that brought him to the gallows. He was popularly believed to be an injured man. Churchill repeatedly alludes to him as the victim and scapegoat of Fox, and was prevented only by death from writing an elegy on his fate. 'Dost thou', he says to Fox in the *Author*.

the state, professedly in compliment to her, but really to attach him to his own interest, and prevent his exerting his influence on her, to obtain such grants as beforementioned, for the turn of his own mind made him suspect everything that was possible, and such is the partiality of man to himself, that he who has been ungrateful to all mankind will yet expect gratitude from others.

Proud of this preferment, which raised his rank in life, and depending on the professions of friendship and promises which his new friend liberally made him, he thought proper at her death not only not to claim her grants for the present, to avoid breaking with him, as he knew must be the consequence, but also to give up to him a particular gift, part of his own alienated inheritance, which he had received publicly from her, as a reward for his services and trust to his honour for an equivalent return. But that return, when at length it was made, was as far from being equivalent as his promises were from performance, nothing being more contrary to his intentions than to support his claims to those grants of which he had gotten notice, and judged from his own heart the reason of their being concealed. He continued, therefore, to feed him with promises, which led his vanity into expense, and encouraged him to embark in schemes that he had not a fund to execute, till he fell into distresses, to extricate himself from which he had recourse to means¹ that laid his life at the mercy of this his supposed friend.

There are some crimes, the consequences of which are so dangerous, that no punishment can be too severe to deter from them. One of the worst of these is imitating a man's signature, with a design to deceive. It perpetuates the violation of truth, undermines the security of innocence, and breaks that confidence which is indispensably necessary to carry on the concerns of life. But, though no circumstance can, in a legal sense, extenuate the heinousness of this crime, there were some, in this particular instance, which would have deterred any other man from the prosecution of it. It had been committed not with an intention of doing injustice to him or any other, but to remedy for a time his injustice, by raising apparently the value of the return he had made for the gift of their common benefactress, as I have before observed, nearer to an equality with it, in order to procure present relief from distress, of which he had been, in so many senses, the cause. But all these considerations were of no weight with him, when put in competition with the convenience of getting rid of one whom he doubly hated, for being privy to his iniquities, and interfering with his interest. He hesitated not a moment, therefore, to make use of an

'Dost thou contrive some blacker deed of shame,
 Something which nature shudders but to name,
 Something which makes the soul of man retreat,
 And the life-blood run backward to her seat?
 Dost thou contrive, for some base private end,
 Some selfish view, to hang a trusting friend,
 To lure him on, e'en to his parting breath,
 And promise life to work him surer death?—Lines 327–334.

¹ Forging Lord Holland's name to a lease.

opportunity offered beyond his hopes, and sacrifice him, under the specious appearance of paying obedience to the laws.

In this it was necessary for him to act with the deepest dissimulation, to accomplish his designs in its full extent. He professed pity for his misfortunes, and, while he corrupted all in whom the wretch placed confidence, to betray him, managed so as to seem to be compelled by law to appear against him, though he might with the greatest ease have avoided it, and buried the whole in silence. Nor did he stop here. His malice seemed to pursue him even beyond the grave, for instead of permitting him to prepare in peace for the approach of fate, he buoyed him up with the hopes of a pardon, to earn which the deluded victim subscribed to everything dictated to him to blacken his own character, and make void the grants which he had purchased at so dear a rate. And in this infatuation he was kept to the last moment, to prevent his recanting, for which purpose his nearest friends, and all who might have undeceived him and administered comfort to his distress in the hour of anguish, were barred admittance to him. But his eyes were opened on the verge of life, and in that awful moment, when truth only is spoken, he revoked everything he had been thus drawn in to say, and asserted the validity of the claims which were the cause of his ruin, so that the whole scheme, laboured with such deep damnation to deceive the world, was defeated¹.

I see the horror with which you are affected at such a scene, and shall, therefore, close it with observing, that though he was permitted to perpetrate his crimes, Divine Justice prevented his reaping the fruits proposed from them; as, beside the immediate price of his blood, it cost him more than he earned by his complicated guilt to stop the cries of the widow and orphan, and bribe venal defamation to silence when it was too late, and the mystery of his wickedness was made known to the world.

¹ Ayliffe was hanged at Tyburn in 1759. Lord Holland had treated him with great kindness during his imprisonment and trial, supplying him with necessaries, and paying the prison dues. He also sent his own physician to attend him, and saved him from the indignity of being ironed by providing him with a keeper. He also agreed to the postponement of the trial, and allowed two confessions of forgery by Ayliffe to be suppressed. Chrysal gives the worst possible interpretation of his motives.

CHAPTER XXX

CONTINUED : A VIEW OF HIS POLITICAL CHARACTER INTRODUCES A MAXIM NOT SUFFICIENTLY ATTENDED TO—HE FAILS IN A GREAT STROKE, AND MAKES SO MANY WRONG ONES, THAT HE IS KICKED OUT OF POWER, AND FORCED TO BE CONTENT WITH PROFIT, WHICH HE PURSUES THROUGH THICK AND THIN—AN UNHAPPY EVENT GIVES HIM AN OPPORTUNITY OF SHOWING HIS INGRATITUDE TO HIS LATE PATRON, ON THE MERIT OF WHICH HE RISES TO HIGHER POWER THAN EVER, WHICH HE WISELY EXERTS BEHIND THE CURTAIN, AND LEAVES HIS TOOLS TO BEAR THE BLAME—AN ACCOUNT OF THE JUST FRUITS OF SO MUCH SUCCESS CONCLUDES THIS HISTORY

You have hitherto seen him only in private life. I will now give you a glimpse of his political character, which will convince you of a truth, for obvious reasons not sufficiently attended to, which is, that the ruling principles of the heart influence the actions in all capacities ; and, therefore, that it is impossible for a bad man to make a good minister.

The power to which the confidence of his patron raised him was such as might have enabled him to effect either much good or evil, had he known how to have used it to the best advantage. But his eagerness in the pursuit of his own views put him off his usual guard, and discovered his principles before it was too late to oppose them.

The most exalted minds are not exempted from human weaknesses. That of his patron was a thirst of power, though without a thought of using it in any improper manner. Some late services of the highest importance, which he had performed to the state, suggested to our hero a scheme for rivetting his interest with him still stronger, by procuring him a power which he knew would centre really in himself. Accordingly, he exerted all his abilities and influence to wrest from the sovereign an essential part¹ of the incommunicable power of the Crown, and vest it in him. Such an attempt instantly gave the alarm to every real friend, not only of the government, but also of him in whose favour it was professed to be made ; who, though they harboured no fear of him, did not dare to offer such an affront to their sovereign, and give a wound to the political constitution of their country, which might be of most dangerous consequence in less safe hands. The design, therefore, was defeated ; and, instead of serving his patron, only instilled doubts of him into those who were not acquainted with the uprightness of his heart. Though the interest of his patron continued to support him for a considerable time after this, his whole conduct was such a series of blunders—many of them so gross, that it was doing violence to probability to impute them to ignorance—that

¹ General of the army for life. The Duke of Cumberland was appointed to the newly-revived office of Captain-General in 1745. He resigned all his military appointments after the Convention of Closterseven in 1757.

at length the voice of the people was raised against him, and he was obliged to give up all pretensions to power, and sit down with an employment of great, but mere profit¹, which all his own solicitations, though urged with the abject importunity of a common beggar, even to shedding tears, and imploring compassion for his wife and family, all he had hitherto acquired having been squandered, as fast as it came, on his pleasures, would not have procured for him, had not his patron sanguinely espoused his interest, even to the injury of his own; though on a discovery of his principles and private character, now too notorious to be concealed, he rejected him from his esteem, and refused to give any further countenance to his ambition.

From this time he applied every power of his soul to amass wealth, which he had too many opportunities of doing in his present employment, the most iniquitous of which he never failed to improve to still greater iniquity, regardless of public reproach, and the distress of myriads, suffering under his injustice, whose cries and imprecations ascended hourly to Heaven against him. Riches give consequence, especially with those who sacrifice everything to luxury. Though he had no public power, his personal influence over individuals in a short time became greater than ever, as he too soon had an opportunity of proving.

One of those events which show the vanity of all human designs, however wisely conducted, and glorious in their end, threw the government into other hands². New men always adopt new measures, if only from an affectation of appearing wiser than their predecessors. In this change his late patron lost all influence except that which virtue establishes in the hearts of the virtuous. This was an opportunity for shaking off the weight of obligation not to be missed by one of our hero's turn. He not only deserted him directly in the basest manner, but also, to ingratiate himself with the present powers, fathered upon him the fictions of his own brain, under the appearance of betraying his secrets, and made a merit of aggravating his ingratitude and perfidy by open insults in hope of provoking him to some unguarded act or expression of resentment, which might give advantage against him, by the common trick of applying to the master what is meant to the servant. But, for once, all his art failed. Confident in conscious innocence and merit, he disdained to give weight to such base machinations by taking notice of them; and receiving this in-

¹ After the resignation of the Newcastle ministry in 1756, the King invited Fox and Pitt to form an administration, but the latter declined to act with Fox. In the Pitt-Newcastle ministry, which came into power in 1757, Fox was appointed to the subordinate but immensely lucrative office of Paymaster of the Forces. In this post he built up an enormous fortune, and won himself a black reputation for misappropriation of public funds.

² The death of George II. George III was opposed to the war policy of the Pitt-Newcastle administration. He humbled Newcastle, opposed the Whigs on every point, forced Pitt to resign, and then Newcastle, and so made way for the ascendancy of Bute, who settled the Peace of Paris in 1763.

gratitude as a punishment for having placed his esteem so unworthily, looked down upon him with indignant contempt, nor was ever heard to honour his name with utterance. Such a proof of his sincerity gained our hero the confidence of his new friends, to whose tottering power his personal interest was found a necessary support. But he lent not that support but on his own terms. Cooled by experience, he had learned that the name of power is always pursued by envy and ambition. He, therefore, wisely gratified the vanity of others with the dangerous shadow, while he reserved the substance to himself, dictating in safety, because in secret, all the measures, for any mistake in which they were answerable.

In this situation you see him now. But such a series of success has been far from procuring him the happiness proposed in the pursuit. Recollection of the means embitters the end. The ingratitude and perfidy of one¹, whom he had placed his whole confidence in, and bound to him by the highest obligations, upbraid him continually with his own baseness to his patron, and make him afraid to place trust in any other; so that he lives in a state of constant suspicion and dread of all mankind, destitute of that friendly confidence which is the cement of society, the comfort and support of life.

Nor is this the only wound that rankles in his breast. The unhappy victim of his avarice, murdered under the formalities of law, is never absent from his thoughts a moment. Conjured up by conscience, his spectre haunts his dreams. He sees him in the dark. He hears him in the deepest silence. Nor can the loud laugh of mirth and riot drown his louder voice in the midst of company. Hence that gloom which you see hang upon his brow; that consciousness of guilt, which gives a cast of horror to his very smiles. Consider now the story of this man; and own with reverence and awe that vice never wants an avenger; that wickedness is its own punishment. Who would not rather be the apparent wretch that wanders homeless through the world, fed by the cold hand of common charity, than he with all his honours, power, and wealth! The characters of the rest, except him who had been my master's competitor for admission into the superior order of the society, are not distinguished by anything to make them worth displaying. I shall, therefore, leave them in the obscurity they deserve; as I shall reserve his for another place where some new occurrences will show it in a stronger light.

¹ John Calcraft [1726-72], who was made deputy commissary general of musters by Fox, and in this and subsequent appointments speedily amassed a large fortune. In 1763, he deserted Fox, and was henceforth 'the best head for intrigue in the whole party of Pitt's followers'—Junius. His defection, and that of Rigby, were two of the bitterest things Fox had to bear, at the time of his quarrel with Shelburne, and his virtual retirement from public life.

CHAPTER XXXI

CHRYSLAL LEAVES THE CONVENT—HIS MASTER PROCEEDS IN CHARACTER—HE PRACTISES A NEW MANNER OF COURTSHIP; AND SIGNALISES HIS TALENTS FOR INTRIGUE, BY DEBAUCHING THE DAUGHTER OF HIS FRIEND—HER DISTRESS, WHEN TOO LATE, GIVES HIM SOME SLIGHT QUALMS OF CONSCIENCE; BUT HE SOON RECOVERS, AND GOES ON IN HIS ENTERPRISE

It was my fortune to leave this place in the possession of the same person¹ who had brought me to it. The moment the meeting broke up, he flew to reduce into practice some part of the theory which had been so well discussed among them. A person of distinguished learning and virtue², who had taken great pains, though to little purpose, with some part of the education of his youth, had observed of late that he seemed to pay him particular respect, and was more frequent than usual in his visits at his house, where he behaved with a moral decency very different from his general character. The good man saw this with real pleasure, and, attributing it to the influence of his own conversation, as vanity will find its way into the best hearts, gave him all the encouragement he could to come, in hopes of working a thorough reformation in him. But he was deceived in that hope; and found, when too late, that he had cherished a viper in his bosom, to sting his heart. Eusebius—that was this person's name—had an only daughter³, on whose education he had exerted the tenderest care. She was now in that dangerous time of life, when ripened youth has given all the passions their full force, and reason not yet acquired strength to rule them. This danger, though, seemed less threatening to her than it is to most of the sex, nature, which had been most liberal to her mind, having denied those charms of face which too often prove a snare to the possessor; and the precepts of her father trained her in such principles of wisdom and virtue as seemed a sufficient guard.

Such circumstances, exclusive of the obligations of honour not to infringe the laws of hospitality—I add not virtue, for that has long lost all obligation in matters of this kind—would have prevented any other man from thinking of attempting her; but the pleasure of seducing innocence supplied every defect of beauty; and the difficulty of such a conquest doubled his ardour in the pursuit, as the triumph would establish the fame of his gallantry, which had never yet aspired beyond a servant wench; beside, that the age and profession of her father secured him from the danger of personal resentment. Encouraged by all these equally powerful motives, the moment he saw her, he marked her out for the proof of his talents for intrigue. How to begin his attack, though, so as to elude her father's vigilance, without alarming her virtue was the question. But he was not long at a loss. Difficulties, which appear unsurmountable to wisdom, are easily conquered

¹ Sandwich.

² Dr Sum [Davis's *Olio*].

³ Really his niece [*Ibid*].

by cunning—and with this he was plentifully stored—because it will make use of means which the other holds in abhorrence. In pursuance, therefore, of a plan which he soon formed, he cultivated the acquaintance of Eusebius with the greatest assiduity, and, in all his visits to his house, turned his conversation entirely upon points of speculative knowledge, in which he professed the most earnest desire of information. Eusebius took the bait. As these were the usual topics of discourse between him and his daughter, he was pleased at her being present whenever my master was with him, both for her information, and to give her an opportunity of displaying the advantages she had received from his care ; for which purpose he often led her and my master into arguments, to which he listened with the highest delight, as she always had the better in them. Nor was she less pleased on such occasions than her father. The modest deference which my master constantly paid to her judgment was so flattering to her consciousness of superiority, that she soon became fond of his company ; at the same time that the artfulness of his address to her, for he never showed any other notice of her sex than by a most guarded delicacy in his expressions, deceived the watchful care of Eusebius so effectually, that he never scrupled to leave his two pupils—as he fondly affected to call them—alone together, when any business demanded his attendance elsewhere. As this was what my master had long aimed at, it may be supposed he did not neglect to improve opportunities so favourable to his wishes. He always turned his conversation directly to such subjects as were most likely to inflame the passions, on the gratification of which he expatiated with a particular warmth and luxuriandy of imagination, but in terms so well wrapped up, as to conceal the poison they conveyed. The effect soon answered his design. Subjects, proposed merely as points of speculation, gave her no alarm. And when such thoughts are once suggested, nature will lead them to her own ends. Her passions had been smothered, not extinguished ; and were the readier to take fire for such restraint. She heard him, therefore, with pleasure, and slid insensibly into danger, the direct mention of which would have struck her with horror.

Matters were in this critical situation, when he returned from the society. The moment he alighted, he flew to the house of Eusebius, who unhappily was not at home. The conversation soon fell into its late course. There are some moments in which nature will bear down all opposition. Though she had indulged herself in talking on such subjects, she meant nothing more. But he was too well versed in the practice to let her stop at the theory ; and one unguarded minute murdered the peace of her future life and blasted the fruits of all her father's care. It is impossible to describe what she felt when passion gave place to reason, and she became sensible of what had passed. Even he, hackneyed as he was in the ways of wickedness, could not stand it. He left her precipitately, and for the first time felt something like remorse. But these qualms lasted not long. His desires were rather raised than satisfied ; besides that, to have stopped here, without making his success public, would have disappointed perhaps the principal

pleasure he had in view. He resolved, therefore, to seduce her from her father's house, that all the world might be witnesses of his triumph. For this purpose he went to her the next morning, at a time when he knew Eusebius was usually engaged abroad. On inquiring for her, he was answered that she was not well; and was turning about to go away, when her maid, who, from her own experience, had suspected something of the cause of her mistress's illness, officiously ran to him, and told him she was in her dressing-room.

CHAPTER XXXII

CONTINUED: CHRYSAL'S MASTER MAKES HIS TRIUMPH PUBLIC BY SEDUCING HIS NEW MISTRESS AWAY FROM HER FATHER'S HOUSE—THE MANNER IN WHICH HE IMPOSED UPON THEM BOTH TO EFFECT THIS; WITH THE CONSOLATION HE GAVE HER FOR SOME NATURAL CONSEQUENCES OF HIS GALLANTRY—HIS TRIUMPH IS COMPLETED BY HER GOING UPON THE TOWN, AND HER FATHER'S BREAKING HIS HEART—CHRYSAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE

His intimacy in the family giving him a title to visit her there, he went directly up, where he found her in a condition that once more shook his resolution, and made him almost sorry for what he had done. She sat the image of despair. Sleep had never closed her eyes. She had not changed the disordered dress of the day before; and her face was so swollen with incessant weeping that he could hardly believe it was she. Her maid, withdrawing conveniently, as soon as he entered, he threw himself at her feet in all the trick of woe, and imploring her pardon, lamented what had passed, for which he imprecated Heaven's vengeance on his own head, in such passionate terms, as, amid all her grief, alarmed her fear of his being overheard; for hitherto the secret was their own.

The first hint of this cured him of his penitence, and suggested to him how to proceed. He persisted in all the extravagance of grief; and acted his part so well, that, forgetting her own distress for a moment, she was insensibly led to administer consolation to him. This was what he wanted. He at length seemed to be comforted by her arguments, which he gradually improved so far as to glance at her continuance of the guilty commerce, which he pressed for by the most rapturous professions of love, and the strongest vows of constancy and truth.

This was an attack which she was in no way prepared for. Her heart was softened by grief, and shame for what was passed precluded her arguments against a repetition. She hesitated, however, silenced, not convinced, till the voice of her father turned the scale. 'Oh! save me from his sight!' exclaimed she, wringing her hands. 'Save me from his sight! I'll go to death, to anything rather than meet his eye.'

'Nor shall you meet it', answered my master, clasping her in his arms and kissing away the tears that trickled down her cheek. 'I'll go this instant, and take him home with me as upon business,

where I'll find means to detain him, while you pack up some immediate necessities, and prepare to meet my faithful *valet-de-chambre*, who shall wait with a coach at the end of the next street, and conduct you to my country house, whither I'll follow you on the wings of love, and drown every disagreeable thought in rapture'.

He did not give her time to answer, but rushing out of the room, and meeting her ready maid at the door, took his cue from her, who told him she had excused her mistress's absence from supper the night before, on a pretence of her being engaged in reading, as she said in the morning that she had sat up too late to rise to breakfast.

Satisfied with these excuses, because he suspected nothing else, Eusebius, on hearing my master was above, was coming up to pay his compliments to him, when he met him at the bottom of the stairs.

'I must give up arguing with one', said my master, smiling as he went forward into the parlour, whither he knew Eusebius would necessarily attend him, 'who sits up studying all night. She has turned me out on a pretence of dressing; but I know it is to go back to the book at which I caught her; so that I shall make but a poor figure in the evening if you don't help me out. However, I'll try; I am not ashamed to yield to her. But, come, I called so early to beg your company at my house, where I have something that will please you to consult you upon. I shan't keep you long, as I am obliged to go out before dinner'.

To this Eusebius readily assented; and my master, putting his hand under his arm, led him away, proud of such familiarity with a person of his rank, as unsuspecting as a victim to the altar. As soon as he got home, he gave the necessary instructions to his trusty *valet-de-chambre*; and then, returning to Eusebius, amused him with imaginary schemes of reformation and economy in his family, and improvements in his house, till the return of his emissary let him know all was over. He then dismissed Eusebius with a smile of triumph, who went home, happy in his mind at the prudence and virtue of his conversation, the effects, as he fondly imagined, of his own care and example — the last time his mind ever knew happiness. The moment he was gone, my master hastened after the deluded fugitive, whom he overtook just as she alighted at his house, the servants of which were too well accustomed to such things to be surprised at the sight of a new face. The manner of their meeting may be easily conceived. On his side, all was joy and triumph; on hers, guilty confusion, shame, and fear. However, repetition, though the highest aggravation of a crime, is yet less terrifying than the first commission.

Three days he stayed with her, every moment of which was embittered to her by reflection, and seemed tedious to him from satiety and impatience to make his triumph known, and then left her on pretence of business, with vows of immediate return; and, going back to London, repaired directly to the tavern, where he had by letter appointed to meet all his associates, to whom he related the whole affair in such terms of exultation as raised their

envy, not so much at the possession of her, as the glory of such a triumph.

I see your anxiety to know the fate of the unhappy Eusebius, and his more unhappy daughter. Though I saw them no more myself, I had too many opportunities of hearing their story, the sum of which is this : Eusebius, on his return home from my master, found a note from his daughter, bidding him farewell for ever, and desiring he would not take the trouble of making any inquiry after her, as she was unworthy of his care. The distraction evident in the style and purport of this note too plainly showed her ruin. This was an attack his heart was not proof against. He sunk down instantly in a swoon, in which he escaped some hours of misery before he recovered his senses. The first exertion of his reason was to make inquiry after his daughter, but no one could give him any information, her maid who conducted her having accompanied her flight. He then flew to his friend, my master, for counsel and assistance ; for the goodness of his own heart would neither let him suspect him, nor desert her in the ruin to which he had fallen ; but he was told at his house that a nobleman of his acquaintance had called upon him the moment he left him and taken him into the country for a few days. Every inquiry he could make after his daughter was equally unsuccessful, till my master's exultation made the whole affair public. This, if possible, gave fresh poignancy to his grief. He did not, however, desert the wretched victim of such villainy, but wrote to her directly to return to him, and hide her shame from the world in his bosom ; but despair made her reject his offer.

As for her, a few days, in which my master left her to the comfort of her own reflections, discovered to her that his love had been injurious to her health, as well as to her peace of mind. What she felt at this discovery may be easily conceived. She wrote to him in the agony of her soul, to reproach such manifold baseness ; but, instead of an answer of excuse or consolation, received only a quack doctor's advertisement, and a banknote for a trifling sum, enclosed in a blank cover. The same post brought her father's offer of forgiveness and reception. The contrast was more than she could bear. She hurried back to town, where despair prompting her to revenge her folly on herself by still deeper ruin, she plunged into all the horrors of a life of common prostitution.

This filled the measure of her father's woe. He had no redress to expect in this world ; and, therefore, resigning the punishment of his wrongs to the great Avenger, indulged his grief in silence, till in a few months it brought his gray hairs to the grave.

I here quitted his service, and after an extensive circulation, became the property of a pawnbroker, from whence I got into the possession of a beau.

CHAPTER XXXIII

HISTORY OF A BEAU, WITH A JOURNAL OF HIS MANNER OF LIFE
FOR ONE DAY—CHRYSLAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE IN A COMMON WAY
FOR THAT OF A LADY OF FASHION

I WAS now become the property of a beau, who was one of those ciphers in nature, who seemed born only to make up the number of mankind. The poor pittance, which pride of family spares from the oldest son to save the rest from starving, had been enough to purchase him a commission in the Guards in which he signalised his prowess on the parade, and talked as big, and looked as bluff, as the best, while his campaigns were confined to St James's Park ; but the prospect of a war changed his note. The irregularities and licentiousness of a military life now shocked his delicacy, and he exchanged for half-pay ; and, retaining only the convenient title of captain, resolved to push his fortune in the gentler way of matrimony. For this purpose he directly commenced beau, as the fair sex is soonest caught by the eye, and, when that is pleased, seldom inquire further. Accordingly, he now studied nothing but fashions, as all his care was to procure clothes to keep up to them, which the narrowness of his circumstances made so difficult for him to do that his belly mourned many a time for the finery of his back. Nor was that his only difficulty. The very expense of going into company to display that finery was often as distressing to him as to procure it.

It was on an occasion of this kind that I came into his possession. His showy appearance, together with his being one whom everybody knew, making him a convenient faggot to fill up those musters, the only end of which is to show the consequence of the commanding officer, by the numbers she can crowd together, there was hardly a genteel rout in the town to which he was not invited. Such a distinction was the height of his ambition ; accordingly, having received a card to summon him to one the next evening, he was not able to resist the temptation of so favourable an opportunity of showing himself to the ladies, though his finances were so low that he had no other way to defray the expense of his chair, but by applying to a pawnbroker, where distress is preyed upon by profession, and really aggravated under the deceitful appearance of momentary relief—an expedient, indeed, to which he was well accustomed. As soon as it was dark, therefore, he came wrapped up in a horseman's coat, and pulling a laced waistcoat out of his bosom, mortgaged it for three guineas, one of which I was. When this weighty transaction was concluded, he returned home, and, changing his dress, repaired to a coffee-house at the court end of the town, where he talked over the news of the day, with all the significant airs and importance of one in the secret, confirming every word he said with the authority of his cousin, this lord, or his friend, that duke, till he carelessly outstayed all his engagements for supper, when a welsh-rabbit and three-pennyworth of punch made him amends for the want of a dinner, and he went

home satisfied. Well, as I was by this time acquainted with the inconsistencies of human life, I could not help being struck with the contradiction between the external appearance and domestic economy of my new master. The former was in all the elegance of taste and affluence, while the latter was regulated by the strictest parsimony that nature could support. He lodged in a house which opened into a genteel street, and had a back door into a blind alley, that served him whenever he chose to go out or come in *incognita*. Here, one room up three pair of stairs—but the name of the street overbalanced that, and every other inconvenience—served him for every purpose of life, in most of which he ministered to himself, undisturbed by the company of anyone but his hairdresser, laundress, and tailor, at their appointed times. To all others he was constantly denied by the people of the house, who received all messages for him, and returned proper answers. But the manner of his life will be best described by the history of the one day I was in his possession; the business of every day being invariably the same.

As he had sat up late, it was near noon when he arose, by which genteel indulgence he saved coals, for his fire was never lighted till after he was up. He then sallied out to breakfast in a tarnished laced frock and his thick-soled shoes, read the papers in the coffee-house—too soon after breakfast to take anything—and then walked a turn in the Park, till it was time to dress for dinner, when he went home; and, finding his stomach out of order from his last night's debauch, and his late breakfasting, he sent the maid of the house for a basin of pea-soup from the cook's shop to settle it, by the time he had taken which, it was too late for him to think of going anywhere to dine, though he had several appointments with people of the first fashion. When this frugal meal was over, he set about the real business of the day. He took out and brushed his best clothes, set his shirt to the fire to air, put on his stockings and shoes, and then sitting down to his toilet, on which his washes, paints, tooth-powders, and lip salves were all placed in order, had just finished his face when his hairdresser came, one hour under whose hands completed him a first-rate beau.

When he had contemplated himself for some time with pride of heart, and practised his looks and gestures at the glass, a chair was called, which carried him to a scene of equal magnificence and confusion. From the brilliant appearance of the company, and the ease and self-complacency in all their looks, it should have seemed that there was not one poor or unhappy person among them. But the case of my master had convinced me what little faith is to be given to appearances; as I also found, upon a nearer view, that many of the gayest there were in no better a condition than he. Having reconnoitred one another sufficiently to lay in a fund for remarks, and bandied about the common cant of compliments, the company sat down to cards, when the looks of many of them soon underwent a change. For prudential reasons my master always declined engaging in parties of this nature, but this night all his address could not excuse him. A lady, whom he had dressed at¹

¹ Lady Mansel [Davis's *Olio*].

for a considerable time, happening to come late, unluckily wanted one, and, seeing him idle, would take no apology. He complied, therefore, with the best grace he could, and, invoking fortune with more fervency than he had ever prayed to Heaven, cut in ; when chancing to fall against her, her superior luck, or skill, aided not a little by his anxiety, soon stripped him of every shilling in his pocket and sent him home in a pensive mood, to study ways and means for raising another supply. And on this occasion I followed the smiles of fortune, and entered into the service of the winner.

CHAPTER XXXIV

HISTORY OF CHRYSAL'S NEW MISTRESS—SHE IS BROUGHT INTO DISTRESS BY HER BEAUTY, FROM WHICH A LUCKY INTERVIEW RELIEVES HER—THE DANGER OF ARGUING IN FAVOUR OF INCLINATION AGAINST REASON—HER FRIEND PUTS HER TO SCHOOL TO LEARN MANNERS, AND AFTERWARDS MARRIES HER—HIS FAMILY SHOW IMPOTENT RESENTMENT, AT WHICH HE IS SO ENRAGED, THAT HE MAKES HIS WILL, BY WHICH HE LEAVES HER HIS WHOLE FORTUNE AND THEN DIES—AN UNCOMMON INSTANCE OF THE GOOD-NATURE OF THE WORLD

THOUGH my late master had put the best face he could upon the matter, and excused his breaking up the party at the end of the first rubber, on a pretence of being taken suddenly sick, my mistress saw through him. 'Sick indeed' ! said she, laughing ; 'ha ! ha ! ha ! poor captain ! I do not doubt but you are, and that at heart. I saw it coming upon you ever since the first deal, when I held four by honours ; but I don't wonder at it. A full rubber was too much. Two guineas and a half are no trifle to some people'

Two or three other visits which she had to pay that evening prevented her making a new party ; she only stayed to tell the story of the captain's sickness to everyone she knew in the room, who all joined in the laugh against him. I see you are shocked at such an instance of insensibility ; but, if you will reflect a moment, you will find you have no reason. Though poverty is attended with many real evils, yet, when the worst of them are voluntarily encountered to gratify vanity, the pity, otherwise due to it, is justly turned into contempt ; and the efforts used to hide it, which are always seen through, treated with ridicule and insult.

The morning after I came into the possession of my new mistress, she brought to conclusion an affair of a most extraordinary nature, which few women beside herself would have had spirit even to undertake. To explain it properly to you, it will be necessary to give you a short sketch of her story. The gifts of nature are either a blessing or a curse, according to the use made of them. My mistress was born in one of the lowest classes of mankind ; the obscurity of her birth, though, seemed to be made amends for by the endowments of her person and mind, which were such as raised universal admiration from their first infant dawn. But these, tempting the licentious

spoiler, like the beauty of a flower growing in the highway, lost their advantage, and proved her ruin for want of proper care. She had scarce passed her childhood, when one of those female purveyors of vice, who go about, like their master, seeking whom they may destroy, to the disgrace not only of their own sex, but also of human nature, marked her out as proper for her purpose. There was no difficulty either in getting her into her power, or seducing her mind. The poverty of her parents made them glad to part with her, without further inquiry, to anyone who promised to take care of her, only to be delivered from the expense of her support, as it had prevented their giving her the least education to form her manners, or inspire her mind with principles of virtue. Such a subject was exactly suited for so vile an agent to work upon. She took her home, dressed her up decently, and, teaching her what account to give of herself, prostituted her, while she could make any profit of her, and then turned her adrift upon the world, to live as well as she could on the earnings of sin and wretchedness.

I must not attempt to describe the life of a common prostitute; it is too horrible! She had run through the lowest scenes of it for some time, when fortune one night threw into her way one of those old debilitated debauchees¹, who indulge in the speculation after they are past the practice of vice. Something in her air and manner, as she picked him up, struck him. He took her to a tavern, where he was still more pleased with her uncommon smartness and vivacity. 'I am cloyed', said he, to himself, 'with the gross ignorance of the women of the town; I hate the impertinent airs of virtue, which those of better education give themselves; I'll therefore unite those qualifications, which separately please me in both, in this young creature, who can never offend me by pretences to virtue, at the same time that the excellence of her understanding will receive and reward me with the fruits of the best education'.

There was novelty in the whim; and, therefore, he resolved to carry it into execution. He took her home with him, and, sending for the most eminent masters in every part of polite education, put her under their care, and incited their application by most liberal promises of reward. Young as she was, and hackneyed in every vicious habit, she had a sufficient sense of the change in her way of life not to forfeit the advantage by any misbehaviour or neglect. On the contrary, she applied herself so closely to everything taught her, and showed a disposition so desirous of improvement in every sense, that her benefactor, proud of the discernment which could discover such talents under so great disadvantages, became enamoured of the effects of his own benevolence and care. 'I have at length found', would he say to himself, 'what I have hitherto sought in vain—a woman that can make me happy. Her wit and understanding will enliven the hour of heaviness; while a false parade of virtue will never throw a damp on pleasantry and mirth. What though her birth is obscure, are we not all descended from one common stock? Is the blood of a peasant less pure than that of a prince? If she has taken a false step in the

¹ Sir E. Mansel [Davis's *Olio*].

weakness of her youth, that should be charged to fate, that led her into temptation before she had reason to resist it. But all these seeming disadvantages are now turned in her favour. Her experience in the ways of the world will make it impossible to deceive her again. Her consciousness of the meanness of her own family will give her a proper sense of the honour of being admitted into mine, and save me from the intolerable plague of having her pedigree rung in my ears every hour. Her youth and luxuriance of constitution will also supply to our children the defects which too eager a pursuit of pleasure may have made in mine. Let those who are dependent on the world regard its censure ; I am above it, and will pursue my own happiness, wherever it leads me'.

There is nothing more dangerous than seeking for arguments in favour of inclination against reason. Trifles, light as air, will be admitted as the weightiest proofs of that which is wished to be proved ; and palliatives, barely possible, answer objections, in their nature unanswerable. He had taken a liking to her. He had taken it into his head to secure the gratification of that liking by marrying her ; and a very little arguing with himself in this manner soon convinced him, not only of the expediency of such a marriage to his happiness, but also of the obligation he was under of doing that justice to her merit and his own judgment. The consequence may be easily concluded. He married her, as he professed, in obedience to reason, rather than to gratify inclination. But the case was very different with the world ; which, far from seeing the force of his arguments, laughed at him for being taken thus in a snare of his own making. His own family, in particular, beheld her with eyes, perhaps, not less blinded by interest than his were by inclination ; and, depreciating the merit she really had, represented his marriage as the mere effect of vicious dotage.

Nothing is so ill-judged as to show impotent resentment. It only provokes a return of no effect ; and makes a wound incurable which otherwise might have healed of itself. Incensed that they should presume to censure actions which they could not control, he directly made his will, by which he gave away the inheritance of his ancestors from his own blood, leaving his whole fortune to his wife, as a testimony of his unaltered regard for her, and to show his resentment to them ; soon after which he died. This was more than her most sanguine hopes could ever have risen to. She was in the prime of life ; and possessed of a fortune to afford her all its pleasures. These advantages, and I should add her beauty, which was in the perfection of a ripened bloom, naturally attracted a number of admirers of different kinds, and with as different views, who all thought themselves sure of her, from the circumstances of her past life. Needy adventurers, such as my late master, paid court to her fortune in the matrimonial way ; while her beauty attracted the more dangerous address of those who meant no more than pleasure. But she was guarded against both. She had tasted something of the sweets of virtuous reputation, and knew the value of it too well to forfeit it entirely again by compliance with the latter ; and her pride and experience set her above all the schemes of the former. She lived thus for some time in the highest happiness

of which she had any idea, for she was a stranger to that false delicacy, which creates itself imaginary uneasinesses, and palls the enjoyment of present pleasures. She was admitted into good company, where her behaviour, if not absolutely approved of, was still received with good-natured allowances, as much better than might have been expected, from the circumstances of her life; and she herself treated with tenderness, to encourage her to perseverance in so uncommon an amendment. But this happiness was too great to last long undisturbed.

CHAPTER XXXV

THE COMMON CONSEQUENCE OF OVERDOING THINGS—HER HUSBAND'S RELATIONS FIND OUT A FLAW IN HIS WILL—THE COMFORT OF HAVING GOOD LAWYERS TO KEEP UP A CLIENT'S SPIRITS—FOR THE ADVANTAGE OF HAVING TWO STRINGS TO HER BOW, SHE ENTERS INTO AN AGREEMENT OF MARRIAGE UNDER A HEAVY PENALTY—THE EVENT OF HER LAWSUIT SHOWS THE PRUDENCE OF THIS PRECAUTION—SHE IS CAST; HER LOVER FLIES OFF, AND SHE SUES HIM FOR THE PENALTY OF HIS ENGAGEMENT—HE BEGS THE MONEY AMONG HIS FRIENDS, AND THEN BY A NICE FINESSE PLAYS HER OWN GAME BACK UPON HER, AND FLINGS HER OFF WITH HALF—CHRYSALE CHANGES HIS SERVICE

It daily happens that men defeat their own intentions by carrying them too far. Hurried away by his passions, her husband, in making his will, had exceeded the power vested in him by the law, and so, by striving to give her more than he had a right, really gave her much less. But it was a considerable time before his family recovered sufficiently from the astonishment and confusion with which such a stroke overwhelmed them, to perceive this, and to be able to pursue proper measures for taking advantage of it. The first notice my mistress received of this affair was by an offer they made her, to refer their claim to private decision, in order to avoid the expense and trouble of a lawsuit. But, though the former part of her life had impressed her with horror at the very name of the law, she would not listen to such a proposal without taking proper advice, the result of which may be easily judged.

Lawyers will never lose a good client for want of giving hopes. Hers persuaded her so fully of the justice of her cause, and gave her such positive assurance of success that she resolved to spare no expense to obtain it. Though right and wrong are so essentially different from each other, they yet are sometimes involved in such intricacies, by the industry of those whose profession it is to distinguish between them, that it is difficult to know which is which. It was so in this case. They had raised such clouds, that reason could not see through them; and so everyone was left to speak according to inclination. While matters were in this situation, one of her admirers¹ thought it a proper time to push his fortune with

¹ General George Boscawen [Davis's *Ohio*].

her. His rank and expectations in life raised him above the necessity of such a scheme ; but avarice will stoop to anything ; and he would gladly have taken her, with all her faults, for the sake of her fortune, the certainty of establishing her right to which he had taken care to be well assured of by sages learned in the law before he laid siege to her. This, however, he was far from avowing. He pleaded the most disinterested love, and pressed for a return with all the ardency of desire.

But, though she could not do so much injustice to her charms as to doubt their power of inspiring such a passion, she positively refused to listen to any proposals of marriage till her lawsuit should be decided, from a generous fear of involving him in inconveniences, which her lawyers positively assured her could never happen ; as he, with equal generosity, founded on the like assurances, offered to marry her while it was depending ; whereas, the truth of the matter was with both, that he thought he could make a better bargain, as she knew she must a worse, if it should be concluded, till everything should be finally settled.

They had played this game upon each other for some time, when a diffident word dropped by one of her lawyers, as the day of decision drew near, determined her to change her system, and make sure of something for fear of the worst. Accordingly, the next time her lover visited her, on his repeating his professions of the violence of his passion, and offering, as a proof of his disinterestedness, to enter into a mutual engagement of marriage, as soon as the suit should be ended one way or other, under the penalty of a large sum of money on the refuser, she let herself be overcome by such an instance of sincerity, and, taking him at his word, signed the engagement directly. The event justified this caution ; for, after all the assurances of success by which she had been led on by her lawyers to run into every expense they could devise, justice appeared so strongly in favour of her opponents, that she was cast ; and a considerable part of the estate of her husband adjudged to return directly to his family, and the rest after her death.

Though what remained to her was more than sufficient to support her in the genteel manner, she could not but feel at first a fall from such high hopes ; but her spirit had been too well exercised in the beginning of her life to yield long to anything, and she had almost got the better of it, when something that piqued her resentment roused her effectually. Among all the friends who came on this occasion to gratify the insolence of condoling her misfortune, she was not a little surprised never to see the face of her lover. As she could not be at a loss for the mean motive of such behaviour, she might possibly have treated it with the contempt it deserved, had not necessity urged her to show a warmer resentment.

The expenses of her lawsuit had involved her in debts—for she never lowered her living, depending on the assurances given her of success—which were now demanded with an importunity that perplexed her. This was just at the time when she took notice of the desertion of her lover. The urgency of her creditors, therefore, suggested it to her to call upon him to fulfil his engagement of

marriage ; which his conduct convinced her he would forfeit the penalty rather than do, by which means she should punish him for his rashness, and extricate herself from her difficulties at the same time ; for, had she thought that he would fulfil it, there was nothing that she would not have suffered, sooner than link her fate to him.

There was something in a woman's calling upon a man to marry her so contrary to those notions of delicacy, on which the superior class of the female sex value themselves, that, perhaps, no other woman of her rank could have prevailed on herself to do it. But she had not been born in, nor bred up with expectations of that rank ; her notions, therefore, were of a coarser complexion ; and, though she had learned the external modes of behaviour—the trick of complaisance—she had been put to school too late in life to change her sentiments so far as to make her think it necessary to sacrifice such powerful motives as resentment and interest to a delicacy that appeared to her merely fantastic. The moment, therefore, the thought occurred, she applied once more to her lawyer ; and by his advice wrote a letter to her lover, in which she directly claimed the performance of his engagement. But, as this was no more than his heart had told him he must expect—for he would have done the very same thing himself—he was prepared how to answer her. Accordingly, he wrote to her in the most artful manner, excusing him of his not having been to wait upon her since the fatal decision of her lawsuit, on account of the pain he must feel at seeing her, when he had lost all hopes of ever calling her his ; for, as her generosity would not permit her to marry while there was only a possibility of such a misfortune, he could not suppose that her sense of honour and justice would now, when it had actually happened ; and for this reason he desired that she would please to send him his engagement, not that it was of any consequence, as he would return hers, to whom he wished the highest happiness in every scene and view of life. Such a refusal was just what she wanted ; she, therefore, instantly commenced a suit at law with him, to recover the penalty of his engagement, which he had thus forfeited to her.

The care he had taken himself to make the engagement as binding as possible, precluding every hope of defeating her claim ; and his knowledge of her temper convincing him that it would be in vain to attempt prevailing on her to drop it now she had once begun, he had recourse to an expedient to extricate him from this difficulty, of the same mean kind with that which brought it upon him. Accordingly, though he was well enough able to pay the penalty himself, as he did not choose to fulfil his engagement by marrying, he put on a poor face, and went begging to all his relations for their assistance, pleading poverty, and alleging the disgrace it would bring upon the whole family, if he should be obliged to marry such a woman ; whom he represented in the blackest colours, exaggerating every circumstance of her life. Though this might justly have been retorted upon himself for ever thinking of her, they took pity on his distress, and raised the money for him, by a general contribution.

Such success encouraged him to hope for further, and try the

force of his eloquence upon my mistress. For this purpose he desired an interview, which she had with much reluctance consented to give him the next morning after I came into her possession. I had seen vice and folly in a variety of shapes, but never did the human heart appear to me in so contemptible a light as his upon this occasion. He began his attack with flattery, professing the highest respect, and lamenting, in the most passionate terms, that the difficulty of his circumstances would not permit him to have the happiness of marrying her; and appealed to her generosity and justice as before, for a release from an engagement that it must be the ruin of them both to fulfil. But all was in vain. She scarce deigned to make him any answer; and that only to tell him that his professions and arguments were equally ineffectual to alter a resolution, which the baseness of his behaviour alone had made her take. Not quite discouraged, though, by such a repulse, he instantly changed his method of application. He threw himself at her feet, implored her compassion on his poverty, and offered, as the utmost it would admit him to do, to pay her down half the penalty directly, concluding with saying that, if she refused to accept of that, he had no other resource but even to fulfil his engagement and marry her.

This was fighting the devil at his own weapons. The mention of marriage was a stroke she was not prepared for. Startled at the thought, therefore, as she knew not what despair might drive him to, she agreed to his proposal; and so they divided the money between them—for he prudently pocketed the other half himself, as he could not think of offering such an affront to his friends as to return any part of their bounty—and were equal gainers by a bargain in which each outwitted the other.

Though what my mistress got fell short of her expectation, it answered the double end of gratifying her resentment, and paying her debts; on the latter of which occasions I left her service.

CHAPTER XXXVI

CHRYSALE MAKES SOME OUT-OF-THE WAY REMARKS ON MATRIMONY—DESCRIPTION AND HISTORY OF HIS NEW MASTER—CHRYSALE VINDICATES HIS USING A COMMON EXPRESSION—HIS MASTER'S FIRST RISE FROM A BEGGAR TO A FOOT-BOY—HE GAINS HIS MASTER'S FAVOUR, OF WHICH HE MAKES THE USE NATURAL TO BE EXPECTED FROM HIS FIRST EDUCATION—SOME ACCOUNT OF A RELATION OF HIS PRINCIPAL'S—THE DANGER OF GIVING ADVICE—CHRYSALE'S MASTER INSINUATES HIMSELF INTO THE COLONEL'S LIKING, AND UNDERMINES HIS PRINCIPAL IN HIS REGARD

I HAVE observed in the course of this account of my last mistress that you have been shocked at the thought of a man's marrying a woman in her circumstances. To you, who view life only by the light of reason, it must certainly appear most unaccountable; but better acquaintance with the ways of the world would reconcile

you to that and many other things equally gross and shocking in speculation. Marriage is a mutual trust of honour. A man's marrying a woman, therefore, who has lost her honour, is trusting his whole fortune to a bankrupt who has no security to give for that trust; a foolhardiness that must proceed either from a consciousness of having himself no honour to lose, a total disregard to the loss, or an affectation of acting on different principles from the rest of mankind, as a proof of being above their prejudices. Where her honour indeed has been lost to himself, justice makes it a duty upon him to repair her loss by marriage; but then that very marriage is a punishment for his crime, as it must want the essential happiness of confidence; for he will be always ready to suspect that the disposition which betrayed her into error with him may have the same effect with others. Nor is this suspicion unnatural. I see you would argue from the habitual, avowed incontinence of man, that this trust of honour is not equal, and therefore cannot be obliging. But this is judging without duly considering the subject. Chastity is, in its nature, a virtue equally the duty of both sexes to observe, and, with regard to society in general, the violation of it is equally criminal in both; but in those nearer connections of life, the interest of which is the more immediate object of human attention, the consequences of that violation in woman are attended with so much greater inconveniences than in man, that, in respect to them, the crime is obviously less pardonable in her than him; and, for this reason, this virtue of chastity is made, in a peculiar manner, the honour of woman; while the honour of man is placed in other virtues, from which she receives as much advantage as he does from her chastity; and, therefore, the trust of honour is mutual and equal. In distinguishing thus between honour and virtue, I speak according to the notions of mankind; in their own nature there is no distinction between them.

There was something in the whole appearance of the person to whom my mistress paid me away, that made me expect to see a character of the cast which I had not yet met with among mankind. His looks were sly, methodical, and plodding. Practice had fixed upon his passive face the hollow varnish of a servile smile; and an over-acted affectation of polite behaviour made his natural awkwardness truly ridiculous. But under all this I could see a depth of design, and latitude of principle equal to any great attempt, the success of which should in the opinion of the world determine the quality of that greatness, whether villainy or virtue. That knowledge of his life which is necessary to explain his character, and account for the principles upon which he acted consistently his manifold part, will be comprised in a few words. Sprung from the dregs of the people, and turned loose upon the world to shift for himself, as soon as he was able to crawl, he took his stand about the house of a person in business, where he hardly earned a morsel of broken victuals, by running of errands, cleaning shoes, and such offices as are performed by those servants of servants.

I see you wonder at my saying he was sprung from the dregs of the people, as if difference of rank could make any alteration in the essential equality of human nature; but without entering into a

discussion of undetermined points, on both sides of which much has been said with equal strength of reason, the best observation of the power of early example, to impress those principles which are to govern the future life, will sufficiently justify my using the expression here. The patience with which he was obliged to bear the cuffs and kicks of those worst of tyrants, who always wantonly revenge tenfold upon their wretched underlings whatever they suffer themselves, taught him that hypocrisy and abject submission to everything that might anyway serve his convenience, which afterwards proved the groundwork of his fortune; as the example of his parents, who got their living by retailing to the poor the meanest necessities of life, initiated him so early into every species of low fraud and chicane, that they became absolutely natural to him, and invariably ruled the conduct of his life.

He had been some time in this hopeful course of education, when an accident opened him an opportunity of showing what a progress he had made in it. A brother of the person¹, about whose house he picked up the scraps that kept him alive, happening to see one of the servants beating him unmercifully, interfered from mere humanity, and saved him. The marks he bore of his beating raised a curiosity to know how he had deserved it; when he gave so seemingly innocent and pitiable an account of himself, and attributed the servant's cruelty so artfully to his having refused to do something for him which was improper for him to do, that the young gentleman believed him, and taking compassion on his distress, admitted him into the family to wait upon himself, by which he was delivered from his dependence on the other servants, and protected from their future insults. The humility with which he behaved himself in this first step of his advancement, his assiduity and seeming attachment to his master, soon won his good opinion so far, that he dispensed with his attendance and sent him to school, where he applied himself so closely, and made such a proficiency, that his master took him into his own business; in which his sobriety, diligence, and obedient temper gained his confidence so entirely, that, as soon as ever he thought him capable, he admitted him into fellowship with himself, and absolutely resigned the management of his whole business to him. It may naturally be supposed that he did not neglect to improve such an opportunity of practising the lessons he had learned in his youth. He secreted the profits of all the business, which his principal was not indispensably obliged to be personally engaged in; he supplanted him with such as he could of his customers; he cheated of considerable sums of money such others, as long experience of his, the principal's, honesty had put off their guard with him; and took every occasion of insinuating to the world, under the most effectual disguise of friendly concern and complaint, his negligence and incapacity; at the same time, that he professed to himself the most implicit respect and obedience, and seemed ambitious of showing his gratitude and attachment, by performing the same servile offices which had been his first occupation about him.

¹ Mr Burgh [*Davis s Olio*].

But all this was trifling in comparison with the stroke he made against him in his own family. There was a near relation of his principal's¹, who was indebted to his friendly assistance for the first step of his rise to the rank of colonel in the army. Nature had been lavish to him in the endowments of mind and body; but pride marred the blessing, and turned them all to his disadvantage. Confidence in the external graces of his person made him neglect the improvement of his understanding; while an affection of singularity, which is always assumed as a mask to hide real ignorance, made him set his own opinion in opposition to the established judgment of mankind. As the conduct of such a man must necessarily be irregular, his relation and friend, my master's principal, exerted the authority of those characters, and frequently reproved him in the sincerity and well-meaning of his heart. The notion that this liberty, which when properly taken is the highest proof of regard, was assumed on the score of obligation, gave offence to the captious haughtiness of the colonel's temper, and estranged an esteem which it ought to have confirmed.

This was an opportunity for my master to display his talents. He studied the temper of the colonel, and paid court to his caprices. He cringed to his haughtiness, bore his insults, and ministered to his vices, with an implicit submission to his superior sense and judgment, which he received as the only standard of right and wrong.

The contrast between his complaisance and the superiority which the colonel thought his relation assumed by giving him advice, insensibly transferred to my master that regard which his principal lost. As this was what he had all along aimed at, he omitted nothing to widen the breach by insinuations so artfully conveyed as to aggravate the offence taken by the colonel, and yet, if repeated, would bear a sense directly opposite, and seem to spring entirely from friendly concern, should a reconciliation between them bring his practices to light. But an event that he could not scheme for removed every such apprehension, and riveted his influence beyond his most sanguine hopes.

¹ Captain Wheeler of the *Isis* [Davis's *Olio*]. Captain Edward Wheeler was engaged in the East Indies about 1760, and fell in the Mediterranean in 1761 in an action between the *Isis* and the *Oriflamme*, which was captured.

CHAPTER XXXVII

FURTHER ACCOUNT OF THE COLONEL—CHRYSAI'S MASTER, IN CONJUNCTION WITH THE FAMILY ASSOCIATE PROPER FOR THE PURPOSE, COMPLETES HIS SCHEME OF ALIENATING THE COLONEL'S REGARD FROM HIS FAMILY, OF WHICH HE GIVES A PROOF OF A MOST EXTRAORDINARY NATURE—A REMARKABLE INSTANCE OF CHRYSAI'S MASTER'S TALENTS FOR A PARTICULAR KIND OF WIT, WITH A STRIKING ACCOUNT OF THE WORTHY MANNER IN WHICH HE AND HIS FAMILY ASSOCIATE ACQUITTED THEMSELVES OF THE TRUST REPOSED IN THEM BY THE COLONEL

VAIN of the beauty of his person, the colonel prided himself in an opinion that there was no woman whose virtue could resist his addresses. This self-conceit, which the frailty of the lower class of females had first given rise to, was confirmed by his success with one¹, whose fortune and education should have secured her against his attacks. The glory of such a conquest satisfied his vanity; and the pleasure of having her on his own terms so endeared her to him, that he thought not of any other. One thing only gave him concern about her, which was, in whose care he should leave her when the business of the campaign called him into the field. But in this he was not long at a loss. The humble, implicit attachment to my master, pointed him out as the person, in every respect, most proper for such a trust. To him, therefore, he committed her at his departure, hugging himself in the happiness of having such a mistress and such a friend.

The nature of this trust necessarily brought on an intimacy between my master and his charge. Intimacies between the sexes are dangerous in any circumstances; but in theirs, where she could not even make pretence to that virtue which could be her only guard, the consequence is obvious. From this time they joined their interests, and laid their heads together to estrange him from his own family, particularly my master's principal, who, in case of death, had the first claim, from law and nature, to his fortune. In carrying on this scheme, they played into each other's hands with such address at his return, that, when he was going to the next campaign, he made a will, by which he gave not only his own large acquisitions, but also the inheritance of his ancestors between them, in such a manner as plainly showed a wrong mind, and supported his bequest with such reasons, as were an insult to the laws and religion of his country; at the same time that they perpetuated the infamy of those to whom it was made, by arguing expressly in favour of the vices which had gained them this mark of his regard; and this will, the substance of which satisfied them for the circumstances, he left in the hands of my master.

In this situation matters stood between the three when I came into his possession. When he had finished the drudgery of the day, he went as usual to spend his evening agreeably with his

¹ Miss Stephenson [Davis's *Olio*].

charge. There was one species of what is called wit, upon his expertness in which, my master valued himself not a little. This was telling a fictitious story with so grave a face, and corroborating it with such plausible circumstances as to raise the hearer's anxiety, and then to laugh at the easy faith that could be so taken in. Low as the merit of such wit was at the best, in him it had none at all. His fictions were no better than downright lies, destitute of imagination or humour, and corroborated with nothing but new-coined oaths and imprecations, fit to afford entertainment only to the damned. With an essay of this kind he resolved to entertain his mistress this evening. Exerting, therefore, all his command of countenance, 'My dearest love', said he, with a melancholy look, and deep-drawn sigh, as he entered the room, 'I have received bad news, blast my eyes! there has been a battle in which our fool——'

'Has not been killed!' interrupted she, snatching the word out of his mouth; 'that is bad news, indeed, but another battle may afford better'.

I see you were struck with horror at my repeating the imprecation he made use of on this occasion. Instead, therefore, of intermixing them with every period of his discourse, as he always does, I will in their place make a pause, thus ——, which will serve as well, for he uses them in general, as no more than mere expletives.

'No'! answered he, shrugging up his shoulders, 'that chance is lost for ever, ——. He has received a wound ——, which, without endangering his life, has disabled him from further service, so that we shall be blest with his company ——, for the rest of our lives'.

'Cursed, you should say! but is there no way to be thought of to prevent it? Could not proper application be made to the surgeons'?

'All is too late! his leg was taken off directly——; and the danger entirely over when the account came away; as you may see by his letter, in which he writes me word, —— that he hopes to be at home with us in a month, to leave us no more. Eh! what have I done with his letter? it should be in this pocket. I certainly have left it behind me in my confusion. But you will see it soon enough. He sends his love to you; and bids me tell you he would have wrote to you, but was prevented by company, so that you see he cannot be in any danger ——. But he'll make you amends. I see how everything will be ——. He'll marry you as soon as he returns ——, that he may introduce you into his family, who will treat you with forced civility, in order to get him into their hands again. I see very well ——, how everything will happen'.

'No! that shall never happen! I hate them and despise their civility. I had rather bear the sneers and insults of the world than that. Nor will I marry him, let what will be my fate; his insolent, capricious humour is scarce to be borne now, though he curbs it, because I am at liberty to leave him. What would it then be, were I to be his slave for life? I had rather feign penitence, and throw myself on the compassion of my own family than plunge into such misery.

Marriage on any terms is a state I despise, but with him I abjure it'.

This passion was such a triumph to my master, that he could keep his countenance no longer. 'Ha! ha! ha! a fair humbug, damn me'! said he, bursting out into a horse-laugh; 'your humble servant, madam! I thought you could not be taken in. Ha! ha! ha! a fair humbug, damn me'.

'Taken in!' said she, vexed at being played upon, but more pleased that it was no worse; 'how can you take delight in such a low-lived trick? If I could not show my wit in a better manner I am sure I would give up all pretensions to it'.

'All poor spite and malice! But don't fret for it. Come, we'll kiss and be friends, and think no more of the matter; only remember not to brag another time that you cannot be taken in, though, ha! ha! ha!'

Everything being thus made up, their conversation for the rest of the evening was such as may be supposed between persons of their cast, and in their situation. They gloried in the success of their schemes upon their common dupe, the colonel; they formed plans for spending his fortune, should any lucky accident put an end to his life; they ridiculed the pride and self-sufficiency of which they had taken advantage; and concluded in their usual way, with proving in each other's arms the justness of his confidence in their fidelity.

CHAPTER XXXVIII

CHRYSLAL'S MASTER RECEIVES AN ACCOUNT OF THE DEATH OF THE COLONEL—HE FINDS AFTER MUCH DELIBERATION THAT HE CANNOT FLING HIS WORTHY ASSOCIATE OUT OF THE WHOLE SPOIL, AND THEREFORE PRUDENTLY RESOLVES TO SHARE IT WITH HER BY A MARRIAGE, OF WHICH HE DRAWS A COMFORTABLE PICTURE—HE URGES HIS SUIT, AND SHE STRIVES TO EVADE IT BY ARGUMENTS CONSISTENT WITH BOTH THEIR CHARACTERS—HE CARRIES HIS POINT IN A PARTICULAR MANNER

BUT all this harmony was soon disturbed for ever by the accomplishment of the very schemes it was founded on, which was much nearer than they imagined. The first news my master received on his return home next morning was, that the colonel had been killed in a late battle. This was an interesting event; he directly locked himself up in his closet, and, taking out the will, though he had often read it before, studied every syllable of it over and over, to try if there was any possibility for him to fling his own and the colonel's common mistress, and get the whole fortune himself; but he had the mortification to find that this exceeded all his sagacity, and that the whole will must stand or fall together.

After some, not the most pleasing, meditation, therefore, 'And so'! said he, biting his nether lip and turning up his eyes, with an execration too horrid to be repeated, 'I have been labouring all this

while to get a fortune for this brimstone ! A very pretty reward truly, for supplanting my best benefactor. It were better for me that even he had it than she ; for then I might not only enjoy my share of it as it goes, along with him, but also very probably cheat him out of the most of it in the end. What though I am to have it after her death ; may not she live as long as I ? Beside, I have made away with the greatest part of the money, and so am liable to be blown up and undone, whenever she thinks proper to call it in ; for I know too much of her to expect that she should show favour to anyone, when once in her power. No ! that shall never be ! I have it in my power to set aside the whole unnatural, nonsensical will, and will do it, if she refuses to come into terms with me. Such a sacrifice of my own interest to gratitude and honesty, as this will appear, will gain me so great reputation, that I shall make a better fortune myself in a little time ; and as to what I have embezzled, I know by experience that I can sink that upon my wise principal at a proper time, as I have done more before now ; so that, after all, I may find honesty to be the best policy, as the saying is. Well, be that as it will, I am resolved to be honest to myself first, and do that which shall serve my own interest best, without regard to proverb or opinion. Let me consider, then. Suppose I marry her, and so get possession of all at once. But the devil of it is, that I must take her into the bargain ; and I know her too well for that, if I could help it. She may most likely serve me the same trick with somebody else that she has served this fool with me : once a whore and always a whore. However, I must take my chance for that. Cunning as she is, she shall not cuckold me easily. If I am not a match for her she must be able to outwit the devil himself ; so, happy come lucky, I'll e'en venture'.

Having reasoned himself into this prudent resolution, he would lose no time, but went to her directly to carry it into execution. As soon as he met her, 'I have brought you news now', said he, 'in earnest. News that will be either good or bad, according as you take it'.

'Pshaw' ! answered she, slightly, 'this is more of your wit, I suppose. But for Heaven's sake, leave off making a fool of yourself, and teasing me. I am quite sick of such stuff'.

'Strike me to the centre', replied he, passionately, 'but I am serious. I have this moment received an account that the colonel is actually dead. He was killed in the late battle'.

The look with which he said this had more weight with her than all the oaths and imprecations he could utter, for, much as he was master of his countenance, he could not conceal the agitation of his mind.

'Dead' ! interrupted she, eagerly, 'thank Heaven ! then all my fears are over'.

'Ay', replied he, dryly, 'but it is well if your hopes are not also over with them'.

'How ! What do you mean ? Has he not made a will by which all his fortune comes directly to me ? For Heaven's sake, do not torture me in this manner'.

'Yes, he has made a will, it is true. But, don't you know that the

last letter I received from him revoked it, so that everything goes now to his family, for he lived not long enough to make another, after he received his wound; though that is no great loss to you, for, from what he said when he was dying, it would not have been much in your favour'.

'But, did you not promise me that you would suppress that revocation in case anything of this kind should happen; which you said you had it in your power to do, as your principal was fool enough to promise you that he would never open any letters that should come directed to you from the army, as he had a right to do, by which means it had luckily escaped coming to his knowledge'.

'Perhaps I may have said so. But, do you think I have no more conscience than to conceal such a thing, and rob a man to whom I am under so great obligations'?

'Conscience! For Heaven's sake, I conjure you again, do not torture me any longer. Speak of conscience to those who do not know you. I have had sufficient proof that your interest is your conscience; and this will surely determine you to serve me, as you serve yourself at the same time. Is not all to come to you at my death'?

'But what am I to do in the meanwhile? Come, then, as you say you know me so well, I'll offer you a fair proposal that shall make it my present interest—for that is what I regard—to serve you; and your future interest, on which you lay so great a stress, to serve me. Suppose we join our interests in all things and marry. By this expedient I shall come directly into the enjoyment of the fortune; and your children will inherit it'.

'Marry'! exclaimed she, starting in surprise; what could put such a strange thought into your head, who know my sentiments on that unnatural state of superstition and slavery? No! that of all things I can never come into. But, I see you are at your humbugging again. The professions and oaths of friendship, you have so often made me ——'

'Were all but wind', answered he, 'and have left no trace behind them. But this kind of talking answers no end. The whole depends on the one word by which you answer me this short question—"Will you marry me? or will you not?" If you consent, I will secret the papers that set aside the will, and so we shall share the fortune between us. If you refuse, I will give them up to his family, who will directly defeat your claim, and then you may follow for your living that libertine way of life you appear so fond of; for I have no notion of damning my character in this world, and my soul in the next, to serve any other but myself. Consider, therefore, before you speak, as I will go directly from you to them, if you refuse me'.

Such a menace was not ineffectual to one who knew him so well. 'Will nothing else satisfy you?' replied she, bursting into tears. 'No part of the fortune; and to continue as we are at present, man and wife in everything but the cursed ceremony'?

'No, that ceremony is everything I want, and nothing else; because that only can give me a right to your fortune; for, as to your person, I would not have you think I set any value on that—

I have long since had enough of it—and for sharing the fortune, I am resolved I will have all, or none; and this is the reason why I make you such an offer; for, otherwise, I assure you I hate marriage as much as you possibly can. So let me have your answer directly, for I will not trifle thus a moment longer’.

The manner in which he said this left her no room to doubt his resolution. ‘Well, then’, replied she, sighing, ‘if you will have it so, it must be so; and I consent because I cannot help it. But when is this blessed marriage to be solemnized’?

‘As for that, I am in no more hurry than you. All I desire is, that you will directly sign a promise of marriage, whenever I think proper to call upon you. I’ll go this instant and draw it up; and leave you to consider how much better this is for us both, than to have disagreed, and let all go to his family’. He waited not for a reply; nor was long before he returned with the deed, which she signed with evident reluctance.

CHAPTER XXXIX

ACCOUNTS OF THE METHODS WHICH CHRYSAL’S MASTER TOOK TO OBVIATE THE EFFECTS OF HIS PRINCIPAL’S RESENTMENT, WITH THE CHARACTERISTIC CONVERSATION THAT PASSED BETWEEN THEM ON THE FORMER’S AVOWING THE COLONEL’S WILL—CHRYSAL’S MASTER OVERSHOOTS THE MARK, AND PROVOKES HIS PRINCIPAL TO DO MORE THAN HE EVER INTENDED—AN UNCOMMON INSTANCE OF THE JUSTICE OF THE WORLD—CHRYSAL’S MASTER OBLIGES THE LADY TO COURT HIM IN HER TURN, AND AT LENGTH MARRIES HER—THE CONSEQUENCES OF SUCH A MARRIAGE, AND FRUITS OF THE SUCCESS OF ALL THEIR SCHEMES

THIS point being settled, the next thing was to produce the colonel’s will, the thought of doing which gave him some alarm, in spite of all his fortitude, as it would be throwing off the mask he had worn all his life, and declaring war with his principal, who he judged from himself would not fail to publish to the world the meanness of his original, and the misery from which his compassion had raised him. But such thoughts, disagreeable as they might be, could not divert him from his purpose. To disable his principal, though, as far as possible from carrying his resentment any further than words, he ransacked all his papers, and took away not only such as related immediately to the private transactions between themselves, but also those of other people, with whom they had been concerned in business in order to distress his circumstances, and involve him in such perplexities as should lay him under a necessity of keeping fair with him. But this precaution, like many others dictated by the same spirit, occasioned the very thing it was designed to prevent.

The first news of this affair was like a thunderclap to the family of the colonel. My master’s principal, who, though, in the course of law and nature, had the first expectations, as I have said before, could not believe it to be true, so high was his confidence in the

honesty and attachment of my master. To satisfy, however, the importunities of his family, he came to him, and with a look of indignation at the baseness of such a report, rather than apprehension of the truth of it, 'I am come', said he, 'to tell you a piece of news, I have just this moment heard, which is, that the colonel has left his whole fortune between that jade, his mistress, and you; and that you were privy to his will, which he left in your hands when he was going abroad. But the latter part of the story makes me easy about the rest; for, whatever his capricious temper might lead him to do, I am convinced you would have no hand in so base an affair, nor even conceal his having such an intention from me a moment. I see you are shocked at the scandalous imputation; but do not think I mention it as if I believed it. I could not do you so much wrong'.

The first impressions of youth can never be totally effaced. Though my master could lay schemes to cheat his principal, and revile him behind his back, he had learned to look at him with an awe, when a beggar about his brother's house, and afterwards his servant, that he could never after get over, when in his presence. This awe, added to the confusion of conscious guilt, made him unable to make any answer for some moments, and had wrought that change in his countenance which the other took notice of.

As soon as he could collect spirits to speak, 'I—I—I am obliged to every one f—f—for their good opinion of me', said he, with his eyes fixed on the ground, and faltering at every word; 'and hope I shall not f—f—forget it by accepting the favours of my friends'.

'How'! interrupted the other, eagerly. 'What can you mean by that? You surely do not, cannot, avow'!

'As for that, sir', returned my master, plucking up a little more assurance, 'what I avow or disavow is nothing to the purpose. I presume that my most dear and worthy friend, the colonel, had a right to leave his fortune to whom he pleased; and that whoever he has left it to has also a right to take it, without being answerable to your opinion, or that of any others, who may be prejudiced by you; for the world will judge better, and be satisfied that he had sufficient reasons for what he has done'.

'And so, then, it is even so', replied the other, after a long pause; 'and this is the return I meet for raising you from wretchedness, and admitting you to the first place in the esteem and confidence of my heart. Cherish a viper in your bosom, and he will sting you to death. But it is beneath me to upbraid you. I leave the revenge of my wrongs to your own conscience and the justice of Heaven; and from this moment disclaim all intercourse with you; nor shall my lips ever more utter your name, if I can help it. The sight of you is a pain to me. I will send a person to take my affairs out of your hands, and desire you will directly provide yourself another habitation. Unhappy for me was the day when I first gave shelter to your misery in mine'. Saying this, he turned away, without waiting for a reply, and left the room.

This insolent behaviour—for so my master called it, as soon as the other was gone—was such an affront to his honour as in his opinion cancelled all obligations, and justified everything he had done,

or could do against him. Giving vent to his resentment, therefore, in a burst of blasphemous execrations, he proceeded in the execution of his schemes with this improvement, that to obviate the imputations of base dishonesty and ingratitude, which his own conscience told him his principal would publish to the world against him, he loaded him with every scandal that his inventive malice could suggest. But this, instead of answering his purpose, produced the very contrary effect, as it put him under a necessity of laying open things to vindicate his own character which indignant shame of having placed his confidence so unworthily would otherwise have made him conceal; and in this instance the world was not dazzled by success, but directly paid his villainy with the infamy it deserved.

As for the lady, fashion made it necessary for her to put on all the mimicry of woe, in which she persisted most decently for the usual time, at the end of which she found her husband that was to be so slack in his addresses that she was obliged to court him, as such an unsettled life was equally contrary to her interest and inclinations. This answered a double end. It gratified his vanity—for he took care to make it known—and seemed to obviate the credit of the contract between them, should it ever happen to be discovered. Accordingly, he kept off a little longer; and at length consented, with the affected irresolution of a man of the most delicate principles and sense of honour. As he only got a legal right by his marriage to what he was already in possession of he soon grew tired of the state, the circumstances of which in his particular case could not be very pleasing to any man. However, to avoid the evils of which he was most immediately afraid, he went to live in the country, where he permitted his wife to see nobody but those he approved, and in company with himself. Nor was he satisfied that his utmost vigilance could prove effectual, as he had experience of the looseness of her principles, and her expertness in all the arts of intrigue.

Their situation, in these circumstances, may be easily conceived. Continual suspicions, quarrels, and recriminations, aggravated their mutual dislike to the most rancorous hatred, and made their lives such a scene of misery, that they themselves looked upon it as a commencement of Heaven's vengeance on their crimes; while all who knew them expected in horror that they would make that vengeance still more signally dreadful, by wreaking their hatred upon each other's lives, or their despair upon their own. All the advantages, thus dearly earned, were an affluence disgusting for want of power of enjoyment, except in an external pomp that only mocked the misery within, and made the meanness it was designed to hide the more remarkable.

CHAPTER XL

CHRYSAI'S MASTER DESIGNS TO SET UP A COACH, BUT WANTS A MATERIAL ARTICLE TOWARDS MAKING A PROPER FIGURE WITH IT—HE CONSULTS WITH A HERALD, WHO GIVES HIM AN ELABORATE DISSERTATION, NOT THE MOST PLEASING TO HIM, ON COATS OF ARMS, AND THE MODERN METHODS OF MAKING THEM, IN WHICH HE UNFOLDS MANY CURIOUS MYSTERIES, AND UNDERTAKES AT LAST, ON PROPER ENCOURAGEMENT, TO MAKE HIM A GENTLEMAN—CHRYSAI CHANGES HIS SERVICE—CONVERSATION BETWEEN HIS NEW MASTER AND AN ANTIQUARIAN—CURIOUS ARGUMENTS, BY WHICH HE PROVES THE GENUINENESS AND IMPORTANCE OF CERTAIN RELICS OF ANTIQUITY—CHRYSAI CHANGES HIS SERVICE

IN this age of delicacy and refinement the first thing thought of in genteel life is a carriage, which is so indispensably necessary to procure respect, that no eminence in science, no practice of virtue, is held in esteem, where that is wanted. Sensible of this, my master resolved to bespeak one, the elegance and grandeur of which should prove his taste and magnificent spirit. One difficulty, though, perplexed him not a little in the design. This was, his want of a coat of arms to decorate the outside of it, and display to the world his illustrious descent. After much fruitless meditation on so important a subject, it occurred to him that a herald must be the proper person to consult with upon the best means of remedying this defect. Accordingly, he inquired for the most eminent in that way, and, on the morning fixed for his attendance, prepared to receive him in such a manner as he imagined could not fail to inspire him with respect. He was lolling at breakfast in an elbow-chair; dressed in a morning-gown of green damask, with a red cap on his head, the cambric lining of which was edged with a rich lace that turned up over it, and crimson velvet slippers on his feet, one of which was extended on a cushion of the same materials, to give him the appearance of the gout, a disorder which he looked upon as an incontestible proof of his being sprung from a good family, while his lady poured out his tea, and between every dish read a paragraph in the newspapers to entertain him.

As soon as the herald was shown in, my master cast an eye upon his lady, and nodding majestically towards the door, she withdrew, and left him to his business. After the usual questions about the weather and the news, my master at length entered upon the subject. 'I understand, s—s—s—sir', said he, faltering, and almost blushing in spite of his assurance, 'that you have great skill in heraldry: and, therefore, desired to see you to consult about my c—c—c—coat of arms'.

'I do presume, sir', answered the herald, with an air of importance, 'to have some knowledge in that mysterious and sublime science, and hope I shall not wrong the character you have received of me in anything in which you are pleased to employ me. Hem! ahem! Pray, sir, what may be the nature of your present commands? I suppose you want to introduce into your own coat the

bearing of some branch of your family, which is fallen to you. There is nothing in the world easier to be done, that is by one who, as I said before, understands the science. It is only dividing the field properly, and taking care that the blazoning of the different quarterings, of which all good families gain many in a long course of descents, may not be wrongly blended, as colour upon colour, or metal upon metal, which you must know is false heraldry; though, I beg pardon, your blazoning is most likely in precious stones, the peculiar emblems of nobility with us. But that makes no difference, as I will convince you, if you please to let me see your arms'.

'Sir', replied my master, still more confounded by this jargon, 'that is not what I want. I would have an entire n—n—new coat'.

'Oh! I understand you, sir! you are the first of your family; and want to make arms for yourself, as none of your ancestors have left you any. Why, sir, that too may be done; but it must be with judgment and care, as I said before, for fear of interfering with the arms of any other family. But, you may trust me for that, sir. Half the arms you see cut such a figure about the town are of my devising. The king may make lords and knights of whom he pleases, but it is the herald must make them gentlemen; for what is any man without a coat of arms? Pray, sir, what is your name? and of what profession was your father?'

'Wh—wh—why do you ask? I suppose there cannot be anything material to your purpose in them?'

'Pardon me, good sir, they are material, very material. A name, especially if it consists of many syllables, often gives an excellent hint; for, as much as your modern wits may affect to despise the mysterious learning of rebuses, wiser antiquity held it in higher repute, as you must have observed from the many illustrious coats of arms taken entirely from the name; and then knowledge of the profession of a gentleman's father is absolutely necessary for many reasons. There are professions, the implements of which are never dropped, because the professions themselves are reckoned honourable, as there also are others, nothing relating to which is ever borne for the contrary reason. The son of a general or an admiral, for instance, will have his arms charged with implements of war; but the son of a man who keeps a chandler's shop will never bear a lump of butter, or bunch of candles, nor the son of a tailor, a pair of scissors or a thimble, for these would at once betray what is designed to be hid; and therefore it is absolutely necessary that I should be informed of these particulars'.

'B—b—b—but, sir, can you not strike out something entirely new, without alluding to any name or profession at all? I am willing to pay you well for your trouble, only let me have something elegant and grand'.

'I understand you, sir. I'll engage to please you. I'll quarter you the coat of a crowned head' in an instant without anybody's being able to say a word against it. Leave it to me, and I'll engage to please you; not the richest contractor or nabob of them all shall make such a figure'.

'And pray, sir, what is your price for a job of this kind'?

'Price, sir? I never make bargains; let common mechanics do that; gentleman always make me a present, when they bespeak their honours; and, according to the value of that, my invention is either high or low'.

'Well, sir, it shan't sink on that account now. Here are ten guineas for you, as an earnest of what I will give if I like your work, when it is done'.

'Sir, you may depend on having the highest arms of any man in the kingdom. Your generosity shows that you ought to be a gentleman; and it shall be my fault if I don't make you one in the sight of the world'. Saying this, he took his leave, when I was heartily glad to go with him, being part of the price paid upon this occasion for the making of a gentleman.

As soon as my new master went home, he retired to his closet, and, taking out the money he had just received, 'Ha! ha! ha! no bad price for a little daubing'! said he, laughing and chinking the purse. I wonder how the fellow could be such an ass as to think that anything in my power to do could make him pass for gentleman. But let him have his way; his folly is my gain; and it is no more than justice that one who has cheated the world so long, should cheat himself at last, and sacrifice the earnings of villany to vanity. But, hold, this is about the time my antiquarian was to come. Let me see those ancient manuscripts and inscriptions which I had done last week. Upon my life, they look very well. The canker upon this copper, and the smoke upon this parchment are as natural as if they were the work of a thousand years; and these scrawls might pass even for the spells of the witch of Endor, they have so little likeness to any marks made to convey thought at this time. He is a very pretty fellow that did them and deserves encouragement'.

Just as he said this the person he expected came, and entering without ceremony upon his business, 'I called upon you, sir', said he, 'to see those things you mentioned to me. If they are really what you describe, we shall not differ about the price, high as it is'.

'I hope, sir', answered my master, 'you have not so mean an opinion of my judgment as to imagine I could ever think of imposing upon you. No, sir; I know that to be impossible, even if I could be base enough to attempt it; and, therefore, would not mention anything to you that could admit of the least doubt to a person of your profound learning. As to the price, I could have had much more since I saw you; but I thought it but justice to their merit to offer them first to you, as there is no other collection in the kingdom worthy of them; and I am above rising in a demand I have once made, though infinitely short of their intrinsic value, as you will be convinced the moment you see them. Here, sir, is the manuscript which I had the good fortune to meet with, as I was rummaging among some old records in our office, that had never been stirred since the reign of Henry VIII. The paper in which it was wrapped was so decayed that it mouldered quite away, so immediately upon its coming into the open air that I had scarce time to read the contents, which were that this parchment had been found

in the tomb of Thomas à Becket, upon the breaking up of his shrine at the Reformation, and was laid up there on account of its antiquity. That it must have been very ancient, even before his time, the colour and decay of the parchment could sufficiently prove, were there not other proofs still more convincing to such as have judgment to comprehend them. The shape of the letter shows its age. This manner of writing, as appears by comparing it with other ancient manuscripts, was introduced in the beginning of the second century of the Christian era, and quite dropped by the middle of the third. Within that period, therefore, it must have been written. Its antiquity being thus fixed, the purport of it is next to be considered; and of that and its importance, there can be no just room to doubt. This spot at the bottom of the parchment, though so much defaced by time, bears a strong resemblance to the impression of a mitre, and thereby proves that some bishop was the author of what was written over it, into which these four letters, m—a—t—h, fortunately so very plain, give the clearest light; for as they must have been part of the word *Arimathæa*, they prove that the opinion of Joseph of Arimathæa having first preached the gospel in Britain was known so early as in the second century, and so decide that long-contested point; as, who can be such an infidel as to doubt a thing given thus, as I may say, under the sacred seal of the mitre, and that so very near the time'.

'Very true; but is it not as probable that the design of this writing was to refute that opinion, as to confirm it'?

'My good sir, if you allow weight to such trivial objections as this, you give up all the knowledge of an antiquarian, which never amounts higher than to possible conjecture, without regard to probability even against him; for conjectures such as this, founded on effaced remains of antiquity, are of much greater weight in the learned world, because they show more learning than the plainest conclusions drawn from evident and complete records, as these are obvious to any common person. But, why do I mention these things to you, who understand them so much better than I pretend to do'.

'I believe I do, sir, know something of those matters; and was satisfied both of its antiquity and importance, at the first glance of my eye; though I started that objection for mere amusement. But where is the fragment? I should be glad to see that also'.

'Here it is, sir', answered my master, taking a bit of broken copper out of a box, in which it was carefully wrapped in cotton. 'This plate of copper was torn in the manner you see, from the head of a sepulchral monument, on the top of Mount Libanus, by a person who had been sent thither by a celebrated society, on purpose to seek for such things; and at his return made me a present of it, as the most valuable acquisition he had made, out of gratitude for my having helped him to the job. Observe this canker, sir. Much as it has been rubbed off in the carriage, the depth and colour of it show that it must have been some thousands of years in gathering. What the occasion of setting it up was, some particular circumstances direct to a conjecture sufficiently probable. You see this hole which the canker has eaten almost through the copper, with

this stroke turning up over it. This, certainly, is the remains of the figure of a lion, as is plain from these two tufts in the middle, and at the end of the stroke, which must have been the tail of it. Now, as the lion was the emblem of Judah, it cannot be doubted but some great personage of that tribe must have been buried where this emblem was set up—a circumstance that so clearly proves the antiquity of coats of arms, that I do not know how to think of parting with it, as it affords such an illustration to a treatise I am at this time engaged in writing on that sublime and difficult subject’

‘Not part with it’, replied the antiquarian, returning it carefully into the box, and then cramming the box into his bosom. ‘You must get it first, my good friend, to part with. Ha! ha! ha! a very pretty jest, truly. You offer a thing to sale, and set a price upon it, and then you cannot part with it; a very pretty jest, truly. Here is your money, both for the manuscript and the fragment; and when you meet with any other such precious remains of antiquity, I shall be obliged to you to let me have the preference. Nobody will give you a better price’.

Saying this, he reached my master a bank-note, which he took with an air of dissatisfaction; and while he was telling out change, ‘You do as you please with me, sir’, said he, ‘this time, but the next I shall be more upon my guard. I am glad, however, that it goes into so noble a collection as yours, where it will have justice done to its merit’.

‘Ay, sir’, answered the antiquarian, with a smile of self-complacency. ‘I have been at some pains, and expense too, to make a collection; and have the satisfaction to think that whenever I die, it will make as good a figure in a sale catalogue as that of most of my contemporaries. I shall leave proofs behind me that I have not spent my life in vain. What would I not give to hear the character which an able auctioneer will give of me upon opening the sale. I wish my good friend Puff may outlive me to have the job. There is no man sets forth the merit of anything in such happy terms. He has words at will, as they say. What a high opinion will he raise of my learning, taste, and judgment. But that’s right; you said you wanted this fragment for a particular occasion. I am by no means averse to obliging you. You are welcome to quote it, as in my collection, suppose in this, or some such manner: “As it appears”—proving what you have advanced before—“by a most valuable and rare antique fragment—or whatever else you shall call it—in the most curious, or costly, or inestimable, or noble, or perhaps all these, collection of my late most learned, and judicious, and indefatigable and munificent friend”, or whatever other titles of the kind your judgment and regard shall dictate to you’.

‘I am much obliged to you for the favour’, returned my master, scarce able to restrain his laughter, ‘and shall be sure to avail myself of it at the proper time, as also to do it in a manner which, however short it may fall of your merit, will yet testify my high and respectful sense of it’. Saying this, he gave him the change of his note, among which I was, and sent him away happy.

CHAPTER XLI

A MODEST METHOD OF SEEKING FAME—CHRYSLAL'S MASTER CONFIRMS HIMSELF IN HIS RESOLUTION TO GRATIFY AN UNCOMMON CURIOSITY, BY A GREAT EXAMPLE—THE JUDICIOUS AND LEARNED MANNER IN WHICH HE CLASSED AND ENTERED HIS NEW ACQUISITIONS—CURIOUS REMARK ON THE VALUE OF BOOKS—HE GOES TO AN AUCTION, WHERE HE MAKES AN EXTRAORDINARY PURCHASE—CHRYSLAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE FOR THAT OF THE AUCTIONEER—SPECIMEN AND EFFECTS OF HIS NEW MASTER'S ELOQUENCE, LEARNING, AND JUDGMENT

A MAN's spending his life and fortune in buying up books of learning and obscure remains of antiquity, only to make a great sale after his death, was a method of seeking fame more modest than I had hitherto met among mankind. As soon as my new master reached home, he went directly into his museum, and, taking out his rare purchases, stared at them for some time in a kind of stupid delight, till no longer able to contain it. 'What an opinion', said he, 'will the world have of me, when all these come to be shown for sale? I hope my worthy friend Puff will live to do me justice. What if I should beg of him to give me a specimen of the manner in which he will set them out? He cannot refuse me that gratification in return for all the money he has taken from me, especially, as I have told him that I design he shall have the job. It has the sanction of one of the greatest names in antiquity to support it. Cicero, the great Cicero, desired his friend, the historian, to let him know what he intended to say of him; and need I hesitate to follow his example? Whatever has the authority of antiquity must be right; and, therefore, I will go to him directly about it. But, hold! I must enter these articles in my catalogue first'. Then taking down a huge folio, richly bound, and inscribed catalogue on the back and sides, in capitals of gold, he sat down to insert this valuable addition to his treasure, and opening the book with great deliberation, 'What are the heads', said he, 'under which they are to be classed? Let me see. Antiques! No; that is for my coins, and busts, and urns. What is the next? Ancient manuscripts and fragments? Ay, these are they. Let me consider now, what are the titles?' Then laying the forefinger of his right hand upon the tip of his nose, supporting his chin with his thumb, shutting his eyes, and leaning back in his chair, on the arm of which he rested his elbow, 'How unlucky it was', resumed he, after a long pause, 'that he did not tell their names. I was ashamed to ask him directly, though I did as much, if he had minded me. But, can't I make them out from what he said? A very antique manuscript—No! that will not do. Antique is for works of art; ancient is the word here. A very ancient manuscript written by Thomas à Becket in the second century, and found in his tomb at the Restoration, proving that Joseph of Arimathea was an English bishop. Yes; that is it. And then for the fragment—a very ancient—no, antique. Antique is the word for fragments; they

are made by art—a very antique fragment torn from a monument on Mount Libanus, proving that some great person was buried there; and that a lion was the arms of Judah. Ay; these will do. I knew I could make them out. This is just the substance of what he said, but in fewer and better words. Titles should be short and pithy. *Multum in parvo*—much in a little compass. Let me alone for hitting off a striking title. I have not been an antiquarian so long for nothing'. Then conning them over twice or thrice, to try how they sounded, he entered them in his catalogue, and putting the book back into its place, sat down to contemplate his own consequence in the learned world. But, sublime as this enjoyment was, his indefatigable industry would not permit him to indulge it long. 'Ha'! said he, starting as upon sudden recollection, 'that's right! the sale of those Chinese characters brought over in the last fleet comes on about this very time. It was quite out of my head; and I would not have missed them on any account. They'll make a capital article; for the Chinese taste is coming into such great vogue, that I suppose we shall soon learn their language; though I should be sorry to see that, too; as it would lessen the value of my Chinese books; for books are now valued the more for not being understood, as I know by experience, having laid out many a pound in the purchase of such as I understood no more of than if they were Chinese. But let those who know no other use of books but to read them buy only such as they can read; I collect mine for another purpose, and a noble collection I will have, let it cost me what it will. I care not whether I die worth a groat beside; the fame of that is fortune enough for me'.

Pursuant to this noble resolution, he went directly to the sale, where he was so charmed with the auctioneer's learning and eloquence, that he outbid everybody, and carried off in triumph the curious, the rare, the inestimable key into all the mysterious, the profound, the sublime wisdom of that prince of all philosophers, legislators, and hierarchs, the divine Con—fut—see, and all his learned and judicious disciples and commentators, the Chinese characters; in paying for which, I changed his service for that of the auctioneer.

My new master¹ proceeded for the remainder of the sale to display his abilities in the same extraordinary manner; giving circumstantial accounts of things he knew nothing of; and bestowing the most extravagant praises for excellencies of his own invention, often inconsistent with each other, and with the subject to which they were ignorantly attributed, with a confidence that bore down doubt, and gained implicit credit with the gaping crowd, in defiance to reason and their very senses, till he led them on by little and little to pay the price of such an imaginary value. But this will be best explained by an instance that happened just after I came into his possession. The sale of that day consisted nominally of the collection of a cheesemonger lately deceased, who had been an eminent antiquarian and virtuoso. I say nominally, because,

¹ Mr Prestagi, the auctioneer [Davis's *Olio*].

though the whole went under his name, scarce the tenth part of it had ever been his, the rest being made up from every quarter by my master. Among the rare, curious, and costly articles exhibited on this occasion, was a vessel of porcelain, of an uncommon shape, ornamented with several odd and uncouth representations of animals, and some figures not unlike the characters of a language.

'Gentlemen', said my master, as soon as this was produced, 'you see here one of the rarest and most valuable remains of antiquity ever brought into Europe. This here superb vase was the identical cup out of which the sublime emperors of China for numberless ages drank the consecrated wine on the day of their coronation. It was found, gentlemen, among the treasures of the great Mogul, by Thomas Couli Can, when he dethroned that there prince, out of a wreck of whose spoils, when they were lost in passing the river of the Indies, it was saved by a Chinese nabob, from whom it was afterwards taken, together with his crown, by that there heaven-born general, who made those effeminate and dastardly Indians tremble at the name of an Englishman, and given by him as a precious token of his esteem to the deceased, his very learned and curious friend. This, gentlemen, is in few words the whole, full, and true account of this here inestimable curiosity, every word of which can be proved by unquestionable authority. As for the vase itself, exclusive of all this, its own merits give it sufficient value. Observe these here figures, gentlemen; they are Egyptian hieroglyphics, denoting the duties of a sovereign, which those wise mandarins always take care to instruct their emperors in. This here lion, for instance, signifies that he must be courageous and valiant; this fox, that he must be wise; and so on. But the most extraordinary thing of all, gentleman, is these here characters. They are a talisman or charm, invented by Mahomet to protect the owner of this cup from the influence of evil spirits. I do not presume, gentlemen, to stand up for the virtue of such things. The notion of spirits, I am sensible, is much exploded; and the religion of Mahomet cried down among us; but still, gentlemen, without entering into these here nice points, we all know that he was a great man, and lived a long while ago, which is sufficient to make anything that was his of great value to men of learning who are above prejudice in these matters. But, besides all this, these here characters are of the greatest importance on another account, as they prove beyond dispute, that the true method of writing the learned languages was without accents, not one appearing, as you see, gentlemen, in the most original and authentic relic of ancient learning. and so put an end to that there controversy that has so long puzzled the world. It were presumption in me, gentlemen, to attempt putting a value on a thing that is invaluable. I will, therefore, set it up at what you please, as you are the best judges. This only, I will make bold to say, that the best judge of all will have it, as he will give most for it; for too much it is impossible to give.'

So just an account, and such judicious praise, could not fail of effect. The virtuosi round him, satisfied that what he said must be true, because spoken with confidence and above their

comprehension, vied with each other for the possession of so inestimable a treasure, till they raised it to an height at which they themselves were surprised, as soon as the spirit of bidding began to cool and they had time to reflect.

CHAPTER XLII

AN UNSAVOURY ACCOUNT STOPS HIM SHORT IN HIS HARANGUE—
HE TURNS OFF THE JEST WITH ANOTHER, AND ACCOUNTS LEARNEDLY
FOR WHAT HAS HAPPENED—THE REAL CAUSE AND CONSEQUENCE
OF THAT ACCIDENT—REFLECTIONS ON AUCTIONEERING, AND THE
CAUSES OF ITS SUCCESS

THIS was the time for which he always reserved the highest flights of his eloquence, to raise that spirit again. Resuming, therefore, his harangue, 'You pause, gentlemen', said he, 'only to consider how much further you may rise with safety; for it is impossible that persons of your profound taste and judgment should disgrace them so much, as to let such a jewel go for a mere trifle. Do not take my word, gentlemen, for its value. I may be mistaken, but you cannot. Examine it, therefore, yourselves. Observe the beauty of these here unknown figures; read these unintelligible characters; and smell the aromatic odour which the vase still retains, and ever will retain, from the quintessences of all the spices of the Indies, which used to be mixed with the consecrated wine. The perfume is almost enough to revive the dead'.

Saying this, he went to smell it himself, to lead the way to the rest, and putting the mouth of it to his nose, without taking off the cover, that the fragrance should not evaporate, as he raised his hand, a stream, that emitted a savour far from aromatic, gushed out into his face and filled his mouth, as well as nose, with something more substantial than perfume. It is impossible to describe his situation at such a disgraceful accident. Surprise, shame, and loathing aggravated each other, and threw him into such confusion, as once in his life deprived him of utterance for some moments. As soon as he had emptied his mouth, and wiped his face, 'Villain', sputtered he to his servant, 'how has this happened? Whom have you let play me this base and malicious low-lived trick?'

'S—s—sir', answered the fellow, as well as his struggle to suppress his laughter permitted him to speak, 'I know nothing of the matter; I never left anyone a moment alone among the things, but them there ladies, who, I told you, sent me out for a glass of ratafia the other morning; and how could I have suspected their doing such a thing?'

'Ratafia'? replied my master, who had by this time recovered his assurance, and knew the best way to turn off one jest by another, 'gin, you should say; for, if I can judge by taste and smell, that is their liquor. I suppose they did it on purpose to revenge their sex upon Mahomet for taking away their souls—I wish he had also taken away the filthiness of their dispositions—by defiling so

celebrated a monument of his learning and skill in this nasty manner, ha ! ha ! ha ' !

The oddity of such a thought naturally made the company join in his laugh ; but could not so far wipe off the disgrace which the defiled vase had suffered, as to make any more be offered for it, so that it was forced to be knocked down to the last bidder, at not much more than if it had been made of gold, at which the purchaser and my master were equally mortified, though for different and with very unequal reasons. As for the cause of this misfortune, it was really what the servant said. One of the ladies who came to view the curiosities, having certain pressing occasions, feigned a pretence to send him out, and in the meantime made such use of the vase, being the first conveniency that came to her hand, as overpowered the scent of some spices which had been put into it for the purpose. It was fortunate for my master that this was the last article in the sale of that day, as a spirit of ridicule could not be favourable to his business.

As soon as the company were gone, he settled his accounts, and summing up the profits, ' Why, this is pretty well ' ! said he, rubbing his hands, and shrugging up his shoulders ; ' this does pretty well ! Though, if that damned accident had not happened ' , turning up his nose, and spitting with loathing, ' it would have been much better. The fools were in the humour, and wanted only to be kept up. However, I have not much right to complain upon the whole. That there Jordan cost me five shillings, and I have sold it for fifty pounds. Much good may the judicious buyer make of his bargain ! This is the happiness of a man's having his tongue well hung. A mealy mouth will never do for my business ; which, after all, is the best going. I might have stood freezing behind a counter this month, and not made half this much, in the way of fair trade, as it is called. People have their senses about them, and stand to examine before they buy, but any trumpery will go off in this way ' .

I have observed your astonishment at the easiness with which my master succeeded in such gross imposition ; but the reason of it is obvious. All mankind have an ambition of distinguishing themselves one way or another, and generally chose that in which they have the least qualifications to entitle them to success, in order to hide their own deficiency. The coward, for instance, affects valour ; the blockhead, knowledge ; and the illiterate tradesman, who has made a fortune by plodding on in some illiberal business, taste and judgment in the abstrusest pursuits of learned curiosity, in which, as there is no fixed rule to judge by, caprice takes the direction, and opens an ample field for imposition. As to the business of auctioneering in general, it owes the greater part of that success, with which my master was so well pleased, to another cause—the desire of buying bargains, which governs everyone who buys anything, makes people crowd to those places where things are to be sold, not as in the regular course of trade, for what they appear to be worth, but for the most that can be got for them ; and there emulation, dependence on each other's judgment, ' those people know what they are doing, and would not bid so much, if it was not worth more ' , and the oratory of the auctioneer, leads them

by insensible advances, as their spirits rise, to give prices which they never meant to give, when they began to bid. That great bargains are often got at such places is true, but that is chiefly in a particular branch of the business, the mystery of which will be explained to you.

CHAPTER XLIII

CHRYSAI'S MASTER IS VISITED BY A CONNOISSEUR, TO WHOM HE GIVES A SHORT RECEIPT HOW TO MAKE HIS PICTURES SELL, AND MAKES SOME STRIKING REMARKS ON THE DISREGARD PEOPLE SHOW FOR THE FAMILIES, WHICH SENDS HIS VISITOR AWAY IN A HUFF

My master was interrupted in his pleasing meditations by the entrance of a gentleman, the sight of whom promised him the greatest pleasure of carrying the subject of them into execution. After some judicious remarks on the taste of the town, and the present state of virtue, in the course of which, each liberally complimented the other, 'Pray, sir', said the gentleman, 'how do pictures sell this season'?

'Never better, sir', answered my master. 'Pictures are everybody's money now. A good master brings anything; and what is more, I am convinced they will rise still higher, so that buyers have no time to lose. I have a sale next week, when you will see such prizes as will astonish you. There are some things there, that I know you will have, let them cost what they will; they suit your fine collection so exactly'.

'Why, as to that', replied the gentleman, 'my mind is a good deal changed. I have taken it into my head lately to part with my pictures, and have therefore called upon you to desire that you will come in the morning, and let me know what you think they are worth'.

'Worth, sir! they are worth a great deal of money; which there is not the least danger but they will bring, if they are managed properly. There is more, sir, in the management of a sale, much more than most people dream of, I assure you'.

'I am sensible of that, sir; and also of your abilities in such management, which you will have the best encouragement to exert on this occasion, as I propose selling the whole to you together, if we can agree'.

This turn came so unexpected that it struck my master quite down in the mouth, as he was sensible that he had overshot himself, and spoiled his market by saying so much. 'It is very unlucky, sir', answered he, changing his note directly, 'that I did not know your intention sooner. I could then have divided them properly among the several sales of the season; but it is now quite too late; this here one next week is the last; and the catalogues for that are all made out and dispersed, so that there is no possibility of slipping in a single article. Besides, the buyers have laid out all their money'.

'Slipping in, sir, I do not understand you. Do not you think my pictures are sufficient, both in number and value, to make a sale by themselves? I am sure I have more than once known you make noise enough about collections in no respect equal to mine. There must be some mystery in this, which I cannot comprehend'.

'Very true, sir, there are mysteries, as you observe, in all businesses; and, perhaps, in none more than ours'.

'I am not inquiring into your mysteries. All I desire to know is, why, after just telling me that pictures never bore so high a price as at this time, and that mine could not fail of bringing a great deal of money, you should so soon change your opinion'.

'Pardon me, sir, I have not changed my opinion in the least; and shall be very proud to serve you to the best of my abilities, in the way of a sale; but there is a material reason why I must beg to be excused in buying them, to stand the hazard of it myself'.

'I should be glad to know what that reason can be, for I must own I cannot conceive it'.

'Why, sir, it is a thing to be sure that may seem odd to you; but experience has taught us the truth of it. In short, sir, it is your being alive'.

'How! my being alive! What difference can my life or death make in the value of my pictures'?

'A very great one, sir, I assure you. In all the course of my business, I never knew one instance of a sale going off well, where the owner was living. People conclude that a person parts with pictures either through dislike or necessity. The former, you know, depreciates them at once; nor does the other much less; as people of fashion despise a man, and everything belonging to him, the moment it is known that he is in distress. Besides, an auctioneer's tongue is tied up from saying anything of a person's taste and judgment, and all that, while he is living; it sounds so fulsome; and you are sensible that a good character of the collector often goes a great way in helping off a collection'.

'The best thing, then, for a man to do on such an occasion, I presume, would be to shoot himself through the head! Heh'?

'Ha! ha! ha! You are pleased to jest, sir; but to be sure it would be of great advantage. Curiosity brings all the world upon those occasions; and then a man has an opportunity of saying so many things, as, that the deceased would not take ten times so much, if he were living; or, that the high price he gave it caused the distress that made him kill himself; or a thousand other striking things of the kind. I never have so much pleasure as upon those occasions; they give a man such room to show himself. Indeed, if gentlemen considered the thing in time, more of them would take this method of delivering themselves and their families both from distress, and not defer it till all is gone, and the survivors can make nothing by their death; but few people take any care for their families nowadays. It is a bold push, to be sure; though not so bad as a man's shooting himself to win a wager, neither. I should beg your pardon, sir, for speaking so freely, but, as I know it is not your case, you cannot take offence; though, even if I thought it was, I would not presume to recommend such

a thing for the world. Every person is to judge for himself. I only give you my opinion what effect it would have'.

'I understand you very well, sir', answered the gentleman, who had much difficulty to hear him out; 'and in return for your opinion will give you my advice, which is, to consider better whom you speak to in this insolent manner another time, for fear of receiving such chastisement as contempt alone prevents my giving you this moment'. On saying which words he turned about, and left the room.

CHAPTER XLIV

CHRYSAI'S MASTER RECEIVES AN AGREEABLE SUMMONS—HIS ENCOMIUMS ON THE GENEROSITY OF MERCHANTS, AND ACCOUNT OF THE WAY MANY OF THEM ACQUIRE REPUTATION FOR TASTE AND JUDGMENT—HE MEETS THE MERCHANT, WHO CONSULTS HIM ON A DIFFERENT BRANCH OF HIS BUSINESS FROM THAT WHICH HE EXPECTED—CHRYSAI'S MASTER, IN ORDER TO ENCOURAGE HIS CUSTOMER, GIVES A LARGE ACCOUNT OF HIS OWN ABILITIES, AND OPENS SOME CURIOUS SECRETS IN HIS BUSINESS—A BARGAIN IS STRUCK, TO THE MUTUAL SATISFACTION OF BOTH PARTIES; AND CHRYSAI CHANGES HIS SERVICE FOR THAT OF THE MERCHANT

WELL as my master was accustomed to rebukes, there was something in the nature of this which disconcerted him so much, that he had not power to make the gentleman any reply. But he was soon relieved from the trepidation into which it threw him, by a message from an eminent merchant, to meet him directly at a neighbouring tavern.

'Ay', said he, adjusting his wig at the glass, and putting on his cloak, 'this is the thing. There is some difference between treating with a good substantial citizen, who will mind what a man says, and your people of fashion, who fly into a rage, forsooth, if they can't have their own way in everything. No people part with their money so freely as merchants. They don't stand higgling, and criticising like the others. All they require is, to be asked a good price, and then they think a thing must be good, of course. Many a time have I got five times more from a merchant than I dared to have asked from a duke. I suppose he wants to show his taste next week at the sale; and has sent for me, to tell him which are the best pieces, and how much he may bid for them. He is not the first citizen whom my instructions have made pass for a man of taste and judgment. I love such pupils, they pay so well for their learning; and that more ways than one, for they buy what nobody else would bid for; it is only slipping a puffer or two of quality at them, enough of whom come sharking to every sale for that purpose only, and they may be raised to any price. No people part with their money like merchants'.

When he came to the tavern, he found the merchant waiting for him. After the compliments common upon such occasions were

politely interchanged, 'I desired to see you', said the merchant, proceeding to business, though not without evident confusion, 'on an affair that will convince you of my confidence in your abilities and honour. Trade, as you know, has been so dead for some time past that there is no getting in a penny of money without tearing people to pieces. Now, as I had rather suffer something myself, than oppress any honest man till he can bring his affairs about, I should be glad to dispose of some parcels of goods even under their value, to raise money for present occasions; that is, provided it can be done in such a manner as not to be known, as such a thing might injure a man's credit'.

'Dear sir', answered my master, whose heart leaped with joy at the mention of such an affair, 'never fear that; I'll engage to manage it so, that if everyone who knows you were to watch, they'd never even suspect the least of the matter. There is nothing easier, nor more common in the way of business; and it luckily happens that I have the first opportunity at this very time, that ever I had in my life. I have a large sale under a commission, the very week after next, into which I can hedge a thousand or two, with the greatest ease and safety. Assignees never take notice of such things. We understand one another better than that. Many a worthy man have I enabled to hold his head above water for years, by this method. To be sure, it must have an end some time; but then a man stands in fortune's way for a lucky hit, you know; and not only that, but also makes sure of so much good living in the meantime, and can be no worse at the last; and then, when all comes to all, and there must be a blow up, it gives him an opportunity of securing something against a rainy day, as the saying is. As for its being discovered, there are ways enough to prevent that. It is but entering them as sold; and I'll find a buyer that shall never be heard more of. Lord, sir, if it were not for things of this kind, our business would be nothing to what it is. Half the sales you see every day in the papers are made up in this manner'.

'Well, sir', replied the merchant, who had listened to him with attention, and seemed greatly affected at some part of what he said, 'I presume you understand your business, and as I have no doubt of your honour, I shall leave the whole entirely to your management. Here is an account of the particulars which I want to dispose of at this time. They are in a private warehouse, whither I have had them conveyed, to be ready for the purpose, of which this is the key; and here is a bill of sale, which I will execute directly, as I have occasion for two thousand pounds this very evening. You see there is value more than sufficient for double that sum, as you will be a better judge when you see the goods; but the rest can stand forward till they are disposed of, and the account made up'.

'Really, sir, I should be extremely glad to serve you, but, I fear, I have not so much cash by me. However, if you please, I'll go with you, and look at the goods; and then I'll step home and try what I can do'.

Accordingly, away they went together to the warehouse, where my master, being satisfied with the value of the goods, left the merchant, and hied him home directly with a joyful heart for the money.

'So', said he to himself, as he went along, 'I thought what things would come to in the end. His coach and country house, his wife's routs, and his own kept mistress, have made quick work with him. I believe such men must imagine the rest of the world to be blind, or they would never go on at such a rate. I suppose he's preparing for a place in the *Gazette* to-morrow, or next day; but that is no affair of mine. I'll take care to make a safe bargain for myself, and let him look to the rest. I am not to swear for him. Of all the business in our way, I like this the best. A man can make up what account he pleases, without danger of its being disputed with him. All here is snug and secure. If I could but get jobs enough of this kind, I'd let who would chaffer for toys and daubings with people of quality, who often outsharp us, in spite of all our experience'.

By this time he reached home, where he soon made up the money, with the help of that and the former day's sale, without hesitating a moment at its not being his own, and taking with him proper persons to attest his bargain, and new locks to make sure of it, returned to the merchant, with whom he soon concluded everything, without scruple or delay on either side, and then, paying him on the spot, in bank-notes and cash—among the latter of which I was—sent him away, as well satisfied as he himself stayed behind.

CHAPTER XLV

MOTIVE OF CHRYSAL'S NEW MASTER FOR MAKING SUCH A BARGAIN, WITH THE MANY AND GREAT ADVANTAGES A MERCHANT MAY MAKE OF BEING IN THE HOUSE—A SHORT SKETCH OF AN ELECTION—THE CURIOUS METHODS WHICH CHRYSAL'S MASTER TOOK TO EVADE THE LAWS AGAINST BRIBERY—HE TAKES OFFENCE AT THE UNREASONABLE PRESUMPTION OF HIS CONSTITUENTS, AND RESOLVES TO MAKE THE MOST OF THE BARGAIN HE HAS BOUGHT FROM THEM, WHICH, BY A SINGULAR PIECE OF MANAGEMENT, HE PROPOSES TO MAKE CHEAPER THAN THEY THINK—CHRYSAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE FOR THAT OF THE IDOL OF AN INN—THE CONSEQUENCES OF ELECTIONEERING—SOME ACCOUNT OF CHRYSAL'S NEW MISTRESS—HE QUILTS HER SERVICE FOR A CURIOUS PURPOSE—AN EXPEDIENT TO PREVENT THE SALE OF POISON FOR MIND AND BODY—CHRYSAL AGAIN CHANGES HIS SERVICE

WHEN a man has fixed his mind upon gaining a particular end, he slights any inconveniences which may attend the means. Though my new master was sensible of the loss he must suffer by his bargain, the prospect of accomplishing the purpose for which he made it prevented its giving him any concern. As soon as he got home, he gave orders to have his equipage made ready for a journey into the country early next morning, and then retiring into his closet for a few moments before he went to bed—'At length', said he, with a look of self-congratulation, 'I shall compass what I have so long set my heart upon. What an advantage it is for a merchant

to be in the House. I can laugh at bailiffs and bankruptcies for five years at least, and in the meantime, I shall have a thousand opportunities of making my fortune, by pushing boldly in the alley, now that all fears of the immediate consequences are over, or getting beneficial contracts with the government, or at least some genteel and profitable employment under it. A merchant may make many advantages of being in the House. Confound that prating fellow! I was once afraid that he smoked my design, he came so near some unlucky circumstances; but it was above his cut. All his schemes are common and low-lived; this of mine is a master-stroke. It is playing deep, to be sure. Fifteen hundred for my seat; and what with other expenses, and the loss upon this night's work, as much more. It is playing damned deep. But it is too late to think of that now. I have sported many a thousand upon a worse chance in my time. At any rate, I can laugh at bailiffs and bankruptcies for five years at least. What an advantage it is to a merchant to be in the House'.

Saying this, he went to bed, where the advantages of being in the House still ran so strongly in his head that he dreamed of nothing all night but bullying creditors, and cringing to ministers, doing jobs, and getting contracts, places, and pensions.

In pursuance of his scheme, he set out next morning with a splendid retinue for the borough he had in view, where he managed matters with such judgment and generosity, keeping the whole town drunk from the moment he arrived, according to the policy which permits a candidate to deprive his electors of their senses, in order to enable them to judge the better of his legislative abilities, that he was elected in preference to a gentleman, the munificence of whose family had for many generations been the chief support of the place, and who himself spent his ample fortune in hospitality and beneficence in it, but disdained to buy the votes of a venal crew on this occasion. As such a competitor naturally had every man of worth and honour in his interest, it had been necessary for my master to proceed with the utmost care and circumspection. Accordingly, instead of directly giving his voters money, he lent them the prices stipulated on the security of their notes of hand, payable in a certain time, an expedient in which he had a further view, than barely evading the laws against such practices.

Everything being concluded, he was preparing to depart in triumph, when his constituents waited upon him in form, with certain instructions for executing the trust they had thus reposed in him. Though he looked upon this as such a barefaced piece of insolence that he scarce knew how to bear it, yet, as he had not yet taken his seat, he received their commands with the politest humility, and promised the most faithful obedience to them. But they were no sooner out of his sight than he changed his note.

'Impudent, unreasonable scoundrels', said he to himself, giving vent to his indignation as he walked backward and forward in the room, 'to talk of having reposed your trust in me, and pretend to give me instructions. I have bought you, and I will sell you to the best bidder, if he were the devil; and a bad bargain he will have of you, if he buys you as dear as I have, though I have a stroke

in my head to bring myself home, that you little think of. Those notes of hand, which you thought I took only to evade the law, shall be paid to the last farthing, if I am not chosen for nothing, next election. You shall find you have no fool to deal with'.

Just as he said this, he received notice that his coach was ready, and the landlord's daughter, coming to wish him a good journey, he saluted her politely, and slipping a couple of guineas (one of which I was) into her hand, to buy a ribbon, left the house like a man of honour. I have not entered particularly into the circumstances of electioneering; they are too gross to give pleasure, and too well known to require repetition even to you. The effects, I mean immediately in the place, were such as reason may suggest to you. The electors, instead of making any advantage of the price for which they thus had literally sold their consciences, liberties, and properties, continued to wallow in drunkenness, till every penny of it was spent, after which it was so long before they could settle rightly to work again, that it required a year's hard labour and starving to repair what they suffered by this bout of excess and idleness. My new mistress was what is not unjustly called the idol of an inn. Endowed by nature with prettiness enough to entitle her to flattery, and sufficient pertness to make her a coquette, on her return from a boarding-school, where her natural talents were so well improved by education that she was thought fit to try her fortune in the world, she took her place in the bar, and flirted away with every gentleman that came to the house, in hopes of taking in some one of the number for marriage, as others in her way had done. The first passion of the female heart is for finery, to the gratification of which girls seldom fail to apply all the money in their power. But though my mistress was very far from being insensible to this passion, another scarce less powerful with the sex took the place of it at this time, which was curiosity.

A young officer, who had lately been quartered in the house, and made warm addresses to her, had said so many fine things in praise of a certain book called *Memoirs of a Lady of Pleasure*, that she resolved to see it, and for that purpose applied at a circulating library in the town, the keeper of which told her it was so scarce and valuable a book that he could not possibly procure it for her under a guinea. High as this price was, she would have found means to raise it, so strong was her curiosity, had not the hurry of the election, which just then came on, taken up all her time. But every obstacle was now removed, and the very evening I came into her possession, she muffled herself up in one of the maid's cloaks, and went for it as soon as it was dark, when I was the purchase of this extraordinary bargain.

I see you are shocked at the dishonesty and wickedness of my new master for hiring out at such a price, or indeed at any price at all, a book, whose obvious design (and which it is too well calculated to accomplish) is to supplant every principle of virtue in the youthful mind. But the blame rests not solely upon him. The excuse which the poet puts into the mouth of the apothecary for selling poison, that 'his poverty, but not his will, consented', may with equal justice be alleged in palliation of a poor bookseller's vending

impious or immoral books—the poison of the mind. For this reason, as no penalty, however severe, may be sufficient to combat that necessity, the most effectual way to prevent the vending of either poison would be to prohibit all those whose poverty might subject them to such temptation, from trading in books or drugs of any kind, as it is most certain that if there were neither poor apothecaries nor poor booksellers, the sale of both vicious books and noxious drugs would be much less extensive than it is, if it could not be totally suppressed, there being very few of the human species so entirely given up to a reprobate sense as to murder either the soul or body of a fellow-creature, merely for the pleasure of doing it.

It may be judged that I did not remain long in the service of this master. The next morning after I came into his possession, he came to London, where he laid out all the money he had in the purchase of a parcel of such books as he thought most likely to suit the taste of his customers, without regard either to virtue or religion, on which occasion I changed his service for that of his bookseller.

CHAPTER XLVI

ACCOUNT OF CHRYSAL'S NEW MASTER—HIS HEROIC SPIRIT AND RESOLUTION TO PUSH FOR A PENSION OR A PILLORY—MEETING BETWEEN HIM AND A POET, WHO TURNS THE TABLES UPON HIM—A CURIOUS METHOD OF FORMING A JUDGMENT OF A WORK OF GENIUS—CHRYSAL'S MASTER IS BEATEN OUT OF ALL HIS ART, AND FOR ONCE BOUGHT A BOOK BY QUALITY, NOT QUANTITY—THE VALUE OF AN AUTHOR'S NAME—CHRYSAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE

My new master was one of those aspiring geniuses whom desperate circumstances drive to push at everything, and court consequences, the bare apprehension of which terrifies men who have some character and fortune to lose, out of their senses. He was that evening to meet at a tavern an author,¹ the boldness and beauty of whose writings had for some time engaged the public attention in a particular manner, and made his numerous admirers tremble for his safety. As he happened to outstay his time, my master's importance took offence at a freedom which he thought so much out of character.

'This is very pretty, truly', said he, walking backward and forward in a chafe, 'that I should wait an hour for an author. It was his business to have been here first, and waited for me, but he is so puffed up of late, that he has quite forgot himself. Booksellers seldom meet with such insolence from authors. I should serve him right, to go away and disappoint him. But would not that disappoint myself more? He is come into such vogue lately, that the best man in the trade would be glad to get him. Well, if he does not do what I want, I know not who can. Fools may be frightened

¹ Charles Churchill [*see* Introduction] then at the height of his fame, *i.e.* about 1762-3, before the Wilkes *imbroglio*.

at the thoughts of a cart's tail or a pillory ; I know better things. Where they come in a popular cause, nothing sets a man's name up to such advantage, and that is the first step toward making a fortune ; as for the danger, it is only a mere bugbear, while the mob is on my side. And, therefore, I will go on without fear, if I am not bought off. A pension or a pillory is the word'.

These heroic meditations were interrupted by the entrance of the author, who, throwing himself carelessly into a chair—'I believe I have made you wait,' said he, 'but I could not help it. I was obliged to stay to kick a puppy of a printer who had been impertinent ; as I am to meet company directly, so let me hear what you have to say'.

'I thought, sir', answered my master, with an air of offended importance, 'you had appointed me to meet you here on business, and business, you know, cannot be hurried over so soon'.

'Don't mention business to me ; I hate the very name of it, and as to any that can possibly be between you and me, it may be done in five minutes, as well as five years ; so speak directly, and without further preamble, for all your finesses could have no effect upon me, even if I would submit to let you try them'.

'Finesses, sir ? I don't know what you mean. I defy the world to charge me with having ever been guilty of any. The business I desired to meet you upon, was about a poem I was informed you had ready for the press, and which I should be glad to treat with you for'.

'Well, sir, and what will you give me for it ? Be quick, for I cannot wait to make my words'.

'What ? Before I have seen it ? It is impossible for me to say till I have looked it over, and can judge what it is, and how much it will make'.

'As to your judging what it is, that must depend upon inspiration, which I imagine you will scarcely make pretence to, till you turn Methodist at least ; but for what it will make, here it is, and you judge of that, while I go downstairs for a few minutes'. Saying which, he gave him a handful of loose papers, and left the room.

The first thing my master did when left thus to form his judgment of a work of genius, was to number the pages, and then the lines in a page or two, by the time he had done which the author returned, and taking the papers out of his hand—'Well, sir', said he, 'and what is the result of your judgment' ?

'Why, really, sir,' answered my master, after some pause, 'I hardly know what to say. I have cast off the copy and do not think it will make more than a shilling, however pompously printed'.

'What you think it will make is not the matter, but what you will give me for it. I sell my works by the quality, not the quantity'.

'I do not doubt the quality of them in the least ; but considering how much the trade is overstocked at present, and what a mere drug poetry has long been, I am a good deal at a loss what to offer, as I should be unwilling to give you or any gentleman offence, by seeming to undervalue your works. What do you think of five guineas ; I do not imagine that more can be given for so little ; nor indeed should I be fond of giving even that, but in compliment

to you. I have had full twice as much for two, many a time'.

'Much good may your bargain do you, sir; but I will not take less than fifty, for mine in compliment to you, or any bookseller alive. And so, sir, I desire to know without more words (for I told you before that your eloquence would be thrown away upon me), whether you will give that, as I am in haste to go to company, much more agreeable to me than yours'.

'What, sir! fifty guineas for scarce five hundred lines! Such a thing was never heard of in the trade'.

'Confound your trade, and you together! Here, waiter, what is to pay'?

'But, dear sir, why will you be in such a hurry? Can you not give yourself and me time to consider a little? Perhaps we might come nearer to each other'.

'I have told you before, and I repeat it again, that I will have so much, and that without more words'.

'You are very peremptory, sir; but you know your own value, and therefore, in hopes you will let me have more for my money next time, I will venture to give you your price now, though really if it were not for your name, I could not possibly do it; but, to be sure, that is worth a shilling extraordinary, I own'.

'Which is twelve pence more than yours ever will be, unless to the Ordinary of Newgate. But come, give me the money! I want to go to my company'.

'Well, sir, this is a hasty bargain; but I take it upon your word, and don't doubt but there is merit in it, to answer such a price. Satire, sir, keen satire, and so plain that he who runs may read, as the saying is, is the thing nowadays. Where there is any doubt or difficulty in the application, it takes all the pleasure from the generality of readers, who will scarce be satisfied with less than the very name. That, sir, is your great merit. Satire must be personal, or it will never do'.

'Personal? that mine never shall be. Vices, not persons, are the objects of my satire, though where I find the former, I never spare the latter, be the rank and character in life what it will'.

My master had by this time counted out his money (among which I was), which the author took without telling over, and then went to his company, leaving the bookseller scarcely more pleased with his bargain than mortified at the cavalier treatment he had met in making it.

CHAPTER XLVII

SOME ACCOUNT OF THE COMPANY TO WHICH CHRYSAL'S NEW MASTER WENT—HIS BEHAVIOUR TO A YOUNG FEMALE, WHO ACCOSTED HIM ON HIS WAY HOME ¹—HE TAKES HER TO A TAVERN FOR AN UNCOMMON PURPOSE, WHERE HE TREATS HER UNCOMMONLY, AND GOES HOME WITH HER FROM AS UNCOMMON A MOTIVE—ACCOUNT OF WHAT HE SAW IN HER HABITATION, WITH THE MANNER IN WHICH HE BEHAVED THERE—HE TAKES ANOTHER LODGING FOR THE WHOLE FAMILY, WHERE HE LEAVES THEM ABRUPTLY, TO SAVE HIMSELF AND THEM TROUBLE

THE company to which my new master was in such haste to go, consisted of a few persons, whom a similarity of temper had linked in the closest intimacy. With these he spent the remainder of the evening, in a manner which few would dislike, though fewer still could approve it, the spirited wit and liveliness of their conversation gilding the grossest debaucheries; at the same time that the rectitude and sublimity of their sentiments, whenever their hearts could find opportunity to speak, made the vices of their practice still more horrible by the contrast. They broke not up, as it may be imagined, till nature sunk under their excesses, when my master, as he staggered home, was accosted by a female, who had something in her air and manner so different from those outcasts of humanity who offer themselves to casual prostitution in the streets, that his curiosity was struck, and he stopped to take more particular notice of her. She appeared to be about fifteen. Her figure was elegant, and her features regular; but want had sicklied over their beauty, and all the horrors of despair gloomed through the languid smile she forced when she addressed him.

The sigh of distress, which never struck his ear without affecting his heart, came with double force from such an object. He viewed her with silent compassion for some moments, and reaching her a piece of gold, bade her go home, and shelter herself from the inclemencies of the night at so late an hour. Her surprise and joy at such unexpected charity overpowered her. She dropped upon her knees, in the wet and dirt of the street, and raising her hands and eyes toward heaven, remained in that posture for some moments, unable to give utterance to the gratitude that filled her heart.

Such a sight was more expressive than all the powers of eloquence. He raised her tenderly from the ground, and soothing her with words of comfort, offered to conduct her to some place where she might get that refreshment of which she appeared to be in too great want.

'Oh sir', said she, pressing the hand that had raised her with her cold trembling lips, 'my deliverer sent from Heaven to save me from despair, let me not think of taking refreshment myself, till I have

¹ This episode is said to be based on fact; at any rate, Churchill's conduct in it is thoroughly characteristic of his impulsive good nature.

first procured it for those whose greater wants I feel ten thousand times more severely than my own'.

'Who can they be'? interrupted he, with anxious impatience. 'Can humanity feel greater wants than those under which you are sinking'?

'My father', exclaimed she, bursting into tears, 'languishing under infirmities, acquired in the service of his country; my mother, worn out with attending on him, and both perishing of want (Heaven grant they are not already dead!) together with two infant brothers insensible of the cause of their distress, and crying to them for a morsel of bread, which it is not in their power to give'.

'Where can such a scene of wretchedness be hidden from relief? I will go with you directly; but stop, let us first procure some comfortable nourishment from some of the houses which are kept open at this late hour for a very different purpose. Come with me, we have no time to lose'.

With these words, he went directly to a tavern, and inquiring what victuals were dressed in the house, loaded her with as much as she could carry of the best, and putting a couple of bottles of wine in his own pockets, walked with her to her habitation, which was in a blind alley, happily for her not very far distant, as weakness, together with the conflict of passions struggling in her heart, made her scarce able to go.

When they came to the door, she would have gone up first for a light, but he was resolved to accompany her, that he might see the whole scene in its genuine colours. He therefore followed her up to the top of the house, where, opening the door of the garret, she discovered to him such a scene of misery as struck him with astonishment. By the light of a lamp that glimmered in the fireless chimney, he saw lying on a bare bedstead, without any other covering than the relics of their own rage, a man, a woman, and two children, shuddering with cold, though huddled together, to share the little warmth which exhausted nature still supplied them with.

While he stood gazing in horror at such complicated wretchedness, his conductress ran to the bedside, and falling on her knees—'Oh, sir, madam!' exclaimed she, in rapture. 'Arise! I have got relief from an angel of Heaven'.

'Take care,' answered a voice, the hollow trembling of which was sharpened by indignation, 'take care it is not from a fiend of Hell, who has taken advantage of your distress to tempt you to ruin, for with whom else could you be till this time of night? But know, wretched girl, that I will never eat the earnings of vice and infamy. A few hours will put an end to my miseries, which have received the only possible addition by this your folly'.

'He must be such, indeed', interrupted my master, still more struck with sentiments so uncommon in such a situation, 'who could think of tempting her in such circumstances to any folly. I will withdraw while you arise, and then we will consult what can be soonest done to alleviate a distress of which you appear so undeserving'. While he said this, he took the wine out of his pockets, and giving it to the daughter, went directly downstairs, without waiting for a reply, and walking backward and forward in the street for some time, enjoying the sublimest pleasure the

human heart is capable of, in considering how he had relieved, and should further relieve, the sufferings of objects so worthy of relief.

By the time he thought they might have learned from their daughter the circumstances of her meeting with him, and taken some nourishment, he returned to them, when the moment he entered the room the whole family fell upon their knees to thank him. Such humiliation was more than he could bear. He raised them one by one, as fast as he could, and taking the father's hand—'Gracious God', said he, 'can a sense of humanity be such an uncommon thing among creatures who call themselves human, that so poor an exertion of it should be thought deserving of a return proper to be made only to Heaven. Oppress me not, sir, I conjure you, with the mention of what it would have been a crime I could never have forgiven myself to have known I had not done. It is too late to think of leaving this place before to-morrow, when I will provide a better, if there is not any to which you choose particularly to go. I am not rich; but I thank Heaven that it has blest me with ability and inclination to afford such assistance as may immediately be necessary to you, till means may be thought of for doing more'.

'Oh, sir,' answered the mother, 'well might my daughter call you an angel of Heaven. You know not from what misery you have already relieved——'

'Nor will I know more of it at this time', interrupted my master, 'than that which I too plainly see. I will leave you now to your rest, and return as soon as it is day'.

'Speak not of leaving us, sir'! exclaimed the daughter, who was afraid that if he should go away, he might not return. 'What rest can we take, in so short a time? Leave us not, I beseech you; leave us not in this place'.

'Cease, my child', interposed the father, 'nor press your benefactor to continue in a scene of misery that must give pain to his humane heart'.

'If my staying will not give you pain', answered my master, 'I will most willingly stay; but it must be on condition that our conversation points entirely forward to happier days. There will be time enough hereafter to look back'.

Saying this, he sat down on the bedside (for other seat the apartment afforded not), between the husband and wife, with whom he spent the little remainder of the night in such discourse as he thought most likely to divert their attention from their present misery, and inspire their minds with better hopes, while the children, all but the daughter, who hung upon his words, comforted at heart with a better meal than they had long tasted, fell fast asleep, as they leaned their heads upon their mother's lap. As soon as it was day—'Now, madam', said my master, addressing himself to the mother, 'I will go and provide a place for your reception, as you say all places are alike to you. In the meantime, accept of this trifle', giving her ten guineas, 'to provide such necessaries as you may indispensably want before you remove. When you are settled, we will see what further can be done. I shall be back with you within these three hours at most'.

For such beneficence there was no possibility of returning thanks;

but their hearts spoke through their eyes, in a language sufficiently intelligible to his. Departing directly, to save both himself and them the pain of pursuing a conversation that grew too distressful, he went, without regard to change of dress or appearance, to look for a proper lodging for them, where he laid in such provisions of every kind, as he knew they must immediately want. This care employed him till the time he had promised to return, when he found such an alteration in the looks and appearance of them all as gave his heart delight.

'You see, sir', said the mother, as soon as he entered, 'the effects of your bounty; but do not think that vanity has made us abuse it. These clothes, what we could raise on which, has, for some time, been our sole support, were the purchase of happier times, and were now redeemed for much less than we must have given for the worst we could buy'.

'Dear madam', interrupted my master, taking her hand respectfully, 'mention not anything of the kind to me, I beseech you. You will soon see such times again'. Then turning to her husband—'I have taken a lodging, sir,' continued he; 'it is convenient, but not large, as I imagined would be your choice. I will call a coach to take us to it directly. If there are any demands here, let the people of the house be called up, and they shall be paid. I will be your purse-bearer for the present'.

'No, sir,' replied the husband, 'there are not any. You have enabled us to discharge all demands upon us. People in our circumstances cannot find credit, because they want it'.

My master would then have gone for a coach, but the daughter insisted on saving him that trouble, upon which he put the whole family into it, and walked away before them to their new lodging. It is impossible to describe what these poor people felt when they saw the provision he had made for their reception. The father, in particular, could not bear it, but sinking into a chair—'This is too much, said he, as soon as a flood of tears had given vent to the fulness of his heart. 'This is too much. Support me, gracious Heaven, who has sent this best of men to my relief; support me under the weight of obligations, which the preservation of these alone', looking round upon his wife and children, 'could induce me to accept'. Then addressing himself to my master—'My heart is not unthankful', continued he, 'but gratitude in such excess as mine, where there is no prospect of ever making a return, is the severest pain'.

My master, who sought none, attempted often to give the conversation another turn; but, finding that they could speak or think of nothing else as yet, he took his leave, promising to come the next day, when their minds should be better settled, to consult what more was in his power to serve them, having first privately taken an opportunity to slip a couple of guineas into the daughter's hand, to avoid putting the delicacy of her father and mother to further pain.

CHAPTER XLVIII

CHRYSAI GIVES SOME ACCOUNT OF HIS MASTER—REASON OF HIS HAVING BEEN BRED TO, AND MISCARRIED IN, A PARTICULAR PROFESSION—INTERESTING REMARKS ON THE DIFFERENT KINDS OF MERIT NECESSARY TO EMINENCE IN DIFFERENT PROFESSIONS, CONFIRMED BY STRIKING INSTANCES OF THEIR SUCCESS IN EACH—NATURAL CONSEQUENCE OF HIS BEING FORCED INTO A PROFESSION AGAINST HIS INCLINATION—HE IS COMPELLED BY DISTRESS TO EXERT HIS ABILITIES—CONTRADICTIONS IN HIS CHARACTER, AND THE PARTICULAR TURN OF HIS WORKS ACCOUNTED FOR—HE VISITS HIS NEW FAMILY—AFFECTING STORY OF AN OFFICER

FATIGUED in mind and body from the debauch the evening before, and the height to which his tenderest passions had been wound up by such a moving scene, my master went directly home, and throwing himself on a bed, slept till next morning, without disturbance from pain or reflection. The contradictions which I had seen in his character prompted my curiosity to take this opportunity of looking back to his past life, to try if in the occurrences of that I could trace their cause. Born in the middle rank of life, his parents were induced by the dawnings of uncommon genius, which he discovered in his earliest youth, to give him such an education as might enable him to make that figure in some of the learned professions, for which paternal fondness flattered them that nature had designed him. But, however greatly he profited by his education, the end proposed by it was far from being pleasing to his inclinations, which the vigour of his mind and body turned to more active scenes. For this reason, when he was to quit the pursuits of general learning for those of some particular profession, his ardour cooled, and he entirely lost that spirit of emulative ambition, which alone can enable a man to arrive at eminence. Such a falling-off could not escape the anxious observation of his friends, but as it was not in their power either to remedy it, or gratify his inclination in any other way, all they could do was to enter him into the service of religion, a profession in which, though the greatest abilities and application of the human mind are evidently and indispensably necessary, yet, by the perversion of man, the least are required.

You seem shocked at the severity of this remark ; but a moment's reflection will open to you the reason upon which it is founded. In every other profession, success depends upon an opinion of that knowledge, which is called merit in it, because mankind see the necessity of such merit to attain the object of the profession. But in the Church the case is quite different. Every man thinks that he knows enough of religion to serve his own turn, and therefore gives himself no trouble about the knowledge of those who profess it, as he concludes that knowledge can be of no service to him ; and therefore success in the Church depends not on a general opinion

of merit, but on particular favour, which, for the reason given before, is not the necessary consequence of such merit. An attorney or surgeon, for instance, who is not thought to have some merit in his profession, will never be employed; but let him by any means get into the Church, and curry favour with those in power, and he may rise to the first dignities of it, though he has no more merit in his profession than he had in that which he was forced to quit for want of bread. And this is the reason why they who have least abilities for any profession are packed into this, and why they, again, who have the least of these, are generally most successful in it, as consciousness of their want of merit makes them take most pains to gain favour. The consequences of his entering into such a profession against inclination are obvious. An indignant sense of his own natural superiority to his superiors in station made him fall into the too common error of arguing from the abuse, against the use, and hold in contempt not only them, but also the very profession itself, in which they could have such success, and in which necessity alone obliged him to continue. He disdained to apply abilities which he thought above the end. He neglected duties which he saw abused, and at length sunk into a state of listless indifference, in which he would have died in obscurity, had not distress roused him, and extorted an exertion of his abilities which a mind soured by disappointment of its earliest hopes, and by domestic unhappiness after, turned to satire, with an asperity and strength that made vice tremble in the bosom of the great, and folly hide her head in the highest places. As this domestic unhappiness was the immediate cause of those parts of his conduct which contradicted the general tenor of his character, justice requires that some account should be given of it. In the capricious levity of youth, he fixed his inclination on a female, who had no other recommendation beside beauty. Prudence would have forbidden a match, in which there was so little prospect of happiness, but men of great abilities too often think it beneath them to listen to her voice. He married her, though in the phrase of the world, evidently to his ruin, the return she made him for which proof of his love was infidelity to his bed. This is the deepest wound that can be given to a heart of any delicacy; it sharpens the sting of ingratitude with insult, by giving a preference that reflects dishonour. He felt it so severely, that despair made him strive to drown the sense of it in wine, in the intoxication of which he too often was guilty of what, in a cooler moment, his reason would have blushed at and his principles abhorred; and this was the chief cause of that distress also, which, as I observed, forced him to exert his abilities, which he did with such success, as soon enabled him to quit a profession that had not been his choice, and at the same time indulge the natural disposition of his heart by practising some of the sublimest duties of it.

As soon as he awoke next day, he went to visit his new family, where the happiness that glistened in every grateful eye at his approach made him happy. After some general chat—‘It is my duty, sir’, said the father, ‘to give you some account of myself, and of the cause of my falling into that depth of misery, from which

your beneficence relieved me, that you should not think it has been lavished on objects altogether unworthy of it. I am descended from a good family, the fortune of which my father dissipated in supporting a parliamentary interest for the ministry, the only return he received for which, and for his voice upon all occasions, was a small pension for himself, and a pair of colours in the Guards for me, his only son, with promises, indeed, of further provision, which were all forgotten when he died, happily for himself, before the end of the parliament, which, as he had no prospect of being returned again, would have left him at the mercy of creditors, whom it was not in his power to pay. Though I was soon sensible that my best hopes died with him, I was so infatuated to a profession the most pleasing to youthful idleness and vanity, that I laid out the little fortune of this best of women, whom I had married in my days of better hope, in the purchase of a company, in a marching regiment, at the head of which I flattered myself that I should meet some opportunity, in the war just then broke out, of meriting further promotion. But I found the vanity of such a thought when it was unhappily too late. After several years careful service, in the course of which I had sealed some degree of reputation with my blood in several warm actions, without advantage to myself, or prospect of any to my family, who now multiplied the cares of life ten thousandfold upon my head, I was driven by despair to exchange my company, which I had bought, and therefore could have sold again, the price of which would at least have kept us from absolute starving, for an higher rank in a younger regiment just then ordered on an expedition, the object of which raised what was thought rational expectation of such profit as should ease me from the anxieties that made life a burden. Allured solely by this expectation, I went accordingly. The expedition was successful. I did my duty. I was wounded in the course of it, to the extreme danger of my life. I entirely ruined my constitution by the severity of the climate, and, on my return home, was reduced to half-pay, without receiving so much prize-money as defrayed the extraordinary expenses of the expedition and of the illness which I contracted in it; while those above me accumulated such wealth, as, if divided in any degree of proportion, would have recompensed the labours of us, who had literally born the heat and burden of the day, and were now pining in discontent and misery, aggravated by a partiality so severely injurious. In this situation, I resolved to throw myself at the feet of my sovereign, and implore relief from the known goodness of his heart. But his throne was surrounded by those whose interest it was to keep the cries of his people from coming to his ears¹; and therefore as it was necessary for me to make my errand known, I never could obtain access to him.

‘The distress of this disappointment was still further heightened by the delays in the discharge of that half-pay, which was now my only support, and the drawbacks it was subject to from the fees of office, even when it should come to be paid, which were such

¹ This reflection, notoriously so groundless, is alone sufficient to vindicate the author from any allusion to present times.

that when I attempted to mortgage it, the wretch's last resource to put off starving as long as he can, what I could get from those vultures, who fatten upon the sufferings of a soldier, was scarce sufficient to satisfy our present wants. How, then, could I look forward for a family, dearer to me than life? What could support resolution, when hope was gone? Mine was unequal to the trial; and I was beginning to meditate on putting an end to a life of such misery, without considering that the sufferings of those for whom I felt so much more than for myself, must be still made heavier by such a base desertion of them, when Heaven, in its mercy, visited my family with a violent fever, which freed me from further fears for the future welfare of my three eldest sons, and with difficulty spared the two, whom you see before you.—Oh! my poor boys, happy, thrice happier than us, whom you left behind!—Excuse this weakness, sir; nature will force the involuntary tear, in spite of reason; for were they not the children of my love? During their illness I lost every other care in my attendance upon them nor omitted any possible means to preserve lives, for which my fears foreboded nothing but unhappiness; but, though their deaths freed me from a part of those fears, they left a melancholy void in my heart, which was more painful, if possible, than any fear. But I was not long sensible of that pain. My children were scarce laid in the grave when the fever seized myself with such violence, that I soon lost my senses, nor recovered them for above a month, and then only to feel the greatest wretchedness that was ever heaped upon human creature.

‘The expense of my children's and my own illness had not only exhausted all the money I had raised on the anticipation of my half-pay, but also obliged my wife to mortgage several of our best effects. Such a resource never escapes the watchful eyes of people who keep lodging-houses. Our landlady no sooner perceived it, than she seized upon the rest, and then turned us out, the moment I could be removed without instant death.

‘In this situation I must have perished in the street, had not a poor woman, whom my wife had been obliged to call in to her assistance when I sickened, shared with us her habitation, in which you found us, as she also did the earnings of her daily labour, till a chairman, who was carrying a beau to a ball, threw her down with such violence for not making haste enough out of his way, that she broke her leg, and was obliged to be taken to a hospital. From that time we supported life by mortgaging the few clothes we had brought upon our backs, without one ray of hope to tempt us to look forward, till they also were all gone, and the misery of cold added to that of hunger. In this condition we had been two days without tasting bread or feeling the warmth of fire, calling incessantly upon death to put that end to our distresses which a sense of religion, made stronger by my wretchedness, now prevented my daring to hasten, when my daughter stole out unknown to us, to seek for charity in the streets, where she wandered, without meeting anything but insults and solicitations to vice, till Heaven directed your steps to her. Such was the reward of more than twenty years' faithful and hard service, in which I had fought the battles of my country, in

the opposite extremities of the globe, with honour, and been instrumental in making princely fortunes for the several commanders under whom I served. This, sir, is the sum of my story, in which I have been as brief as I could, to avoid giving you pain. We are now your creatures. The lives we enjoy are immediately the gift of your benevolence—a benevolence so critically timed (for we could not have subsisted many hours longer without it) as to raise a hope that Providence, which sent you to our relief, will not leave its work unfinished, but save us from falling again into such misery, by means agreeable to its own wisdom and goodness, though impossible for us, in our present situation, to foresee’.

It was some time before my master, who had listened to the officer’s story with sympathetic attention, was able to speak. Recovering himself at length—‘Fear not’, said he, in a broken voice, ‘never were the righteous forsaken; nor—nor—nor—I have some friends, sir, who may serve. In the meantime take this’—reaching him a bank-note for twenty pounds—‘I will not be refused. Business calls me for a few hours, but I will see you again in the evening’. Saying this, he hurried away, to hide his emotions, without waiting for a reply, which, indeed, their gratitude left them not the power to make.

CHAPTER XLIX

CHRYSLAL’S MASTER CARRIES HIM TO VISIT AN OLD ACQUAINTANCE, WHO BEHAVES IN CHARACTER ON HEARING THE OFFICER’S STORY, AND SURPRISES CHRYSLAL’S MASTER WITH AN ACCOUNT OF HIS HAVING TURNED PATRIOT—THE GENERAL MOTIVES FOR SUCH A STEP, WITH SOME REMARKS ON THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN PRACTICE AND PROFESSION, IN DIFFERENT INSTANCES—INSIGNIFICANCY OF PRIVATE CHARACTERS IN ATTACKS UPON A MINISTRY, AND WHY—REFLECTIONS ON THE ORIGIN AND USE OF SATIRE, AND THE ABUSE OF THE TERMS GOOD AND ILL-NATURE, WITH THE REASONS WHY SO MANY CRY OUT AGAINST SATIRE—CHRYSLAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE IN A COMMON WAY

THE most intimate acquaintance¹ my master had was the person who had been competitor with a former master of mine, for admission in the higher order of the mock-monastery. To him he went directly, and relating the officer’s story, while it was still warm on his heart, asked his assistance to do something more effectual for his relief.

His friend was so affected with the melancholy tale, that it was some time before he could speak; but when at length he did, it was in a strain very different from what might have been expected.

‘And the girl was really so pretty’, said he, with a look of inexpressible archness.

¹ John Wilkes, with whom about this time Churchill entered into cordial relations, contributing to the *North Briton*, the profits of which according to the printer Kearsley went to him.

'Well said, my good Levite. I presume you satisfied your own appetites with her at the tavern, before you provided for those of her family, though you sunk that part of the story, for fear I should want to come in for a snack with you. The concupiscence of you parsons is truly catholic, whatever your consciences may be, and would engross the whole sex, if it was not restrained; not indeed that women come within the meaning of the mortmain acts, as none do more good in their generation, and consequently are better represented to the state than those who are occupied by the clergy'.

'Why, what a sensual brute you must be', answered my master, 'to talk of satisfying appetites with a wretch just perishing with cold and hunger. But it is all affectation. If you had been in my place, you would have acted just as I did; for, whatever airs your wicked wit may assume, I know your heart is strongly susceptible of charity'.

'Charity! Ha! ha! ha! I expected that. It is always the burthen of a parson's song. They make a cloak of it upon all occasions; and, indeed, if it will really cover sins, as they say, they are in the right to have it ready, for multitudes enough they have, to take up every corner of it. But, why can you not throw off the cant along with the cloth? However, that her hunger should not damp your desires any more, here', giving him half a dozen guineas, 'is my help to allay it'.

'I will not refuse your money, for your own sake, in hopes that your bestowing even this much so well may help to atone for some of the many thousands you have thrown away. But it was not with any view of getting it that I spoke to you. Their immediate necessities are supplied. I want your assistance and interest'.

'My interest? Ha! ha! ha! You apply to a person of great interest, truly. Why, my very naming them would be sufficient to ruin their hopes forever. You don't know, perhaps, that I have turned a patriot, and attacked the ministry'?

'Patriot? For Heaven's sake, how long, and on what occasion have you taken this strange whim'?

'Whim! Pray, good sir, speak with more respect of the noblest principle of the human heart. The thought came into my head the night before last, and as I do not love to lose time, especially in things of such moment, I gave it vent yesterday, in the shape of a political pamphlet¹, in which I have proved to a demonstration that the minister and all his friends and countrymen are fools and rogues, and deserve to be hanged'.

'Is it possible you can be serious? What in the name of common sense could be your motive for taking such a step as this? I thought you had expectations of favour from them'.

'What motives should any man of honour or honesty have, but

¹ The famous XLV of the *North Briton*, issued the 23rd April 1763, attacking the King's Speech. It was pronounced by the law officers of the Crown to be a seditious libel, and as the author was not declared, general warrants were issued for the apprehension of the authors, printers, and publishers.

the good of his country ; their neglect of which has roused an indignation that will make them tremble'.

'Or, in other words, they have disappointed your expectations, and, therefore, you take this method of being revenged on them, and extorting for fear what they would not do for favour, the general motive of modern patriots, I acknowledge ; but with what face can you pretend to the title, prostituted as it is, I cannot think, as your very name is a burlesque upon everything that is serious'.

'Pray, how so, reverend and grave sir ? If the most profligate sinner makes the best saint, as you say, why should not a moderate rake make a tolerable politician ? I believe you will hardly attribute it to the superior excellence of the latter character. But the truth is, though it is impossible for me to profess political principles more contrary to my practice than your moral practice is to your preaching, yet you would deny me the toleration which you avail yourself of, and have my words judged from my actions ; not my actions from my words, as you expect your own shall be. But my private character or practice signifies nothing to this undertaking, which is to rip up the practices and characters, public and private, of a set of people who have obtruded themselves into a station that exposes them to envy, and every accusation against whom will, therefore, be received implicitly, without regarding who or what the author of it is. Not but there is sufficient room to attack these, whose whole private lives have been such a continual series of vice and folly, and their public conduct of blunders and villany, that it is impossible to say or think anything bad enough of them, as I have already proved by incontestible instances in my pamphlet, and shall by many more in the course of the undertaking. If the tables, indeed, should turn, and I get into their place, then they may make the same use of my character, and perhaps not without effect ; but at present it is quite out of the question. And now that I have opened myself to you, I expect your assistance, in return for my confidence'.

'Assistance in politics ? It is not in my power to give you any. I hate, from my soul, every political system under the sun, as a jumble of folly and villany (I mean as they are carried into practice, not in their speculative plans), and therefore never could throw away a thought upon them'.

'That signifies nothing. The assistance which I want, you are qualified to give. While I detect their political blunders and villany, you shall lash their private vices and follies, till we make them equally ridiculous and odious to every man of sense and virtue in the nation, a task that will give you the pleasing opportunity of indulging that misanthropy which inspires the muse of a satirist, and is mistaken for virtue, because it rails against vice ; for, blazen it out as pompously as you will, nothing but ill-nature can make a man take delight in exposing the defects of others, and the more forcibly he does it, the more powerful must that principle be with him. And by the same rule, it is good-nature that makes a man fawn upon folly and flatter vice ; and consequently, whoever does it, is virtuous'.

'A most judicious way of reasoning, truly. Now, on the contrary,

I think it a much more just conclusion, that they who treat vice with tenderness approve in their hearts, and would practice it if they could, and that they who expose its deformities and dangers really detest it, though they may sometimes, through human weakness, fall into the practice. But I do not wonder at your remark; it is an old and common one. All who are conscious that they deserve the lash desire to lessen its force, and therefore derive satire from ill-nature, in order to obviate the application of it to the proper object, and fasten upon the satirist the fault which is in themselves. And this abuse of the terms good and ill-nature is the reason why some have been provoked to call the former folly. But, not to waste time in discussions, where prejudice only can find a doubt, I agree to your proposal with pleasure, and will hold folly up to ridicule, and brand vice for detestation, wherever you point them out to me, without regard to the rank or power of the person, or to any imputation of misanthropy and ill-nature, which may be levelled at myself, to shield against, and blunt the edge of my satire; though I no more expect that I shall be able to reform the moral, than you the political conduct of the age. However, it is a duty to make the attempt, be the success what it will. But, by the by, are you not apprehensive that your undertaking may be attended with danger? The people in power will certainly be provoked, and power, you know, has long arms, and will often reach over the fences of the law'.

'I fear them not. I have friends who are able, and will defend the laws in me, while I keep within their fence, one of the principal of whom I expect every minute to call upon me, to communicate matter, and consult upon another stroke'.

'Then I'll take my leave. You'll have things to talk about which you will not desire me to hear. Conspirators against the state always choose privacy'.

'Conspirators against the state? Our conspiracy, if such you call it, is for the state, against its worst enemies, traitors to the trust reposed in them, and fools to their own true interest, as members of the community'.

'All this I'll grant; and yet it is well if they do not find means to make themselves pass for the state, and of course, you for the traitors against it. They who have the power can easily assume the name'.

As he said this, a servant brought his friend a note, who, upon casting his eye over it—'The gentleman I expected', said he, 'writes me word that he is not very well this morning, and, therefore, desires to see me at his house. If you are going my way, I'll set you down'.

'I thank you', answered my master, 'but ambition does not rise so high as that yet. I do not aspire to a pillory or prison, even in the cause of my country. Shall we see you at dinner'?

'Most certainly; but hold! Can you give me change for this note? I have not time to call upon my banker'.

'I believe I can; but then it must be with the help of what you have yourself given for the officer; like other bankers, who make a parade of taking in charitable subscriptions, at the same time that they support their credit with the money'.

‘That’s right. I’ll mention him to the person I am going to. He has abilities to serve him effectually, and I am satisfied never wants inclination to do a generous action’.

My master then gave him the change of his note, among which I was, and took his leave.

CHAPTER L

CHRYSA SUMS UP THE CHARACTER OF HIS LATE MASTER—DIFFERENT OPINIONS FOR AND AGAINST THE PROPRIETY AND BENEFIT OF SATIRE—THE FORMER SUPPORTED BY GOOD AUTHORITY—REASON OF SOME INCONVENIENCES ATTENDING THE INDULGENCE OF SUCH A TURN—CHARACTER OF CHRYSA’S NEW MASTER CONCLUDED FROM A FORMER SKETCH —HE WAITS UPON HIS PATRON—CHARACTER OF HIM, WITH HIS MOTIVES FOR SUCH A PATRONAGE—HE GIVES STRIKING REASONS FOR OBJECTING TO SOME PARTS OF CHRYSA’S MASTER’S PAMPHLET, WHICH THE OTHER MAKES SOME WEAK ATTEMPTS TO VINDICATE—CHRYSA’S MASTER ENJOYS THE PLEASURE OF TRACING HIS OWN FAME

THE peculiar character of my late master made me feel regret at leaving his service, till I should see more of him. His abilities did honour to the age and country in which he lived, and the exalted sentiments of virtue, which broke from him spontaneously in the genuine effusions of his soul, gave sufficient reason to judge that his conduct would be entirely ruled by it, and his talents exerted in the more pleasing and extensive way of recommending it to imitation, by displaying all its advantages and charms, as soon as time should cool the fervour of his passions, and apply its lenient balsam to the sores in his heart, the smart of which first gave him that poignant turn, and drove him for relief to excesses that too often drowned his better reason, and led him into actions which, in a cooler moment, he abhorred. In a word, his failings were the luxuriance of nature, as his virtues were her perfection. As I have said that he turned his poetical vein particularly to satire, I see your curiosity to know my opinion of the propriety and benefit of that manner of applying the powers of wit. But I have often told you that I am not permitted to determine controverted points. Many, with a plausible appearance of good nature, decry it, as proceeding from a malevolence of disposition, and tending only to spread the influence of bad example, by making it known, and harden people in vices they might forsake if not made desperate by detection. Many, with an appearance of virtuous indignation, vindicate it, as terrifying from vice, by showing it in its native deformity and correcting folly, by putting it out of countenance, which latter opinion is supported by the authority of one of the most sensible and best men of his age¹. But still the indulgence of this

¹ Would the anachronism admit the supposition, the editor would imagine that the author here meant the writer of *Letters from a Persian in England*, etc., whose words are these: ‘If all the edge of wit is turned on those who are justly the objects of ridicule, wit is as great a benefit to private life, as the sword of the magistrate is to public’.—Letter xl.

turn is attended with many inconveniences and dangers, if it be not guided with the greatest care. That imaginary superiority, which the power of making another ridiculous or detested flatters a man with, is so pleasing to the self-love inseparable from human nature, that it requires uncommon moderation to refrain from exercising it upon improper occasions, and makes him presumptuously conclude, that whatever happens to displease himself in any particular is a just object of public ridicule and censure—an error into which the impetuosity of my late master sometimes hurried him.

I have given you a sketch of the character of my new master upon a former occasion, to which I have only to add here, that a wanton abuse of uncommon abilities inverted the end for which they were given, making them disgraceful to himself and dangerous to his country, a licentious pursuit of everything called pleasure having wasted his fortune, and driven him to the despicable necessity of prostituting them to any purpose that might promise to retrieve his affairs. The gentleman whom he went to wait upon the morning I came into his possession¹, was one who had served his king and country with fidelity and success, while he was permitted to follow the dictates of his own reason in their service, but gave up the empty and disgraceful appearance of acting in it any longer, on finding his judgment disregarded and himself designed to be made only a cypher, to increase the consequence of another. The indignation, however, which had prompted him to take this step, led him not into those unjustifiable lengths which are too common on such occasions. He was faithful to his sovereign, though he had lost his favour, and watched attentively over the interests of his country, though he was not permitted to promote them. The only instance in which his conduct could possibly be censured was his patronising such a man as my master. But it is a maxim in human politics that the end justifies the means, be they what they will. He wanted to be restored to his former power, and thought this man's exposing the insufficiency of those who had supplanted him in it, the most likely way to effect that purpose. To this desire of power he was not stimulated by the usual methods of repairing a ruined fortune or making a new family. His wealth exceeded his very wishes, and he already enjoyed the highest honours he could aspire to. All he proposed was the glory of his sovereign and the advantages of his country, which that enthusiastic ambition from whence proceed the greatest actions, made him think himself the most capable, and wish to be the happy instrument of promoting.

By this gentleman my master was received with that civility which is commonly mistaken for esteem. After some general chat on the occurrences and humour of the times, in which my master modestly took to himself the merit of the people's discontent at the

¹ Lord Temple, who applied for a writ of *habeas corpus* in favour of Wilkes, and on receiving the King's commands to deprive Wilkes of his commission in the Militia, did so in such a complimentary manner that he was deprived of the Lord-Lieutenancy of Buckinghamshire. He was the brother of George Grenville and brother-in-law of Pitt, with whom he was always cordially allied, readily using his immense wealth in the campaign against Bute's government.

ministry and their measures as raised solely by his pamphlet—‘I allow the good effects of it’, said the gentleman, ‘and greatly approve the principles upon which it is written; but I much fear that your zeal has transported you too far. You should of all things have avoided involving the master in your charge against the ministers, because that alone can give them any advantage against you, and is therefore what they always feign, however unjustly; when they are attacked, in order to screen themselves behind him. Besides, the character of a sovereign is sacred, and should never be treated but with the highest respect, especially when the virtues of the man are such as would be respectable in any character’.

Such disapprobation from his principal patron greatly disappointed my master, who was so little acquainted with his sentiments as to think he bore resentment against his sovereign for the loss of his favour, as well as against those who had deprived him of it, and consequently would be pleased with anything that might seem to reflect disgrace upon him. Recovering himself, however, before his embarrassment was perceived—‘I imagined’, answered he with his usual presence of mind, ‘that it was impossible to accuse me of disrespect to one whom I have studiously sought every occasion of praising. As for what you take notice of, my charge is not personally against him, but through him, against those who had the baseness and insolence to abuse his goodness and confidence in such a manner; so that I think it is impossible to wrest it to the purpose you apprehend’.

‘I wish you may not be mistaken, but I much fear that your argument will not have the weight you expect. Praise, given with an air of irony, is the keenest insult; besides, in this particular case, the praises you bestow upon his goodness are all at the expense of his understanding. However, do not be dispirited at what cannot now be helped. As I think your intention was not in fault, you may depend upon my countenance and support, let what will happen’.

This comfortable assurance restored my master to his former spirits. Not desiring, however, to continue the conversation any longer upon that subject—‘I have this morning’, said he, ‘made no inconsiderable addition to our force. My friend, the poet, whose turn for satire I have heard you so much admire, has promised me to exert all his powers in our cause. He will attack the faults in their private, while I expose their public characters, and experience has shown that it is easy to overcome the minister, when the man is made ridiculous or odious’.

‘The former I’ll grant you; but we have too many instances in contradiction to the latter to build much upon it. However, his powers are great, and may do much, if he will take care to avoid the rock upon which you have fallen; and, therefore, I shall be glad to attach him seriously to us, especially as he does not seem to be utterly void of virtue, notwithstanding the libertinism of his conduct in some instances’.

My master would not miss so favourable an opportunity of doing justice to the character of his friend. Accordingly, he related the story of the distresses of the officer and his family, and his generosity

to them, in so affecting a manner, that the gentleman directly gave him a considerable sum of money for their present relief, with a promise of providing for them himself, if he could not prevail upon those in power to do it. Pleased with a success which he knew would be so pleasing to his friend, my master took leave of his patron, and set out to trace his own fame from one coffee-house to another, and enjoy the applauses which the popularity and boldness of his attempt procured him from the multitude, wherever he went, after which he repaired to his usual haunt, where he dined, and spent the evening in the usual manner.

CHAPTER LI

CHRYSALE'S MASTER RECEIVES AN UNWELCOME VISIT AT AN UNSEASONABLE TIME—HIS EXTRAORDINARY BEHAVIOUR BEFORE HIS SUPERIORS—HE IS SENT TO PRISON —CHRYSALE MAKES SOME UNPOPULAR REMARKS ON CERTAIN INTERESTING SUBJECTS—CONSEQUENCES OF HIS MASTER'S IMPRISONMENT, WITH AN ACCOUNT OF HIS BEHAVIOUR IN IT

CONFIDENT as my master was of his safety, he soon found that the fears of his patron were too just. He had scarce laid him down to sleep, when his bed was surrounded, and himself made a prisoner by a number of fellows, who, under the sanction of authority, committed all the outrages of lawless ruffians, breaking open his locks, rifling his effects, and searching into all his secrets. It was in vain for him to expostulate with such people against so flagrant injustice, or claim the protection of the laws. They derided him and all he could say; and having finished their work, dragged him away, with insults and abuse, to a magistrate¹, where he had the comfort of waiting a considerable time in such agreeable company, before his worship was at leisure to see him. But this, though designed as an indignity, was of real advantage to him, as it gave him time to recover his spirits, and collect presence of mind for an interview of such importance. Accordingly, when at length he was admitted to the dread tribunal, instead of showing any dejection at the danger which seemed to hang over him, he behaved in a manner worthy of a better man and a better cause. He asserted the violation of the laws in his person with so much resolution and appearance of reason, and returned the insolence of office with such contempt, answering illusively to the insidious questions put to him, and boldly demanding that right of being restored to his liberty which was assured to every individual of the community

¹ Lord Halifax [Davis's *Olio*] one of the Secretaries of State who issued the general warrant. Lord Temple, in Wilkes' name, subsequently brought an action against Halifax and Under-Secretary Wood, who seized Wilkes' papers. Wood had to pay £1000 damages; but Halifax managed to delay the case against himself for six years, at the end of which his opponent obtained a verdict for £4000 damages.

by the essential principles of the constitution, that his judges¹ were startled, and more than once wished they had left him unmolested.

However, as there was no receding now, they concluded it to be their best way to go through with what they had begun, and bear down opposition with a high hand, with which intent they sent him directly to prison, in defiance of all he could say, where he was treated with uncommon severity, and the method which the law provided for his being restored to liberty eluded as long as possible, by finesses which power only could support.

I see your indignation at such an infringement of laws procured by the blood of myriads, and established by the most solemn engagements, human and divine, for the security of the common rights of mankind. The part which every man feels in such sufferings, on a supposition that they may possibly one day fall upon himself, naturally interests you, as it did the multitude, in my master's cause. But when you come to examine coolly the manner of his being taken into confinement, which is what gives you such offence, it will not appear so contrary to reason and justice, the foundation, and, as I may say, soul of all laws, as popular opinion may presume.

All power is delegated from the people for the mutual advantage of governors and governed. To support the use, and prevent the abuse of that power, laws are established by the consent of both, which are to be the rule of their actions. But, as it is impossible for human wisdom to foresee and provide for every occurrence that may happen, there is essentially implied in the first trust a further power of applying unprovided remedies to unforeseen cases, for the safety and advantage of the whole. If it be objected that these remedies may sometimes be injurious to individuals, by being injudiciously or wrongfully applied, the answer is obvious. The sufferings of a few are not to be set in competition with the safety of the many. Beside, if the remedies were never to be applied, where there was a possibility of a mistake, the evil might happen in the time necessary for inquiry and deliberation. For, though penal laws are designed only to prevent future by the punishment of past crimes, yet where such crimes, if committed, will exceed the reach of punishment and defeat the laws, the power of prevention must be exerted earlier, to anticipate them before commission.

Without such power the trust of government would be imperfect and inadequate to the end; as, if no punishment could be inflicted thus for prevention, but by prescribed forms, human ingenuity, ever most fertile in evil, would devise expedients to evade it, till perpetration should secure impunity, as I said before, perhaps to the ruin of the state. For these reasons an extraordinary power must have been implicitly given for extraordinary cases, or the good of the community, which is the end of government, cannot be obtained. If this power, though, should be abused, the sacred spirit of the laws of your happy country will supply the inevitable defect of the latter, and grant redress to the sufferer, when a proper time comes for inquiring into the circumstances of the case, a redress

¹ Lords Halifax and Egremont, the Secretaries of State.

which was not provided by the people¹ the most jealous of their liberties of any whoever united themselves into civil society, who, sensible of the necessity of such a resource, made it a fundamental rule of their government, on any occasions of uncommon difficulty or danger, to entrust the whole power into the hands of some one person, whom they called Dictator, as his word was to be the law, without subjecting him to control in the use, or account for the abuse of it, when his power should be at an end.

As soon as my master's imprisonment was known, the populace all took fire. They made his cause their own, They looked upon him as a martyr in the darling cause of liberty. They insulted all government, and committed excesses every hour, infinitely more illegal and dangerous to liberty, than that of which they complained. In the meantime, his confinement was far from sitting so heavy upon him as might have been expected. Though he wanted the approbation of his own mind and the enthusiasm of the principles he professed to support his resolution, and encourage him to look forward with hope, levity of temper supplied the place of that resolution, and saved him from sinking under misfortunes, by making him insensible of their weight. He rallied his jailors, mimicked his judges, cracked jests upon his own undoing, and turned every circumstance into ridicule, with such drollery and unconcern, as if he was acting the imaginary sufferings of another, not actually suffering himself. How long he would have been able to support that spirit, though, came not to be tried.

CHAPTER LII

CHRYSLAL'S MASTER IS VISITED IN PRISON BY HIS PATRON, AND FROM WHAT MOTIVES—HIS CONDUCT ON BEING SET AT LIBERTY, AND THE CONSEQUENCES OF IT—REMARKABLE GROUNDS ON WHICH HE WAS SET AT LIBERTY, WITH A CONJECTURE AT THE REASON OF FIXING UPON THEM—CHRYSLAL MAKES AN INQUIRY INTO CERTAIN MATTERS MUCH TALKED OF AND LITTLE UNDERSTOOD

As soon as his friends obtained access to him, for the great severity of his confinement was the uncommon strictness of it, his patron went to see him. As I have taken notice of his disapprobation of what had brought my master into this scrape, you are surprised at his taking a step that seemed so inconsistent with his character. But his motives for it did honour to the man, however strange they may appear in the politician. He had admitted him to a degree of personal intimacy. He had approved of his engaging in a cause to which he was himself attached most sanguinely, and he scorned to desert him in distress, occasioned by what he thought an error of his judgment, not a fault of his intention. Beside the consolation to himself, the honour of such a visit was of the greatest advantage to my master's affairs, as it lightened the personal

¹ The Romans.

prejudices against him, and gave a good opinion of a cause which appeared to have the countenance of such a man. Intoxicated with the popularity he had thus acquired, which, if rightly managed, might have done great matters, he was no sooner at liberty than he threw off all restraint, and ran into such licentiousness, as in a short time lessened its force, and lost him every trace of the good opinion of all who gave themselves time to think of the causes and consequences of such conduct. But his triumph was not long lived. He had been restored to his liberty, not as a right common to all the members of the community on a supposition of the illegality of the manner in which he had been deprived of it, but in consequence of certain immunities¹, annexed to a particular part of the legislature, to which he belonged. Though the abilities and integrity of the magistrate² who made this distinction were unquestionable, some persons, who looked further than the present moment, imagined they could trace it to a cause not commonly attended to. He had on former occasions³ been instrumental in depriving some people of liberty in the same manner; to have condemned that manner therefore, now as illegal, would have been condemning himself; at the same time that upright obedience to the dictates of his present opinion obliged him to set him free. Such a difficulty must have been distressing, but this distinction delivered him from it, and enabled him to save his credit and conscience both, as those people had borne no part in the legislature, and therefore had not been entitled to such immunity.

I see your indignation arise at the thought that in a country which boasts of being governed by equal laws, any one set of men should enjoy immunities denied to the rest; but that indignation proceeds from viewing the matter in a partial light. In the country where your lot has happily fallen, the end of government is better secured by a division of its powers, than in any other under heaven. The great wisdom of those who made this division appears in the provisions made to preserve each part in it independent of the rest, the only means by which the division itself could be preserved. Now, as the executive power necessarily belongs solely to the prince, it was equally necessary to secure those who bore a part with him in the legislative from any undue exertion of that power, which might be attempted in order to break through that independence, and join the legislative to the executive; or, in other words, vest both powers absolutely, and without limitation, in the prince. And this was the reason of immunities so much talked of, and so little understood.

If it be said that these immunities operate also against fellow-subjects, from whom there can be no fear, and are sometimes (perhaps too often), abused to dishonest ends, the answer must be sought

¹ Privilege of Parliament. Wilkes was member for Aylesbury.

² Lord Chief Justice Pratt.

³ Alludes to the case of Dr John Shebbeare, who was seized on a general warrant in 1758 for his letters attacking the government. Pratt, then Attorney-General, laid the information against Shebbeare, who was sentenced to stand in the pillory.

for in the depravity of the human heart, which will pervert the best institutions to the worst purposes, and makes it necessary to preclude every exception, that it should not be extended to serve them. As for instance, if the meanest subject of the state had a right to claim the assistance of the civil power in every case against any member of the legislature, while in his legislative capacity, that right might be suborned, or feigned, by the executive power in such a manner as to overturn his independency, and to prevent his discharging the trust committed to him: for which reason it is better that an individual should suffer (to suppose the worst), than an opportunity be given for ruining the whole community; according to the known maxim, that an evil which affects but one is preferable to an inconvenience which affects many. And this immunity, which is really the shield and safety of the state, can never be invaded, but from a design against the liberty of the state, nor absolutely given up without giving up that liberty along with it; though the right may be waived in particular instances, which appear unworthy of the benefit of it. To actions, criminal in their own nature, between individuals, or immediately dangerous to the state, it was never designed to be extended, as in such cases it would have been destructive of the end for which it was instituted. While my master was running riot in this extravagant manner, some things happened which raised in his favour the indignation and pity of many, who disliked the man, and disapproved of his proceedings, because they saw him persecuted by unjustifiable means. It may be imagined that I did not remain long enough in his possession to see the conclusion of this affair, but as I had ample opportunity of being acquainted with it at the time, and see that your curiosity is interested in the event, I will continue the account here, especially as the principal occurrences in my next service were connected with it in so particular a manner that it is necessary to explain one, in order to understand the other.

CHAPTER LIII

CHRYSAI'S MASTER TAKES A FOREIGN TOUR—REMARKS UPON NATIONAL REFLECTIONS, AND ATTACKS UPON PRIVATE CHARACTERS—CHRYSAI'S MASTER IS CALLED TO AN ACCOUNT FOR CERTAIN IMPROPER LIBERTIES, BY A VERY IMPROPER PERSON, WHOM HE TREATS WITH UNCOMMON PROPRIETY—CHRYSAI MAKES SOME OUT-OF-THE-WAY REFLECTIONS ON A QUESTION MUCH CANVASSED TO LITTLE PURPOSE

WHEN my master had in some measure exhausted the first flow of his spirits upon the recovery of his liberty, he made a short excursion abroad as if merely for amusement, but in reality to provide a place of retreat, in case of the worst, as his apprehensions could not but be alarmed, whenever he allowed himself time to think.

I have observed that in the account he gave my late master, when he first told him of his attack upon the minister¹ he said he

¹ Lord Bute.

had included in it all his countrymen¹. This he really had done on that, and continued to do on all other occasions, with a licentiousness unexampled; but which lost its force and became contemptible, by sinking into scurrility. Attacks upon private characters unless forced by necessity, or designed to serve good purposes, such as personal reformation, or caution to others, are literally abuse, and proceed always from a bad heart, but national reflections, as they can answer no good purpose of any kind, are abuse in every sense, and proceed equally from folly and malevolence—a folly, indeed, that is often punished by fools, who take to themselves that abuse which belongs not to them in particular, and would pass by, without lighting upon them, if not applied thus by themselves.

My master had not been long abroad, when a countryman² of the minister's thought proper to call him to account for the liberties he had taken with his country. The absurdity of such a step in any man was still aggravated by the peculiar circumstances of this person, who had actually given weight to the severest part of the charge against his country (indeed, the only part that would admit of weight, the rest being, as I have said, nothing but scurrility), by engaging in the service of the enemies of its present government, and fighting their battles against it. Such an antagonist, therefore, was beneath the notice of any man of reason, and accordingly was treated so by my master, who on this occasion behaved with moral propriety and prudence much above the tenor of his general character. But his enemies beheld his conduct in a different light, and attributed to cowardice what was really the effect of courage.

You seem surprised at my saying that his declining to fight was the effect of courage, but reflect a moment, and you will see that it is the motive of fighting, and not the mere fighting, that constitutes true courage; and that the fashionable courage of venturing life for punctilios of imaginary honour is real cowardice, as it proceeds solely from fear of the false censure of the world, and therefore, that to brave that censure in such cases is the highest courage. I would not be understood by this to declare absolutely against a man's fighting in his own cause, in all cases indiscriminately. Different circumstances make an essential difference in things which superficially appear to be alike. A man's venturing his life, as I have said, in vindicating empty punctilios of imaginary honour, or in support of injustice, is the highest and most ungrateful insult to the author of that life, who has made the preservation of it the first principle of action, and consequently an indispensable duty, when it can be preserved, without violation of those greater duties which he has thought proper to prescribe.

¹ i.e. the Scots, against whom the *North Briton* was primarily directed.

² Captain Forbes, a Scot in the French service, who challenged Wilkes in the streets of Paris, for having attacked his country in the *North Briton*. The French government putting them on parole not to fight in that country, Wilkes offered to fight this bravo in Asia, Africa, America, or any other country in Europe. Forbes followed his enemy to London, but received a hint from the government that he had better leave the country. He afterwards became a general in the Portuguese army.

But, as there are other things more valuable than life, because without them life would lose its value, reason, which is the voice of Heaven, permits to hazard the lesser good for the preservation of the greater, and this is the justification of war between different states. To prevent the evils, which such a recourse between individuals in the same state must be attended with, laws are established to preserve those rights and redress injuries which they may offer to each other; to these laws, therefore, it is an indispensable duty to recur for such redress and preservation, where they are able to effect them, but this duty does not seem to extend so far as absolutely and indiscriminately to preclude the other method of a man's striving at the hazard of his life to effect them himself, when the laws cannot do it, as is too often the case, it being impossible for human wisdom to make provision for every occurrence, which in the complication and extensiveness of human action may require it. An opinion so contrary to that professed by all who have undertaken to discuss this subject, however consonant to the sense of mankind in general, as shown in their practice, should be supported by the plainest and most convincing reasons.

A good name is the immediate jewel of the soul; it is the first fruit and the reward of virtue; the preservation of it, therefore, is indisputably worth hazarding life for, where the laws have not sufficiently provided for its defence, as is the case in many of the most delicate and tender points. If a man, for instance, is unjustly accused of a fact that ruins his good name, at the same time that the accusation comes not within the reach of any law, from which he may receive redress, can reason say that he is not justifiable in striving for that redress himself, and vindicating his good name, at the hazard of his life, when that life would be only misery without it? But here another difficulty occurs. Shall a man, it is said, put himself on a level with his injurer, and risk a second injury, in seeking satisfaction for the first? This certainly is an evil, but must be submitted to, to prevent a greater.

If a man were permitted to redress himself absolutely, without such a risk, the consequence would be that partiality to himself would make him think everything that should displease him an injury sufficient to merit such a redress, whereby murders would be multiplied to the reproach of humanity, and ruin of the state. But where this risk makes the redress attended with danger, people are cautious not to run into it, but on what they at least think good grounds. Besides, risking life in an even scale is in some manner staking it upon the justice of the cause, and appealing to Heaven for decision, and consequently success clears the character in general estimation; whereas killing insidiously, or without such equal risk, only confirms the first charge, on a presumption of consciousness, and aggravates it with the weight of new guilt. And this was the sense of mankind, till the remedy was perverted to such an excess, as to become worse than the evil, and therefore necessary to be abolished, as far as human laws can abolish a general principle of action.

One particular, though, in the laws made to abolish it deserves remark, as it shows a striking instance of the sagacity with which

human laws are often made. Killing a man in a deliberate duel, be the cause ever so important, and utterly unprovided for in the law, is accounted murder, and made capitally criminal; but killing in a drunken broil, or ungoverned gust of passion, is only a pardonable offence, and called by the softer name of manslaughter. Now, if the makers of that law had but considered which action proceeded from the worst cause, and was liable to be attended with the worst consequences, from the possible frequency of it, they might perhaps have seen reason to reverse the case, and make the latter capital, and the former at least pardonable. In a word, he who takes away the life of another, or loses his own, in a trivial or unjust cause, or where the laws of his country have provided him redress, is guilty of murder; whereas, he who kills, or is killed, in a cause of real importance, for which there is no remedy provided him by the law, sins not against the spirit of that law, however he may against the letter; and consequently seems to be entitled to an immunity from the penalties of it. This reasoning, though, respects only the reason of the law, and is by no means laid down as a rule for practice; it being the indispensable duty of a subject to obey the plain letter of the law, without presuming to oppose his private opinion to it, otherwise than by humble applications to proper authority to have it altered.

CHAPTER LIV

CHRYSAI'S MASTER'S LATE CONDUCT DRAWS HIM INTO A NEW SCAPE, IN WHICH HE COMES OFF BUT SECOND BEST—HE TAKES ADVANTAGE OF HIS MISFORTUNE TO MAKE HIS ESCAPE FROM A GREATER—HE SUFFERS THE RESENTMENT OF HIS ENEMIES, AS FAR AS THEY CAN REACH HIM; AND MEETS FROM HIS FRIENDS THE FATE OF ALL USELESS TOOLS, AFTER HAVING SERVED THEM WITH IMPROBABLE SUCCESS—A STRIKING INSTANCE OF THE ADVANTAGE OF AN UPRIGHT JUDGE, AND EQUAL LAWS—CHRYSAI CHANGES HIS SERVICE

THE opinion that my master's having behaved in this manner proceeded from a want of spirit soon laid him under a necessity of showing the contrary. A person who was involved deeper than he chose to appear in his accusations against the minister¹, though he was known to be his creature, thought he might safely invalidate the credit of the charge and curry further favour with his patron, by denying it in terms of such abuse as should make the accuser infamous, on submitting to them, as he imagined he would.

But in this he found himself mistaken. The captiousness of false honour, that often passes for true resolution, which is the only result of virtue, was now piqued; and two beings (for it was impossible for the other to draw back), who called themselves rational, hazarded their lives in support of what neither could have supported

¹ Samuel Martin [see Introduction].

by reason. The event proved immediately unfavourable to my master, who received a wound that for some time seemed to threaten his life. But he soon thought the danger amply made amends for, by the pretence it gave him to put off from time to time the resentment of that part of the legislature to which he belonged, for the offence which had occasioned his being confined, and at length to fly from it, when he found it could not be any longer prevented, by such finesses, from bursting on his head. Such a flight was an implicit acknowledgment of his guilt. He was, therefore, deprived of his part in the legislature, and consequently of all the immunities annexed to it, and given up to the common course of the laws, for that and others matters, whenever he should be found within the reach of their power. Nor was this all? To show still stronger disapprobation of his conduct, the breach of those immunities, upon which the magistrate had founded his discharge from confinement, was overlooked, and such offences as his excluded from their protection for the future.

You cannot be surprised at his meeting such a fate. The tools of a statesman, however successful they may have been, are always thrown aside with neglect the moment they have done their work, but when they fail, however blamelessly, or run into any error, though only from excess of zeal, the weight of the neglect is made still heavier, by heaping all the blame upon them. But what will you think, when I tell you that, unequal as he must appear to have been to such an attempt, in consequence, character, and abilities, he raised so threatening a storm that the minister thought proper to retire out of its way; as all his friends apprehended they should have been obliged to follow him, a success for which he was in great measure indebted to the assistance of my late master, who represented their private characters in such colours, in his satirical writings, as will make their memories pay a dear price for their power, the poetical merit of his works, in which their names are branded with indelible infamy, ensuring their immortality. Such, is the basis upon which statesmen found their greatness, and so easily is a jealous populace led away by anything that flatters their present humour.

I say not this, as deciding upon the merit of the disputes in which he was concerned. I think too meanly of human politics in general to give my opinion in favour of any one scheme of them, in preference to another. They are all alike a jumble of villany and blunders. All I intend is to show on what a sandy foundation men who value themselves upon their wisdom wear out their lives in anxious toils and dangers, to build their hopes; and what unworthy means are often made use of to overturn them, and work ends, reputed great on purpose, perhaps, to humble man in his own eyes. As for my master, he was no sooner removed out of the sight of the mob whose idol he had been in such an extravagant degree, than he was entirely out of their mind, and the storm he had raised subsided so totally as to leave no other trace behind it but his ruin.

I have observed your anxiety to know whether he ever obtained redress for the injustice done him in his property, and the injurious treatment he received when he was first apprehended, as I said

that the fellows employed to take him, had, under the sanction of authority, committed all the outrages of lawless ruffians. The interest you take in the cause of such a man can arise from nothing but your love of justice, which should not be violated in the person of the most unjust. It will, therefore, give you pleasure to be informed that the laws of your country never shone with brighter lustre than in this instance. In despite of every artifice and effort which power and chicanery could make use of to evade, or intimidate from the execution of them (a striking instance of the latter of which was depriving his patron of every degree of power and honour, of which he could be deprived without regard to his great services and personal consequences, only for appearing in his cause), an able and upright magistrate¹ supported them with such resolution and judgment, that he obtained exemplary redress for all he had suffered that could be redressed, as did several others, who had been involved in the same circumstances, as having been employed by him.

In gratification to your curiosity, I have thus given you the general heads of his story. To have dwelt on the minute circumstances, however curious in themselves, would have led me too great a length besides that they now come within my design, as I was not directly in his possession when they happened. To return, therefore, now to the regular chain of my own adventures, I must go back to the time of my leaving his service, which was not very long after he had been released from his confinement. Among the crowds that came to congratulate him upon this event, was a clergyman² whose professions of personal attachment, and respect for his principles and abilities, were strained to such a fulsome height as would have disgusted vanity itself.

My master saw through him directly, and played him off with humour peculiar to himself, till he concluded with telling him that he had a work then in hand, upon the same scheme with his, which he intended to publish by subscription. My master, who knew the man, took the hint, in the proper light of a modest way of begging, and clapped a couple of guineas into his hand, desiring to be inserted in his list, upon which occasion I left his service.

¹ Lord Chief Justice Pratt.

² John Kidgell, a profligate divine, 'chaplain' to the Earl of March (afterwards Duke of Queensberry). By underhand means he procured for the government a second copy of the *Essay on Woman*, and then published an account of what he called 'a scandalous, obscene, and exceedingly profane libel', the result of which was that he had to leave the country. He was heavily in debt. Lord March, whose vices were maturing early, was a member of the Medmenham brotherhood.

CHAPTER LV

REASON OF THE JOY WITH WHICH CHRYSAL WAS RECEIVED BY HIS NEW MASTER—ACCOUNT OF A CURIOUS THOUGH NOT UNCOMMON WAY OF GETTING A LIVING—CONVERSATION BETWEEN CHRYSAL'S MASTER AND HIS GUEST—THEY COMPARE NOTES ON THEIR DIFFERENT ATTEMPTS IN THE LITERARY TRADE—CHRYSAL'S MASTER IS ENCOURAGED BY HIS FRIEND FROM HIS OWN EXAMPLE—A REMARKABLE ACCOUNT OF A CERTAIN MATTER THAT MADE MUCH NOISE

THE joy my new master felt on the receipt of so small a sum, showed the consequence it was of to him. He thanked his benefactor in terms of rapture, and vowing eternal gratitude and attachment to him and his cause, departed with a happy heart. Nor was his joy without cause. He had invited an acquaintance to sup and spend the evening with him, and had neither money nor credit to provide anything for his entertainment. Despicable as the vanity of making invitations in such circumstances may appear to you, it was one of his chief resources to support himself and his family, as he never invited any but such as he expected to borrow much more from than it cost him to entertain them. Your indignation at the mention of so mean a shift shows your happy ignorance of the ways of this populous place, in which there are numbers who keep up a decency of external appearance, and support life only by this method of raising contributions on their acquaintances, spending with one what they have got from another, in order to get from him too, and so on; with this difference only from common beggars, that they seldom apply to the same person twice, and instead of praying for their benefactors with an appearance of gratitude, wherever they meet them avoid their company, and are always seeking for new acquaintances, as quarry for them to prey upon. On this errand he had sallied out this morning, but met with such bad success that he had been obliged to have resource to the subscription-scheme, an addition which he had lately made to his former plan. His joy, therefore, at my late master's generosity was but natural. He returned home in high spirits, and giving his wife half his prize, to provide two or three nice little things, secured me for future contingencies. Everything being thus adjusted, his guest¹, who came punctually at the appointed time, was received with all the formalities and airs of politeness and high life. The conversation

¹ Dr John Douglas, afterwards Bishop of Carlisle, and then of Salisbury. He distinguished himself by the acuteness with which he exposed several impostors: (1) William Lauder, who had accused Milton of plagiarism; (2) Archibald Bower (*see* p. 488); and (3) according to Davis's *Olivo*, Elizabeth Canning, whose disappearance and the charges she brought against a family of gypsies for maltreating her form one of the most perplexing cases in judicial history. Fielding wrote an account of the case (she had appeared before him as Bow Street magistrate), and Dr Hill a reply thereto.

before and at supper ran on the usual topics of the weather, politics, and the secret history of the day, but when my master's lady had withdrawn and he saw his friend began to palate his wine with pleasure (for he never made his push till the heart was warm), he took occasion from some modest mention the other made of his munificence in the relief of merit in distress, to lament his own inability to indulge that darling pleasure of his soul, as a proper introduction to his business.

'I have wondered with much concern', answered his friend, 'at your languishing so long in this obscurity. It is all your own fault. Why do you not exert yourself? There is nothing which spirit and diligence cannot conquer'.

'Very true, my dearest friend', replied my master, with a shrug of his shoulders and a heavy sigh. But what can diligence or abilities either do, when they cannot find employment. I have offered myself to ministry and opposition, to booksellers and news-writers, and all to no purpose; though, indeed, if it was not for the assistance of one of the latter¹, who now and then takes an essay or a letter from me, I should be utterly at a loss. So that what can I do?'

'What? Why, anything rather than be idle. If one thing won't do, another may. There is not an article in the trade which I have not tried in my time. I have made bibles, magazines and reviews, sermons, ballads, and dying speeches, and though all failed, I never lost my spirit. The miscarriage of one scheme only set my invention at work to strike out another. No man can have greater difficulties to struggle with than I had, and yet you see I have got over them all'.

'Yes! But, my dearest friend, you had advantages—the countenance and assistance of such a patron² as yours'——

'Were just as great advantages to me, as your patron's are to you, and no more. I had the honourable advantage of leading a bear³ for a bit of bread, and betraying his secrets to his father and mother, for the hope of a church living, which I should not have got at last, but that it was not worth selling'.

'You astonish me. Don't you owe all your preferments, all your affluence, to the interest of your patron?'

'What I owe my preferments to is not necessary to mention; but my affluence I owe to a very different cause. The detection of that impostor⁴ was the thing that made my fortune. I might

¹ Dryden Leach, the printer and publisher. He was the first person arrested in the proceedings upon the publication of the *North Briton*, No. XLV, which, however, he had not printed.

² Lord Bath.

³ Lord Pulteney, son of the Marquis of Bath. Douglas was his travelling tutor, and on his return to England in 1749 was presented to a living, which he resigned on obtaining that of High Ercall, Shropshire.

⁴ Archibald Bower, against whom he wrote a series of pamphlets. He continued to produce defences of the government and of government protégés for many years, earning suitable rewards. He was made a bishop long after, in 1787.

have remained in my original poverty to this day, if it had not been for that'.

'For that? Is it possible? I cannot conceive that the profits upon the sale of a pamphlet or two (and that not a very extensive sale neither), could do such great things. My novel, I thought, bade as fair for a good run, as anything; it was seasoned high to the taste of the times, and yet it did very little more than pay'.

'The sale! Ha! ha! ha! No, no! I did not depend upon that. My profit came in another way entirely'.

'What can be your meaning? If it be not too great a secret, I should be much obliged to you to explain this matter. It may possibly be of service to me'.

'Why, on that account, and as I think I can depend upon your honour, I don't much care if I do. If you are so much surprised at my saying that I made my fortune by that pamphlet, what will you think when I tell you further that I never wrote one line of it, nor was I any more concerned in the sale than you, who knew nothing of the matter? But not to perplex you with guessing at what it is impossible you should ever discover. You can be no stranger to the noise that impostor made when he first came here. While he did no more than tell his own story, it was thought, by his own fraternity, to be the best way not to give it consequence by contradicting it, but let it die away of itself; beside, that possibly it might not have been so easy to contradict it to any effect, while the persons concerned were all living, and the facts fresh in everyone's memory. But when he went so far as to attack the whole body, and was evidently undermining the foundation upon which they stood, by tearing off the veil of antiquity¹ behind which they hid themselves, and exposing all their mystery to light, the matter became more serious, and it was judged necessary to ruin his character in order to invalidate the credit of his work, the merit of which made a direct attack not only difficult, but also too doubtful of success to hazard an affair of such importance upon it.

'For this reason, heaven and hell were conjured up, and every engine set at work to prove his story of himself false in every particular, and make him appear the most complicated villain that ever existed. But the credit of those who made this attack upon him was too low for it to have any effect, as their principles, and the interested motives upon which they proceeded, were sufficiently known, so that it only did him service by showing his consequence. While they were considering how to repair this defeat, necessity suggested to me the lucky thought of offering them my assistance. I had already got some degree of credit by anticipating time in the detection of two silly impostors², the absurdity of which would soon have discovered them without my help. This gave weight to my offer. Accordingly, they readily embraced it, and, desiring only

¹ Alluding to Bower's *History of the Popes*. Bower stated that he had intended to vindicate the doctrine of the Pope's supremacy, but had been converted by the evidence to take the contrary view. Douglas proved the authenticity of certain incriminating letters of Bower's that had recently been published, and exposed his private character.

² William Lauder and Elizabeth Canning [see page 487].

the sanction of my name (for which, you may judge, I was well paid), took all the trouble upon themselves.

'The reason which defeated them assisted me. Everything I was thought to say carried weight, as appearing to proceed from the highest candour and attachment to truth, as nothing else could naturally be supposed to have made me take such pains to detect an imposture, so favourable to the principles I professed myself. The public also had got enough of his story, and was ready to listen to one against him. The consequence you know. His character was ruined with the public, and of course a prejudice raised against his work, which ruined that also, without the trouble of a regular confutation, which, as I observed before, might not have been an easy matter; and now I hope the mystery is explained to you'.

CHAPTER LVI

CHRYSLAL'S MASTER MAKES SOME STRIKING REMARKS ON HIS FRIEND'S ACCOUNT OF THIS MYSTERIOUS TRANSACTION, AND DRAWS INFERENCES FROM IT NOT COMMONLY ATTENDED TO—HE ENTERTAINS HIS FRIEND WITH A CURIOUS SONG, WHO MAKES AN IMPORTANT HIT, JUST IN HIS OWN CHARACTER, UPON IT—CHRYSLAL'S MASTER BOGGLES A LITTLE AT FIRST, AT HIS FRIEND'S PROPOSAL, BUT IS ENCOURAGED BY HIS EXAMPLE TO UNDERTAKE IT

'I AM much obliged to you for such a proof of your confidence', returned my master, 'particularly as it clears up some points to me, which I own gave me equal concern and surprise, and of which delicacy prevented my desiring an explanation from you. These were the manner in which that attack was made upon him, and the arguments and proofs brought in support of it, which were so unfair, inconclusive, and in many instances contradictory, that I was astonished any man of sense and honesty could make use of, or be influenced by them'.

'Why, that is very true. Their zeal often overshot the mark, to be sure. But that signified nothing. Set the public once upon the scent of scandal, and they'll hunt it like bloodhounds, through thick and thin. Nothing can be so gross as to stop them. You may as well whistle to the wind to change its course, as speak reason to the people when they have conceived a prejudice'.

'But what is your opinion of that affair? Is he, or is he not, the impostor they would make him? For I confess, the arguments by which they would prove him one are so far from answering their design with me, that I think they prove the contrary, by proving nothing, as it is natural to conclude that if there were any better, such would have not been made use of. But you certainly must have had sufficient opportunities of being informed in the intercourse you necessarily had with them'.

'As to that, I know no more of the matter than you do, nor ever gave myself the trouble to inquire. All the intercourse I had with them was only to save appearances and get my money. Whether

he was an impostor or not was the same thing to me. I was paid for seeming to prove him one, and that was all I cared for'.

'But you continue to call him one still. Do they also pay you for that now?'

'No. I do that for my own credit. Were I to retract all, the scandal that has been heaped upon him in my name would revert upon myself, so that whenever I mention him, I am obliged to do it in the old phrase. I know some squeamish people would have scrupled the whole, but that is not my way of thinking. I hold nothing to be so great a reproach as poverty, nor anything a sin that can get over it. And so, here's my service to me. I wish you could hit upon such another opportunity'.

'And if I would scruple to make use of it, may I perish in my present poverty, and I defy the devil to find a heavier curse'.

The conversation then turned to more general topics, in the course of which my late master naturally coming to be mentioned—'That's right,' said my master, 'I have something to show you that will give you pleasure¹. You may remember, I told you, that I am sometimes obliged to a printer of my acquaintance for helping me to a job, in the letter or essay way. Happening to call upon him this morning, to try if he could take anything from me, he showed me this', pulling a piece of greasy paper out of his pocket, 'which I think really a curiosity. It is a proof of a bawdy song, which the gentleman we have been talking of wrote², and had a few copies of printed for the amusement of his particular intimates. My friend got it from one of his journeymen, who sometimes works for that gentleman, and says there are a good many more of them, which are all printed together in a ballad. You'll find it worth your reading. Nothing ever was so highly worked up. It gave me ineffable pleasure'.

'If you can prove this to be wrote by that person', said the other, spitting and wriggling in his chair, after having poured over it for some time, 'your fortune is made. You know his enemies are striving to run him down by any means. Now, this will give them so plausible a handle against him, that they will not fail to reward you liberally for the discovery. All you have to do is to prove it plainly upon him'.

'I am pretty sure that may be done' answered my master, with some hesitation, 'but I—I—I—I hardly know how. I am under personal obligation'.

'Nay, if you let such things as that interfere, I give you up. What signifies past obligation, when put in competition with present

¹ The proof-sheet of a page of the *Essay on Woman*, which Kidgell obtained for the ministers (Sandwich and Dashwood, Lord Le Despenser), through the mediation of the Earl of March. Eventually, he got hold of the remainder (*see* p. 492).

² Wilkes. The *Essay* was an obscene burlesque of Pope's *Essay on Man*, and was equipped with notes ascribed to Bishop Warburton. Thomes Potter seems to have been the author. Wilkes was charged with printing and publishing it, although only thirteen copies were struck off for private circulation.

interest? You know what my old antagonist says, that it is a rule among his former fraternity never to let any social or moral duties interfere with religion, of which he gives a remarkable instance in his own story. Now, my interest is my religion, and everything which interferes with that I abjure, as I have sufficiently proved. But I beg pardon, I would by no means press you to do anything against your conscience, if it is so tender'.

'Wrong me not, my dearest friend, by such an opinion; my conscience is as far from being tender as yours can be. I was only surprised that I had not myself seen what you mentioned. But now that your friendship has pointed it out to me, you shall see me pursue it as eagerly as you can desire. All I want is your direction. Leave the rest to me'.

The remainder of the evening was spent in consultation upon the plan proper to be pursued, the former of which my master submitted implicitly to the superior judgment and experience of his friend, who was so pleased with this mark of his respect, and so sure of success, that on going away he took a modest hint and lent him five guineas, reminding him at the same time of the confidence he had placed in his honour, by disclosing his affairs to him, and enjoining him to secrecy.

CHAPTER LVII

CHRYSAI'S MASTER PURSUES HIS SCHEME, AND VIOLATES MORAL HONESTY TO SERVE THE CAUSE OF VIRTUE AND RELIGION—HE WAITS UPON HIS PATRON, WHO HONESTLY REFUSES A CHARACTER TO WHICH HE KNOWS HE HAS NO RIGHT; BUT UNDERTAKES THE AFFAIR FROM A MORE PREVAILING MOTIVE, IN WHICH HE IS REMARKABLY ASSISTED BY ANOTHER PERSON OF LESS MODESTY, WHO PLEADS THE CAUSE OF RELIGION AND VIRTUE IN VAIN, TILL HONOUR AT LENGTH TURNS THE SCALE IN THEIR FAVOUR—CHRYSAI'S MASTER IS DISAPPOINTED IN HIS HOPES, AND MAKES USE OF AN EXPEDIENT IN CHARACTER, TO ESCAPE FROM THE JUST REWARD OF ALL HIS LABOURS—CHRYSAI CHANGES HIS SERVICE

Not to lose a moment's time, in a matter of such importance, my master went next morning to his worthy friend the printer, to whom he opened his scheme, and by his influence, with the assistance of the bribe, and promises of much more, he prevailed on the fellow from whom the former paper was got, to betray the trust of his employer, and steal the whole ballad¹. The next thing was to make

¹ The *Essay on Woman* had been privately printed, and however reprehensible the work was, the fact of non-publication made the proceedings against Wilkes on the score of it a gross injustice, which was aggravated by the leading part taken by his boon companions, Sandwich and Lord Le Despenser, in accusing him in the House of Lords. Sandwich insisted on reading the *Essay* to the peers. The lines in the *Beggar's Opera*, 'That Jemmy Twitcher should peach me, I own surprised me', fastened the nickname of Jemmy Twitcher on him for life.

his honest acquisition known to those from whom he expected the reward of his pious pains. For this purpose, he waited upon his patron, and having with difficulty gained access to him, on repeated messages of important business, after the common cant of compliments—'I am come, sir', said he, 'on an errand that I know agreeable to you, as it will afford a signal opportunity of showing your regard for religion and virtue'.

'Heh,' answered his patron. 'My regard for religion and virtue! What the devil does the fellow mean? What regard have I ever shown for either, in word or action, that should put such a thought in your head? If you are come to preach to me, you shall soon find the effects of your piety'.

'Pardon me, sir; I know you better than to be guilty of such presumption. What I mean is this: fortune has favoured me with an opportunity of putting it into your power to establish such a character, and as I know most people are fond of the name, when it can be obtained without the trouble of the practice, I thought it my duty to acquaint you with it, especially as it will enable you at the same time to do a particular pleasure to your friends in power'.

'Why, there may be something in that, as you say; but for the rest, I care as little for the name as I do for the practice, and would not give myself a moment's trouble to get it; so, be quick, and let me hear what you have got to say. I have a match to ride to-morrow against a gentleman for a considerable wager, and must see his groom this morning in order to settle matters with him; besides which, I have an assignation with his wife, who expects me at this very time, so that I have not a moment to lose about religion and virtue'.

My master, who knew him too well to attempt interfering with such engagements, politely wished him success, and then gave him in few words an account of the whole affair, only reserving to himself the honour of the thought, with which his patron was so pleased, that he promised to give him all the assistance in his power, if it was only for the fun of the thing. Accordingly, as soon as he could spare time from his own weightier concerns, he mentioned the matter to those more immediately concerned in it, who embraced the project eagerly, and rewarded my master with the most liberal promises for his pains, of which they resolved to take advantage, in order to crush a person either hated or feared by everyone among them.

In the attack made upon him for this purpose, the principle part was undertaken by one whose regard for religion and virtue was heightened by a motive not the most consistent with either. This was the person who had been competitor with the culprit for the higher order of the mock-monastery. In the account I gave you of that curious transaction, I observed that he cherished a secret grudge against the other, which was aggravated so violently by the disgrace he suffered on that occasion, that he had prevailed to have him expelled the society. Such an opportunity, therefore, as this of completing his revenge, was not to be missed by one of his principles. Accordingly, though at the sight of the ballad he knew it to be no more than one of a collection of the songs which he had

himself often bore a part in singing at the monastery, and some of the worst of which he had boasted of being the author of, he inveighed against it with all the fervency and enthusiastic zeal of a modern fanatic, and displayed the danger of letting such an insult upon everything held sacred go unpunished, in such strong and affecting colours, as afforded high entertainment to all who heard him, and were acquainted with his life. But all his eloquence would have proved ineffectual to make such of his fraternity as were not, like him, stimulated by private motives, give the lie to their own practice in so flagrant a manner, as to censure the theory of it, had not some particular expressions happened to affect the honour of one of them¹; whom all the rest of course espoused; and thus, for once, honour turned the scale in favour of virtue and religion, too light by themselves; and the ballad was condemned, as tending to debase the principles of the people, though it was sufficiently known that it was not designed for publication, nor would ever have been heard of, had not this attack raised a curiosity about it.

Through the whole of this important transaction, my master performed his part most cleverly, stopping at nothing that was thought any way necessary to bring it to effect. As soon, therefore, as it was concluded, he prepared to receive the reward of his labour, the enjoyment of which he had anticipated in imagination in every shape it could be given. But it was not long before he found his hopes had been too sanguine. Instead of being rewarded immediately, as he had been made to expect, the job was scarcely done when he could perceive the smiles of favour grow cooler upon him, as often as he went to pay his court to his patrons, in order to keep them in mind of their promises. A state of such uncertainty, severe enough upon any, was not to be borne by one in his circumstances. The expectations he had raised, in the height of his hopes, had opened the mouths of all his creditors upon him, with an importunity not to be quieted; beside that he had embezzled some public money entrusted to him, a demand for which he expected every day, and knew he could not shift off for a moment.

Driven almost to distraction by such irresistible necessity, he had no resource but to throw himself at the feet of the person who had appeared most sanguine in the pursuit of his scheme, and consequently been most liberal of his promises to him, and implore his assistance to extricate him from his accumulated distresses. But they who will most readily avail themselves of villany always detest the villain. All the return he received was a cold profession of concern, and a shameless excuse of wanting that power to relieve him which the caitiff suppliant well knew he had. A new misfortune often lightens the weight of those under which the mind was sinking before, by rousing it from listless dejection to an exertion of its powers. Such a disappointment of his only hope showed him all the horrors of his situation; and made him instantly cast about

¹Warburton, Bishop of Gloucester, the commentator on Pope. His notes to that poet's works were parodied in the *Essay on Woman*, and for this the Bishop accused him of breach of privilege.

how to escape from what he found he could not redress; instead, therefore, of betraying it by his looks, which he knew were watched, he assumed an air of uncommon spirits, and telling every one that he had got a positive assurance of receiving the promised reward without any further delay, he went to one of his tradesmen¹, by that time he thought the news might have reached him, and taking up goods to a considerable amount, for which he confidently engaged to pay at a fixed and short day, no sooner got them into his possession, than he sold them privately at half price, and packing up whatever he could carry with him, fled beyond the reach of his creditors; and so proved how far his late conduct had proceeded, as he professed, from his high regard to moral virtue and religion.

The agitation and horrors of his mind, from the time he had resolved upon flight, till he had effected it, may be easily conceived. Whether the present safety it procured him gave him any lasting relief, I had not an opportunity of seeing, as I quitted his service at the inn, where he took a post-chaise to get off; though it is most probable, that, after the first hurry of his spirits subsided, a sense of the various villainies, by which he had brought himself to such a state of exile, embittered the very blessing of liberty, and kept his mind in slavery, though his body was free.

CHAPTER LVIII

CHRYSLAL AGAIN CHANGES HIS SERVICE—HIS NEW MASTER IS OBLIGED TO PAY EXPEDITION FEES, TO GET OVER ARTIFICIAL DELAYS—HE AND HIS MISTRESS SET OUT ON A LONG JOURNEY, TO DO WHAT MIGHT HAVE BEEN BETTER DONE AT HOME—CHRYSLAL MAKES SOME INTERESTING REFLECTIONS ON A MOST IMPORTANT SUBJECT—STORY OF CHRYSLAL'S MASTER—CHRYSLAL CONTINUES HIS REFLECTIONS ON THE SAME SUBJECT, WHICH HE CONSIDERS IN A FURTHER AND MOST AFFECTING POINT OF VIEW—CHRYSLAL CHANGES HIS SERVICE

My late master had scarce decamped, when a young gentleman came into the inn, and ordering a chaise and four to be got ready with the utmost expedition, gave my new master a bank note to pay for it, in the change of which he received me.

The anxiety which my new master expressed to have the grooms make haste was a sufficient reason for them to practice every delay they could devise, in order to extort expedition fees, at which they were so expert, that he was forced to give them almost as much as he paid for the chaise, before he could get it to stir. When at length everything was settled, he directed them to a particular place where a hackney-coach waited for him, out of which he received a young lady, with a couple of small bundles, and then bade the postillions drive on; but they had no sooner got out of the

¹ A bookseller [Davis's *Olio*]. Sandwich endeavoured to get him the fat living of St James's, Westminster, but failed, whereupon Kidgell fled the country.

town, than he changed his orders, and directed them to take another road. This occasioned a new delay. The fellows alleged their being obliged to go where their master had ordered them, and nowhere else; and made so many difficulties, that, as they expected, my master was compelled to purchase their compliance at their own price. All obstacles being thus got over, he turned to the young lady, who sat trembling and panting by his side, and embracing her tenderly—'Now, my dearest love', said he, 'all our fears are over. Should we even be traced to the inn, this turn will effectually baffle all pursuit'.

'I wish it may', answered she, 'but I shall never think myself safe till I am absolutely out of their reach and all is over'.

The conversation of lovers is agreeable only to themselves. The rest of theirs for two days, as they flew rather than travelled, for which expedition they paid sufficiently, every set of postillions giving the word to the next, will not bear repetition. As soon as they got to the end of their journey, they put an end to their most immediate fears also, by a marriage which might have been performed with a much greater probability of success at home, had not a positive law prevented it.

I see your surprise at my saying that a positive law prevented marriage¹, as the prosperity of the community depends in the first degree on the promotion of that state. But so it happens in human affairs, that the true interest of the people is not always the first object of the laws made for their government. Though too general experience confirms this remark, it is necessary to explain the particular circumstance that gives occasion to it, in this instance. The first end of marriage is the propagation of the species, in the manner most agreeable to reason, and likely to produce the happiness of the parties, as well as the population of the state. As the passions which lead to this end are strongest before reason has acquired strength to direct them, it is necessary that they should be subject to the direction of others, who may be better qualified to discern and promote their interest. This right of direction naturally belongs to those who are most intimately concerned in that interest, as affecting a part of themselves; and hence, among every people upon earth, however differing in other respects and customs, this right of directing matrimonial choice has always belonged to the parents; till maturity of age may be presumed to ripen judgment, and to remove the necessity upon which it is founded. But, however evident this right is, the passions of youth so often rebel against it, that it was found necessary to enforce it by express laws. These laws, though, the professed end of which is to make marriage happy, should never be perverted to the unnatural purpose of preventing it entirely, by clogging it with such unnecessary and unreasonable restrictions, as tend to subjugate not only natural

¹ Lord Hardwicke's Marriage Act of 1753, which put a stop to Fleet marriages. The Bill encountered extraordinary opposition on such points as the predicted check to population, and the hardship to younger sons, who would be prevented from making runaway matches with heiresses.

liberty, but also the highest interest of the state, which depends upon population, to avarice, caprice, or pride of family in parents; or to views of interest in those appointed to supply their place. The particular case of my master which gave occasion to these reflections was this. He was the youngest son of a noble family, to the honours of which his rising virtues promised to add new lustre. Youthful inclination had first attached him to this lady, whose merits upon acquaintance confirmed that attachment more than her very large fortune. Such a marriage could not fail to meet the approbation of reason and paternal prudence. Accordingly, every necessary preliminary was agreed upon, when the sudden death of her father threw in legal obstacles, which threatened to prevent it, at least for a longer time than youthful impatience could bear. For, as he had not actually signed to his consent, those to whom the care of his daughter devolved thought proper to exert the right which the law gave them of objecting to the disparity between her fortune and that of her lover, and so break off a match evidently for their mutual advantage. When the lovers found that all they could do to influence their compliance was ineffectual, they had recourse to this expedient (which the sage makers of the law had, perhaps, inadvertently, left open), to evade it by flying beyond its power; and there solemnised a marriage which should be valid at their return home, though entered into without any of the prudential cautions for securing happiness, which are customary on such occasions, and he had in vain offered to come into; so that the law which was professedly designed to prevent inconsiderate and unhappy marriages, in its effect deprived this, and the many marriages of the kind, of the means for procuring happiness, which former laws, founded on reason, had provided for them.

It is not to be denied but the evils which were immediately alleged as the occasion of this law called aloud for remedy; but whether the remedy provided by it did not introduce an inconvenience of worse consequence to the public than those evils, is not so clear a case. Whatever restrictions might have been thought necessary, in worldly wisdom, to prevent secret marriages, by which either the honours of families might be supposed to suffer diminution, or their fortunes fall a prey to mercenary design, where these considerations interfere not, such restrictions should never in good policy extend. On the contrary, every impediment and delay, not immediately proceeding from moral necessity, should be removed, and the state of matrimony encouraged by such honours and advantages as should counterbalance the inconveniences of it to persons labouring under circumstances of indigence; by which means the inferior ranks of the people, whose numbers make the strength of a state, would be delivered from the difficulties and fears which at present deter them from entering into matrimony, to the heavy loss of the community, and the immediate ruin of such numbers of both sexes, whose natural passions, debarred from this, their only proper resource, lead them into such vices as defeat the end of their creation, and make them a reproach to humanity. How many infants would daily be saved from the most unnatural murder, to the ornament and advantage of their country, could the wretched

parents have saved their own shame by marriage? How many females, who offer themselves in the highways to brutal prostitution, perishing with cold, hunger, and disease, might have been the happy mothers of many children, and performed all the duties of their station in virtuous esteem, had not their being hindered from marrying by impediments made by law betrayed them to destruction?

As soon as my master had thus accomplished the end of his journey, he set out on his return, to enjoy the fruits of it at home. But I continued not in his possession to see much of that mutual happiness which his marriage promised, being borrowed from him on the road by a gentleman of his acquaintance¹, who had been bubbled out of all his money at a horse-race, and was now fighting his way to town, by running in debt at every inn, and raising contributions thus on all he met, of whom he had the least knowledge.

CHAPTER LIX

CHRYSAL'S NEW MASTER STRIKES OUT AN ADVENTURE—HE IS SMITTEN WITH A GIRL IN A TRAVELLING WAGGON, AND CHANGES HIS APPEARANCE, TO GET ADMISSION TO HER—ACCOUNT OF THE COMPANY IN THE WAGGON—A GOOD-NATURED MISTAKE OF ONE OF THE PASSENGERS GIVES OCCASION TO A BROIL, WHICH IS PUT AN END TO BY AN ACCIDENT THAT DOES NOT MEND THE MATTER

DISTRESSING as such a situation would have been to another, custom had made it so familiar to my new master, that he thought nothing of it, but travelled on with his equipages, as unconcerned and ready to engage in any mad freak as if his pockets were full of money. Nor was he long without an opportunity of indulging his disposition. As he was rolling carelessly along, his chariot was stopped in a narrow part of the road, by one of those travelling waggons, whose unwieldy weight gives them the privilege of taking place of their betters. Such a circumstance naturally made the travellers in both carriages look out, when he was struck with the uncommon beauty of a young creature in the waggon, whose charms in the first opening of their bloom gave scope to imagination to paint a prospect, if possible, beyond their present perfection.

Such temptation could scarce be resisted by one who had reasoned his passions into the best subjection, much less by him who blindly obeyed them in, or rather, stimulated them to their utmost success. He no sooner saw, therefore, than he resolved to have her by any means. The first thing to be done, for this pious purpose, was to change his appearance, in order to get into her company, as the least suspicion of his rank would directly blow his design. But this was no difficulty. He was well accustomed to lay it down; and the meanest character in life sat as naturally upon him as his own. Accordingly, as soon as the chariot passed the waggon, he drove on furiously, till he was out of sight, when he alighted, and

¹ Lord Deloraine [Davis's *Olio*].

changing clothes with one of his servants out of livery, ordering them to leave the great road, and wait for him at an inn, some miles distance across the country. Thus equipped for his enterprise, he walked on leisurely, like a common traveller, till he was overtaken by the waggon, the driver of which plied him in the usual way to take a place, which, after some affected difficulties, he agreed to. But the greatest difficulty arose not from him. The waggon was already so full that when the driver mentioned taking in another, the passengers all cried out against it with one voice. But his authority was too absolute to be resisted. He fixed his ladder, and ordered them to make room, barely condescending to say that it was for a gentleman who had been taken suddenly ill, and wanted to go only to the next village. This circumstance, though treated with brutal disregard by the rest, had an immediate effect upon the tender disposition of his destined prey, who squeezing closer to her mother, he crept into his nest, and settled himself as conveniently as he could next to her in the straw.

The company into which he had thus thrust himself seemed to be a representative of all the heteroclite characters of the age. Beside the young female whose appearance had attracted him, and her mother, a plain, good-looking woman, it consisted of a mountebank-doctor and his zany, a Methodist preacher, a strolling actor and actress, a fat ale-wife, a servant-maid who was going to London to repair a cracked reputation, a recruiting sergeant and two recruits, an outlawed smuggler, and a broken exciseman. Though my master could not, at first view, distinguish all their different characters, some of them were so strongly marked, that he promised himself the highest entertainment from the clashing which he concluded must inevitably arise in such a group, and was resolved to promote upon the first occasion. But an accident soon gave him that pleasure without the trouble of planning it.

As the weather was warm, and few of the company could be suspected of the delicacy of changing their clothes often, it may be supposed that every savour which arose among them was not purely aromatic. My master had not been many minutes in his place, when the various odours fuming round him had such an effect upon his senses that he undesignedly breathed a wish for a bottle of spirits.

As he had been introduced under the pretence of being sick, the ale-wife, who happened to be near him, mistook his meaning, and thought he wanted a dram, not once dreaming of any other use of spirits. Pulling out a flask, therefore, from under a coat, in the height of good-nature, 'Spirits!' said she, 'they are poisonous stuff. Here is what will do you more good by half!' Then drawing the cork, and taking a sup, to show him that it was not poison—'Drink of this', continued she, reaching him the flask, 'and I'll warrant it will settle you. It is right Hollands'.

Before my master had time to accept or refuse her offer, the actor, who sat between them, smoked her mistake, and intercepting the bottle, as she reached across him, cried out in triumph—

'Bravo, my queen! your gin from Holland pure,
My stomach sooner than his head will cure'.

Then taking a large go down or two—'Here, Belvidera', added he, giving the bottle to the actress, 'in this friendly cup drown all your sorrows. Drink, as you love me, deep'.

His faithful mate could not disobey such a command. She took the bottle, and lifting it to her head, 'Thus to the bottom', said she, 'though it were a mile'! But she was interrupted in her intention by the smuggler, who lay at her feet, and no sooner smelt the dear liquor, than he raised his head, and perceiving what she was about, 'Avast hauling there', cried he, snatching the bottle from her mouth, 'or you'll pump the scupper dry.' And then going to put it up to his own, 'Hold', said the exciseman, catching his hand with the same design, 'I seize this in the king's name, till I know whether it has paid duty'.

The mention of the word duty set the smuggler's blood on fire. 'Duty! you shark!' said he, grasping the bottle faster, and catching him in return by the throat with the other hand, 'I'll seize you! damn my eyes and limbs! I'll pay you the duty, if you don't loose your hold this moment, you scoundrel! That I will'.

Though he gripped the exciseman's throat so hard that he could not return his compliment in words, he scorned to yield the prize without one effort. Giving a twist, therefore, with all his force, to wrest it out of his antagonist's hand, though he could not succeed, he prevailed so far as to turn the mouth of the bottle downwards, by which means the contents were poured full in the face of the sergeant, who lay snoring on his back, with his mouth wide open.

Welcome as such a guest would have been in a proper manner, the intrusion thus unexpectedly was not so agreeable. He started up, half suffocated; and belching his dose full in the face of one of the recruits, 'Blood anouns! fire and fury'! sputtered he, 'What's the meaning of all this'?

Just as he said this, one of the wheels of the waggon came into a deep hole with such a plump, that though it did not absolutely overset, it tumbled all the passengers on top of one another; and instantly put a stop to the cries of the ale-wife for the loss of her liquor. The screams, oaths, and execrations of the whole company, on this occasion, would have given my master the highest delight, had he not been rather too nearly concerned to enjoy the fun, the fat ale-wife being thrown so full upon him that he was unable to stir, though almost smothered, so that he could not help adding his cries to the concert.

CHAPTER LX

CHRYSAI'S MASTER EXPERIENCES SOME COMFORTABLE CONSEQUENCES FROM THE OBLIGING DISPOSITION OF THE WAGGONER—HE PURSUES HIS DESIGN, BY PAYING COMMON CIVILITY TO HIS MISTRESS'S MOTHER—CONVERSATION AND BEHAVIOUR OF THE COMPANY—CHRYSAI'S MASTER, IN THE PURSUIT OF HIS DESIGN, MEETS AN ADVENTURE THAT COOLS HIS PASSION, AND RE-ASSEMBLES THE COMPANY, WHEN THEY ARE ALL LIKE TO BE AT A FAULT, TILL ONE OF THEM LUCKILY HITS OFF THE SCENT

WHEN the driver had got his waggon out of the hole, and seen that all was safe about it, he came to know what was the matter with his passengers; and having unpacked them, my master had the pleasure to hear the young woman propose to her mother to walk a little way, till some, not the most agreeable, consequences of the late disaster should blow off, to which she readily consented, as he prepared to accompany them, both for the same reason, and in order to have an opportunity of making an acquaintance, which he found he could not so well do in the waggon. But the waggoner was not in the humour to give them that indulgence. When they called to him to let them down, he answered surlily, they had not above a couple of miles to their inn; and if they were to stop thus every moment, he should not get in time, and so without any further ceremony whipped on his horses. This was a severe disappointment to my master, who soon grew so sick that he could not hold up his head all the rest of the way.

But the qualms of his stomach did not affect his conscience so as to make him in the least alter his design. On his arrival at the inn, he made a pretence of the compassion which the young girl and her mother had expressed for him, to attach himself particularly to them, and ply them with wine, by way of return, which false modesty made the mother take so freely as gave him good hopes of success. The conversation and behaviour at supper was strictly in the character of the company. The Methodist made a long grace, and talked of religion and temperance, while he ate more than any two at the table, and his eyes were gloating at the servant maid, his fellow-traveller, who seemed to listen to him with great complacency and attention. The actor mimicked the Methodist to his face, and lolled out his tongue at everyone else, as they happened to look another way. The actress spoke in heroics, and turned up her nose at everything and everybody. The smuggler and exciseman sat growling at each other, as if they meant to make a further trial of their manhood. The sergeant talked of his exploits in the wars, and proved his valour by an oath at every word, which his two pupils listened to with looks of admiration, that showed they designed to imitate that part of his example at least. The ale-wife lamented the loss of her gin, which, she said, she could not replace with any like it on the whole road. In short, everybody ate and talked, and talked and ate together, except the girl and her mother, who were quite lost in astonishment, at a scene

so new to them, and my master, whose thoughts were too much taken up with his own scheme to mind anything else. Accordingly, he stepped out when supper was ended, and engaging the chamber-maid in his interest, by a present of half-a-crown, she showed him where his mistress was to lie, and promised to settle all things in the manner most convenient to his designs, by putting her and her mother in the bed next to the door, there being two in the room, and placing in the other the servant-maid, who paid for a bed to herself, as her modesty would not permit her to sleep with a stranger.

As soon as the house was quiet, and my master thought the wine which he had forced upon the mother had secured her, he got up, and stealing in his shirt to the door of their chamber, found it open, upon which he entered and crept to the bed, where he expected to find his mistress, without ever considering what must be the consequence of surprising her in such a manner. Opening the curtains, therefore, softly, to feel by the difference of size on which side she lay, he had scarce put his hand upon the clothes, when it was seized and gripped so hard that he soon lost all thought of everything but disengaging himself. For this purpose he made two or three efforts, but finding them ineffectual, and provoked at the pain his hand suffered in the struggle, he discharged a blow with the other full in the face of his antagonist, who springing directly out of bed, returned it with such usury, that my poor master fell sprawling on the floor, where he roared out murder with all his might, in which he was immediately joined by those who lay in the other bed, whose cries not only raised the house to his rescue, but also saved him from further violence, his antagonist desisting to beat him in order to make his retreat in time.

When those who lay nearest were assembled at the door, half clad, and worse armed with whatever they could catch up in their confusion, prudential regard to personal safety made them all stop short, everyone finding some pretence to excuse himself from going in first, and pressing the post of honour upon his neighbour, till they at length raised their fears so high that it was uncertain whether anyone would venture in before daylight, though the cries still continued, had not the smuggler, who did not wake to join them at first, put an end to the debate.

'Damn you all', said he, snatching a candle from one, and a poker from another, 'for a pack of cowardly lubbers! Will you stand jawing here, while the people are murdering!' Then rushing in, 'Hallo!' continued he, 'what's going forward here, in the devil's name?'

The first object that presented itself to his view when he entered was my master, who was still upon the ground, unable, between fright and beating, to arise. Advancing to him, therefore, 'Hip, mess-mate!' said he, giving him a kick on his naked posterior, 'what cheer? Speak if you are alive!'

The entrance of light restoring my master to some spirit, he raised his head at this salute, and making an effort to get up, 'I scarce know whether I am or not', answered he, 'I have been so beaten by that bitch of Babel; but she shall pay for it, if I ever recover'.

The place where he was found directing this accusation to the person in that bed, while some of them helped him up, the rest gathered round it, and asked the servant-maid, who lay there, what had induced her to treat the gentleman in such a manner? But the mention of her name saved her the trouble of a reply. Before she could speak, 'It was not she!' exclaimed my master; 'I mean the old beldam, mother to the young witch, whose baby-face brought me among you, and who lay in this bed. It was she who abused me thus; or rather some porter in woman's clothes, who passed for her, for no woman ever had such strength'.

'I believe you must be mistaken, sir', interposed the exciseman, 'the people you mean are lying quietly in the next bed, and seem to be as much frightened as you are hurt'.

'How'! returned my master, 'did they not lie in the bed next the door'?

'No', answered the other, 'Mrs Margery lies here, as grave and demure as a whore at a christening'.

'Then the jade of a chambermaid played me a trick', replied my master. 'But who the devil lay with her? For I am sure she was never able to do what I have suffered'.

'As for that'! said the actor, who had all the while been peeping round the bed, 'I believe it will be no hard matter to find it out. These breeches', pulling a pair from under the bolster, 'must belong to somebody, and will certainly point out her bed-fellow, if the lady, like a true Amazon, did not wear them herself'.

CHAPTER LXI

THE ADVANTAGE OF A READY ASSURANCE—THE METHODIST ACCOUNTS CURIOSLY FOR WHAT HE HAS DONE; AND TURNING THE TABLES UPON CHRYSAL'S MASTER, CHARGES HIM WITH ROBBERY, WHO IS THEREUPON OBLIGED TO DISCOVER HIMSELF, BUT IS CONTRADICTED BY ONE OF THE COMPANY, WHO BOASTS OF A CURIOUS ACQUAINTANCE WITH HIM IN HIS OWN CHARACTER—HE IS LUCKILY RECOGNIZED BY A FOOTMAN, WHOSE MASTER EXTRICATES HIM FROM HIS DISTRESS, AND MAKES OUT THE MISTAKES THAT HAD CAUSED SO MUCH CONFUSION

As the breeches were immediately known to belong to the Methodist, they marched away directly to his bedside, for he had not joined them, and asked him how he had come to use the gentleman in that inhuman manner, showing him my master, whom they had dragged along with them.

'Who? I'? answered the Methodist, affecting all the surprise of innocence, and determined to deny what he thought could not be proved, 'Heaven forbid that I should use any fellow-christian ill. I engage not in such broils. My warfare is with the spirit'.

'And sometimes with the flesh, too, I believe, doctor'! inter-

rupted the actor. 'Nay, it is in vain to deny it! Do you know these breeches, doctor'?

'Breeches'! exclaimed he, starting up in real affright and fumbling under his bolster. 'Oh, they are gone! they are gone! I am robbed, ruined, and undone'!

'No, doctor, they are not gone, as you see! but the question is, how they came under the young woman's bed's head, where this gentleman received this abuse'.

'Let him answer that'! replied the Methodist, never at a loss for an impudent lie. 'Let him answer that! all I know of the matter is this, being disturbed in my rest, I then knew not, but now plainly perceive by what cause, I arose to pray, as is my custom, when hearing somebody go softly out of the room, I watched, as was my duty, to prevent any evil, and following the footsteps into another chamber, caught a man in the very fact of attempting the virtue of some female, who lay there: upon which, expostulating with him upon the heinousness of such a crime, he flew at me so furiously that I could scarce defend myself from him, and if in the fray he received any hurt, he must charge it to himself, as he was the aggressor; but this is not the whole. I now perceive that I was disturbed out of my sleep by his stealing my breeches from under my head, which he accordingly took with him into the room of that damsel, and therefore I demand justice against him for the attempt, as well as for any loss I may have suffered'. Saying this, he took his breeches out of the actor's hand, and searching the pockets, 'It is too true'! continued he, gnashing his teeth and wringing his hands in a perfect agony. 'It is too true! I am ruined and undone! I am robbed of all the money which I had collected in my pilgrimage to relieve the poor of the Lord. Twenty golden guineas, besides silver, and other monies! Let him be searched; let everybody be searched this moment. I must have my money! I must have my money'!

As my master was a stranger to them all, and not blessed with a face that could bespeak much favour, they began to give credit to the charge against him, especially, as the servant-maid corroborated it by saying that he had also been rummaging for her pockets, when that worthy gentleman interrupted him (for women and all were now gathered to hear the matter canvassed) and talked of carrying him before a magistrate in the morning, that he might be sent to jail. At another time, such a scene would have given him the highest pleasure, but he had no taste for fun now. Enraged, therefore, at the iniquity of such a charge, and the insolence with which they were proceeding to treat him, 'Unhand me, at your perils, you scoundrels', said he, telling them who he was. 'Unhand me, this moment. As for that infamous villain, and his trull, I charge you to secure them directly, and send in my name for a magistrate. I'll make examples of them, at least'.

You may conceive with what surprise they were all struck at hearing this. However, as he gave only his bare word for it, all were not equally ready to believe him.

'You, my friend Scapegrace'! said the actor, coming and looking him full in the face. 'No, no, sir; say that to those who don't

know him. I am his intimate companion ; his chosen among ten thousand. There is not a fine girl upon the town but we have bilked, nor a house in the hundred of Drury where we have not kicked up a dust together. He and I are Pylades and Orestes—sworn friends and brothers. No, no ! that stroke won't pass upon me'.

This made matters worse than ever with my master, adding ridicule to insult, which was poured upon him in such torrents from every mouth, that he could not speak a word in his own defence. But his distress lasted not long. The servants of a gentleman who luckily happened to lie at the inn that night, being raised by the uproar, one of them knew my master through his disguises.

'By your leave, there' ! said he, rushing through the crowd, and shoving aside some of them, who had already laid hold of him, 'are you all mad, to use a gentleman in this manner' ?

Then addressing himself to my master, 'What is the matter, please your honour ? I am sorry to see your honour in such a pickle. My master', naming him, 'is in the house, and will do you justice. I'll run, and call him directly'.

Such a testimony instantly turned the scale, and made those who were most insolent to him before, now most officious to pay him respect and attendance. Accordingly, he was removed, without asking his leave, into his own room, where they were preparing to humanise his appearance, when the gentleman entered.

Much as my master was above the weakness of shame, he could not avoid feeling something like it, on being caught in such a condition. He was sitting on the side of the bed, covered only with the ragged remains of his shirt, which had been torn to pieces in the fray, daubed all over with blood and dirt, and beaten to such a degree, that he scarce retained one feature of the human face divine, which had not lost all likeness of the original. The gentleman started at such a spectacle, and stopped short, in doubt whether it could be he, till my master's voice satisfied him : when he gave orders to have everyone concerned in the affair secured, and then seeing the poor sufferer taken proper care of, and put to bed, he proceeded to inquire into the matter, the circumstances of which appeared to be these : the Methodist having agreed with the servant-maid, his fellow-traveller, to have some spiritual conversation with her that night, she promised to lie in the bed next the door, and, therefore after the chambermaid had assigned them their quarters, as she had settled with my master, feigned some pretence to desire a change, which the others readily consented to. Accordingly, as the Methodist was secure of his reception, he came soon, and was got in to bed to his disciple, when my master made his attempt, whose hand he seized, in the manner I have related ; and would have beaten him still more severely for his intrusion, had it not been for his crying out, upon which he retreated to his own bed, in such a hurry to escape detection that he forgot his breeches, which he had taken with him, for fear some of his chamber-fellows should search them, and rob him of eight or ten guineas, that he had picked up in the course of his preaching about the country, and the actor had made bold to take as lawful prize,

when they fell into his hands, and afterwards found means to convey to his wife, for more security, Everything being thus cleared up, the gentleman advised my master to drop the affair, as prosecuting it would only expose him still more, to which he willingly agreed, having no inclination for any further trouble about it.

The Methodist, though, was far from being so easily pacified for the loss of the fruits of his summer's labour in the vineyard, which he thought worse of than a thousand beatings, and was resolved to recover if possible, in spite of all their scoffs and insults. But the detection of the other part of his story had so entirely destroyed his credit that he found it in vain to persist, especially as the actor offered to make oath that he had that very evening applied to him, to borrow a shilling to pay his reckoning. Cursing them all, therefore, in the bitterness of his soul, he changed his route, and went upon another preaching progress in order to retrieve his loss, in which pious work he prevailed upon his disciple and fellow sufferer in shame, the servant-maid, whose pockets had escaped the pillagers, to accompany him.

By this time the waggon was ready to set out, when the rest of the company departed, except the actor and his lady, who were so tired of that vulgar way of travelling, that they thought proper to continue their journey in the stage coach; and my master, who was laid up in salves and flannels, had lost both ability and inclination to pursue his enterprise any further.

CHAPTER LXII

CHRYSAI GIVES A STRIKING ACCOUNT OF HIS MASTER—HE ARRIVES IN LONDON AND PAYS A VISIT TO HIS MISTRESS—HIS CURIOUS METHOD OF COURTING—HIS MISTRESS MAKES HIM A PRESENT OF HALF HER FORTUNE BEFOREHAND, IN RETURN FOR WHICH HE PROMISES TO MARRY HER NEXT DAY, AND THEN GOES TO HIS GIRL—DIFFERENCE IN HIS BEHAVIOUR TO THE TWO NATURALLY ACCOUNTED FOR—AN UNCOMMON GUEST AT A WEDDING, WITH AS UNCOMMON A MANNER OF CELEBRATING A NUPTIAL NIGHT, SHOW A STILL MORE UNCOMMON INSTANCE OF MATRIMONIAL COMPLAISANCE—CHRYSAI CHANGES HIS SERVICE

THE singularity of my master's character gave me a curiosity to take a view of his life, while he was sleeping off some of the effects of his late adventure. He was born in a rank that supported the fair hopes of honour and advantage, which the first opening of his youth universally raised. But an error in his education blasted all those hopes in the bud, and drove him into every extreme of vice and folly, which it was designed to guard against. The bad consequences which are seen to attend indulging the passions too far, often lead weak minds to attempt suppressing them entirely, without considering that the crime is only in the excess. The difficulty and pain of this attempt throws such a gloom over the whole appearance, as hides the native beauty of virtue, and makes it seem to be

the source of unhappiness to those who view it only in these effects, so as to terrify them from the pursuit of it.

On this error pretended enthusiasts have in every age founded their influence, by enslaving the mind to groundless terrors which they never fail to turn to their own advantage. To the conduct of such blind and base guides, the mother of my master, to whom the sole care of his education had fallen by the death of her husband, implicitly resigned herself, and of course her son, in return for which they flattered her fanaticism and vanity together, with promises of breeding him up in the perfection of sanctity. For this purpose he was debarred from every innocent recreation, and harassed with studies improper for his age. His appetites were mortified by fasting, his rest was broken to chant hymns, and pray; nor was he allowed even to speak but in Scripture-phrase; and all as the indispensable duties of virtue and religion. Such a slavery naturally gave him so great an aversion to everything that bore their names, that the moment he became his own master he placed the supreme pleasure of his life in acting in contradiction to them, by every instance of expensive and vicious excess, in which he squandered away the inheritance of his ancestors, and broke his constitution with a rapidity that gave scandal to vice, put folly out of countenance, and made his name a byword in an age of excesses. And in this situation he was when I came into his possession. Though it was near noon before he awoke, the gentleman whose presence had so luckily relieved him the night before waited to see him, when he completed his kindness by lending him money to defray his expenses up to town, upon which he sent for his equipage, and set off without further concern at what had happened. On his arrival in London, he drove directly to the last place which any other man in his circumstances would have thought of going to. This was the house of a lady of large fortune¹, to whom he had paid his addresses, since his extravagance had dissipated his own; and with this peculiar honesty, that he never even pretended a regard to herself. The success of such a courtship must appear improbable, but there is no accounting for the caprice of woman. She had taken a liking to him which seemed to rise in proportion to the slights he showed her, and was resolved to gratify, if only nominally, for she could expect no more at the hazard of every happiness of life.

It may be supposed that the sight of him, in such a condition, struck her severely. She flew to him, threw her arms around his neck, and bemoaned his misfortune in the most passionate terms. But that was not what he wanted. Shaking her off, without feigning the least return to her fondness, 'Pshaw'! said he, 'leave off this stuff; and let me know whether you have got the money I told you I should want to pay off those debts of honour: if you have, and will also give me up the rest of your fortune, without reserve, I'll marry you'.

'Will you'! exclaimed she, in rapture, 'then you have it, if it were ten times as much. Here it is', opening a bureau, and reaching

¹ The Hon. Mrs Knight [Davis's *Olio*].

him a handful of bank-notes, 'I sold out half my fortune to raise it the very day you spoke to me'.

'I wish I had known that', said he, putting the notes in his pocket, 'and then I might have made my excursion into the country longer. Farewell! I'll call upon you to-morrow evening, and conclude the job. Do you have the hangman and halter ready'.

'What do you mean? I don't understand you'.

'What should I mean but the pastor and the ring. Is not that a halter, and does he not hang us up with it for life?'.

'But can't you stay a few moments? I want to know how you came in that condition'!

'It was only a scrape about a wench. I'll tell you the particulars another time. My girl would not forgive me, if she knew I was so long in town without going to her'.

'But will you certainly come to-morrow? I am afraid you will disappoint me now you have got what you wanted'.

'Never fear, I have not got what I wanted while you have a shilling left in the world'.

Saying which, he walked away, without deigning to take any further leave. But his behaviour was not so cavalier where he was going. The moment he entered his mistress's room, she flew at him, not with the fondness of a dove, 'So', said she, 'what bawdy-house have you been breaking up now? You do well to come to me in such a pickle; but I'll see you damned before I'll take the trouble of nursing you'.

'Don't be in a passion, my love', said he, taking her in his arms, and giving her a kiss. 'It is no such thing. I fell among a gang of foot-pads, who abused me in this manner because I made resistance'.

'A very likely story truly, invented, I suppose, to excuse your not bringing me money! but if that is the case, you may go to the devil from whence you came. I'll not be troubled with your company'.

'No, my dear, I never come to you empty handed, let me do as I will elsewhere'. With which words, he pulled out one of the bank-notes he had just got from the other, and giving it to her, put her at length in good humour.

I see your indignation at a man's acting in such a manner; but you could expect no other. The same baseness of temper which could treat the other woman with insult naturally submitted to be insulted by this. You imagine that his mistress must have uncommon attractions, to give her such power over him. You judge right—her's were uncommon indeed! She had lost her hair and teeth in a salivation, and was allowed to be the most profligate of her profession—charms sufficient to attach a man of his taste!

My master having thus happily made his peace, the loving couple sat down to their bottle, as usual, over which happening to mention his intended marriage the next day, her delicacy took such offence, that she positively refused to consent to it, till he promised not only that she should be present, but also to return and spend his wedding night with her, to prove her triumph over the happy bride. Accordingly, he took her with him the next evening, and introducing her to the expecting fair one, 'I have brought my girl', said he, 'to grace our

nuptials. The dear creature insisted upon it; and you know I can't refuse her anything'. The bride elect was so enraptured at the thought of her approaching happiness, that she had no sense of the insult, but received her with politeness, perhaps not without a mixture of pride, on the occasion.

There are some scenes, the extravagance of which beggars description. I shall, therefore, only say that the behaviour of the company was in character during the ceremony and entertainment, at the end of which the bridegroom, alleging his promise to go back with his mistress, the convenient bride not only consented; but also proposed preparing an apartment for her in her own house, to save him that trouble for the future, and procure for herself the pleasure of his company—a scheme that was actually carried into execution while she had a house to receive her; which was not very long, a continuance of the same extravagance that had dissipated his own fortune, soon dissipating hers also. It may be imagined that I did not remain long in the possession of such a master. He lost me the next evening after his marriage, on a bet that he could repeat the Lord's Prayer, which he laid on purpose to lose, in order to prove how entirely he had got rid of the prejudices of education.

CHAPTER LXIII

CHRYSALE MAKES SOME REFLECTIONS, NOT LIKELY TO BE MUCH REGARDED—HIS MASTER PAYS A LOVE VISIT TO A YOUNG LADY, WHOSE FATHER INTERPOSES UNPOLITELY, AND MAKES SOME OUT-OF-THE-WAY OBJECTIONS—CHRYSALE'S MASTER HITS UPON A SCHEME FOR GETTING OVER THEM—HE PROPOSES MARRIAGE ON CERTAIN TERMS, WHICH ARE AGREED TO, AND THE DAY FIXED AT A LITTLE DISTANCE

I HAVE, on former occasions, given you a sufficient description how people of fashion spend their time in gaming houses, where, though every meeting produces new misfortunes to some of the company, there is such a sameness in the manner, as will not bear repetition, and must cloy any creature not absolutely under infatuation, or obliged to make a trade of it for bread. As neither of which was the case of my new master, he left the company early, to pursue pleasures more in his own taste.

In no instance are the contradictions in human conduct so strongly shown as in that of man to woman. He who would lose his life rather than violate the strictest principles of honour or honesty (as they are absurdly distinguished from each other) in his intercourse with another man, not only scruples not to study deceit, and practise the blackest and basest villanies against woman, but will even glory in the success of them, when accomplished, without showing remorse in himself, or meeting reproof from others. The reason of this is generally said to be man's partiality to his own cause, which, as he has the power of judging in his hands, whether by usurpation or right it matters not, makes him pardon in others the crime he would be

glad to commit himself. But, without exculpating him in the least, woman bears a heavy share in the blame of her sex's ruin. I mean not by her immediate consent in her own case, but by the countenance which she shows to the perpetrators of it, in that of others; it being as certain in fact, as it is gross and absurd to thought, that the surest recommendation to the general favour of woman is the fame of having ruined numbers of them.

Whether this proceeds from a vain ambition of triumphing over the triumpher, or an affectation of disdaining to espouse the cause of the fallen, as having forfeited the common regards of humanity, makes no difference in the consequence, whatever it may in the crime, as it opens an opportunity to the spoiler to extend his conquests often upon themselves, in the midst of their security; whereas, would women show a true sense of the honour of their sex, by refusing every kind of intercourse with such as had violated it, man's partiality to himself would lose its effect, and all his designs upon them be restrained within the proper boundaries of virtue.

From the place where I came into the possession of my new master¹, he went to pay a visit to a young lady of uncommon beauty and merit, with whom he was violently in love; that is, he was earnestly bent upon gratifying his desire for her, at the expense of her ruin; an enterprize for which he was eminently qualified, being possessed of all the advantages of youth, fortune and address, and absolutely free from every restraint of principle, as he had proved on several successful occasions of the same kind. The reception he met with showed that he had made an interest in her heart; but all his experience in the science of intrigue could not elude the vigilance of her virtue for a moment, nor find the least opening for any attack upon her honour. Such difficulties only redoubled his ardour. As he was considering, therefore, next morning, how he should proceed, he was interrupted in his meditations by a visit from his mistress's father. After some time spent in common chat, 'I have taken the liberty to wait upon you, sir', said the father 'about an affair, the importance of which to my happiness will apologize for any seeming unpoliteness in it. I have for some time taken notice of the frequency of your visits to my house, the honour of which I am justly sensible of, but not so far dazzled by but I can see the motive of them through it: and therefore must for many reasons beg leave to desire that you will discontinue them'.

'I—I—I don't understand you, sir'; answered my master, a good deal disconcerted at so unexpected an address, 'I have no motive that I desire to conceal, or is any way inconsistent with the character of a gentleman'.

'Pardon me, sir', replied the other, 'I mean no such thing. But yet, what may be thought consistent with that character in some things, may be very inconsistent with the happiness of a father. To be plain, sir, I am not so unacquainted with the world but I can see all your visits are paid to my daughter; and as she is not upon a level with you, either in family or fortune, for a wife,

¹ Sir Charles Coote, K.B. [Davis's *Olio*].

I must repeat my request, that you will drop a pursuit which must, therefore, have another view'.

'You do injustice to your daughter', returned my master, recovered from his surprise, and convinced that it was in vain to dissemble any longer, 'to say that she is not upon a level with any man alive. I am above the vain pride of family; and as to fortune, my own satisfies me, without hazarding my happiness to seek for more'.

'These', said the lady's father, 'are truly the sentiments of a gentleman, nor have I any doubt of the sincerity with which you declare them. But there are other considerations that make it impossible to carry them into execution. You and my daughter profess different principles of religion; and as I can by no means expect that you should change yours, so, I hope, she is too firmly established in hers, to quit them for any worldly honour or advantage'.

This was a stroke my master was not prepared for. He acquiesced, therefore, seemingly, with the best grace he could, to avoid entering more explicitly into the subject, till he should have time to concert measures for getting over this new difficulty, for his honour was now piqued, and he resolved to stop at nothing, if only to punish the insolence of her father, in presuming to forbid him his house. Accordingly, after revolving a variety of schemes, he fixed upon one which he thought could not fail. Big with this hope, he went next morning to wait upon his mistress, notwithstanding the interdiction of her father, and finding her alone, after some moments of mutual confusion, on the circumstances of such a meeting. 'I—I—I—I—I am come, madam', said my master, hesitating and blushing as he spoke, 'I am come in consequence of what passed between your father and me yesterday, of which I presume he has informed you. It never was my design to disavow a passion, upon which depends the happiness of my life. I only waited till some particular circumstances should enable me to declare it with more convenience. But, as he has made the discovery, that reserve is no longer necessary. If therefore, madam, I can be so happy as to find favour in your sight, all his objections, I presume, will be removed, by my offering to marry you directly; on this sole condition, that our marriage shall be kept inviolably secret, till I have accomplished some affairs, to which you must be sensible the difference of our religions would be a prejudice. The ceremony shall be performed by any clergyman you please, in the presence of your father, and any other witnesses in whose secrecy we can confide, and every thing done that can convince you of the sincerity and honour of my attachment. Speak then, dearest madam, and make me happy, by complying with a proposal that has your happiness in view equally with my own'.

'I should be unworthy of the honour you do me', answered she, the blush of true modesty heightening the charms of her beauty, 'if I could let it interfere with superior obligations. When the approbation of my father gives a proper sanction to your application to me, you will probably find no great difficulty in making my inclination go hand in hand with my duty'.

Her father just then entering relieved her from the embarrassment of any further conversation upon so delicate a subject; and she

withdrew. But my master was under no such difficulty. Encouraged by a reply so favourable to his hopes, he directly repeated his proposal to her father, who promised him a decisive answer next morning. As the manner of his reception left him no room to doubt of his success, he went again at the time appointed, when the father gave his consent without difficulty, as did his mistress, stipulating only for a short delay, till she should return from the wedding of a young lady, her cousin, who lived at some distance in the country, and had engaged her to attend her upon that occasion. As he could make no just objection to this, however disagreeable suspension of his hopes, he consented with a compliment, that his resolution was too firmly fixed for any time to make him change it, and then took his leave, exulting at the success of his project.

CHAPTER LXIV

CHRYSALE'S MASTER IS PRIVATELY MARRIED—NOT SATISFIED WITH ONE WIFE FOR LOVE, HE WANTS ANOTHER FOR MONEY—HE PROPOSES THE MATTER TO HIS WIFE, ON WHOSE REFUSAL HE DISCLOSES HIS GRAND SCHEME; IN WHICH, DEEP AS IT IS LAID, HE HAS THE MORTIFICATION TO FIND HIMSELF ANTICIPATED, AND HIS OWN WEAPONS TURNED UPON HIMSELF—CONSEQUENCES OF THIS DISCOVERY—CHRYSALE'S MASTER TAKES A COMMON METHOD OF SILENCING SCANDAL—CHRYSALE CHANGES HIS SERVICE

THE smiles of hope make the sunshine of life; as the mind is then too intent upon the object in expectation to see the inconveniences which afterwards embitter the enjoyments of it. The absence of his mistress, though considerably longer than he had apprehended, passed away pleasantly in the thought of his approaching happiness. As soon as she returned, therefore, he directly claimed the performance of her promise, to which all parties consenting, they were married by his own chaplain, in the private manner he desired. Possessed thus of his wishes, his next care was to enjoy them with the most convenience to himself. For this purpose he took a house next to his own; and opening a secret communication between them, he removed her thither, as he could not take her directly home, without declaring his marriage.

Mortifying as the mysterious appearance of such a situation must have been to her, she made no objection, but complied implicitly, in that and everything else, as if she had no will but his. Passions merely sensual are soon sated. Though the resemblance of this intercourse to an intrigue heightened the pleasure of it, he had not carried it on long, when an opportunity of marrying to great advantage, in the phrase of the world, awoke his ambition, and gave his wishes another turn. After some little conflict with himself, in which, however, the object in view proved too powerful for that in possession, he resolved to break the matter to his wife. Accordingly, as they sat together one morning at breakfast, after some expressions of uncommon tenderness, 'The regard which my

dearest girl has always shown for me', said he, blushing at his baseness as he spoke, 'convinces me that she will not only take pleasure to hear of anything to my advantage, but also forward it as far as may be in her power'.

'I hope no action of my life', answered she, surprised at his speaking in such a manner, 'since I have been married to you, has given any reason to doubt either my duty or affection, that you should imagine such a preface necessary to introduce whatever you think proper to command'.

'Very true, my dearest life. But—but—but there are some things, the nature of which requires delicacy, even to you, whose understanding is superior to the foibles of your sex. You know the young lady Worthland! I have received intimation that my addresses would not be unacceptable to her. Now, as her rank and fortune would entitle me to expect the first honours in the state, I have that confidence in the attachment and love of my dearest girl, as to think you will not oppose my interest'.

'As how'! replied she eagerly, alarmed at the hint, but unwilling to think so meanly of him as to understand it, 'as how! What interest can you possibly have in her rank and fortune'.

'The interest which the law gives a husband. Possession—absolute possession of the whole'.

'A husband! Good God! how can that be? Are you not already married'?

'True, my dearest life! But as that marriage is a secret, if it can be kept so, it will be no obstacle. You shall remain as you are, the wife of my love, and I will be only the husband of her fortune'.

'How you men, whose minds are stronger, take pleasure in playing with the weakness of women! The very mention of such a thing even in jest (for it is impossible you can be serious), strikes me with horror'.

'In jest! I am serious, upon my honour, and expect your immediate compliance, as a proof of your duty and affection'.

'And can you mention honour in the same breath with such a base proposal? What a profanation of the word! But, whether you are serious or not, I must be so on such an occasion; and therefore I declare that I never will sacrifice both honour and conscience, by giving what you are pleased to call a proof of duty and affection, but what would really prove that I had neither'.

'This romantic spirit, child, much as you think it becomes you, is all thrown away. I am determined, and you must submit. But let me tell you, that on the manner of that submission depends your future welfare. If you comply properly with my proposal, I will make a settlement upon you that shall exceed any expectation you could naturally have had in life, and remain your husband in everything but the empty name. But if you attempt making the least opposition to my will, I cast you off from this moment to beggary and shame; nor shall any late repentance ever bring me to receive you again; so, consider the consequence, before you rashly run upon your ruin; I shall expect your final resolution to-morrow'.

'For that you need not wait a moment. I fear no consequence

that can attend my doing what is right. The duty of obedience I have fulfilled, in its utmost extent, by immuring myself thus, and forfeiting my good name to keep your secret ; but while my conscience witnessed for the purity of my heart, I regarded not the present censure of the world, no more than I do now, from the same principle of virtuous resolution, your vain threats, for in such a light the laws of my country enable me to hold them'.

'The laws of your country, madam ! Then claim their protection, if you please ; but you will find that they afford none to you. Such marriages as yours between people professing different religions, are made void by those laws, and therefore, if you think proper to depend upon them, I give you this notice, that you have nothing to expect from me but what they shall procure you'.

'And was this your motive', returned she, with a spirit raised by indignation, 'for desiring a private marriage ? Impossible ! you could not, can not, be so base. You only have a mind to try my resolution, which you shall ever find immovable in this and every cause of virtue and honour'.

'Madam, I have no more time to trifle in this manner ; therefore, once more I desire you to let me know your final determination ; for notwithstanding this behaviour, I still have such a regard for you, that I am unwilling to take an answer which must separate us for ever. Think then, before you speak ; and let my making you this generous offer, and preventing your exposing yourself in vain, teach you a proper return of gratitude'.

'I want not a moment to determine between virtue and vice—infamy and honour'.

'Then take the consequence ; and blame yourself when it is too late'.

'I will, if any blame falls on me. And now that I see you are serious, in return for the notice you have so generously given me, I let you know that I have obviated the advantage you flatter yourself you have over me, by conforming legally to your religion, before I was married to you'.

'Confusion ! what is that you say ? When, where did you conform' ?

'When I went to the wedding of my cousin, as you will find upon inquiry, which I advise you to make, before you proceed further in a scheme that can only expose you to worse infamy than that with which you threatened me'.

'Infernal witch ! Was this your love' ?

'No ; it was the prudence of my friends. My love could harbour no doubt of you, but they knew you better ; and took this honest, wise precaution, to guard against villany, which I now am sensible they foresaw ; and, therefore, as you have thought proper to refer me to the law, I now tell you that I will immediately claim its protection, and declare my marriage ; nor suffer any longer in the opinion of the world by a secrecy that was enjoined for so base a purpose ; by which I shall have at least the satisfaction of saving another woman from falling into the snare laid for her'.

'Saying this, she flung out of the room, to conceal tears which

she thought would betray a weakness unworthy of her, and could no longer restrain.

The nature of my master's meditations on this discovery may be easily conceived. He cursed that foolish fondness which had thus led him blindfold into his own snare ; and damned all woman-kind in revenge for being foiled at his own weapons by one of the sex.

When he had vented his rage in this manner for some time, a sudden gleam of hope flattered him, that what she said might possibly have been only the instantaneous suggestion of resentment and despair, without being really true. Pleased with the thought, he sent directly to make the proper inquiry, the result of which confirmed the defeat of all his designs. But this was not the only mortification he suffered. His wife, the moment she left him, went to her father, and discovering to him her husband's baseness, he supported her in her resolution of declaring her marriage, as the most proper means to prevent his forming any further schemes against her.

The consequence is obvious. The public received such a curious piece of scandal with pleasure ; and paid respect to his wife, if only to show contempt for him ; particularly the women, who made hers the cause of the sex, as he had precluded all further designs upon himself, by marriage.

This, though, however flattering to her vanity and resentment at the time, only widened a breach that she wished to close. His pride was piqued to disappoint her design, as she had his, and he left her to languish out the rest of her life in worse than widowhood, and repent of the folly of attempting to attach herself to a man who, she knew, had betrayed others of the sex.

As for my master, this detection made him desperate. He threw off every appearance of regard even to common decency, which he thought could no longer be of use to him, and determined to bear down scandal, by glorying in his vices ; in the performance of which gallant resolution he gave me to a stage dancer, who gave me to a half-pay officer, who gave me to a Jew.

CHAPTER LXV

CHRYSLAL COMES INTO THE POSSESSION OF A PAWNBROKER, BY WHOM HE IS GIVEN TO THE AUTHOR—A MOST UNHAPPY INSTANCE OF HUMAN INFIRMITY—THE CONCLUSION

I DID not remain long in the possession of the Jew ; he passed me off to a pawnbroker, in the purchase of old clothes, which he was going to carry abroad. Strange were the scenes, and unexpected the faces, which I saw in this place, where every necessary utensil of life, every ornament of luxury, was deposited, as in a place of security, by their respective owners ; but your own experience makes any particular description of this place, or its manifold mysterious trade, unnecessary to you.

The misfortune of my size (which had been continually lessening

ever since the depredations committed on me by young Aminadab), kept me a prisoner here till Saturday night, when my master always puts off his light coin, just before he shuts shop, to the poor people, whose necessity requiring an immediate supply for the support of life, cannot wait to return it on Monday, and so must even bear the loss. Such a person did he think you, and accordingly he gave me to you : but the moment I came into your possession, and found that you were the chosen of ten thousand, the first-born of science, whom wisdom had instructed, and art led by the hand through the dark labyrinths of nature, till the coy fugitive, unable longer to elude your pursuit, had been obliged to consent to a revelation of her most occult wisdom, and to entrust you with the command of that chain which links the animal and material worlds together ; the moment, I say, that I perceived who you were, and that I was the intelligence to convey this favour to you, I entered your heart with the greatest of pleasure, and waited impatient for the moment when I should confer this completion of human happiness and honour upon you—a pleasure that was heightened by the noble constancy you showed, when the smell of the hot ox-cheek, as you came by the cook's shop, raised that conflict between nature and knowledge, whether you should purchase some of it to satisfy your hunger, or preserve me for this last experiment, in which the latter was so gloriously triumphant.

The auspicious moment is arrived ; nature labours in the throes of mystic birth ; and lo ! the philosophic king arises in all the glory of the morning. Attend to my words ! receive the consummation of human knowledge.

To apprehend the secret cause, you must know. . . .

O doleful and deplorable event ! never to be told without wailing ; never to be read without tears. Just as the spirit had arrived at this most interesting point, human weakness, unable to suppress the impulse of internal vapour, which the mention of the fatal ox-cheek set in motion in my empty bowels, by the longing it raised in my stomach, emitted an explosion that filled the room with a fetid steam. The spirit started at the unpardonable offence to his purity, and looking at me with ineffable contempt, indignation, and abhorrence, vanished from my sight, without deigning a word more.

The misfortune was more than I could bear ; I sunk under its weight, and swooned away upon the floor, where officious humanity found me, and restored me to a life that was a burthen under such a disappointment. The labour of my life being lost the one moment in a thousand years slipped away in vain. But such is the consequence of human weakness ; such is the end of all the works of man.

CONCLUSION

And now, O my brother in disappointment, who readest this most lamentable catastrophe, whether thou art a tailor, whose

principal debtor is made a lord—a physician, whose nostrum is discovered—a cobbler who sleepest over thy last, in hopes of dreaming of hidden treasure—a poet, whose play is refused—or a senator, who hast mortgaged thine estate to purchase a seat in parliament just before its dissolution, attend to the instruction of my words and learn from my example. Seize the present moment, nor depend upon the future; let reason curb expectation; reduce imagination to common sense; and bring your wishes within the bounds of your real wants; so shall Industry banish Necessity from your habitation, and Content turn all your possessions into Gold.

THE END

INDEX

ALBEMARLE, Earl of, 299
 Amboyna Massacre, 205-208
 'Amelia', 11 *et seq.*
 'Aminadab', 157 *et seq.*, 202 *et seq.*,
 280
 Ayliffe, John, 411-413

BATH, Lord, 488
 Beard, John, 373-378
 Blakeney, General, 368
 Bolton, 6th Duke of, 27
 Boscawen, General George, 427
 Bower, Archibald, 242, 488, 489
 'Brimstone, Mrs', 169 *et seq.*
 Burgh, Mr, 432
 Burke, Edmund, 371, 372
 Bute, Lord, 481
 Byng, Admiral, 363 *et seq.*

CALCRAFT, John, 416
 Camden, Lord, 369, 480, 486
 Campbell, Captain, 307-309
 Canning, Elizabeth, 489
 Chesterfield, Lord, 52, 53
 Churchill, Charles, 169, 377, 411,
 459 *et seq.*
 'Cole, Mrs', 169 *et seq.*
 Colville, Lord, 369
 Coote, Sir Charles, 510-515
 Cumberland, Duke of, 302, 409 *et seq.*

DASHWOOD, Sir Francis, 384 *et seq.*
 Deloraine, Lord, 498
 Derry, Bishop of, 342, 343
 'Discount, Mr', 37, 38
 Douglas, John, Bishop of Carlisle,
 487 *et seq.*
 'Douglas, Mother', 169 *et seq.*

Essay on Woman, 390 *et seq.*, 491-
 494

FERDINAND of Brunswick, Prince,
 253
 Fitzpatrick, Richard, 371, 372
 Foote, Samuel, 168 *et seq.*

Forbes, Captain, 482-485
 Fowke, General, 364
 Frederick the Great, 211 *et seq.*

GARRICK, David, 373-378
 George II, 197, 198
 George, Prince of Wales, 194
 Granby, Marquis of, 256, 257

HALIFAX, Lord, 477, 478
 Hamilton, Captain, 369
 Hay, Lord Charles, 346
 Hell Fire Club, 382 *et seq.*
 Hesse, Landgrave of, 211 *et seq.*
 Hill, Dr John, 371, 372
 Holland, Henry Fox, Lord, 404-406
 Horner, Mrs, 405
 Howe, William, Viscount, 345-348
 'Hunchback, Dr', 169
 Huntingdon, Selena, Countess of,
 176, 181, 182

ILCHESTER, Stephen Fox, Lord,
 406

JESUITS, 19 *et seq.*
 Johnson, Sir Wm., 349-352

KENZIE, Dr, 165, 166
 Keppel, Commodore, 298
 Kidgell, John, 486
 Knight, Hon. Mrs, 507-509
 Knowles, Admiral Sir Charles, 296

LAUDER, Wm., 489
 Leach, Dryden, 488
 Lennox, Lady Georgina, 407 *et seq.*
 Lestock, Admiral, 367
 Ligonier, First Earl, 65 *et seq.*
 Loudoun, Fourth Earl of, 345-348
 Lowther, Miss (afterwards Duchess
 of Bolton), 200

MANSER, Lady, 423
 Mansel, Sir E. 425
 Marlborough, Duke of, 253

Martin, Samuel, 484
 Mathews, Admiral Thos., 343
 Medmenham Abbey, 384 *et seq.*
 Melcombe, Lord, 401 *et seq.*
 Minden, Battle of, 232, 255
The Minor, 169, 170
 'Motherly, Mrs', 65 *et seq.*

NEWCASTLE, Duke of, 366

PARIS, Abbé, 397 *et seq.*
 Pitt, Wm. (Earl of Chatham), 195
et seq.
 Pocock, Admiral Sir George, 295
et seq.
 Pombal, 277
 'Poundage, Thomas', 38 *et seq.*
 Powlett, Captain Harry, 27, 293,
 294
 Prestago, Mr, 448 *et seq.*
 Pratt, Lord Chief Justice, 369, 480,
 486
 Pulteney, Lord, 488

RICHMOND, Duke of, 407

SACKVILLE, Viscount, 255 *et seq.*
 Sandwich, Lord, 383 *et seq.*
 Seven Years' War, 163, 211 *et seq.*
 Shebbeare, Dr John, 480
 Socii Jesu, 19 *et seq.*
 'Squintum', 169
 'Standard, Captain', 66 *et seq.*
 Stephenson, Miss, 434 *et seq.*
 Sum, Dr, 417 *et seq.*

TEMPLE, Lord, 475-477
 Thompson, Dr, 402-404
 Townshend, Charles, 305
 'Traffic', 5 *et seq.*

WARBURTON, Bishop of, 494
 Westmorland, Seventh Earl of, 395
 Wheeler, Captain, 433
 Whitefield, George, 167 *et seq.*
 Wilkes, John, 386 *et seq.*, 470 *et seq.*,
 491-495
 Wolfe, General, 198 *et seq.*
 'Worthland, Sir John', 38

YARMOUTH, Countess of, 150 *et seq.*

